

معارف الحديث


MA'ARIFUL HADITH

MEANING AND MESSAGE OF THE TRADITIONS

MAULANA MUHAMMAD MANZOOR NO'MANI

Volume Two

DARUL-ISHAAT
KARACHI - PAKISTAN



معارف الحديث

MEANING AND MESSAGE OF THE TRADITIONS

(MA'ARIFUL HADITH)

Volume Two
Part III & IV

By

Maulana Mohammad Manzoor Nomani

Translated by
Mohammad Asif Kidwai
M.A., Ph.D.

Completed & Revised by
Rafiq Abdur Rehman

فکرتہ سنجائے راصلائے عام وہ
از نیچے ایسے پیغام وہ

DEDICATED

to all those religious brothers who believe
in the unlettered Prophet, Sayyidina
Muhammad Arabi ﷺ (to whom be
ransomed my mother, father, my soul and
my heart)

and who believe that their salvation and
that of all the children of Aadam ﷺ
depends on following his guidance and his
beautiful way of life.

Hence, they long to gain true awareness of
his teachings and practices.

Come!

Let us pursue the path of knowledge and
imagination and attend the gatherings of
the Prophet ﷺ and hear his sayings,

and

from this spring of light receive guidance
for our dark hearts.

The humble sinner
Muhammad Manzoor Na'umani
عفا الله عنه

CONTENTS

PART-III

1	KITABUT TAHARAH (The Book of Purification)	17
2	The Place of Cleanliness in Islam	19
3	Cleanliness is a part of Faith	21
4	Punishment of the Grave Due to Impurity	24
5	Purification After a Natural Evacuation	27
6	Purification with Water	28
7	Where Not to Defacate?	30
8	Choice of The Place for Urination	31
9	Prayer Before Entering the Lavatory	32
10	Prayer on Coming out of the Lavatory	34
11	Virtue of Wudu	35
12	Sources of Purification from Sins and Forgiveness	35
13	Wudu is the Key of All the Gates of Heaven	38
14	Effulgence of Organs of Wudu on Day of Resurrection	39
15	Complete and Faultless Wudu Despite Inconvenience	39
16	Solicitude for Wudu is a Sign of Perfection of Faith	40
17	Wudu upon Wudu	41
18	Harmful Effects of a Defective Wudu	41
19	Miswak	43
20	Importance	43
21	Special Occasions	44
22	Miswak is the Sunnah of Prophets (عليهم السلام)	45
23	Ten Personal Characteristics	46
24	Miswak Adds to the Value of Namaz	49

25	Wudu	51
26	No Prayer Without Wudu	51
27	Method	53
28	Sunnah And Properties	57
29	Water Should Not be Spent Wastefully	60
30	Use of Towel or Handkerchief	61
31	Supplication at the End of Wudu	62
32	Reciting After Ablution	62
33	Janabat And Its Ghusl	63
34	When Ghusl is Obligatory	63
35	Method	64
36	Mustahab And Musnoon Ghusl	69
37	Ghusl of Friday	69
38	Ghusl After Bathing the Dead Body	71
39	Ghusl of 'Id	72
40	Tayammum	73
41	Philosophy of Tayammum	73
42	The Command	74
43	KITABUS SALAT (The Book of Prayers)	79
44	Pre-Eminence of Salat	81
45	Ommission of Prayers is Inimical to Faith and An Act of Apostasy	84
46	Obligation of the Five Daily Prayers and the Promise of Forgiveness	87
47	Source of Forgiveness and Purification	88
48	The Promise of Forgiveness and Paradise	90
49	Most Pleasing Deed	91
50	Hours of Salat	93
51	Timetable of Daily Prayers	95
52	The Prophet's Usual Practice and Advice Regarding the Time for Asr	100
53	Maghrib	101
54	Isha	102
55	Fajr	104
56	Offering Prayer Near the Close of the Specified Time	106

57	If a Prayer is Missed Due to Forgetting or Oversleeping	107
58	Azan	109
59	Beginning	109
60	Teaching of Azan to Abu Mahzurah	114
61	Principles of Religion Lie in Azan And Iqamah	117
62	Some Commands and Directives	119
63	Merit and Pre-Eminence of Azan and Muazzin	122
64	Responding to Azan and The Supplication Made After It	125
65	Mosques	129
66	Their Grandeur & Significance. Rights & Proprieties	129
67	Significance	129
68	Supplication to be Made on Entering And Coming out of the Mosque	134
69	Tahyyatul Masjid	135
71	Attachment to the Mosque is a Sign of Faith	136
72	Keeping the Mosques Clean and Supplied with a Pleasant Odour	136
73	Reward on Construction of Mosques	137
74	Adornment and Embellishment of the Mosques	137
75	No One Should come to the Mosque After Eating a Thing Giving out a Disagreeable Smell	138
76	Forbidding the Recitation of Poetry and Buying and Selling of Goods in the Mosque	139
78	Protection From Little Children and Noise	140
79	Forbidding of Wordly Talk in the Mosques	140
80	Presence of Women in the Mosques	141
81	Congregation	145
82	Importance	146
83	Superiority and Blessedness	150
84	Full Reward on Intention	151
85	When it is Premissible to Say Namaz Individually or at Home	152
86	Arrangement of Rows	153
87	Front Rows to be Completed First	156
88	Superiority of Front Row	156

89	Method	157
90	Imam Should Stand in Middle	158
91	How Should Muqtadis Stand if There Were only One or Two of Them?	158
92	Women Should Stand Separately and At The Back of Men and Even Children	159
93	Imamat	161
94	Selection of Imam	161
95	The Best Among You Should be Made the Imam	163
96	Responsibility of Imam	163
97	Convenience of Muqtadis	164
98	Guidance for Muqtadis	167
99	Performance of Prayer	169
100	How Prayer Should be Offered	169
101	Prayer of the Prophet	171
102	Particular Supplication & Methods of God-Remembrance	173
103	Recital of Qur'an in Namaz	179
104	Rulings of Legist-Doctors on The Question of Recital of Al-Fatihah	181
105	Recital of the Qur'an by the Prophet During Fajr	183
106	During Zuhr And Asr	186
107	During the Maghrib	187
108	During 'Isha	188
109	During the Namaz of Different Hours	190
110	During the Friday Prayers and The Two 'Id Prayers	191
111	Aameen at the End of Surah al-Fatiha	193
111	Should 'Aameen' be Said with a Loud Voice or in Silence?	195
112	Rafa' Yadayn (Raising Hands)	196
113	Ruku And Sujud	201
114	Performance of Ruku and Sujud	201
115	What is to Be Recited in Ruku and Sajdah?	203
116	Qur'an Should not be Recited in Ruku and Sajdah	207
117	Quauma and Jalsa	209
118	Q'adah, Tashahhud and Salaam	212
119	The Correct Method of Q'adah	213

120	Brevity and Hast in Q'adah-i-Oola	214
121	Tashahhud	215
122	Invocating Blessings on The Prophet ﷺ	219
	The Command in the Qur'an to Invoke Blesings on the	220
123	Prophet ﷺ	
124	Text	220
125	Meaning of 'Aal' in Durood Sharif	222
126	Place and Wisdom of Durood in Prayer	224
127	Supplication After Durood and Before Salaam	224
128	Salaam Marking the End of Prayer	227
129	Supplication After Salaam	229
130	Sunnah And Nawafil Prayer	235
131	Sunnat-i-Muakkadah	236
132	Special Significance of Sunnat of Fajr	237
133	Superiority of Sunnah and Nawafil at Other Times	238
134	Witr	240
135	Recital of Qur'an in Witr	243
136	Qunoot of Witr	244
137	Two Rak'at Nafl After Witr	246
138	Qiyam al-Layl or Tahajjud	247
139	In the Event of Missing Tahajjud	252
140	Rak'at of Tahajjud	253
141	Some Other Details	253
142	Chasht And Ishraq	259
143	Nafl Prayers on Special Occasions	263
144	Salat Istighfar	263
145	Salatul Hajat	264
146	Salat Istikhara	266
147	Salatul Tasbih	268
148	A Special Advantage of Nafl Prayers	272
149	Special Congregational Prayers Friday and the Two 'Id	273
150	Superiority of Friday	274
151	Durood Sharif is the Special Prayer Formula of Friday	275
152	Hour of Exceptional Propitiousness on a Friday	276
153	Special Significance of Friday Prayer	278
154	Proprieties	279

155	Clipping the Moustaches and Paring off the Nails	281
156	Wearing Good Clothes	281
157	Going Early for Prayers	282
158	Practice of the Prophet	282
159	Sunnat Before and After Friday Service	284
160	Eidul Fitr and Eidul Azha	287
161	Origin	288
162	Prayer and Sermon of the Two Eids	289
163	Without Azan and Iqamat	290
164	No Nafl Rak'at Before or After Eid Prayers	291
165	Time	291
166	Recital of the Qur'an	293
167	Eid Prayer in the Mosque Due to Rain	294
168	Eating Before or After the Service?	294
169	Changing of the Route	295
170	Sadqat ul-Fitr	295
171	Qurbani	296
172	Method	298
173	Instructions Regarding Animals of Qurbani	299
174	Shares	300
175	Qurbani After Prayers	301
176	Superiority of the 'Ashra of Zul Hajjah	302
177	Salat al-Kusoof and Salat al-Istisqa	303
178	Salat al-Kusoof	303
179	Salat al-Istisqa	309
180	Namaz-i-Janaza and Other Related Matters	315
181	Remembrance of Death	316
182	It is Prohibited to Desire or Pray for Death	319
183	Illness is a Blessing and an Atonement for Sins	319
184	Reward of Deeds of the Days of good Health during illness	322
185	Visiting of the Sick	323
186	Blowing on the Sick Person and Praying for his Recovery	324
187	When Signs of Death Appear	326
188	Things to be Done After Death	328
189	Bewailing and Breast-Beating	329

<i>Contents</i>	13
190 Tears of Eyes and Grief and Heart	333
191 Condolence	334
192 Sending Food to the Family of the Deceased	335
193 Showing Patience at Death	335
194 A Letter of Condolence by the Pophet ﷺ	335
195 Bathing and Shrouding of the Dead Body	337
196 Shrouding	339
197 Following the Funeral Procession and Offering the Funeral Prayer	341
198 Walking at a Brisk pace with the Bier and Need for	342
199 Dispatch	
200 Funeral Prayer and Solemn Entreaty for the Deceased	343
201 Propitiousnes of a Large Number of Men Participating in Funeral Prayer	345
202 Burial	347
203 Graves	350
204 Visiting the Graves	351
205 Salutation to Occupiers of Graves	352
206 Consigning Reward to the Dead ('Isaal Sawab')	353

PART-IV

207 Foreword	355
208 KITABUZ ZAKAH (The Book of Zakah)	359
209 Importance of Zakah	361
210 Three Aspects	362
211 Earlier Canonic Laws	363
212 The Call of Zakah After Faith and Salah	365
213 Punishment on Non-Payment of Zakah	367
214 Purification of Wealth	369
215 Rules And Regulations	373
216 Minimum Wealth that Attracts Zakah	373
217 Zakah on Goods of Trade	374
218 Payable at the Expiry of a Year	375
219 Jewellery	375

220	Zakah Can be Paid in Advance	376
221	Beneficiaries	376
222	Zakah And the Family of the Prophet	380
223	When it is Not permitted to Him to Beg and When it is Disgraceful in Any Case	383 385
224	If Begging is unavoidable one should beg from virtuous men	385
225	Place Your Need Before God, Not Men	386
226	Assurance of Paradise on Abstention from Begging	386
227	If anything is Given to you Without Solicitation or Greediness, Take it	386
228	Do not Beg as long as you can earn by work or service	387
229	Meonetary Good-Doing apart from Zakah	389
230	Charity is enjoined pon all Muslims, Rich or Poor	390
231	Exhortation to Charity	391
232	Only That remains and will be use which is spent in the Way of Allah	392
233	The way of Men of Faith and Trust Concerning Expenditure in Allah's way	393
234	Rich people who do not spend freely in the way of God	394
235	are the Losers	
236	Auspiciousness of Charity	395
237	Increase in Wealth	396
238	Reward on Feeding and Clothing the Needy	396
239	Even Giving Food and Drink to Animals that Are Hungry or Thirsty is Charity	397
240	Saving Fellowmen from Annoyance or Inconvenience Gets one to Paradise	398
241	When Does Charity Fetch Greater Reward?	399
242	To Spend on One's Dependents too, is charity	400
243	Superiority of Spending on Kinsmen	402
244	Charity on Behalf of Deceased	405
245	KITABUS SAUM (The Book of Fasting)	409
246	Significance of Fasting	411

247	Virtue of Ramadan	412
248	A Sermon of the Prophet at the Arrival of Ramadan	415
249	Worth And Recompense	418
250	Fasting And Taraweeh	420
251	Intercession by Fast and the Qur'an	421
252	Irreparable Loss	422
253	Abstention from Sin	422
254	The Last 'Ashra and Lailatul Qadr	423
255	Special Supplication	426
256	Last Night	426
257	I'tikaf	427
258	Usual Practice of the Prophet	428
259	Sighting of the Moon	431
260	When to Begin and End the Fasts of Ramadan	432
261	Proof of the Visibility of Moon Through Report and Evidence	433
262	Prohibition of Fasting on One or Two Days Before the Commencement of Ramadan	435
263	Sahr And Iftari	437
264	Haste in Iftari Delay in Sahr	438
265	Prohibition of Saum-Wisal	439
266	What is Better for Iftar?	441
267	Supplication of Iftar	441
268	Reward on Inviting a Fasting Person to Join At Fast-Breaking Meal	442
269	Fasting on A Journey	445
270	Making Amends for Not Observing an Obligatory Fast	448
271	Expiation for Missing Fast Without a Cogent Reason	449
272	By What Things a Fast is Not Impaired or Nullified	451
273	Nafl Fasts	455
274	Zakah of the Body	455
275	Abundance of Supererogatory Fasts in the Month of Sha'ban	455
276	Six Fasts After Ramadan	456
277	Three Supererogatory Fasts in a Month Are Enough	457
278	Practice of the Prophet Concerning Three Fasts in a Month	461

279	Fasts of Ayyam-ul Beed	462
280	The Fast of 'Ashurah	463
281	The Fast of Arafah	466
282	The Fast of 15th of Sha'ban	467
283	Supererogatory Fasts on Particular Days	468
284	Days on Which Supererogatory Fasts Are Prescribed	471
285	A Supererogatory Fast Can be Voided	472
286	KITABUL HAJJ (The Book of Hajj)	475
287	Nature And Objects of The Hajj	477
288	Obligatoriness and Superiority of the Hajj	479
289	Miqat Ihram Talbia	487
290	Miqat	488
291	The Robe of Ibrahim	490
292	Taking a Bath Before Ihram	492
293	Talbiah of Ihram	492
294	First of Ihram	493
295	Talbiah Should be Said With a Loud Voice	494
296	Special Supplication After Talbia	495
297	Farewell Hajj	497
298	Details	499
299	Principal Rituals and Ceremonies of the Hajj	521
300	Entry to Makkah and the First Tawaf	521
301	The Black Stone	525
302	Zikr and Supplication in Tawaf	526
303	Importance of the Halt at Arafat	527
304	Rami Jamarat	530
305	Qurbani	532
306	Tawaf Ziyarat and Tawaf Wada	534
307	Hugging the Multazam	537
308	Holy Cities of Makkah and Madinah	539
309	Sanctity of Makkah	539
310	Glory of Madinah	544
311	Superiority of Masjid Nabawi	550
312	Visiting the Grave of the Prophet	555

كتاب الطهارة

KITAB UT-TAHARAH

(BOOK OF PURIFICATION)



THE PLACE OF CLEANLINESS IN ISLAM

Cleanliness and purification, in Islam, is not merely an essential condition for the performance of an act of worship like prayer, recitation of Qur'an and *Tawaf*¹, but as the Qur'an and the Traditions tell, it constitutes a permanent department of Faith and possess a significance of its own as well.

It is set forth in the Qur'an:

إِنَّ اللَّهَ يُحِبُّ التَّوَّابِينَ وَيُحِبُّ الْمُتَطَهِّرِينَ (البقرة ٢: ٢٢٢)

Truely Allah loveth those who turn unto Him, and loveth those who have a care of cleanness. (Al-Baqarah 2:222)

Besides, in praise of the residants of Quba, the Qur'an says:

”فِيهِ رَجُلٌ يُحِبُّ أَنْ يُتَطَهَّرَ وَاللَّهُ يُحِبُّ الْمُطَهِّرِينَ“ (التوبة ٩: ١٠٨)

"Where in are men who love to purify themselves. Allah loves the purifiers. " (At-Tawbah 9:108)

One can imagine from these two verses what importance cleanliness enjoys in the Islamic scheme of things.

In the same way, the first Tradition we are going to quote from *Sahih Muslim* shows that cleanliness is not only a tenet and requirement of Islam but, also, forms a principal branch of it. Another hadith teams cleanlinesss as a half of faith.

The mentor of mentors, Shah Waliullah رحمه الله عليه, remarks in his monumental work, *Hujjatullah-il-Baligha*²:

"By His special grace, the Almighty has explained to me the truth that the path of felicity for giving the call of which the

①. Circumambulation of the House of K'aba

②. Vol I, p 53

Prophets عليهم السلام were raised up, and which is called *Shari'ah*, consists of many chapters and there are tens and thousands of commands under each chapter, all these can be assembled, in spite of their vast multiplicity, under the four fundamental headings of *Taharah*¹, *Ikbat*², *Samahat*³, and *'Adalat*⁴.

Proceeding, he explains the meaning of each of the titles indicated above from which it distinctly follows that the *Shari'ah*, on the whole, is divided into these four parts.

Here we shall summarise only the part of Shah Waliullah's رحمه الله *Hujjah* in which he expounds the significance of cleanliness. A right-minded person, it reads, whose heart is not ruled over by bestial urges and filthy propensities feels a peculiar type of uneasiness and gloom within himself when he is involved in an impurity or seized with a strong desire for defecation or urination or has just had sexual intercourse. On the other hand, when he comes out of this state i.e., gets done with the urge for a natural evacuation and purifies himself after it, or if he has copulated, takes a bath, changes his clothes and applies perfume, the feeling of discomfort and depression disappears his cheerfulness returns and he is in good spirits again. The former state is called *hads* (i.e. impurity) and the latter, *Taharah* (i.e. cleanliness). People who possess a wholesome disposition and whose natural instincts are sound realise clearly the difference between the two states. They instinctively dislike the condition, of impurity and find the other one, i.e., of cleanliness and purification agreeable. The state of the cleanliness of the human spirit bears a close resemblance to the state of the *celestial world*, i.e., of the angels because they are eternally free from animal impurities and remain happy and at ease owing to the heavenly state of feeling, and it is for this reason that solicitude for perpetuity of cleanliness, to the extent to which it is possible, enables the soul to attain angelic heights and profit from the *celestial world* through inspiration and revelation. On the contrary, when a person is sunk in the state of uncleanness and

①. Cleanliness and Purification

②. Fear of Allah

③. Generosity

④. Justice

impurity, he develops a resemblance and affinity with the devils and a typical susceptibility is created within him of responding to satanic desires and passions¹.

It is, thus, evident that cleanliness or purity and uncleanness or impurity are the names of the two states of the soul or moral and spiritual being we have just mentioned and what we call as such are their causes and origins. The *Shari'ah*, in fact, deals with them and prescribes necessary rules and regulations. Purification has rightly been described as one-fourth of the *Shari'ah*.

Shah Waliullah رحمه الله عليه, further, writes:

"Cleanliness is of three kinds. One, purification from impurity (i.e., to attain purity or cleanliness, by taking a bath or performing ablution in states in which they become necessary or desirable according to the *Shari'ah*); two, to cleanse one's body, dress or place from an apparent impurity or filth; and, three: to remove the dirt or grime that collects in various parts of the body, such as, the cleaning of teeth and nostrils, the pairing of nails and the removing of the hair below the navel²".

Among the Traditions we are now going to discuss a few dealing with cleanliness as a whole, which covers all the three categories, while the rest are related to a particular category of it or the other.

Cleanliness is A Part of Faith

(٤٠٣/١) عَنْ أَبِي مَالِكٍ الْأَشْعَرِيِّ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ
الطُّهُورُ شَطْرُ الْإِيمَانِ وَالْحَمْدُ لِلَّهِ تَمْلَأُ الْمِيزَانَ وَسُبْحَانَ اللَّهِ وَالْحَمْدُ لِلَّهِ
تَمْلَأَانِ أَوْ تَمْلَأُ مَا بَيْنَ السَّمَوَاتِ وَالْأَرْضِ وَالصَّلَاةُ نُورٌ وَالصَّدَقَةُ بُرْهَانٌ
وَالصَّبْرُ ضِيَاءٌ وَالْقُرْآنُ حُجَّةٌ لَكَ أَوْ عَلَيْكَ كُلُّ النَّاسِ يَغْدُو فَبَائِعَ نَفْسِهِ
فَمُعْتِقَهَا أَوْ مَوْبِقَهَا (رواه مسلم)

(403/1) It is related by Abu Maalik Al-Ash'ari ؓ that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Cleanliness is a part of Faith. To say الحمد لله "Praise belongs to Allah" fills the scale, to say سبحان الله and الحمد لله 'Glory be to Allah' and Praise belongs to

①. Hujjah v 1, p 54

②. Hujjah, Vol 1, p 173

Allah' fill the space between the heavens and the earth, prayer is a light, *Sadaqah* is a proof (of sincere faith), endurance is a shining glory. and the Qur'an is a proof on your behalf or against you. All men go out easily and sell themselves, thereby setting themselves free or destroying themselves".¹ (Muslim)

Commentary: In it cleanliness has been spoken of as *Shutrul Iman* which means half of faith while in another report conveying the same subject idea, which has been quoted by *Tirmizi*, on the authority of another Companion, the words *Nisful Iman* (Half of Faith) explicitly occur. In our view, however, what the words *Shutr* and *Nisf* denote here is that cleanliness is a principal part and most significant branch of faith. The lines quoted earlier from Shah Waliullah رحمه الله عليه are so clear that no further elucidation is needed.

It should be remembered that the narrative of Abu Maalik Al-Ash'ari is a long one, being the report of one of the Prophet's ﷺ sermons.

The Prophet ﷺ has then spoken of the reward against the *tasbih* (glorifying) and *Tahmid* (praising) of Allah. *Tasbih* is to say *Subhan Allah*. It is to express one's faith in and to bear witness that Allah is free from every kind of blemish and is above everything that is not in conformity with His divinity. *Tahmid* is to say *Al-Hamdu lillah* which is to express one's faith in and to bear witness that only Allah is perfect and only He has all the good things for which one is praised. The *tasbih* and *tahmid* is the *wazifah*² of the angels. The Qur'an quotes the angels as saying (We Glorify Your Praise.)

(Al-Baqarah 2:30) نَحْنُ نُسَبِّحُ بِحَمْدِكَ (البقره ٢: ٣٠)

Thus, man too may only occupy himself in this best *wazifah*, and sacred task and praise and glorify his and everyone else's Creator and Sustiner. It was to exhort us to this task that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said that one phrase *Subhan Allah* fills in the scale of deeds and if *Alhamdu lillah* is also recited the light from the two illuminates the entire earth and heavens.

Our senses cannot percieve this illumination but Allah does

①. Mishkat al-Masabih VI. P 64

②. Recantation.

disclose it to some of His close slaves sometimes. We must, however, sincerely believe in whatever the Holy Prophet ﷺ says, and we must conduct ourselves accordingly. The Messenger of Allah ﷺ next said that prayer is light. Those of the slaves of Allah whose prayers are sincere feel the light and blessings within their hearts and the result is that they ward away immorality and the forbidden things. This is what the Qur'an means to tell us when it says:

إِنَّ الصَّلَاةَ تَنْهَى عَنِ الْفَحْشَاءِ وَالْمُنْكَرِ (العنكبوت ٢٩:٤٥)

"Surely, *as salah*, preserves from lewdness and iniquity".

(Al-Ankabut, 29:45)

In the hereafter, this light of prayer will brighten and illuminate the darkness and accompany the worshipper. The Qur'an says:

نُورُهُمْ يَسْعَى بَيْنَ أَيْدِيهِمْ وَبِأَيْمَانِهِمْ (التحریم ٦٦:٨)

"Their light will run before them and on their right hands."

(Al-Tahreem, 66:8)

The Prophet ﷺ then said that *sadaqah*, is clear proof, meaning that it is evidence of faith without which it is not easy to give *sadaqah*. In the next world, it will be proof of his faith and piety and earn him reward.

The prophet ﷺ then said that the endurance was shining glory. Some scholars suggest that, having spoken of prayer and *sadaqah*, the reference here is to fasting but I feel that the word endurance is taken in its original sense and wide meaning. In the terminology of the Qur'an and *hadith* patience encompasses 'controlling temptations and enduring hardships, in the cause of Allah'. In this sense, endurance will cover the whole of religious life and worship whether prayer, *sadaqah*, fasting, pilgrimage, *jihad* or facing hardship for the sake of Allah and, at the same time, controlling selfish desires and wrong urges. The Prophet ﷺ has called it ضياء (a shining glory) and the Qur'an refers to the light of the moon as *nur*, and of the sun as ضياء.

وَهُوَ الَّذِي جَعَلَ الشَّمْسَ ضِيَاءً وَالْقَمَرَ نُورًا (يونس ١٠:٥)

The Prophet ﷺ then said that the Qur'an is a proof in one's favour or against. If anyone holds it in respect and obeys it is an

evidence for him otherwise it is against him.

The Prophet ﷺ concluded his saying with the remark that every man in this world no matter how he lives, sells himself everyday so that he either earns salvation or destroys himself. If he obeys Allah and worships Him then he earns abundant reward for himself ensuring deliverance, but if he obeys his base self and neglects his duty to Allah then he destroys himself preparing to go to Hell.

May Allah help us to believe in these facts and to earn from the knowledge.

Punishment of The Grave Due to Impurity.

(٤٠٤/٢) عَنْ ابْنِ عَبَّاسٍ قَالَ مَرَّ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ بِقَبْرَيْنِ فَقَالَ إِنَّهُمَا لِيُعَذَّبَانِ وَمَا يُعَذَّبَانِ فِي كَبِيرٍ أَمَّا أَحَدُهُمَا فَكَانَ لَا يَسْتَتِرُ (وَفِي رَوَايَةٍ لِمُسْلِمٍ لَا يَسْتَتِرُهُ) مِنَ الْبَوْلِ وَأَمَّا الْآخَرُ فَكَانَ يَمْشِي بِالنَّمِيمَةِ ثُمَّ أَخَذَ جَرِيدَةً رَطْبَةً فَشَقَّهَا بِنِصْفَيْنِ ثُمَّ غَرَزَ فِي كُلِّ قَبْرٍ وَاحِدَةً قَالُوا يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ لِمَ صَنَعْتَ هَذَا؟ فَقَالَ لَعَلَّهُ أَنْ يُخَفَّفَ عَنْهُمَا مَا لَمْ يَنْسَبَا (رواه البخاري ومسلم)

(404/2) Abdullah Ibn Abbas ؓ has narrated that as the Messenger of Allah ﷺ happened to pass by two graves, he remarks: "The two persons who are buried in these graves are being punished, and the punishment is not owing to a sin that was a difficult matter (i.e., hard to avoid. Both of them, on the other hand, are receiving the chastisement for a misdeed from which it was quite easy to keep away). The sin of one of them was that he never tried to save himself from being soiled with urine, and the other used to speak ill of others in their absence." The Prophet ﷺ, then, took a green branch of date-palm, spilt it into two and fixed one piece (of it) on each grave. The Companions ؓ (thereupon) enquired: "O Messenger of Allah ﷺ! Why have you done that?" "It is hoped," replied the Prophet, "that the punishment of these persons will be abated till such time as the two pieces become completely dry."

(Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: A doctrinal discussion on the punishment of the grave has already been attempted in the preceding chapters. In the course of it we also took up the Traditions in which it was revealed

that the sharp cries of agony rising from the graves of those who are being punished were heard by all creatures that were around save men and *jinn*. The wisdom of it, too, was explained by us in the commentary. A Tradition contained in *Sahih Muslim* which showed how the sacred Prophet ﷺ became aware of the punishment that was being sent down to some of the graves was, also, included in it. The incident referred to in the above report is of an identical nature. The Lord makes it possible for His Messengers عليهم السلام to see things of the unseen world and hear sound that are, generally, not seen or heard by mortals like us.

In this Tradition the Prophet ﷺ has indicated the specific sins and transgressions of the occupiers of the two graves. The fault of one of them was that he was given to tale-bearing which is a grave moral offence and has been condemned in the Qur'an as a paganish habit and a sign of the hypocrites. It says:

وَلَا تُطِيعُ كُلَّ خِدَافٍ مُهِينٍ، هَمَّازٍ مُشَاقٍّ بَنِيمٍ (القلم ٦٨: ١٠-١١)

"Neither obey thou each feeble oath-monger, detractor, spreader abroad of slanders. (Al-Qalam 68:10-11)

About the other person the Prophet ﷺ disclosed that punishment was being inflicted upon him because he did not take proper care to observe cleanliness and save himself from being polluted with his urine.

It shows that to protect oneself against the impurity of urine (as of other foul and dirty things) i.e., to save one's body or clothes from being soiled with them is one of the principal commands of Allah and negligence in these matters is a sin of such a high order as to entail the chastisement of the grave.

As for the concluding part of the Tradition indicating that the holy Prophet ﷺ took a green branch of a date-palm and broke it into two parts and fixed a piece of it on each of the two graves, it has been explained in various ways by the Commentators but, in our humble opinion, the most plausible explanation is that the Prophet ﷺ prayed reduction in the punishment of the occupiers and he was bidden to do what he did with the assurance that the chastisement would remain abated as long as the two pieces did not dry up altogether.

A long report, appearing at the end of *Sahih Muslim*, and related on the authority of Sayyidina Jabir رضي الله عنه, also speaks of two graves but it refers to another event. Sayyidina Jabir رضي الله عنه narrates that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ once ordered him to cut two branches from two particular trees and to throw them at such-and-such a place. He goes on to relate, "I carried out the command and when I enquired from the Prophet ﷺ about it he said, 'There are two graves over there upon which punishment is being sent down. I prayed to God for reduction in the chastisement and He granted the prayer to the extent that the punishment would stay lowered in degree as long as the branches remained green.'

Be that as it may, Sayyidina Jabir's رضي الله عنه narrative distinctly shows that the branches of the trees or their freshness had nothing to do with the abatement of chastisement. It had been made known by the Lord to the Prophet ﷺ that as a result of his supplication the punishment would be lessened for a certain time. The real thing, thus, was the prayer of the Prophet ﷺ and its acceptance. Those who seek it a justification for laying flowers on the graves, surely, do a great injustice to the spirit of Islam.

Commentators, also, have raised the point whether the graves upon which the sacred Prophet ﷺ had fixed the branches of the date-palms were of Muslims or non-Muslims and referred the view that these were of Muslims. An indirect suggestion of it is conveyed by the Tradition itself when it tells that the Prophet had ascribed their punishment to the habits of backbiting and carelessness in purification after passing the urine. Had the graves been of the infidels, infidelity or polytheism would have been stated as the cause of chastisement. Moreover, a Tradition quoted in Musnad Ahmad, on the authority of Sayyidina Abu Hurairah رضي الله عنه, shows that the graves were situated in Baqui'e and the Prophet ﷺ had felt the infliction of punishment on them while passing through it and Baqui'e is exclusively the graveyard of Muslims in Madinah.

The moral of the above Tradition is that utmost care should be taken to protect oneself from being soiled with urine and abstain from vicious and polytheistic habits like backbiting, otherwise the chastisement of the grave is certain.

Purification After A Natural Evacuation

(٤٠٥/٣) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِنَّمَا أَنَا لَكُمْ مِثْلُ الْوَالِدِ لِوَلَدِهِ أَعْلَمُكُمْ إِذَا أَتَيْتُمُ الْغَائِطَ فَلَا تَسْتَقْبِلُوا الْقِبْلَةَ وَلَا تَسْتَذِيرُوهَا، وَأَمَرَ بِثَلَاثَةِ أَحْجَارٍ وَنَهَى عَنِ الرُّوثِ وَالرِّمَّةِ وَنَهَى أَنْ يَسْتَطِيبَ الرَّجُلُ بِيَمِينِهِ.

(رواه ابن ماجه والدارمي)

(405/3) It is related by Abu Hurairah رضي الله عنه that he Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "I am like a father to you (in the same way as it is the duty of a father to teach good manners to his children and the proper way in which things are done in life), I tell you that when you sit for answering the call of nature, do not face or turn your back towards the *Qiblah*¹". Abu Hurairah further said, "The Prophet ordered (us) to use three stones for cleaning the private parts, and he forbade (us) against using a bone or piece of dung, and he forbade (us) against cleaning the private parts with the right hand."

(Ibn Majah and Daarami)

(٤٠٦/٤) عَنْ سَلْمَانَ قَالَ قِيلَ لَهُ قَدْ عَلَّمَكُمْ نَبِيُّكُمْ (صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ) كُلَّ شَيْءٍ حَتَّى الْخِرَاءَةَ قَالَ فَقَالَ أَجَلٍ لَقَدْ نَهَانَا أَنْ نَسْتَقْبِلَ الْقِبْلَةَ لِغَائِطٍ أَوْ بَوْلٍ أَوْ أَنْ نَسْتَجِبَ بِالْيَمِينِ أَوْ أَنْ نَسْتَجِبَ بِأَقْلٍ مِنْ ثَلَاثَةِ أَحْجَارٍ أَوْ أَنْ نَسْتَجِبَ بِرَجِيعٍ أَوْ بِعَظْمٍ.

(رواه مسلم)

(406/4) Salman Farsi رضي الله عنه related to us, "(Some polytheists remarked to me by way of a joke or sarcasm) 'Your Prophet ﷺ has taught you everything, even the (proper) way of attending the call of nature.' I replied: '(Of course), he has taught us everything and given necessary instructions, also, regarding purification after defecation. He has advised us never to face the *Qiblah* while urinating or defecating or clean the private parts with the right hand or use less than three stones for it or clean the private parts with a bone or the dung of an animal (like a camel, horse or cow)'."

(Muslim)

Commentary: Like eating and drinking, defecation and urination, also, are essential to a man's life. The Prophet ﷺ has, therefore, indicated precisely what is proper or improper as regards a natural

①. The Place one turns to when at prayer.

evacuation and purification after it in the same way as he has done about our other needs and functions.

Four instructions are given by the Prophet ﷺ in the two aforementioned Traditions.:

(i) One should neither sit facing the *Qiblah* nor with his back turned towards it while defacating or urinating. This is the claim of reverence for the House of Allah the *Ka'bah* in Makkah upon us. Every civilised person, possessing some awareness of the finer and spiritual values of life, avoids sitting with his face or back turned towards a holy place or a sacred thing at such a time.

(ii) The right hand which is, generally, used for eating, drinking or writing and two which God has granted greater strength and capability than the left should not be employed for cleaning the private parts.

(iii) At least three stones ought to be used for purification after defacation as common experience is that complete cleanliness is not obtained with a lesser number of them. If, however, anyone requires more than three stones he is free to do so.

It should be noted that stones are specifically mentioned in the Traditions concerning purification for the simple reason that it was the usual practice among the Arabs during those days. Otherwise, there is nothing peculiar with the stones. Other articles that can serve the purpose, and it is also not improper to put them to such a use, can be freely employed.

(iv) The bone or dried-up dung of an animal must not be used for purification after answering the call of nature. The Prophet ﷺ took pains to prohibit the use of such things plainly because in the older days, the Arabs, sometimes took resort to them for cleaning the private parts after easing themselves.

Purification With Water

(٤٠٧/٥) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ كَانَ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا أَتَى الْخَلَاءَ

أَتَيْتُهُ بِمَاءٍ فِي تَوْرٍ أَوْ رَكْوَةٍ فَاسْتَجَنَى ثُمَّ مَسَحَ يَدَهُ عَلَى الْأَرْضِ ثُمَّ أَتَيْتُهُ بِأَنْاءٍ

أَجَرَ فَتَوَضَّأَ (رواه أبو داود)

(407/5) It is related by Abu Hurayrah ؓ "When the Messenger of Allah ﷺ went for answering the call of nature, I used to

carry water for him in a Tur (tumbler) or Rakoh (a small water-skin). He washed his private parts with it and then, rubbed his hands on the ground, and, after it, I brought another vesself of water and he performed *wudu* with it." (Abu Dawood)

Commentary: It shows that the sacred Prophet ﷺ used to wash his private parts after cleaning them with the stones, and, then, rubbed his hands on the ground after which he washed them again, and performed the *wudu*.

It, again, appears from this Tradition that it, usually fell to the blessed lot of Sayyidina Abu Hurayrah ؓ to carry water for the sacred Prophet ﷺ to perform *istinja*¹. From another report we learn that Sayyidina Anas ؓ, also, sometimes carried out this duty.

It, also, tells us that the usual practice of the Prophet ﷺ was to perform *wudu* after *istinja*. Sometimes, in order to indicate that it was only desirable and not obligatory, he used to forgo it. Thus, it is mentioned in Ibn Majah and Abu Dawood, on the authority of Sayyidah Aysha رضى الله عنها, that once, as the Prophet ﷺ had made water and cleaned himself, Sayyidina Umar ؓ brought water for *wudu*. The Prophet ﷺ, asked him, "What is it, Umar? Why have you brought the water?" "I have brought it so that you may perform *wudu*", replied Sayyidina Umar ؓ. "It is not necessary for me", observed the Prophet ﷺ, "to perform *wudu* everytime I pass urine. If I did so regularly it would become a law for the *ummah*"².

It is, further, apparent from the above that the holy Prophet ﷺ, occasionally, refrained from doing what was preferable in order to demonstrate the real nature of an issue or principle by his conduct and save the *ummah* from misunderstanding or unnecessary hardship.

(٤٠٨/٦) عَنْ أَبِي أَيُّوبَ وَ جَابِرٍ وَ أَنَسٍ أَنَّ هَذِهِ الْآيَةَ لَمَّا نَزَلَتْ فِيهِ رِجَالٌ يُحِبُّونَ أَنْ يَتَطَهَّرُوا وَاللَّهُ يُحِبُّ الْمُطَهَّرِينَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَا مَعْشَرَ الْأَنْصَارِ إِنَّ اللَّهَ قَدْ آتَى عَلَيْكُمْ فِي الطُّهُورِ فَمَا طَهُرُوكُمْ؟ قَالُوا نَتَوَضَّأُ لِلصَّلَاةِ وَنَغْتَسِلُ مِنَ الْجَنَابَةِ وَنَسْتَجِي بِالْمَاءِ قَالَ فَهُوَ ذَاكَ فَعَلَيْكُمْوه
(رواه ابن ماجه)

①. Meaning purification after a natural evacuation

②. Meaning the Muslim community.

(408/6) Abu Ayyub Ansari, Jabir and Anas رضي الله عنهم said that when this verse was revealed:

فِيهِ رَجَالٌ يُحِبُّونَ أَنْ يَتَطَهَّرُوا وَاللَّهُ يُحِبُّ الْمُطَهَّرِينَ (التوبة ٩: ١٠٨)

Wherein are men who love to purify themselves, Allah loves the purifiers. (Al-Tawbah 9:108)

The Messenger of Allah ﷺ said, "Allah has praised you, Ansari, for purification. What does your purification consist of?" They replied, "We perform ablution for prayer, wash ourselves after seminal emission and cleanse ourselves with water." He remarked, "That is it! so, keep on doing it." (Ibn Majah)

Commentary: Many of the Arabs cleansed themselves only with stone after defecation. According to Sayyidina Ali رضي الله عنه their diet was such that their digestion was good so that their defecation was dry like that of camels. Hence, they did not need to wash with water so they used only stones. But, the Ansari were used to water also. The Qur'an praised them for their purification and the Prophet ﷺ instructed them to continue to practice that habit. He himself was already used to doing that. The Qur'an and the Messenger of Allah ﷺ teach the Muslims to adopt this practice which is a sign of love for purification.

Where Not to Defacate?

(٤٠٩/٧) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ اتَّقُوا لِلْعَيْنَيْنِ قَالُوا وَمَا اللَّاعِنَانِ يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ قَالَ الَّذِي يَتَخَلَّى فِي طَرِيقِ النَّاسِ أَوْ فِي ظِلِّهِمْ (رواه مسلم)

(409/7) It is related by Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Save yourselves from two things which invite the curse of Allah." What are those things?" enquired the Companions رضي الله عنهم. The Prophet replied: "One is to defacate on the thorough fare and the other is to do so at a shady place." (Muslim)

Commentary: If a person defacates in a street or a shady place where people sit for repose or shelter from sun it will, naturally, be a source of general inconvenience and people will curse him for it.

In another Tradition quoted in Abu Dawood, on the authority of Sayyidina Mu'ar, a third place is mentioned, in addition to these,

namely, Maward, which means places where water is found and people frequent them because of it.

What really, is intended to convey here is that should a person feel the urge to defacate when he is away from home he should look for a place which people do not frequent or through which they do not pass habitually, so that, no annoyance or discomfort is caused to them.

(٤١٠/٨) عَنْ جَابِرٍ قَالَ كَانَ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا أَرَادَ الْبِرَارَ انْطَلَقَ حَتَّى لَا يَرَاهُ أَحَدٌ
(رواه ابو داؤد)

(410/8) Jabir رضي الله عنه has related that it was the practice of the Messenger of Allah ﷺ that when he had to go out of doors for easing himself he went to a place where he could not be seen by anyone."
(Abu Dawood)

Commentary: Modesty and good manners demand that a man should satisfy his natural urges of that kind in such a way that he is not seen by anyone though he has to go a long way for it.

Choice Of The Place For Urination

(٤١١/٩) عَنْ أَبِي مُوسَى قَالَ كُنْتُ مَعَ النَّبِيِّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ ذَاتَ يَوْمٍ فَأَرَادَ أَنْ يَبُولَ فَأَتَى دِمِثًا فِي أَصْلِ جِدَارٍ قَبَالَ ثُمَّ قَالَ إِذَا أَرَادَ أَحَدُكُمْ أَنْ يَبُولَ فَلْيَرْتَدِّ لِبَوْلِهِ
(رواه ابو داؤد)

(411/9) Abu Musa Ash'ari رضي الله عنه has narrated "(Once I was in the company of the Messenger of Allah ﷺ that he felt the need to urinate. He went to a soft low ground under a wall and discharged the urine there. After it, he observed: 'When anyone of you has the need to urinate, he should seek a suitable place for it."
(Abu Dawood)

Commentary: It shows that one should sit for urination at a place which was secluded and there was no danger of his getting soiled with urine, and the direction in which he sat, also, was not inappropriate.

(٤١٢/١٠) عَنْ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ مَغْفَلٍ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ لَا يَبُولَنَّ أَحَدُكُمْ فِي مُسْتَحِمِّهِ ثُمَّ يَغْتَسِلُ فِيهِ أَوْ يَتَوَضَّأُ فِيهِ فَإِنَّ الْوَسْوَاسَ

مِنْهُ

(رواه ابو داؤد)

(412/10) Abdullah bin Mughaffal رضي الله عنه has said that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said, "No one must pass urine where he bathes and then wash there or perform ablution for all evil promptings come from it." (Abu Dawood)

Commentary: To do such a thing is very wrong and there are doubts of being soiled with urine. It means that if a man urinates in a bathroom and then performs ablution or has a bath then there are chances of his being soiled with urine. However, if there is a separate place in the bathroom or if it is made such a way that traces of urine can be washed off by pouring water then it is not wrong to use it for that.

(٤١٣/١١) عَنْ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ سَرْجِسَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ

لَا يَبُولَنَّ أَحَدُكُمْ فِي جُحْرِ

(سنن ابن داؤد سنن نسائي)

(413/11) It is reported by Abdullah bin Sarjis رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said, "None of you must pass urine in a (snake's) hole." (Abu Dawood, Nasa'i)

Commentary: Often these holes are haunts of reptiles which will be troubled unnecessarily. There will also be the risk of being attacked by a venomous snake if it is inside.

Prayer Before Entering The Lavatory

(٤١٤/١٢) عَنْ زَيْدِ بْنِ أَرْقَمَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِنَّ هَذِهِ

الْحُشُوشَ مُحْتَضِرَةٌ فَإِذَا أَتَى أَحَدُكُمْ الْخَلَاءَ فَلْيَقُلْ أَعُوذُ بِاللَّهِ مِنَ الْخُبْثِ

وَالْخَبَائِثِ

(رواه ابو داؤد و ابن ماجه)

(414/12) It is related by Zayd bin Arqam رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Wicked creatures like the devils haunt the places that are used for answering the Call of Nature. Thus, when anyone goes to the lavatory, he should first make the prayer:

أَعُوذُ بِاللَّهِ مِنَ الْخُبْثِ وَالْخَبَائِثِ

"O Lord! I seek refuge in Thee from the wicked devils, both male and female". (Ibn Majah and Abu Dawood)

Commentary: In the same way as the angels have a special

association with the places that are clean and holy and where the Names, Praises and the Attributes of Allah are recited and worship is offered, filthy and repellently dirty places hold a peculiar attraction for wicked creatures like the devils. The Prophet ﷺ, hence, advised his followers that when they had to go to a privy for answering the call of nature they should beg for the protection of Allah against the mischief of the evil spirits before stepping into it. With us the case is that we neither feel the presence or descension of the angels at places of worship nor the existence of the devils at unclean places. But the sacred Prophet ﷺ has informed us about it and some bondsmen of Allah, also, occasionally, perceive such things, by His grace, which leads to an advancement in their faith.

(٤١٥/١٣) عَنْ عَائِشَةَ قَالَتْ كَانَ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا خَرَجَ مِنَ

(رواه الترمذی و ابن ماجه)

الْخَلَاءِ قَالَ " غُفْرَانُكَ "

(415/13) Sayyidah Ayshah رضي الله عنها said that when the Prophet ﷺ came out of the privy He said غُفْرَانُكَ (Grant your forgiveness). (Tirmizi, Ibn Majah)

Commentary: Many reasons have been suggested for seeking forgiveness of Allah after relieving oneself. Until one empties one's bowels he feels uneasy but once he relieves himself he has a sense of relief. It is the same thing with pious men that they are concerned with relieving themselves of one burden of sin. Thus, the Prophet ﷺ when he relieved himself prayed to Allah to forgive him the sins and purify and cleanse his soul and relieve him of the burden of sin.

There is the question why he sought forgiveness when he as innocent of sin and was also assured in *Surah al-Fath*

لِيَغْفِرَ لَكَ اللَّهُ مَا تَقَدَّمَ مِنْ ذَنْبِكَ وَمَا تَأَخَّرَ (الفتح ٤٨: ٢)

That Allah may forgive you of your sin that which is past and that which is to come, and may perfect His favour unto you, and may guide you on a right path. (Al-Fath, 48:2)

We will answer this question in the Book of Prayer.

Prayer on Coming Out of The Lavatory

(٤١٦/١٤) عَنْ أَبِي ذَرٍّ قَالَ كَانَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا خَرَجَ

مِنَ الْخَلَاءِ قَالَ الْحَمْدُ لِلَّهِ الَّذِي أَذْهَبَ عَنِّي الْأَذَى وَعَافَانِي (رواه النسائي)

(416/14) Abu Zarr Ghiffari رضي الله عنه has narrated that, "When the Messenger of Allah ﷺ came out of the lavatory, after answering the call of nature, he used to say:

الْحَمْدُ لِلَّهِ الَّذِي أَذْهَبَ عَنِّي الْأَذَى وَعَافَانِي

Akhamdulilla hil lazi Azhaba 'Anni Al-Azae wa 'Afaaani

(Praise be to Allah Who relieved me of the faeces and gave health).
(Tirmizi and Ibn Majah)

Commentary: Sayyidah Ayshah رضي الله عنها had said in the earlier hadith that the Prophet ﷺ made the supplication *غفرانك* when coming out of the privy and here Abu Zarr رضي الله عنه has mentioned another prayer. The Prophet ﷺ may be alternating between the two prayers making that supplication sometimes and this one sometimes. But Allah knows best.

VIRTUE OF *WUDU*

In the preceding Chapter we had referred to Shah Waliullah's رحمه الله عليه observation that right-minded persons whose spirituality has not been blunted by surrendering thoughtlessly to beastly urges experience a feeling of filthiness and a sort of gloom and dullness within themselves in the state of Hads, i.e., when their wudu has been void due to a natural evacuation or some other reason. It gives place to a sense of spiritual cleanliness and effulgence after they have performed wudu. Herein lies the chief purpose and significance of wudu, and it is because of it that it has been made a pre-requisite of offering up prayer, or, in other words, of making one's special presence in the Court of the Almighty. Apart from it, Allah has also vested it with a unique auspiciousness. The sacred Prophet ﷺ has delineated the virtues of *wudu* in the same way as he has indicated the method of performing it and laid down its rules and properties for the *ummah*.

Source of Purification From Sins And Forgiveness

(٤١٧/١٥) عَنْ عُثْمَانَ رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَنْ تَوَضَّأَ فَأَحْسَنَ الْوُضُوءَ خَرَجَتْ خَطَايَاهُ مِنْ جَسَدِهِ حَتَّى تَخْرُجَ مِنْ تَحْتِ أَظْفَارِهِ
(رواه البخاري ومسلم)

(417/15) It is related by Uthman رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Whoever performed wudu and performed it well (i.e., according to the prescribed rules) all his sins will go out, even from under his nails."
(Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: It shows that anyone who performs *wudu* properly (i.e., as taught by the Prophet ﷺ and in conformity with his own regular practice) and with the object of attaining purity not only will the dirt and grime be washed away from his body and the state

of inner uncleanness called Hads disappear, but the filthiness of the sins will also be removed from him, owing to its auspiciousness and besides purification from Hads, he will be cleansed of his sins as well.

(٤١٨/١٦) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا تَوَضَّأَ الْعَبْدُ الْمُسْلِمُ أَوْ الْمُؤْمِنُ لَغَسَلَ وَجْهَهُ خَرَجَ مِنْ وَجْهِهِ كُلُّ خَطِيئَةٍ نَظَرَ إِلَيْهَا بِعَيْنَيْهِ مَعَ الْمَاءِ أَوْ مَعَ آخِرِ قَطْرِ الْمَاءِ فَإِذَا غَسَلَ يَدَيْهِ خَرَجَ مِنْ يَدَيْهِ كُلُّ خَطِيئَةٍ كَانَ بَطَشَتْهَا يَدَاهُ مَعَ الْمَاءِ أَوْ مَعَ آخِرِ قَطْرِ الْمَاءِ فَإِذَا غَسَلَ رِجْلَيْهِ خَرَجَ كُلُّ خَطِيئَةٍ مَسَّتْهَا رِجْلَاهُ مَعَ الْمَاءِ أَوْ مَعَ آخِرِ قَطْرِ الْمَاءِ حَتَّى يَخْرُجَ نَقِيًّا مِنَ الذُّنُوبِ (رواه مسلم)

(418/16) It is related by Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "When a Muslim bondsman performs *wudu* and, during it, washes his face and pours water over it, all the sins he has committed with the eyes are removed from his face (i.e., are washed away) with the water; after it, when he washed his hands, all the sins he has committed with the hands are washed away from them; and, after it, when he washes his feet all the sins he has committed with the feet (i.e., by using them for that purpose) go out of them till by the time he has finished *wudu* he becomes completely purified from sin." (Muslim)

Commentary: A few points need to be clarified with reference to the above Traditions:

(i) In both of these Traditions the going out or washing away of the sins with the water used for *wudu* has been mentioned though the sins do not possess a visible or external impurity that can be removed by the use of water. Some commentators have explained it by saying that going out of sins simply signifies pardon and forgiveness while others hold that when a person commits a sin its unholy effects settle, at first, on the limbs with which he perpetrates it, and, then, in his heart. Afterwards, as in obedience to the command of Allah and in order to purify himself, he performs *wudu*, the foulness of the misdeeds he has been guilty of and the filthiness that has come to defile and contaminate his limbs as a result of it is washed away and the transgression are forgiven by

Allah. We, however, believe that the latter view conveys more accurately the sense and significance of the report.

(ii) In Abu Hurairah's narrative, only the removal of the sins of the eyes is mentioned in connection with the washing of the face in wudu though there are other organs, too, of the face, like the mouth and the tongue, and some sins are solely related to them. This is so because all the organs of ablution have not been enumerated in this Tradition, and the eyes, hands and feet have been referred to by the Prophet ﷺ, only by way of an Illustration. In another hadith, the other organs of the face are also mentioned.

(iii) It is stated in the Qur'an as well that good and virtuous deeds possess the quality of destroying evil deeds and blotting out their traces:

إِنَّ الْحَسَنَاتِ يُذْهِبْنَ السَّيِّئَاتِ (هود ١١:١١٤)

(Verily, good deed annul ill deeds (Hud, 11:114))

In the Traditions, the Prophet ﷺ has specifically mentioned that such-and-such a good deed nullifies sins, leads to forgiveness or becomes an atonement for them. A few of such Traditions have already been discussed in the earlier volume and more will be taken up later under various headings. In some of the Traditions, the Prophet ﷺ has also made it clear that only minor transgressions are forgiven owing the blessedness of virtuous acts, and, on the basis of it, *Ahl-us-sunnah*¹ hold that cleansing and purification from smaller misdeeds alone takes place through the auspiciousness of virtuous deeds. In the Qur'an, too, it is set forth:

إِنْ تَجْتَنِبُوا كَبَائِرَ مَا تُنْهَوْنَ عَنْهُ نَكْفِرْ عَنْكُمْ سَيِّئَاتِكُمْ (النساء ٤:٣١)

If ye avoid the great (things) which ye are forbidden, We will remit from you your (minor) evil deeds. (Al-Nisaa 4:31)

Anyway, only minor sins are meant when it is said in these Traditions that they are washed away when one performs *Wudu* properly. As for the major transgressions, these are a very serious matter and can be nullified only by the means of sincere repentance.

①. People of the Sunnah and the way of companions functioning as a body.

Wudu is The Key of All The Gates of Heaven

(٤١٩/١٧) عَنْ عُمَرَ بْنِ الْخَطَّابِ رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَا مِنْكُمْ مِنْ أَحَدٍ يَتَوَضَّأُ فَيُبَلِّغُ أَوْ فَيُسَبِّغُ الْوُضُوءَ ثُمَّ يَقُولُ أَشْهَدُ أَنْ لَا إِلَهَ إِلَّا اللَّهُ وَأَنَّ مُحَمَّدًا عَبْدُهُ وَرَسُولُهُ إِلَّا فُتِحَتْ لَهُ أَبْوَابُ الْجَنَّةِ الثَّمَانِيَةِ يَدْخُلُهَا مِنْ أَيِّهَا شَاءَ (رواه مسلم)

(419/17) It is related by Umar bin Khattab رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "whoever performs wudu and a complete wudu, and, after it, says: *Ash-hadu an laa ilaaha il-lal-laah wa ash-hadu an-na Mohammadan 'abduhu wa rasooluh* (I attest that there is no god save Allah and that Muhammad ﷺ is His bondsman and Messenger), all the eight gates of Heaven will open for him and he will be able to enter it by whatever gate he likes." (Muslim)

Commentary: Only the organs of ablution are, apparently, cleaned when one performs *wudu*. The faithful bondsman, as such, feels that though he has washed those organs in compliance with the command of Allah, the real impurity is that of the imperfection of faith, want of sincerity in action and evilness of conduct. When, with this awareness, the bondsman affirms his faith by reciting the Confessional Formula of unalloyed loyalty to Allah and implicit adherence to the Prophet ﷺ, Allah grants him complete forgiveness and all the gates of Paradise opens for him.

In another version of the same Tradition and quoted, also, in *Sahih Muslim* the words of the Confessional formula are given as follows:

Ash-hadu an laa ilaaha il-lal-laahu wahdahu laa sharika lahu wa ash-hadu an-na Mohammadan 'abduhu wa rasooluh (I attest that there is no god save Allah, One and without a partner, and I attest that Muhammad ﷺ is His bondsman and Prophet). In yet another version, quoted in *Tirmizi*, the following words are added after the Formula:

Allahummaj 'alni minat-tawwabeena waj' alni minal muta-tahhireen (O God! Make me one from among those who repent for their sins and from among those who keep themselves pure).

Effulgence of Organs of Wudu on Day of Resurrection

(٤٢٠/١٨) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِنَّ أُمَّتِي يُدْعَوْنَ يَوْمَ الْقِيَمَةِ غُرًّا مُحَجَّلِينَ مِنْ آثَارِ الْوُضُوءِ فَمَنْ اسْتَطَاعَ مِنْكُمْ أَنْ يَطِيلَ غُرَّتَهُ فَلْيَفْعَلْ
(رواه البخارى ومسلم)

(420/18) It is related by Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "When my followers will be summoned on the Day of Resurrection, their faces, hands and feet will be radiant with the effects of *wudu*. Thus, whoever (of you) can increase this radiance and make in perfect, he must do so."

(Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: In this world, the effect of *wudu* is only this much that the face, hands and feet become cleaner, and the enlightened ones also derive a special feeling of peace and happiness from it. But, as the Prophet ﷺ has said in this and many other Traditions, a propitious effect of it on the Day of Resurrection will be that the faces, hands and feet of his followers will give light, which will be their distinguishing mark in the Hereafter.

Moreover the more perfect one's *wudu* is, the greater will be the radiance. The Prophet ﷺ, therefore, has advised, at the end of the narrative, that everyone should strive to the utmost to perfect the effulgence by performing *wudu* thoroughly and well.

Complete And Faultless Wudu Despite Inconvenience

(٤٢١/١٩) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ آلا أَذُلُّكُمْ عَلَى مَا يَمْحُو اللَّهُ بِهِ الْخَطَايَا وَيَرْفَعُ بِهِ الدَّرَجَاتِ قَالُوا بَلَى يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ قَالَ إَسْبَاغُ الْوُضُوءِ عَلَى الْمَكَارِهِ وَكَثْرَةُ الْخُطَا إِلَى الْمَسَاجِدِ وَانْتِظَارُ الصَّلَاةِ بَعْدَ الصَّلَاةِ فَذَا لَكُمْ الرِّبَاطُ فَذَا لَكُمْ الرِّبَاطُ
(رواه مسلم)

(421/19) It is related by Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "May I tell you three things owing to the auspiciousness of which Allah removes sins and causes elevation in ranks?" "Do please", replied the Companions رضي الله عنهم. The Prophet ﷺ said: "(i) To perform *wudu* thoroughly despite

inconvenience; (ii) To bend one's steps more frequently towards the mosque; and (iii) To wait for the next prayer after offering one. This is the real *Ribat*,¹ the true *Ribat*." (Muslim)

Commentary: In this Tradition the Prophet ﷺ has laid stress on three things and told that these lead to the remission of sins and promotion in ranks.

Firstly, wudu should be performed thoroughly and it must not be cut short even if, for some reason, it may be a source of discomfort. For instance, it is winter and the water is cold or is not readily available in sufficient quantity and one has to go some distance to fetch it; in such a case to bear the hardship and perform the *Wudu* properly is an act of such a high merit that sins are forgiven as a result of it and elevation in ranks takes place.

Secondly, to go to the mosque regularly for offering up the prayers, and, evidently, the farther one lives, the greater will be the reward.

Thirdly, to wait eagerly for the next prayer. This, surely, will be the state of the bondsman whose heart derives peace and comfort from prayer, and who has been blessed, in some measure, with the feeling so eloquently expressed by the Prophet ﷺ in these few words: "The coolness of my eyes lies in prayer."

The word *ribat* occurring in the last sentence of the Tradition denotes "The detachment of soldiers stationed at the border for defence against an invasion by the enemy." Hence, it, probably, shows that these acts serve as defensive installations on the frontier against the assault by the devil.

Solicitude For *Wudu* is A Sign of Perfection of Faith

(٤٢٢/٢٠) عَنْ ثَوْبَانَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ اسْتَقِيمُوا وَلَنْ تُحْصُوا وَاعْلَمُوا أَنَّ خَيْرَ أَعْمَالِكُمُ الصَّلَاةُ وَلَا يُحَافِظُ عَلَى الْوُضُوءِ إِلَّا مُؤْمِنٌ

(رواه مالك و احمد و ابن ماجه و الدارمي)

(422/20) Thauban رضى الله عنه related to us that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Walk upright; remain steadfast on the Straight Path (but this steadfastness being very difficult), you will never be able to have a full control over it. (You should, therefore, always

①. Meaning outpost.

consider yourself at fault and blameworthy). And know well that the best deed among all your deeds is prayer (hence, pay the greatest attention to it), and only a truthful Believer can take full care of *wudu*." (Muwatta, Musnad Ahmad, Ibn Majah and Daarami)

Commentary: "Taking full care of *wudu*", occurring in the above Tradition, can mean performing it in the correct manner, as required by the sunnah well as remaining permanently in that state. Commentators say it signifies both. In any case, the Prophet ﷺ has, here, described concern for *wudu* and its observance as a sign of perfection in faith and the way of truthful Believers.

Wudu Upon Wudu

(١٢٣/٢١) عَنْ ابْنِ عُمَرَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَنْ تَوَضَّأَ عَلَى طَهْرٍ كُتِبَ لَهُ عَشْرُ حَسَنَاتٍ .
(رواه الترمذی)

(423/21) It is related by Ibn Umar ؓ that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Whoever performed *wudu* notwithstanding purity (i.e., although he was with *wudu*), ten good deeds will be written down for him." (Tirmizi)

Commentary: What it, apparently, denotes is that to perform a fresh *wudu* while the earlier one still holds good should not be considered futile. On the other hand, it is such a meritorious act that ten good deeds are written in the account of anyone who does so.

Some of the commentators have expressed the view that it appertains to the situation in which a worship for which *wudu* is necessary has been offered up with the earlier ablution. Otherwise, a fresh *wudu* should not be performed by anyone who performs *wudu* but does not offer any worship with it or do anything after which the renewal of *wudu* becomes essential or is preferable.

Harmful Effects of A Defective Wudu

(٤٢٤/٢٢) عَنْ شَيْبِ بْنِ أَبِي رَوْحٍ عَنْ رَجُلٍ مِنْ أَصْحَابِ رَسُولِ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ أَنَّ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ صَلَّى صَلَاةَ الصُّبْحِ فَقَرَأَ الرُّومَ فَالْتَبَسَ عَلَيْهِ فَلَمَّا صَلَّى قَالَ مَا بَالُ أَقْوَامٍ يُصَلُّونَ مَعَنَا لَا يُحْسِنُونَ

الطُّهُورَ وَ إِنَّمَا يَلْبِسُ عَلَيْنَا الْقُرْآنَ أَوْلَيْكَ . (رواه النسائي)

(424/22) It is related by Shabib bin Abi Rooh, on the authority of a Companion رضي الله عنه, the Messenger of Allah ﷺ once offered the *Fajr*¹ prayer in which, as he began reciting *Surah-Ar-Rum*, he fell in doubt (about its actual wording) and there was an interruption. When the prophet ﷺ had finished the prayer, he observed: 'How is it that some people join us in prayer but do not carry out purification (i.e., *wudu* etc) properly? These are the men who cause disturbance in our recitation of the Qur'an'."

(Nasai)

Commentary: It shows that harmful effects of failure to observe cleanliness and perform *wudu* etc, properly fall even on pure hearts, so much so that it can cause disturbance in the recitation of the Qur'an. When the blessed heart of the Prophet ﷺ could be affected to such an extent by the failings of others, one can imagine its effect on commoners like us. But since our hearts have grown insensitive owing to persistent negligence we do not feel these things.

MISWAK

One of the things upon which the holy Prophet ﷺ has laid special stress in relation to cleanliness and purification is *Miswak*¹. He is even reported to have remarked, once, "but for the fear of adding to the hardship of my followers I would have ordered them to use miswak at each prayer time."

The medical advantages of using miswak regularly and the protection it gives against a number of diseases are now common knowledge. From the religious point of view, however, its importance lies in being highly pleasing to Allah.

Importance

(٢٢٥/٢٣) عَنْ عَائِشَةَ قَالَتْ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ السِّوَاكُ
مَطَهْرَةٌ لِلْفَمِ مَرْضَاةٌ لِلرَّبِّ .

(رواه الشافعي احمد والدارمي والنسائي وروى البخاري في صحيحه بلا اسناد.)

(225/23) It is related by Sayyidah Ayshah رضي الله عنها that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "*Miswak* cleans the mouth thoroughly and is (also) greatly pleasing to the Lord."

(Daarami and Nasai)

Commentary: There are two aspects of goodness in every thing: one which is beneficial from the worldly point of view and is considered agreeable by the people, on the whole, and the other which is pleasing to Allah and a source of reward in Hereafter. The above Tradition tells that *Miswak* possesses both the qualities. It cleans the mouth and removes bad odour; these are its ready material advantages. The other heavenly and eternal benefit is that it is a unique means of earning the good pleasure of the Lord.

1. A twig or tender shoot of the branch of a tree which was, generally, used by the Arabs for brushing the teeth in the olden days and a number of Muslims do so even today.

(٤٢٦/٢٤) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ عَنِ النَّبِيِّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ قَالَ لَوْلَا أَنْ أَشَقُّ

عَلَى أُمَّتِي لَأَمَرْتَهُمْ بِالسَّوَاكِ عِنْدَ كُلِّ صَلَاةٍ (رواه البخاري ومسلم، واللفظ لمسلم)

(426/24) It is related by Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "If I did not fear that my followers would be put to much hardship, I would have made it compulsory for them to use *miswak* at every prayer-time." (Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: The above Tradition tells that seeing the advantages of miswak and the liking Allah has for it, the Prophet ﷺ wanted to make it obligatory for the Muslims to use it at every prayer-time but if he did not do so it was simply because he felt it would add to their difficulty and many people would not find it easy to observe it.

On further consideration, it, also, is a most effective way of persuasion and exhortation.

(٢٢٧/٢٥) عَنْ أَبِي أُمَامَةَ أَنَّ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ قَالَ مَا جَاءَنِي

جِبْرِيلُ عَلَيْهِ السَّلَامُ قَطُّ إِلَّا أَمَرَنِي بِالسَّوَاكِ لَقَدْ خَشِيتُ أَنْ أَحْفِيَ مُقَدِّمَ فِيَّ

(رواه احمد)

(227/25) It is related by Abu Umamah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Whenever Jibril, the Angel of Allah, came to me, he invariably told me about miswak. I fear that (as a result of constant exhortation by Jibril) I might abrade the front part of my mouth by using miswak all the time." (Musnad Ahmad)

Commentary: The repeated urging by Jibril was, in fact, at the behest of Allah, the idea being that it was particularly essential for a person who was constantly in communion with Allah and engaged in paying homage to Him and to whom His Angel used to come frequently and who had made the recitation of the Divine Word and its preaching and propagation the sole aim and mission of his life that he took exceptional care to keep his mouth clean. It was for that reason that the sacred Prophet ﷺ used miswak much and often.

Special Occasions

(٤٢٨/٢٦) عَنْ عَائِشَةَ قَالَتْ كَانَ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ لَا يَرُقُّدُ مِنْ لَيْلٍ

وَلَا نَهَارٍ فَيَسْتَقِظُ إِلَّا تَسَوَّكَ قَبْلَ أَنْ يَتَوَضَّأَ . (رواه احمد و ابو داؤد)

(428/26) Sayyidah Ayshah رضى الله عنها related to us that the usual practice of the Messenger of Allah ﷺ was that whenever he slept, during the day or the night, on waking from sleep and before performing *wudu*, he used the *miswak*. (Abu Dawood)

(٤٢٩/٢٧) عَنْ حُذَيْفَةَ قَالَ كَانَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا قَامَ

لِلتَّهَجُّدِ مِنَ اللَّيْلِ يَشُوصُ فَاةً بِالسِّوَاكِ . (رواه بخارى و مسلم)

(429/27) Huzaifah رضى الله عنه narrated that it was the custom of the Messenger of Allah ﷺ to clean his mouth thoroughly with *miswak* when he got up in the night for *Tahajjud* prayer.

(Bukhari and Muslim)

(٤٣٠/٢٨) عَنْ شُرَيْحِ بْنِ هَانِيٍّ قَالَ سَأَلْتُ عَائِشَةَ بِأَيِّ شَيْءٍ كَانَ يَبْدَأُ رَسُولُ

اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا دَخَلَ بَيْتَهُ قَالَتْ بِالسِّوَاكِ . (رواه مسلم)

(430/28) It is related by Shuraih bin Hani, "(Once) I enquired from Sayyidah Ayshah رضى الله عنها what was the first thing the Messenger of Allah ﷺ did on returning home from anywhere. She replied: 'First of all, he used *miswak*'." (Muslim)

Commentary: The above Traditions tell that the Prophet ﷺ used to bursh his teeth with *miswak* whenever he rose from bed, specially at night for *Tahajjud*. It was, also, the first thing he did not coming back from any place. We, thus, learn that *miswak* is not related to *wudu* alone but it should be used habitually on rising and even before *wudu* if a long time has elapsed since one had cleansed the teeth. These reports have led the theologists to conclude that though it is commendable and pleasing to Allah to use *miswak* at all times, five occasions specially call for it: (i) on performing *wudu*; (ii) at the time of standing up for prayer (if a long time has passed since the last *wudu* and prayer; (iii) while reciting the Qur'an; (iv) on rising from bed; and (v) when bad odour has been produced in the mouth or the colour of teeth has changed.

Miswak is the Sunnah of Prophets عليهم السلام

(٤٣١/٢٩) عَنْ أَبِي أَيُّوبَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ أَرْبَعٌ مِنْ

سُنَنَ الْمُرْسَلِينَ الْحَيَاءُ وَالتَّعَطُّرُ وَالسِّوَاكُ وَالنِّكَاحُ . (رواه الترمذی)

(431/29) Abu Ayyub Ansari رضی اللہ عنہ reported that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said, "Four characteristics pertain to the practices of the Messengers عليهم السلام: modesty, use of perfume, use of miswak and marriage." (Tirmizi)

Commentary: The Holy Prophet ﷺ exhorted the Ummah to observe these four characteristics which pertain to Allah's Messengers عليهم السلام. We have already spoken about modesty in the relevant chapter. We shall write on marriage later in this book. Use of perfume is indeed a good habit and gives man a particular spiritual activity and enlightenment.

Ten Personal Characteristics

(٤٣٢/٣٠) عَنْ عَائِشَةَ قَالَتْ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ عَشْرٌ مِنَ

الْفِطْرَةِ قَصُّ الشَّارِبِ وَإِغْفَاءُ اللَّحْيَةِ وَالسِّوَاكُ وَاسْتِنْسَاقُ الْمَاءِ وَقَصُّ

الْأَظْفَارِ وَغَسْلُ الْبَرَاجِمِ وَتَنْفُ الْإِبطِ وَحَلْقُ الْعَانَةِ وَإِنْتِقَاصُ الْمَاءِ قَالَ ذَكَرَ يَا

قَالَ مَضَعَبٌ وَنَسِيتُ الْعَاشِرَةَ إِلَّا أَنْ تَكُونَ الْمَضْمَضَةُ . (رواه مسلم)

(432/30) It is related on the authority of Sayyidah Ayshah رضی اللہ عنہا that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Ten things are among natural acts: cutting (or tirmming) of moustaches; growing of beard; brushing of teeth with *miswak*; snuffing water into the nose and cleaning it; washing of phalanges of fingers; plucking of the hair of armpits; removal of the hair under the navel; and purification with water after a natural evacuation." The narrator, Zakaria, tells that his mentor, Saheikh Mus'ab, had mentioned only those nine things and said that he had forgotten the tenth, but believed that it was the rising of the mouth. (Muslim)

Commentary: These ten items have been described in the above Tradition as Min-Al-fitrah (meaning among the natural acts) but some authorities say that Al fitrah here means the Sunnah, i.e., the confirmed practice of the the Messengers عليهم السلام and they are strengthened in their view by the fact that in *Mistakhraj* Abu Uwanah's account of the Tradition, the word sunnah has been used in place of fitrah. According to them, the way of Messengers عليهم السلام has been characterised as fitrah because it ideally conforms to

nature. Hence, this Tradition would mean that the ten points formed a part of the way of life led by the Prophets عليهم السلام and prescribed by them for their followers.

Some commentators have, further, held that Al-fitrah, in it, signifies *Deen-i-Fitrah* (the Natural Religion) i.e., Islam. In the Qur'an, Faith has been described as Nature. It is started in Surah-i-Rum:

فَاقِمْ وَجْهَكَ لِلدِّينِ حَنِيفًا فِطْرَتَ اللَّهِ الَّتِي فَطَرَ النَّاسَ عَلَيْهَا لَا تَبْدِيلَ لِخَلْقِ
اللَّهِ ذَلِكَ الدِّينُ الْقَيِّمُ
(الروم ٣٠ : ٣٥)

So set thy purpose for religion as a man by nature upright — the nature (framed) by Allah — in which He hath created man. There is no altering (the laws of) Allah's creation. That is the right religion. (Al-Rum 35:30)

It would, in that case, mean that the ten things are among the tenets of the Islamic faith.

It is, again, suggested that Al-fitrah denotes human nature. The above saying would, thus, show that the ten points conform to the instinctive human behaviour as fashioned and designed by Allah. Just as it is natural for man to feel attracted to faith, virtue, cleanliness and purity, and to find infidelity, lewdness and filthiness abhorrent and repulsive, he; also, instinctively likes these ten things (provided that his natural inward impulses have not been prevented by external influences), and, as all enlightened people will agree, the faith and way of life the Prophets عليهم السلام bring with them is nothing but an authentic and disciplined elucidation of human instincts and desires.

Writes Shah Waliullah رحمه الله عليه: "The ten acts which, in fact, belong to the realm of purity and cleanliness and attributed to Sayyidina Ibrahim عليه السلام, the founder and progenitor of Millet Hanafia¹, and have, generally, been current in all the Hanafi communities. They have believed in them and observed them in daily life. For centuries they have been living and dying in compliance with these things. That is why, they are called fitrah, i.e., Nature and are the regular practices of Millet Hanafi². It is

①. Meaning a community that is committed exclusively to Allah.

②. Same is Millet-i-Hanfia.

necessary for every community to have some definite and well-known characteristics which are so clear that it can be recognised through them, and, also, taken to task for negligence in their regard so that faithfulness and faithlessness of the community can be determined easily. Moreover, it is advisable that the distinguishing features are such that they are not rare, and are, also, manifestly beneficial, and the people's minds accept them unreservedly. Allah these aspects are present in these things. One should ponder over the following points in order to appreciate its meaning:

"By the growth of the hair that are peculiar to some parts of the human body the sound and wholesome nature of a cleanliness-loving man of good taste feels the same kind of revulsion and uneasiness as in the state of Hadith i.e., when some foul matter is discharged from the body. Such is the case with the hair growing in the armpit and under the navel. Hence, by removing it, a right-minded person feels a sort of relief and cheerfulness as if it is a special claim of his nature. The same is true of the nails, and the position of the beard is that it distinguishes between a grown-up man and a youth and it is the pride and ornament of men and marks the completion of their manly form and appearance, and to grow it, also, is the confirmed practice of the Messengers. It is, therefore, obligatory to grow the beard¹, and to shave it off is the characteristic of non Muslim communities, like the fire-worshippers and the Hindus. Moreover, as people of lower-rank and having a vulgar taste do not, generally, grow the beard, not to grow it is to bring oneself down to their level.

"And the distinct harm in growing the moustaches and keeping them long is that whatever is eaten or drunk comes into contact with them if these are long enough to reach the mouth and the way of nasal discharge is, also, the same. Cleanliness, therefore, demands that moustaches should not be too long and it is for that

①. In many Traditions the command to grow the beard has been given explicitly and in the imperative mood form which the theologistic have inferred that it is essential. But in no Tradition has its length been specified. The jurists, however, have concluded through the process of evidence and reasoning that it should be grown upto the length of a fist.

reason that one is required to keep them trimmed. The need and importance of rinsing the mouth and cleaning the nose with water after a natural evacuation and the washing of the phalanges of fingers where the grime collects is self-evident from the point of view of cleanliness and purification."¹

In the view of some theologists, the above Tradition, further, enunciates the principle that cleanliness of the body, taking care of one's appearance and keeping away from or getting rid of anything that excites the feelings of disgust and aversion is the law of nature and the way of the Messengers عليهم السلام.

This hadith has been narrated by Abdullah bin Zubayr ؓ who heard it from his aunt Sayyidah Ayshah رضى الله عنها, Talqq bin Habib transmitted it from him and Mus'ab bin Shaybah reported it from him. Zakaria bin Abu Za'idah was his student and he transmitted the hadith from him, saying that the hadith from him, he had forgotten the tenth characteristic but believed it might be rising the mouth.

Miswak Adds to The Value of Namaz

(٤٣٣/٣١) عَنْ عَائِشَةَ قَالَتْ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ تَفْضُلُ

الصَّلَاةُ الَّتِي يُسْتَاكُ لَهَا عَلَى الصَّلَاةِ الَّتِي لَا يُسْتَاكُ لَهَا سَبْعِينَ ضِعْفًا .

(رواه البيهقي في شعب الإيمان)

(433/31) It is related by Sayyidah Ayshah رضى الله عنها that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "The prayer of which *miswak* is done is seventy times superior to the prayer offered without *miswak*." (Baihaqi)

Commentary: In the Arabic language and idiom, as we have remarked previously, the figure of seventy, like some other figures, is used to denote excess or profusion. Here, too, it has, probably, been employed in the same sense. The above Tradition will, thus, mean that prayer which is offered after cleaning the teeth with *miswak* is of a much higher value than the one celebrated without it.

When a bondsman decides to present himself in the audience of the King of Kings and to glorify Him and hold communion with Him through prayer and imagines that His Glory and

①. Hujjat.

Magnificence demands that the tongue should be washed with musk and rose water before uttering this name, but as, out of Mercy, the Lord of Lords has enjoined only the miswak, he is using it, is it not fitting that Prayer for which miswak is used with those sentiments of reverence and deep tenderness should be those sentiments of reverence and deep tenderness should be seventy times, or even more, superior to the one offered without it.

This hadith is also transmitted by Ahmad, Bazzar, Abu Ya'la, Ibn Khazimah, Hakim as mentioned in Targhib. Another hadith of the same purport is transmitted by Abdullah bin Abbas رضي الله عنه and Jabir رضي الله عنه.

WUDU

Among the instructions given by the holy Prophet ﷺ concerning cleanliness and purification there are some like those appertaining to *Istinja* cleanliness of the body and dress, and purity and impurity of water that are of general and all-time application and other which are related exclusively to prayer and can be described as its pre-requisites. The command of *wudu* belongs to the latter category. Says the Qur'an:

”إِذَا قُمْتُمْ إِلَى الصَّلَاةِ فَاغْسِلُوا وُجُوهَكُمْ وَأَيْدِيَكُمْ إِلَى الْمَرَافِقِ وَامْسَحُوا بِرُءُوسِكُمْ وَأَرْجُلَكُمْ إِلَى الْكَعْبَيْنِ ۝“
(المائدة ٦:٥)

When you rise up for prayer, wash your faces, and your hands up to the elbows, and lightly rub your heads and (wash) your feet up to the ankles. (Al-Ma'idah 5:6)

To be with *wudu* is, thus, an essential condition of this unique form of presence in the Court of the Almighty and of holding communion with Him. Whoever is not with *wudu* (i.e., is in the state of *Hads*) must perform ablution before offering up prayer.

No Prayer Without Wudu

(٤٣٤/٣٢) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ لَا تُقْبَلُ صَلَاةٌ مَنْ أَحْدَثَ حَتَّى يَتَوَضَّأَ.
(رواه البخارى و مسلم)

(434/32) It is related by Abu Hurayrah ؓ that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Whoever is not with *wudu*, his prayer shall not be accepted until he performs the *wudu*." (Bukhari and Muslim)

(٤٣٥/٣٣) عَنْ ابْنِ عُمَرَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ لَا تُقْبَلُ صَلَاةٌ بِغَيْرِ طَهْوَرٍ وَلَا صَدَقَةٍ مِنْ غُلُولٍ
(رواه مسلم)

(435/33) It is related on the authority of Abdullah bin Umar رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "No prayer can be accepted without purification and no *Sadaqah*¹ can be accepted which is given away from goods that are acquired illegitimately." (Muslim)

(٤٣٦/٣٤) عَنْ عَلِيٍّ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مِفْتَاحُ الصَّلَاةِ الطُّهُورُ وَتَحْرِيمُهَا التَّكْبِيرُ وَتَحْلِيلُهَا التَّسْلِيمُ.

(رواه ابو داؤد والترمذى والدارمى ورواه ابن ماجه عنه و عن ابى سعيد)

(436/34) It is narrated by Sayyidina Ali رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "The key to prayer is purification on (wudu), its *tahrim* (prohibition) is the *takbir* (that is, when anyone begins the prayer with *Allahu Akbar* the other permitted things are forbidden to him, like talking, eating, and drinking etc.). And its *Tahlil* (permission) is to end prayer with *as-salamu alaykum wa rahmatul Allah* (when all these things which he was forbidden during prayer become allowed to him).

(Abu Dawood, Tirmizi, Daarami, Ibn majah.)

(٤٣٧/٣٥) عَنْ جَابِرٍ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مِفْتَاحُ الْجَنَّةِ الصَّلَاةُ وَ مِفْتَاحُ الصَّلَاةِ الطُّهُورُ

(رواه احمد)

(437/35) It is related by Jabir رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "The key to Heaven is prayer and the key of prayer is ablution." (Musnad-i-Ahmad)

Commentary: In these two hadith, ablution has been described as the key of prayer showing that just as no one can enter a locked house without opening the lock with the key so, also, it is not possible to gain admission to prayer without wudu. All these reports denote, with a slight variation of words, that ablution is a necessary of offering prayer worthy of acceptance. Since prayer is the highest form of presence before Allah and of paying divine honours, respect and regard for it would demand that the command to take a bath and wear a good, clean dress was given for every prayer but as it would have entailed much hardship, Allah in His Infinite Kindness, has enjoined only this much that prayer should be offered in clean clothes and with wudu in which all the visible

organs that have a special place in the physical structure of man and can be said to symplolise the whole of the body get washed. Moreover, hands, feet, face and head are the parts that, generally, remain uncovered, and, hence, these alone are required to be washed or rubbed lightly in *wudu*.

The bondsmen who normally experience the dullness of spirit and uneasiness that is the characteristic of the state of Hadth and the feeling of freshness and effulgence which is produced on performing the ablution know well why *wudu* has been prescribed as an essential preparation for offering prayer. But this much even we, the common people, can realise that it is a solemn act of prepartion of presenting oneself in the Court of the Supreme Being. People who perform *wudu* even with this little awareness will, Insha Allah, feel a rare joy and effulgence in it.

Method

(٤٣٨/٣٦) عَنْ عُثْمَانَ أَنَّهُ تَوَضَّأَ فَافْرَغَ عَلَى يَدَيْهِ ثَلَاثًا ثُمَّ تَمَضَّمَصَ وَاسْتَنْشَرَ ثُمَّ غَسَلَ وَجْهَهُ ثَلَاثًا ثُمَّ غَسَلَ يَدَهُ الْيُمْنَى إِلَى الْمِرْفَقِ ثَلَاثًا ثُمَّ غَسَلَ يَدَهُ الْيُسْرَى إِلَى الْمِرْفَقِ ثَلَاثًا ثُمَّ مَسَحَ بِرَأْسِهِ ثُمَّ غَسَلَ رِجْلَهُ الْيُمْنَى ثَلَاثًا ثُمَّ الْيُسْرَى ثَلَاثًا ثُمَّ قَالَ رَأَيْتُ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ تَوَضَّأَ نَحْوَ وَضُوءِي هَذَا ثُمَّ قَالَ مَنْ تَوَضَّأَ وَضُوءِي هَذَا ثُمَّ يُصَلِّي رَكَعَتَيْنِ لَا يُحْدِثُ نَفْسَهُ فِيهِمَا بِشَيْءٍ غُفِرَ لَهُ مَا تَقَدَّمَ مِنْ ذَنْبِهِ (رواه البخارى و مسلم و اللفظ للبخارى)

(438/36) It is related by Sayyidina Uthman ؓ that, once, he performed *wudu* in this manner that, first, he poured water over the palms of both his hands thrice, and, after it, rinsed his mouth and washed his nose by snuffing in water, and, then, blowing it out. Then, he washed his face thrice, and, after it, washed his right arm up to the elbow three times, and, then, in the same way, washed his left arm up to the elbow three times. Then, he passed his wet hand over his head and washed his right foot up to the ankle thrice, and, then, his left foot, in the same way, up to the ankle thrice. (After thus performing *wudu*) he remarked: "I saw the Messenger of Allah ﷺ performing *wudu* exactly as I have done just now, and I heard him say: 'Whoever preforms

wudu in this manner and, after it, offers two *Raka't*¹ of prayer which remains free from promptings of the self (i.e. during which he does not think of anything not related to prayer), all his previous sins are forgiven." (Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: The Prophet's ﷺ method of performing *Wudu* described, or, rather, demonstrated by Sayyidina Uthman ؓ here is the most perfect way of carrying out ablution. About rinsing the mouth and cleaning the nose with water it has not been specified in it as to how many times he did that, but in some other accounts of the same event it is clearly stated that these, too, were done thrice.

It is not necessary that the two *Rak'at* of prayer the offering of which with due reservance and humility is mentioned in the above narrative are optional prayers but if one is fortunate enough to offer, after performing wudu as ordained by Alah, even a *Fard*² or *Sunnah*³ prayer free from "conversation with the self", i.e., during which distracting thoughts do not crowd the mind, he will, *Insha Allah*, gain the forgiveness promised in this report.

Commentators and godly men with an evolved spiritual awareness and insight have remarked that "conversation with the self" denotes the creeping of stray thoughts into the mind to the extent that the heart gets engrossed in them. There is, nevertheless, no harm if a doubt or an outside idea crops in the mind at the time of prayer but does not absorb the devotee's attention and he tries earnestly to shut it out or to drive it away. It happens even to those who are perfect in faith.

(٣٣٩/٣٧) عَنْ أَبِي حَيَّةَ قَالَ رَأَيْتُ عَلِيًّا تَوَضَّأَ فَغَسَلَ كَفَّيْهِ حَتَّى انْقَا هُمَا ثُمَّ مَضَمَضَ ثَلَاثًا وَاسْتَشَقَّ ثَلَاثًا وَغَسَلَ وَجْهَهُ ثَلَاثًا وَذِرَاعَيْهِ ثَلَاثًا وَمَسَحَ بِرَأْسِهِ مَرَّةً ثُمَّ غَسَلَ قَدَمَيْهِ إِلَى الْكَعْبَيْنِ ثُمَّ قَامَ فَاتَّخَذَ فَضْلَ طُهُورِهِ فَشَرِبَهُ وَهُوَ قَائِمٌ ثُمَّ قَالَ أَحَبُّتُ أَنْ أُرِيَكُمْ كَيْفَ كَانَ طُهُورُ رَسُولِ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ.
(رواه العرمذى والنسائى)

(339/37) Abu Haiyyah narrated "I saw Sayyidina Ali ؓ. He

-
- ①. Prayer consists of a number of cyclic parts each ending with two prostrations. These parts are known as *Raka'ah* (pl. *Raka't*).
 - ②. Obligatory Prayers.
 - ③. The kind of prayer the Prophet offered aside of the Obligatory Prayers and desired his followers to do the same.

performed *wudu* in this manner; first, he washed the palms of his hands thoroughly till he had cleansed them completely; then, he rinsed his mouth thrice; then, he snuffed water in his nose thrice; then he washed his face and both arms (up to the elbows) thrice; then he passed his wet hands over the head once; and, then, he washed both the feet up to the ankles thrice. After it, he got up and drank, in the standing position, the water left in the vesse after *wudu*. Later, when he had completed *wudu* before us in this way, he remarked: 'I thought I would show you how the Messenger of Allah ﷺ used to perform *wudu*.'

(Tirmizi and Nassai)

Commentary: As we have learnt from the afore-mentioned narratives of Sayyidina Uthman ؓ and Sayyidna Ali ؓ, the Prophet ﷺ, generally, washed the parts that were to be washed in *wudu* three times, but he did the *Masah*¹ of the head only once. It, also, sometimes, happened that he washed the organs of *wudu* only once or twice with the object of indicating that the ablution could be performed that way as well. In the terminology of the jurists it is called bay fawaz (i.e., to make clear or show publicly the permission or lawfulness of a thing). It is, further, possible that the Prophet ﷺ, at certain times, did so owing to the scarcity of water. Allah knows best.

(٤٤٠/٣٨) عَنْ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ عَبَّاسٍ قَالَ تَوَضَّأَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ

وَسَلَّمَ مَرَّةً مَرَّةً لَمْ يَزِدْ عَلَى هَذَا . (رواه البخارى)

(440/38) It is related by Abdullah bin Abbas ؓ, "(One day) the Messenger of Allah ﷺ performed *wudu* by washing the parts only once (and) no more." (Bukhari)

(٤٤١/٣٩) عَنْ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ زَيْدٍ أَنَّ النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ تَوَضَّأَ مَرَّتَيْنِ

مَرَّتَيْنِ (رواه البخارى)

(441/39) It is related by Abdullah bin Zaid bin 'Asim ؓ "(Once) the Messenger of Allah ﷺ performed *wudu* by washing the parts twice." (Bukhari)

Commentary: As for washing the parts only once or twice, the Prophet ﷺ did so, as explained earlier, merely to show that *wudu*

①. Act of passing wet hands over a part of the body with a view to cleaning it.

could, also, be performed like that or else his usual practice was to wash the hands, forearms and face and feet thrice, and he taught his followers to do the same. It is the better and *masnun* method of performing the ablution. The Tradition that follows elucidates the matter.

(٤٤٢/٤٠) عَنْ عَمْرِو بْنِ شُعَيْبٍ عَنْ أَبِيهِ عَنْ جَدِّهِ قَالَ جَاءَ أَغْرَابِيٌّ إِلَى النَّبِيِّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَسْأَلُ عَنِ الْوُضُوءِ فَأَرَاهُ ثَلَاثًا ثُمَّ قَالَ هَكَذَا الْوُضُوءُ فَمَنْ زَادَ عَلَى هَذَا فَقَدْ آسَأَ وَتَعَدَّى وَظَلَمَ . (رواه النسائي و ابن ماجه)

(442/40) Amr bin Shu'ayb quoted his father on the authority of his grandfather that a nomad Arab came to the prophet ﷺ and asked him about ablution. He demonstrated it to him, performing each detail three times (that is, those organs that are washed) and then said, "This is how *wudu* is performed. If anyone does more than this, he has done wrong, transgressed and done wickedly." (Nasa'i, Ibn Majah)

Commentary: The Prophet ﷺ has disallowed anyone to wash any part of the body more than three times implying that it is enough to obtain cleanliness that one wash his limbs three times. If anyone increases the number then he, as it were, suggests amendment to the *Shari'ah* and shows boldness.

(٤٤٣/٤١) عَنْ ابْنِ عُمَرَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَنْ تَوَضَّأَ وَاحِدَةً فَبَلَكَ وَطَيْفَةَ الْوُضُوءِ الَّتِي لَا بُدَّ مِنْهَا وَمَنْ تَوَضَّأَ اثْنَيْنِ فَلَهُ كِفْلَانِ وَمَنْ تَوَضَّأَ ثَلَاثًا فَذَلِكَ وَضُوءِي وَوُضُوءُ الْأَنْبِيَاءِ مِنْ قَبْلِي . (رواه احمد)

(443/41) It is related by Abdullah bin Umar ؓ that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Whoever washes the parts only once in wudu, it is the grade of wudu from which there is no escape (i.e., no *wudu* can be performed unless it is done), and whoever washes the parts twice will receive a two fold reward (as compared to him who washed the parts one time only), and whoever washes the parts thrice (which is better and *masnun*), then it is my *wudu* and the *wudu* of the Messengers before me (i.e., my method of performing *wudu* is to wash the parts three times over and the Messenger of Allah ﷺ who were raised up earlier, also, did the same)." (Musnad Ahmad)

Commentary: The above Tradition belongs to *Musnad Ahmad*. Another report also in it says "one day the Prophet ﷺ performed *wudu* before us in which he washed the parts only once and observed that it was the *wudu* of the lowest grade without which no one's prayer could find acceptance with Allah; then, he performed *wudu* before us in which he washed the part two times and observed that it would fetch twice as much reward as the former kind of *wudu*; and, then, he performed *wudu* before us in which he washed the parts thrice and observed that it was his *wudu* and the *wudu* of the Messengers عليهم السلام who preceded him." This report has also been reproduced in *Dar Qutni, Baihaqi, Ibn Hibban and Ibn Majah*.

Sunnah And Properties

In *wudu*, only the four acts mentioned in the verse of *Surah Al-Maidah* we have seen earlier are obligatory, i.e., washing of the face, washing of the arms up to the elbows, passing of wet hands over the head and washing of the feet upto the ankles. Apart from these, the other things the Prophet ﷺ did or exhorted others to do are known as the *sunnah*¹ and properties of *wudu* that carry it to both inward and outward perfection. These, for instance, are washing of the face, arms and feet, not once but thrice, passing the fingers through the beard and in between each-other and the toes, moving the rings, if it is worn, round the finger so that there remains no doubt about the water getting under it, rinsing the mouth and snuffing water in the nose, passing wet hands over the external and internal parts of the ears and reciting *Bismillah* at the beginning and the *Kalima* of Affirmation at the end of *wudu*, and, also, the supplication at its conclusion.

(٤٤٤/٤٢) عَنْ سَعِيدِ بْنِ زَيْدٍ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ لَا

وُضُوءَ لِمَنْ لَمْ يَذْكُرِ اسْمَ اللَّهِ عَلَيْهِ . (رواه الترمذی و ابن ماجه)

(444/42) It is related by Sa'eed bin Zayd ؓ that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Whoever performed *wudu* without taking the name of Allah, he performed *wudu*." (Tirmizi and Ibn Majah)

Commentary: According to the majority of legistis, *wudu* which

①. Meaning acts and observances mentioned by the practice of the Prophet

is performed hurriedly and without taking the name of Allah will be defective and lustreless and the forbidding of a defective thing by declaring it void is a habitual mode of expression in the Traditions. We have had the occasion to discuss the point at some length in the *Kitab Al-Iman*.

In the Tradition coming immediately after it, it is distinctly stated that wudu performed without taking the name of Allah is most faulty and imperfect in its inner lusture and effectiveness, though not wholly futile.

(٤٤٥/٤٣) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ وَابْنِ مَسْعُودٍ وَابْنِ عُمَرَ أَنَّ النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ قَالَ مَنْ تَوَضَّأَ وَذَكَرَ اسْمَ اللَّهِ فَإِنَّهُ يُطَهِّرُ جَسَدَهُ كُلَّهُ وَمَنْ تَوَضَّأَ وَلَمْ يَذْكُرْ اسْمَ اللَّهِ لَمْ يُطَهِّرْ إِلَّا مَوْضِعَ الْوُضُوءِ . (رواه الدار قطنی)

(445/43) It is related on the authority of Abu Hurayrah رضی اللہ عنہ and Ibn Masood رضی اللہ عنہ that the Prophet ﷺ said, "Whoever performs wudu taking the name of Allah, the wudu purifies his whole body, and whoever performs wudu and does not take the name of Allah, wudu purifies only the parts washed." (Dar Qutni)

Commentary: It shows that when wudu is performed with the name of Allah, i.e., reciting *Bismillah* or any other formula of God-remembrance, the whole body is purified and becomes radiant, and when it is performed without it, only the parts that are washed are purified; in other words, it is a wudu of a very poor quality.

(٤٤٦/٤٤) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَا أَبَاهُ هُرَيْرَةَ إِذَا تَوَضَّأْتَ فَقُلْ بِسْمِ اللَّهِ وَالْحَمْدُ لِلَّهِ فَإِنْ حَفِظْتَكَ لَا تَبْرَحُ تَكْتُبُ لَكَ الْحَسَنَاتِ حَتَّى تُحْدِثَ مِنْ ذَلِكَ الْوُضُوءِ . (رواه الطبرانی فی الصغير)

(446/44) It is reported by Abu Hurayrah رضی اللہ عنہ that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said, "O Abu Hurayrah, when you perform ablution say بِسْمِ اللَّهِ (*Bismillah*) and الْحَمْدُ لِلَّهِ (*Al Hamdu Lillah*). As long as you retain the wudu, your guarding angels (who record your deeds) will go on writting piety to your credit." (Tabarani).

Commnetary: This hadith tells us that as long as a person's ablution is retained the angels will write down for him pious deed

provided he had recited Bismillah and Al-Hamdulillah while performing ablution.

(٤٤٧/٤٥) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا لَبِسْتُمْ وَإِذَا تَوَضَّأْتُمْ وَقَابَدْتُمْ بِمَيِّمَتِكُمْ .
(رواه احمد و ابو داود)

(447/45) Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه has narrated that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "When you wear a dress or perform *wudu*, begin with the organs on the right side of your body."

(Musnad Ahmad and Abu Dawood)

Commentary: It tells that when a person puts on clothes, shoes or socks he should first on the right side, and if he performs ablution, the washing of the parts should also be commenced from the right side.

(٤٤٨/٤٦) عَنْ لَقَيْطِ بْنِ صَبْرَةَ قُلْتُ يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ أَخْبِرْنِي عَنِ الْوُضُوءِ قَالَ أَسْبِغِ الْوُضُوءَ وَخَلِّلْ بَيْنَ الْأَصَابِعِ وَبَالِغٌ فِي الْأَسْتِنْشَاقِ إِلَّا أَنْ تَكُونَ صَائِمًا
(رواه ابو داود و الترمذی و النسائي)

(448/46) Laqeet bin Sabirah related to us that (once) he asked the Messenger of Allah ﷺ to tell him about *wudu* (i.e., particular). The Prophet ﷺ replied: "(One), perform *wudu* thoroughly and well (i.e., ensuring that nothing is left wanting), and, (secondly) pass the fingers in between them and the toes while washing them, and, (thirdly), clean the nostrils properly by drawing the water deep in them except when you are keeping fasting (i.e., do not draw in much water if you are fasting).

(Abu Dawood, Tirmizi and Nasai)

(٤٤٩/٤٧) عَنِ الْمُسْتَوْرِدِ بْنِ شَدَّادٍ قَالَ رَأَيْتُ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا تَوَضَّأَ يَذُلُّكَ أَصَابِعَ رِجْلَيْهِ بِخَنْصَرِهِ
(رواه الترمذی و ابو داود و ابن ماجه)

(449/47) Mustaurid bin Shaddad رضي الله عنه narrated to us "I saw the Messenger of Allah ﷺ when he performed *wudu* he used to rub the toes (i.e., the space between them) with his little finger."

(Tirmizi, Abu Dawood and Ibn Majah)

(٤٥٠/٤٨) عَنْ أَنَسٍ قَالَ كَانَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا تَوَضَّأَ

أَخَذَ كَفًّا مِنْ مَاءٍ فَأَدْخَلَهُ تَحْتَ خَنْكَهَ فَخَلَّلَ بِهِ لِحْيَتَهُ وَقَالَ هَكَذَا أَمَرَنِي رَبِّي

(رواه أبو داود)

(450/48) Sayyidina Anas رضي الله عنه said that when the Messenger of Allah ﷺ performed ablution, he took a handful of water and putting it under his chin made it go through his beard, saying, "Thus did my Lord command me." (Abu Dawood)

(٤٥١/٤٩) عَنْ ابْنِ عَبَّاسٍ أَنَّ النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَسَحَ بِرَأْسِهِ وَأُذُنَيْهِ

(رواه النسائي)

(451/49) It is related by Abdullah bin Abbas رضي الله عنه "The Messenger of Allah ﷺ performed the masah of his mead (in wudu), and, with it, of both his ears (in such a way) that he performed the masah of the internal parts of the ears with fore-fingers, and of the external parts with both the thumbs."

(Nasai)

(٤٥٢/٥٠) عَنِ الرَّبِيعِ بِنْتِ مُعَوِذٍ أَنَّ النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ تَوَضَّأَ

فَادْخَلَ أَصْبَعَيْهِ فِي جُجَعَرَيْ أُذُنَيْهِ . (رواه أبو داود و أحمد و ابن ماجه)

(452/50) Sayyidah Ar-Rubaiyi' bint Mu'awwiz رضي الله عنها said that she saw the Prophet ﷺ performing ablution and he inserted his two wet fingers in his ear-holes when wiping the ears.

(Abu Dawood, Musnad Ahmad, ibn Majah).

(٤٥٣/٥١) عَنْ أَبِي رَافِعٍ قَالَ كَانَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا تَوَضَّأَ

وَضُوءَ الصَّلَاةِ حَرَّكَ خَاتِمَهُ فِي أَصْبَعِهِ . (رواه الدار قطنی و ابن ماجه)

(453/51) It is narrated by Abi Rafi' "When the Messenger of Allah ﷺ performed wudu, he, also, moved his ring (to ensure that water reached the place covered by it as well)."

(Dar Qutni and Ibn Majah)

Commentary: In the forgoing ahadith the Prophet ﷺ exhorted his companions to observe the etiquettes under which he himself was particular about.

Water Should Not be Spent Wastefully

(٤٥٤/٥٢) عَنْ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ عَمْرٍو بْنِ الْعَاصِ أَنَّ النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ

مَرَّ بِسَعْدٍ وَهُوَ يَتَوَضَّأُ فَقَالَ مَا هَذَا السَّرَفُ يَا سَعْدُ ! قَالَ أَفِي الْوُضُوءِ سَرَفٌ ؟
 قَالَ وَإِنْ كُنْتُ عَلَى نَهْرٍ جَارٍ . (رواه احمد و ابن ماجه)

(454/52) Abdullah bin Amr bin Al-'Aas رضي الله عنه related to us that (once) Sa'd bin Abu Waqas رضي الله عنه was performing wudu (and he was using water wastefully in it) the Messenger of Allah ﷺ happened to pass by him. (As he saw it), he remarked, Sa'd, what extravagance is it (i.e., why are you wasting the water)?" 'Messenger of Allah ﷺ! replied Sa'd bin Abu Waqas رضي الله عنه, 'Can there be a waste of water even in wudu? "Yes", said the Prophet ﷺ, "It is wastefulness even though you are performing the ablution on the bank of a running stream'."

(Musnad Ahmad and Ibn Majah)

Commentary: The above tradition denotes that it is among the properties of *wudu* that water is not spent wastefully in it.

Use of Towel or Handkerchief

(٤٥٥/٥٣) عَنْ مَعَاذِ بْنِ جَبَلٍ قَالَ رَأَيْتُ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا
 تَوَضَّأَ مَسَحَ وَجْهَهُ بِطَرَفِ ثَوْبِهِ . (رواه الترمذی)

(455/53) It is related on the authority of Mu'az bin Jabal رضي الله عنه "I saw that when the Messenger of Allah ﷺ performed *wudu* he wiped his face with a corner of his dress." (Tirmizi)

Commentary: It denotes that, after performing ablution, the holy Prophet ﷺ used to wipe his face with the corner of his clothing (mantle etc.). It is, again, quoted in *Tirmizi*, on the authority of Sayyidah Ayshah, رضي الله عنها, that a piece of cloth was kept for the Prophet ﷺ to dry up the parts after ablution. In the narratives of some of other Companions, as well, a mention is made of such a cloth or handkerchief.

Taking into account all the reports it would appear that there used to be a special piece of cloth like a handkerchief with which the Prophet wiped his face, hands, feet and other parts after wudu, and, sometimes, he, also, did that with the corner of his garment. Allah knows best.

Supplication At The End of Wudu

We have seen a hadith telling us that at the end of wudu we must recite the *Kalimah Shahadah* and make a supplication:

اللَّهُمَّ اجْعَلْنِي مِنَ التَّوَّابِينَ وَاجْعَلْنِي مِنَ الْمُتَطَهِّرِينَ

We have also seen a hadith exhorting us to offer two *raka'at* after that. This will atone for our past sins. Let us see one more hadith in this regard.

Reciting After Ablution

(٤٥٦/٥٤) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ أَنَّ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ قَالَ لِبِلَالٍ عِنْدَ صَلَاةِ الْفَجْرِ حَدَّثَنِي بِأَرْجَى عَمَلٍ عَمِلْتَهُ فِي الْإِسْلَامِ فَإِنِّي سَمِعْتُ ذِكْرَ نَعْلَيْكَ بَيْنَ يَدَيَّ فِي الْجَنَّةِ قَالَ مَا عَمِلْتُ عَمَلًا أَرْجَى عِنْدِي إِنِّي لَمْ أَتَطَهَّرْ طَهُورًا فِي سَاعَةٍ مِنْ لَيْلٍ أَوْ نَهَارٍ إِلَّا وَصَلَّيْتُ بِذَلِكَ الطَّهُورِ مَا تُحِبُّ لِي أَنْ أَصَلِّيَ.

(رواه البخاري و مسلم)

(456/54) It is reported by Sayyidina Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that one day after the Fajr prayer the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said to Sayyidina Bilal رضي الله عنه, "Tell me Bilal, of the action that you have done since becoming a Muslim which is most calculated to cause hope in you, for I heard the sound of your sandals in front of me in Paradise." Bilal رضي الله عنه replied, "I have done no such action calculated in my opinion to cause hope than that I have never performed ablution at any hour of the night or day without immediately praying what was ordained for me to pray."

(Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: The Prophet ﷺ had heard Sayyidina Bilal's رضي الله عنه footsteps in Paradise in his dream. Hence the question of his going to Paradise in this life does not arise. However, the fact that the Prophet ﷺ saw him in his dream in Paradise ensures that Sayyidina Bilal رضي الله عنه will go to Paradise. In fact, he will enjoy the highest rank there.

Hence, we must offer prayer after performing ablution, even if it is the fard, sunnah, or optional prayer.

JANABAT AND ITS GHUSL

We have seen how a person with a sound disposition and a spiritual outlook feels a sort of gloom and uneasiness when he passes out filthy matter from his body or satisfies a cranal urge which is far removed from the celestial aspects of his personality and regards himself unworthy of a sacred act like worship as long as he is in that state. Such a condition, which is called *Hads*, is of two kinds, or rather, it has two grades. One is *Hads Asghar* (i.e., minor impurity) for getting rid of which *wudu* is sufficient, i.e., the feeling of depression and filthiness gets removed on performing *wudu*. The other is *Hads Akbar* (i.e., major impurity) whose effects are much deeper and can be nullified only by *Ghusl*¹. Defaction, urination and passing of flatus belong to the former category of *Hads* while cohabitation, menstruation and labour and childbirth offer the instances of the latter category.

A right-minded person considers a bath necessary for dispelling the feeling of spiritual distress and uncleanness produced by sexual intercourse, menstruation or child-birth and does not regard himself or herself to be in a fit state to engage in religious acts, such as, prayer and God-remembrance or even to go to a sacred place like mosque unless he or she has taken a bath. This is required of man by his untainted inward impulse and the *Shari'ah* (i.e., the Islamic Canonic Law), too, has prescribed a bath in such circumstances and prohibited its followers from carrying out an act of worship or entering a mosque or any other sanctified place without *ghusl*.

When Ghusl is Obligatory

(٤٥٧/٥٥) عَنْ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ عُمَرَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ لَا

①. Ritual washing of the whole body; a bath in common usage.

تَقْرَأُ الْحَائِضُ وَلَا الْجُنُبُ شَيْئًا مِنَ الْقُرْآنِ . (رواه الترمذی)

(457/55) It is related by Abdullah bin Umar رضی اللہ عنہ that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: No menstruating woman or *Junubi*¹ person should recite anything from the Qur'an." (Tirmizi)

(٤٥٨/٥٦) عَنْ عَائِشَةَ قَالَتْ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ وَجَّهُوا هَذِهِ الْبُيُوتَ عَنِ الْمَسْجِدِ فَإِنِّي لَا أَحِلُّ الْمَسْجِدَ لِحَائِضٍ وَلَا جُنُبٍ .

(رواه ابوداؤد)

(458/56) It is related by Sayyidah Ayshah رضی اللہ عنہا that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Turn the direction of these houses from the mosque (i.e., shut their doors that open into the mosque and open them on the other side) for there is absolutely no justification for a menstruating woman or a *Junubi* to enter the mosque (i.e., it is strictly forbidden to them to go into it)."

(Abu Dawood)

Commentary: When the Prophet's ﷺ Mosque was built at first, the doors of a large number of neighbouring houses opened in its courtyard. After some time the command came that the sanctity of the mosque demanded that woman during menses and persons who were in the condition of *Janabat* must not come into it. The Prophet ﷺ, thereupon, ordered that the doors of all the houses that opened into mosque should be closed and new door made on the other side.

Method

(٤٥٩/٥٧) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ تَحْتَ

كُلِّ شَعْرٍ جَنَابَةٌ فَأَغْسِلُوا الشَّعْرَ وَانْقُؤُوا الْبَشْرَةَ . (رواه ابوداؤد والترمذی وابن ماجه)

(459/57) It is related by Abu Hurayrah رضی اللہ عنہ that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "The effect of *janabat* is under every hair of the body. Thus, the hair should be washed thoroughly in *Ghusl Janabat* (so that the parts of the body that are covered with hair are cleaned and purified), and the part of the skin which is visible (i.e., is not covered with hair) should, also, be cleansed

①. The state of uncleanness caused by sexual discharge whether as a result of copulation or in a dream etc., is called *Janabat* while a person who is in the state is called a *Junubi*.

and purified properly." (Abu Dawood, Tirmizi and Ibn Majah)

(٤٦٠/٥٨) عَنْ عَلِيٍّ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَنْ تَرَكَ مَوْضِعَ شَعْرَةٍ مِنْ جَنَابَةٍ لَمْ يَغْسِلْهَا فَعَلَّ بِهَا كَذًا وَكَذًا مِنَ النَّارِ ، قَالَ عَلِيٌّ فَمِنْ ثَمَّ عَادَيْتُ رَأْسِي فَمِنْ ثَمَّ عَادَيْتُ رَأْسِي ثَلَاثًا .

(رواه ابو داؤد و احمد و الدارمي الا انهما لم يكررا فمن ثم عاديت رأسي.)

(460/58) It is related by Sayyidina Ali عليه السلام that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Whoever left unwashed even the place equal to a hair in the *Ghusl of janabat* shall receive such-and-such punishment of Hell." The narrator, Sayyidina Ali عليه السلام added "owing to this warning of the Prophet ﷺ I became an enemy of my hair i.e., made it a principle to shave it off as soon as it started growin)." According to the narrative quoted in *Abu Dawood*, Sayyidina Ali عليه السلام said it thrice. (Abu Dawood)

Commentary: Both of these Traditions show that in the *Ghusl of Janabat* the whole body should be washed in such a way that nothing, not even a place equal to a hair, was left out.

Some commentators have remarked that Sayyidina Ali's عليه السلام habitual course of action of having the hair of his head shaved as soon as it began to grow long in order to make it easy to take a bath signifies that it is also lawful and commendable to have a shaven head though the growing of the hair of the head is more desirable as was the custom of the sacred Prophet ﷺ and the rest of the rightly guided Companions رضي الله عنهم.

(٤٦١/٥٩) عَنْ عَائِشَةَ قَالَتْ كَانَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا اغْتَسَلَ مِنَ الْجَنَابَةِ يَبْدَأُ فَيَغْسِلُ يَدَيْهِ ثُمَّ يَفْرِغُ بِيَمِينِهِ عَلَى شِمَالِهِ فَيَغْسِلُ فَرْجَهُ ثُمَّ يَتَوَضَّأُ وَضُوءَهُ لِلصَّلَاةِ ثُمَّ يَأْخُذُ الْمَاءَ فَيُدْخِلُ أَصَابِعَهُ فِي أُصُولِ الشَّعْرِ حَتَّى إِذَا رَأَى أَنْ قَدِ اسْتَبْرَأَ حَفَنَ عَلَى رَأْسِهِ ثَلَاثَ حَفَنَاتٍ ثُمَّ أَقَاضَ عَلَى سَائِرِ جَسَدِهِ ثُمَّ غَسَلَ رِجْلَيْهِ .

(رواه البخارى و مسلم و اللفظ لمسلم)

(461/59) It is related by Sayyidah Ayshah رضي الله عنها that when the Messenger of Allah ﷺ used to take the bath of *janabat*, he, first, washed both the hands, then cleaned the private parts with the left hand and poured water over them with the right hand, and, then performed *wudu* as is done for prayer. After it, he took

water (in his hands) and made it reach the roots of the hair (of his head and beard) by moving the roots of the hair with his fingers till he was sure that the water had got to every place, and, then, poured three handfuls of water over his head. He, then, poured water all over the body, and, afterwards, washed both his feet." (Bukhari and Muslim)

(٤٦٢/٦٠) عَنْ ابْنِ عَبَّاسٍ قَالَ حَدَّثَتْنِي خَالَتِي مَيْمُونَةُ قَالَتْ أَذْنَيْتُ لِرَسُولِ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ غُسْلَهُ مِنَ الْجَنَابَةِ فَعَسَلَ كَفَّيْهِ مَرَّتَيْنِ أَوْ ثَلَاثًا ثُمَّ أَدْخَلَ يَدَهُ فِي الْإِنَاءِ ثُمَّ أَفْرَغَ بِهِ عَلَى فَرْجِهِ وَغَسَلَهُ بِشِمَالِهِ ثُمَّ ضَرَبَ بِشِمَالِهِ الْأَرْضَ فَدَلَّكَهَا دَلَكًا شَدِيدًا ثُمَّ تَوَضَّأَ وَضُوءَهُ لِلصَّلَاةِ ثُمَّ أَفْرَغَ عَلَى رَأْسِهِ ثَلَاثَ حَفَنَاتٍ مِلَّا كَفَّيْهِ ثُمَّ غَسَلَ مَائِرَ جَسَدِهِ ثُمَّ تَنَحَّى عَنْ مَقَامِهِ ذَلِكَ فَعَسَلَ رِجْلَيْهِ ثُمَّ أَتَيْتُهُ بِالْمِنْدِيلِ فَرَدَّهُ . (رواه البخارى ومسلم وهذا اللفظ مسلم)

(462/60) Abdullah bin Abbas رضي الله عنه related his aunt (i.e., mother's sister), Sayyidah Maimoona رضي الله عنها, had told him "Once I placed the water for the Messenger of Allah ﷺ, first of all, he washed his hands twice or thrice, and, then, put his washed hand into the vessel which contained the water, and, taking water from it, poured it on his private part and washed them with the left hand. After it, he rubbed his left hand on the earth (and cleaned it properly), and, then poured water over his head thrice, and, then, washed the whole body. He, then, moved away from that place and washed his feet. Afterwards, I gave him a piece of cloth (i. e., a towel or handkerchief) but he returned it." (In another account of the same incident appearing in *Sahihain*¹, it is stated that instead of using the towel the Prophet removed the water from the body with both the hands.) (Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: A complete description of the manner in which the holy Prophet ﷺ took the bath of janabt is contained in the two narratives of Sayyidah Ayshah رضي الله عنها and Sayyidah Maimoona رضي الله عنها. The Prophet ﷺ began the bath with washing his hands two or three times (since the hands were going to be used for washing the whole body). After it, he cleaned the private parts with the left hand and poured water over them with the right hand, and, then, rubbed, the left hand over them with the right hand, and, then,

①. Denoting the two compilations of Sahih Bukhari and Sahih Muslim.

rubbed, the left hand on the earth vigorously and cleansed it by the use of water. The Prophet ﷺ, then performed *wudu* (during which he rinsed the mouth thrice and drew water into the nose, and, thus, cleansed the internal parts). He, further, washed every hair of his beard by moving his wet fingers through it and making the water reach the roots of the hair, and, then, washed the hair of his head in the same way. Afterward, he washed the whole body. In the end, he withdrew from that place and washed his feet. It was, evidently, the most proper method of taking a bath. The Prophet ﷺ moved aside from the place where he was bathing to wash his feet, probably, because that place was not covered with concrete.

(٤٦٣/٦١) عَنْ يَعْلَى قَالَ أَنَّ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ رَأَى رَجُلًا يَغْتَسِلُ بِالْبَرَّازِ فَصَعِدَ الْمِنْبَرَ فَحَمِدَ اللَّهَ وَاتَّخَذَ عَلَيْهِ ثَمَّ قَالَ إِنَّ اللَّهَ حَيٌّ مَتِينٌ يُحِبُّ الْحَيَاءَ وَالتَّسْتُرَ فَإِذَا اغْتَسَلَ أَحَدُكُمْ فَلْيَسْتِرْ . (رواه ابو داؤد و النسائي)

(463/61) It is related by Sayyidina Ya'la ؓ (Once) the Messenger of Allah ﷺ happened to see a man who was bathing (naked) in the open. (Soon afterwards, at a suitable time), the Prophet ﷺ delivered a sermon from the pulpit in which, as was his custom, he first praised Allah, and, then, said: "Allah is modest Himself and the one who covers (i.e., hides the shameful acts of the bondsmen to disclose which is against modesty) and He likes His bondsmen, also, to be modest. His command, therefore, is, and I, too, exhort you that when anyone of you takes a bath he should screen himself from the people."

(Abu Dawood and Nasai)

MUSTAHAB AND MUSNOON GHUSL

The situations in which a bath is enjoined by *Shari'ah* as a duty have been explained and the sayings of the Prophet ﷺ pertaining to it was discussed in the foregoing pages. Besides, there are some other occasions on which the Prophet ﷺ has exhorted his followers to take a bath but it is not obligatory and belongs to the class of *Mustahab*¹ or *Musnoon*².

Ghusl of Friday

(٤٦٤/٦٢) عَنْ ابْنِ عُمَرَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا جَاءَ أَحَدُكُمْ الْجُمُعَةَ فَلْيَغْتَسِلْ ...
(رواه البخارى و مسلم)

(464/62) It is related by Abdullah bin Umar ؓ that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "When anyone of you comes for a Friday (i.e., for the Friday prayer), he should take a bath (i.e., no one should come for the Friday prayer without taking a bath)".
(Bukhari and Muslim)

(٤٦٥/٦٣) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ حَقٌّ عَلَى كُلِّ مُسْلِمٍ أَنْ يَغْتَسِلَ فِي كُلِّ سَبْعَةِ أَيَّامٍ يَوْمًا يَغْسِلُ فِيهِ رَأْسَهُ وَجَسَدَهُ
(رواه البخارى و مسلم)

(465/63) It is related by Abu Hurayrah ؓ that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "It is the claim on a Muslim (i.e., it is required of him) to take a bath on one of the seven days of the week (i.e., on Friday), and wash the hair of his head and his whole body thoroughly in it."
(Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: In both of these reports an exhortatory command is contained concerning the Friday *ghusl*, and in another Tradition

❶ Something that is commendable in Islam but not obligatory.

❷ Signifying an act or observance confirmed by the practice of the sacred Prophet.

quoted, again, in *Sahihain*, on the authority of Sayyidina Abu Sa'eed Khudri ؓ, the word *wajib* (meaning necessary, proper or expedient) has been preferred, but according to most commentators and theologists it does not signify *wujub* (i.e., compulsion or obligatoriness) in the strict sense of the term, but exhortation, as shown by the aforementioned narratives of Sayyidina Abdullah bin Umar ؓ and Sayyidina Abu Hurayrah ؓ.

The point has been discussed at length by Sayyidina Abdullah bin Abbas ؓ in the reply he gave to the people of Iraq who had come to see him. Ikramah ؓ the celebrated pupil of Abdullah bin Abbas ؓ, has left a detailed account of the conversation that passed between them and it is preserved in *Sunnan Abu Dawood*. It reads:

Some inhabitants of Iraq came to Sayyidina Ibn Abbas ؓ and asked, "Is the bath of Friday obligatory in your view?" He replied, "I think it is not obligatory but there is a great deal of cleanliness and purification in it and a lot of good for him who takes it. And he who does not take a bath (for some reason) on that day (i.e., Friday) will not be committing a sin for it is not compulsory." (After it, Sayyidina Ibn Abbas ؓ added): "I shall tell you about the origin of the command concerning the bath on a Friday. (The fact is that during the early days of Islam) the Muslims were poor and hardworking manual labourers. They wore rough clothes made of the hair of sheep or camel and carried loads on their back and their mosque (i.e., the Mosque of the Prophet), too, was very small. Its roof was very low and there was only one thatched shed in the whole mosque (on account of which it used to be extremely hot and stuffy in it). Thus, when on a Friday, which was a very hot day, the Prophet ﷺ came to the mosque from his apartment and the condition of the people was that they were perspiring profusely in the coarse dresses of *Suf*¹ and all these things had combined to make the atmosphere in the mosque foul and evil smelling, to the distress of everyone, he observed:

"O people! when a Friday comes you should take a bath and use a good, sweet-scented

يَا أَيُّهَا النَّاسُ إِذَا كَانَ هَذَا الْيَوْمُ
فَاغْتَسِلُوا وَلِيَمْسَ أَحَدُكُمْ أَفْضَلَ

①. Meaning short, thick hair.

oil and apply a good perfume
that might be available to you'."

مَا يَجِدُ مِنْ دُھْنِهِ وَطِيبِهِ

(Hazrat Ibn-I-Abbas) went on to say:

"After it, the period of poverty and starvation came to an end, by the grace of God, and He granted prosperity to the Muslims. The garments of Suf which produced the bad odour disappeared, and the hard work and drudgery ceased, and the mosque, also, no longer remained small--extensions were made in it --- with the result that the disgusting smell that used to pervade the atmosphere of the mosque due to the sweating of the people became a thing of the past."

From the above it is clear that the bath of Friday was prescribed to Muslims in the earliest phase of Islam owing to the unusual circumstances explained by Sayyidina Ibn Abbas. With the change in the conditions, the grade of the command did not remain the same. There is, nevertheless, purification in the bath of Friday which is pleasing to Allah, and, now, it is *Musnoon* and *Mustahab* to take a bath on Friday.

(٤٦٦/٦٤) عَنْ سَمُرَةَ بْنِ جُنْدُبٍ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ
مَنْ تَوَضَّأَ يَوْمَ الْجُمُعَةِ فِيهَا وَنِعِمَّتْ وَمَنِ الْغَتَّسَلَ قَالَ الْغُسْلُ أَفْضَلُ .

(رواه احمد و ابو داود و الترمذى و النسائى و الدارمى)

(466/64) It is related by Samurah bin Jundub that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Whoever performs wudu on Friday (i.e., for Friday prayers), it is correct and adequate, and whoever takes a bath, then to take a bath is better."

(Msunad Ahmad, Abu Dawood, Tirmizi, Nasai and Daarami)

(More will be said about the Friday bath during the discussions on the Traditions apperating to the Friday prayers).

Ghusl After Bathing The Dead Body

(٤٦٧/٦٥) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَنْ
غَسَلَ مَيِّتًا فَلْيَغْتَسِلْ . (رواه ابن ماجه و زاده احمد و الترمذى و ابو داود و مَنْ حَمَلَهُ
فَلْيَتَوَضَّأْ)

(467/65) Sayyidina Abu Hurayrah ؓ said that the Messenger

of Allah ﷺ said, "Anyone who has washed a dead body must bathe himself."

Only this much is found in *Ibn Majah* but *Musnad Ahmad*, *Tirmizi*, and *Abu Dawood* have added more: "And he who carries the dead body must perform ablution."

Commentary: The scholars suggest that this command is optional. there is a possibility that in giving bath to a dead body, he may have had drops of water over him. Another hadith in *Bayhaqi* narrated by Abdullah bin Abbas ؓ rejects the obligatory nature of this bath. Therefore, the *Ulama* generally hold that it is merely *mustahabb* to have a bath after bathing the dead. As for performing ablution before carrying the dead body, that too is optional. Perhaps it may have been suggested to enable preparedness to offer the funeral prayer.

Ghushl of 'Id

(٤٦٨/٦٦) عَنْ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ عَبَّاسٍ قَالَ كَانَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ

يَغْتَسِلُ يَوْمَ الْفِطْرِ وَ يَوْمَ الْأَضْحَى . (رواه ابن ماجه)

(468/66) Abdulalh bin Abbas ؓ relates that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ used to take a bath on the days of 'Idul Fitr¹ and 'Idul Azha².

Note: To take a bath on 'Idul Fitr and 'Idul 'Azha and to put on clean clothes and apply perfume are among the practices that have prevalent among the Muslims from the earliest days. The Muslims would, evidently, have learnt about them from the Prophet ﷺ but the proof of the authenticity of these reports is weak according to the canons laid down by the Muslim scholars. the chain of narrators of the above Tradition, too, is not wholly reliable. It goes to illustrate the truth that there are some narratives whose chain of narrators is technically defective but their subject-matter is beyond question. Thus, if the chain of narrators of a report is not of the required standard but its purport is proved to be correct by evidence and reasoning it will be deemed to be authoritative and worthy of acceptance as a genuine and authentic Tradition.

① & ②. Names of the two annual festivals of Muslims. More will be said about them later.

TAYAMMUM

Sometimes a person is suffering from some disease or infirmity due to which it may be harmful for him to take a bath or perform *wudu*. In the same way, he may, occasionally, find himself at a place where access cannot be had to water. If, in such circumstances, it was allowed to offer prayer without *ghusl* or ablution, people would have grown lethargic and casual in their attitude towards purification, and, what was more, the sense of intentness and preparation in regard to the presence in the Court of the King of Kings that was felt as a result of the strict observance of the religious obligations of *ghusl* and *wudu*, and the awareness of the sanctity and sublimity of the presence generated by it would have lost its keenness.

Allah, as such, has made *Tayammum*¹ the substitute of *ghusl* or *wudu* in such conditions of constraint. Now as a person will do *tayammum* when he is unable to have a bath or perform *wudu*, no harmful effects of the kind indicated above will be produced in his heart or mind.

In plain words, *tayammum* means to strike the palms of both the hands lightly on clean earth, sand, clay or stone (i.e., on anything like them that are, generally, found on the surface of earth) and to pass the palms of the hands over the face and the forearms with the intention of purification. It is not necessary that particles of dust etc., touch or get spread over the arms or face. On the contrary, care should be taken that the parts remained free from them.

Philosophy of *Tayammum*

Water is used in a bath or ablution. In conditions of constraint or

❶ Meaning prying before prayer with sand or dust when a person is sick or water is not available.

inability, Allah has prescribed *tayammum* in which dust or stones are used. The wisdom of it, according to some authorities, is the entire planet inhabited by man consists of two parts, the surface of one of which is formed by water and of the other by earth. There is, thus, a close relationship between water and earth. Besides, man has been created from clay and water. Dust and sand are, further, found everywhere excepts, of course, on the sea. Again, to pass the hands over the face after touching the earth is a special sign of humbleness. Earth being the last resting place of man and everyone having to return to dust on day, *Tayammum* also, reminds us of death and the grave.

The Command

(٤٦٩/٦٧) عَنْ عَائِشَةَ قَالَتْ خَرَجْنَا مَعَ رَسُولِ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ فِي بَعْضِ أَسْفَارِهِ حَتَّى إِذَا كُنَّا بِالْبَيْدَاءِ أَوْ بِذَاتِ الْجَيْشِ انْقَطَعَ عِقْدٌ لِي فَأَقَامَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ عَلَى التِّمَاسِهِ وَأَقَامَ النَّاسُ مَعَهُ وَلَيَسُوا عَلَى مَاءٍ فَاتَى النَّاسُ إِلَى أَبِي بَكْرٍ فَقَالُوا الْآتَرَى إِلَى مَا صَنَعَتْ عَائِشَةُ أَقَامَتْ بِرَسُولِ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ وَبِالنَّاسِ مَعَهُ وَلَيَسُوا عَلَى مَاءٍ وَلَيْسَ مَعَهُمْ مَاءٌ فَجَاءَ أَبُو بَكْرٍ وَرَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ وَاضِعَ رَأْسَهُ عَلَى فِجْدَى قَدْ نَامَ فَقَالَ خَبَسَتْ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ وَالنَّاسُ وَلَيَسُوا عَلَى مَاءٍ وَلَيْسَ مَعَهُمْ مَاءٌ قَالَتْ فَعَاتَبَنِي أَبُو بَكْرٍ وَقَالَ مَا شَاءَ اللَّهُ أَنْ يَقُولَ وَجَعَلَ يَطْعَنُنِي بِيَدِهِ لِي خَاصِرَتِي فَلَا يَمْنَعُنِي مِنَ التَّحَرُّكِ إِلَّا مَكَانَ رَسُولِ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ عَلَى فِجْدَى فَنَامَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ حَتَّى أَصْبَحَ عَلَى غَيْرِ مَاءٍ فَأَنْزَلَ اللَّهُ عَزَّوَجَلَّ آيَةَ التِّيمُّمِ فَتَيَمَّمُوا فَقَالَ أُسَيْدُ بْنُ الْحَضِيرِ وَهُوَ أَحَدُ الثُّقَبَاءِ مَا هِيَ بِأَوَّلِ بَرَكَتِكُمْ يَا أَلِ أَبِي بَكْرٍ فَقَالَتْ عَائِشَةُ فَبَعَثْنَا الْبَعِيرَ الَّذِي كُنْتُ عَلَيْهِ فَوَجَدْنَا الْعِقْدَ تَحْتَهُ.

(رواه البخارى والمسلم واللفظ لمسلم)

(469/67) It is related by Sayyidah Ayshah رضي الله عنها "We went out with the Messenger of Allah ﷺ on one of his journeys (according to scholarly investigation it was in connection with the Battle of Zaat-ul-Riq'a'a) till we reached Al-Baida or Zaat-ul-Jaish (both of these places lies between Madinah and

Khaybar) where my necklace (which was really not mine but my elder sister Asma's from whom I had borrowed it) broke and fell down (and was lost). I informed the Prophet ﷺ (upon which) he halted there to have it searched for and the people who were accompanying him, also, made the halt. There being no supply of water at that place people went to (my father) Abu Bakr رضي الله عنه and said: 'Don't you see what your daughter (Ayshah رضي الله عنها) has done? She has forced the Prophet ﷺ and all the other people (by losing her necklace) to stop at this place though there is no water over here nor with the army: Abu Bakr رضي الله عنه thereupon, came to me while the Prophet ﷺ was asleep and his head was resting on my thigh and said: 'You have made Allah's Messenger ﷺ and his Companions رضي الله عنهم stop at a place where no water is to be found and they don't have a stock of it with them either.' My father rebuked me severely and said everything that Allah willed and (in anger) he, also, jabbed me in the ribs but I did not wince as the Prophet ﷺ was resting (his head) on my thigh (for fear that he might be disturbed in his sleep). So, the Prophet ﷺ slept on till he woke up in the morning at a place and in the circumstances that no water was available, and, at that time, Allah revealed the verse of Tayammum upon which everyone performed the tayammum (and prayer was offered after it). Usayd bin Hudayr (who was among the Ansars who had taken the vow of allegiance at the Prophet's ﷺ hand before Migration), thereupon, exclaimed: 'O People of Abu Bakr رضي الله عنه! The command of tayammum is not the first blessing of yours. (Many other blessings have been conferred because of you).' Afterwards, as the camel on which I rode was made to rise, the necklace was found under it." (Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: The verse of tayammum Sayyidina Ayshah رضي الله عنها has spoken of here, perhaps, denotes the following verse of *Surah-An-Nisa*:

And if ye are sick (and the use of water is harmful for you) or on a journey, or anyone of you cometh from the closet, or ye have had contact with your wives, and ye find not water, then go to clean, high ground

وَإِنْ كُنْتُمْ مَرْضَىٰ أَوْ عَلَىٰ سَفَرٍ أَوْ
جَاءَ أَحَدٌ مِّنْكُمْ مِنَ الْغَائِطِ أَوْ
لَمَسْتُمُ النِّسَاءَ فَلَمْ تَجِدُوا مَاءً
فَتَيَمَّمُوا صَعِيدًا طَيِّبًا فَامْسَحُوا

and rub your faces and your hands with some of it. Allah would not place a burden on you, but He would purify you and would perfect His grace upon you, that ye may be grateful. (Al-Nisaa 4:43)

The same thing has been said, with a slight variation of words, in the second section of *Surah Al-Maidah* and some authorities hold that it was this verse that was revealed on that occasion. But a majority of the commentators assert that the aforementioned verse of *Surah Al-Nisa* was revealed earlier than that of *Surah Al-Maidah*.

(٤٧٠/٦٨) عَنْ عُمَارٍ قَالَ جَاءَ رَجُلٌ إِلَى حُمَرَ بْنِ الْخَطَّابِ فَقَالَ إِنِّي أَجْنَبٌ فَلَمْ أَصِبِ الْمَاءَ فَقَالَ عُمَارُ لِعُمَرَ أَمَا تَذْكُرَانَا كُنَّا فِي سَفَرٍ أَنَا وَأَنْتَ فَأَمَّا أَنْتَ فَلَمْ تُصَلِّ وَأَمَّا أَنَا فَتَمَعَّكَتُ فَصَلَّيْتُ فَذَكَرْتُ ذَلِكَ لِلنَّبِيِّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ فَقَالَ إِنَّمَا يَكْفِيكَ هَذَا فَضَرَبَ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ بِكَفِّهِ الْأَرْضَ وَنَفَخَ فِيهِمَا ثُمَّ مَسَحَ بِهِمَا وَجْهَهُ وَكَفِّهِ . (رواه البخاري ومسلم نحوه)
(470/68) It is related by Ammar bin Yasir ؓ that a man came to Umar ؓ and said: "I am in the state of *Janabat* and no water is available. (What am I to do then)?" Upon it Ammar said (to Sayyidina Umar ؓ) "Do you not remember that once you and I were together on a journey (and it had become necessary for both of us to take a bath). You did not pray in that condition but I rolled on the ground (and offered prayer), thinking that like a bath, the taymmum of *Janabat*, too, was of the whole body. When we returned from the journey I told about it to the Prophet ﷺ, and he said: '(It was not, at all, necessary to roll on the ground). For you it would have been sufficient if you did like this.' On saying it, the Prophet ﷺ stroked lightly the earth with his hands, and, then, blew off the dust and passed his hands over his face and forearms." (Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: Commentators have offered various explanations for Sayyidina Umar's ؓ not offering the prayer on that occasion. The most reasonable of these, however, is that, probably, he was waiting for water to be found and had some hope that it would be found. That is why, he did not think it proper to offer prayer by

performing *tayammum*.

As for Sayyidna Ammar رضي الله عنه, he did not know till then that the method of *tayammum* which was performed in the place of the bath of *janabat* was the same as that of *tayammum* that was done in the place of *wudu*. He, therefore, exercised his own judgement and rolled on the ground. But when he related it to the Prophet ﷺ, he corrected him and explained that the two *tayammums* were performed in an indential way and there was no difference in the manner of doing them.

We, moreover, learn from Sayyidina Ammar's رضي الله عنه narrative that it is not necessary for the dust to touch the face or hands in *tayammum*. On the contrary, if the dust clung to the hands as a result of stroking the earth it should better be blown out.

(٤٧١/٦٩) عَنْ أَبِي ذَرٍّ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِنَّ الصَّعِيدَ الطَّيِّبَ وَضُوءَ الْمُسْلِمِ وَإِنْ لَمْ يَجِدِ الْمَاءَ عَشْرَ سِنِينَ فَإِذَا وَجَدَ الْمَاءَ فَلْيَمْسَهُ بِشَرِّهِ فَإِنَّ ذَلِكَ خَيْرٌ.
(رواه أحمد و الترمذی و ابو داؤد)

(471/69) It is related by Abu Zarr Ghiffari رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Clean earth is the means of purification for a Muslim if water is not available even for ten years. When he finds water he should pour it over the body, i.e., perform *wudu* or bathe himself with it for there is much good in it."
(Musnad Ahmad, Tirmizi and Abu Dawood)

Note: Almost all the legist-doctors are agreed that if a person who is obliged to take a bath performs *tayammum* owing to sickness or non-availability of water, it will be binding upon him to bathe himself when the excuse of illness ends or water is found.

(٤٧٢/٧٠) عَنْ أَبِي سَعِيدٍ الْخُدْرِيِّ قَالَ خَرَجَ رَجُلَانِ فِي سَفَرٍ فَحَضَرَتِ الصَّلَاةُ وَلَيْسَ مَعَهُمَا مَاءٌ فَتَيَمَّمَا صَعِيدًا طَيِّبًا فَصَلَّيَا ثُمَّ وَجَدَا الْمَاءَ فِي الْوَقْتِ فَأَعَادَا أَحَدُهُمَا الصَّلَاةَ بِوَضُوءٍ وَلَمْ يُعِدِ الْآخَرُ ثُمَّ أَتَى رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ فَذَكَرَا ذَلِكَ فَقَالَ لِلَّذِي لَمْ يُعِدِ أَصَبْتَ السُّنَّةَ وَأَجْزَأُكَ صَلَاتُكَ وَقَالَ لِلَّذِي تَوَضَّأَ وَأَعَادَ لَكَ الْآجِرُ مَرَّتَيْنِ.
(رواه ابو داؤد والدارمي)
(472/70) Abu Sa'eed Khudri رضي الله عنه narrated to us that two

Companions رضي الله عنهم went on a journey. It so happened that the time for prayer came and they were without water. So, they both offered prayer by doing *tayammum* with clean earth but water was found before the time of prayer had elapsed. Upon it, one of them offered prayer again after performing *wudu* while the other did not offer prayer for the second time. Afterwards when they returned and went to the Prophet ﷺ, they related the incident to him. The Prophet ﷺ told Companions رضي الله عنهم who had not offered prayer again: "You did the right thing and the prayer you had offered by doing *tayammum* will suffice for you.¹" And to the Companion رضي الله عنه who had offered prayer once again by performing *wudu*, Prophet ﷺ said: "You will get a double reward (because the prayer you offered for the second time became a superegatory prayer). Allah does not allow a good deed to be wasted." (Abu Dawood and Daarami)

❶. According to the Shari'at it is enough to offer prayer by doing *tayammum* on an occasion like that. To offer it again if water is found in time is unnecessary.

كتاب الصلوة

KITABUS SALAH

(THE BOOK OF PRAYERS)

اللَّهُ أَكْبَرُ

سُبْحَانَكَ اللَّهُمَّ وَبِحَمْدِكَ وَتَبَارَكَ اسْمُكَ وَتَعَالَى جَدُّكَ
وَلَا إِلَهَ غَيْرُكَ

رَبِّ اجْعَلْنِي مَقِيَمَ الصَّلَاةِ وَمِنْ ذُرِّيَّتِي رَبَّنَا وَتَقَبَّلْ دُعَاءَ رَبَّنَا اغْفِرْ لِي وَلِوَالِدَيَّ
وَلِلْمُؤْمِنِينَ يَوْمَ يَقُومُ الْحِسَابُ 0

أَمِينَ يَا أَرْحَمَ الرَّاحِمِينَ!

PRE-EMINENCE OF *SALAH*

The primary and most natural requirement of believing in what the Divine Messengers عليهم السلام have taught about the Being and Attributes and Unity and Sublimity of Allah is that the bondsman seek His good pleasure by making a whole-hearted expression of love, loyalty and humbleness and obtain joy and effulgence for his soul through His remembrance. This, in sum, is the meaning and purpose of *salah*¹, and undoubtedly, it is the most perfect means to the realisation of this end and object. Hence, the first command, after the acknowledgement of faith, in the teachings of all the Prophets عليهم السلام and in every Divine law is that of prayer, and in the last of the *Shari'ah*² (i.e., the *Shari'ah* brought by the Prophet Muhammad ﷺ) more emphasis is laid upon it than upon any other mode of worship, and its essential requisites, rules and properties and divisions and components, as also the things that nullify it or make it void, have been described in the greatest detail.

Says Shah Waliullah رحمه الله عليه in *Hujjat*,

اعلم ان الصلوة اعظم العبادات شأناً وارضاحتها برهاناً واشهرها في الناس و
انفعها في النفس ولذلك اعتنى الشارع ببيان فضلها و تعيين اوقاتها و
شروطها و اركانها و ادابها و رخصتها و نوافلها اعتناء عظيماً لم يفعل سائر
انواع الطاعات وجعلها من اعظم شعائر الدين. (ص ١٨٦)

"By its grandeur and conformability with human nature and intellect prayer occupies a place of special eminence among all the forms of worship and it is most popular and widely celebrated among those who believe in Allah and perform religious service. It is highly efficacious for purification and

①. Signifying regular worship in Islam, prayer. Generally the word prayer is used for it.

②. Meaning the Canonic Laws

disciplining of the self. The *Shari'ah* has, thus taken such care to set forth its hours, essential factors, stipulations and properties as it has not done for any other kind of worship and prayer has been declared to be the foremost observance and mark of faith because of these distinctive qualities."¹

In the same book, Shah Waliullah رحمه الله عليه observes:

”واصل الصلوة ثلاثة اشياء ان يخضع القلب عند ملاحظة جلال الله و عظمته ويعبر اللسان عن تلك العظمة و ذالك الخضوع بافصح عبارة وان يودب الجوارح حسب ذالك الخضوع.“

"The basic constituents of prayer are three: (i) humility of heart (spirit) consequent on the feeling of the presence of the Majesty and Magnificence of the Lord: (ii) Employment of all the other external organs, also, for the affirmation of the Glory and Greatness of Allah and the bondsman's servility and submission."

And, again:

”اما الصلوة فهي المعجون المركب من الفكر المصروف تلقاء عظمة الله ... ومن الادعية المبينة اخلاص عمله لله و توجيهه وجهه تلقاء الله وقصر الاسعانة في الله ومن افعال تعظيمية كالسجود والركوع بصير كل واحد عضدا لآخر ومكمله والمنبه عليه.“

"The reality of prayer is made up of three things: (i) calling to the mind and reflecting upon the Majesty of Allah; (ii) Some prayers and invocations signifying that the submission of the bondsman and all his deeds and actions are solely for Allah, and he has turned his face, once for all, towards Him, and it is His help alone that he seeks in his needs; (iii) A few reverential postures like those of *ruku*² and *sajdah*³. Each of these three things supplements the others and serves as exhortation to them."

Shah Waliullah رحمه الله عليه concludes the discussion on prayer with these words:

①. *Hujjat*, p. 186

②. Bowing low.

③. Bending forward in adoration with the forehead placed on the ground.

والصَّلوة معراج المؤمنين معدة للتجليات الاخروية ... وسبب عظيم لمحبة الله ورحمته ... واذا تمكنت من العبد اضمحل في نور الله وكفرت عنه خطاياہ ... ولا شيء انفع من سوء المعرفة منها اذا فعلت افعالها واقوالها على حضور القلب والنية الصالحة ... واذا جعلت رسماً مشهوراً نفعت من غوائل الرسوم نفعا بينا و صارت شعارا للمسلم يتميز به من الكافر ... ولا شيء في تمرين النفس على انقياد الطبيعة للعقل و جريانها في حكمه مثل الصلوة ..

ص ۷۲، ۷۳ جلد (۱)

"The special characteristics of prayer are: (i) It is the ascension of the Believers and a special means to the cultivation of worthiness for an uninterrupted view of the lustres of Allah with which the faithful Believers will be favoured in the Hereafter; (ii) It enables a man to gain the Love and Benevolence of Allah; (iii) When the bondsman attains the reality of prayer he is purified of sins by getting drowned in the waves of the affulgence of Allah (in the same way as a soiled and dirty article is cleansed when it falls into the waves of a river or iron is made pure by casting it into the furnace); (iv) Prayer offered with devotion of the heart and purity of intention is most effective for overcoming negligence and dispelling unwholesome ideas and doubt and misgivings; (v) When prayer was made the regular practice of the *Ummah*, it, apart from other things, afford it protection against polytheistic and sinful practices and became a religious symbol of the Muslims by which they could easily be identified from the apostates; and (vi) the structure of prayer is the aptest way to subordinate one's inward impulses to the guidance of the intellect."¹

Shah Waliullah رحمه الله عليه has drawn the above conclusions from the Traditions of the sacred Prophet ﷺ, and he has, also, indicated their sources but we have omitted the references as the full reports of these sayings are going to be discussed later.

Omission of Prayers is Inimical To Faith And An Act of Apostasy

(٤٧٣/١) عَنْ جَابِرٍ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ بَيْنَ الْعَبْدِ وَبَيْنَ الْكُفْرِ تَرْكُ الصَّلَاةِ ..
(رواه مسلم)

(473/1) It is related by Jabir رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Between a bondsman and disbelief there is only the giving up of prayer."
(Muslim)

Commentary: It shows that prayer is such a fundamental tenet of Islam and is so closely related to the reality of faith that, on leaving it out, a bondsman, one would say, ceases to be a Believer.

(٤٧٤/٢) عَنْ بُرَيْدَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ أَلْعَهْدُ الَّذِي بَيْنَنَا وَبَيْنَهُمْ تَرْكُ الصَّلَاةِ فَمَنْ تَرَكَهَا فَقَدْ كَفَرَ .

(رواه احمد والترمذى والنسائى وابن ماجه)

(474/2) It is related by Abu Buraidah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "The covenant between me and these people is that of prayer (i.e., I take the pledge of prayer from everyone who accepts Islam which is a special sign and a basic requirement of faith). Thus, whoever gives it up, turns aside (so to speak), from the course of Islam and takes to disbelief."

(Ibn-i-Maja)

(٤٧٥/٣) عَنْ أَبِي الدَّرْدَاءِ قَالَ أَوْصَانِي خَلِيلِي أَنْ لَا تُشْرِكَ بِاللَّهِ شَيْئًا وَإِنْ قُطِعَتْ وَخُرِفَتْ وَلَا تَتْرَكَ صَلَاةً مَكْتُوبَةً مُتَعَمِّدًا فَمَنْ تَرَكَهَا مُتَعَمِّدًا فَقَدْ بَرِئْتُ مِنْهُ الذِّمَّةُ وَلَا تَشْرَبِ الْخَمْرَ فَإِنَّهَا مِفْتَاحُ كُلِّ شَرٍّ .
(رواه ابن ماجه)

(475/3) Abu Darda رضي الله عنه "My friend and beloved (peace and blessing of Allah be upon him) has exhorted me (in these terms): 'Do not associate anyone with Allah even if you are cut into pieces and roasted on fire, and beware, never omit prayer intentionally for whoever, willingly and knowledge, omits prayer for him the responsibility that rests with Allah regarding His truthful and believing bondsmen comes to an end, and, (also) take care not to drink (wine) that all for it is the key to every evil (thing or act)'."
(Ibn Majah)

Commentary: Just as the subjects have some claims on the

government under which they live and they are deemed to be entitled to them unless they are guilty of a grave crime like treason, Allah, too, by His grace, has taken upon Himself the responsibility of bestowing some unique rewards and favours upon all the Believers and followers of Islam which will be made evident in the Hereafter.

In this Tradition the Prophet ﷺ has stressed that deliberate and wilful neglect of prayer is not merely a sin, like any other sin, but an act of open defiance after which a person stops being worthy of Divine Mercy and Benevolence.

A similar Tradition has, also, been quoted in some compilations, on the authority of Ubaidah bin Samit ؓ, the concluding words of which in respect of the habitual defaulter of prayer are:

فَمَنْ تَرَكَهَا مُتَعَمِّدًا فَقَدْ خَرَجَ مِنَ الْمِلَّةِ .

"Whoever intentionally neglects prayer goes out of my fold."¹

In the above sayings deliberate omission of prayer has been characterised as infidelity and egress from the Muslim *Millah* because prayer is such a distinctive sign of faith and exclusive practice of Islam that to give it up wilfully would imply, as a matter of course, that one had served one's bond of loyalty with Allah's hand the Prophet ﷺ, and ceased to be a Muslim. Particularly, since during the glorious days of the Messenger ﷺ it was beyond imagination that anyone who was a Believer and a Muslim could be a habitual defaulter of prayer if a person did not offer prayer, it was taken for granted, on the whole, that he was not a Muslim. In our view, the remark of the celebrated *Taba'ee*², Abdullah bin Shafiq, about the Companions ؓ that:

"They did not consider the persistent neglect of any act except prayer to be amounting to apostasy."

كَانَ أَصْحَابُ رَسُولِ اللَّهِ صَلَّى
اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ لَا يَرَوْنَ شَيْئًا مِنَ
الْأَعْمَالِ تَرَكَهُ كُفْرًا غَيْرَ الصَّلَاةِ

Shows that while the holy Companions ؓ believed the disregard and neglect of the other tenets like *zakah* (regular

①. At-Taghreeb wat-Tarheeb (Adopted from Tabarani)

②. Meaning a "successor" of the Companions

charity), fasting, *Hajj* (pilgrimage to Makkah), and *Jihad* (Holy War), and, in the same way, of the commands and injunctions concerning social conduct and monetary dealings as merely sinful, they held the omission of prayer to be a proof of the repudiation of the Islamic faith and severance of ties with the Muslim *Millah*. But Allah knows best.

Some jurists like Imam Ahmad bin Hanbal have inferred from these narratives that a person becomes an infidel and an aspostate and forfeits his title to Islam when he habitually leaves out prayer to the extent that if he dies in that state his funeral service will not be performed and he will not be allowed to be buried in a Muslim graveyard. In other words, deliberate neglect of prayer by a Muslim is identical to prostrating oneself before an idol or the crucifix or offending the honour and dignity of Allah and the Prophet ﷺ no matter whether he formally changes his creed or not. But many theologians say that though deliberate omission of prayer is a paganish act for which there is no place in Islam, if a person does not offer prayer only due to negligence but has not rejected it in his heart and is not guilty of defiance in his creed then, in spite of the fact that he is deserving of severest chastisement both in this world and the next, his connection with Islam and the Muslim *Millah* will not stand terminated and the law laid down for an apostate will not apply to him. In their opinion if the intentional disregard of prayer has been denounced as apostasy in these sayings it is simply to show that it is a paganish act and this mode of expression has been preferred to emphasise the gravity of the offence in the same way as a harmful food or medicine is, often, described as poison.

(٤٧٦/٤) عَنْ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ عَمْرٍو بْنِ الْعَاصِ عَنِ النَّبِيِّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ أَنَّهُ ذَكَرَ أَمْرَ الصَّلَاةِ يَوْمًا فَقَالَ مَنْ حَافِظٌ عَلَيْهَا كَانَتْ لَهُ نُورًا وَبُرْهَانًا وَنَجَاةٌ يَوْمَ الْقِيَمَةِ وَمَنْ لَمْ يُحَافِظْ عَلَيْهَا لَمْ تَكُنْ لَهُ نُورًا وَلَا بُرْهَانًا وَلَا نَجَاةٌ وَكَانَ يَوْمَ الْقِيَمَةِ مَعَ قَارُونَ وَفِرْعَوْنَ وَهَامَانَ وَأَبِي بَنْي خَلْفٍ .

(رواه احمد والدارمي والبيهقي في شعب الایمان)

(476/4) Abdullah bin 'Amr bin Al-'Aas ؓ has said that the Prophet ﷺ mentioned prayer one day and said, "If anyone keeps to it, it will be a light, evidence and salvation for him on

the Day of Resurrection; but if anyone does not keep to it, it will not be for him light, evidence or salvation, and on the Day of Resurrection he will be with Qarun, Fir'awn, Haman and Ubayy bin Khalaf."

(Ahmad, Darami, Bayhaqi)

Commentary: Neglect of prayer is that grave crime which will make the neglecter liable to admittance to Hell where such great rebels as Fir'awn, Haman, Qarun and Ubayy bin Khalaf will be consigned. However, all those who are sent to hell will not suffer similar punishment just as all prisoners will not face the same punishment in the prison. The Qur'an says:

"Layer upon layer of darknes¹."

ظلمات بعضها فوق بعض

Obligation of The Five Daily Prayers And The Promise of Forgiveness

(٤٧٧/٥) عَنْ عُبَادَةَ بْنِ الصَّامِتِ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ خَمْسُ صَلَوَاتٍ افْتَرَضَهُنَّ اللَّهُ تَعَالَى مَنْ أَحْسَنَ وَضُوءَهُنَّ وَصَلَّاهُنَّ لَوَاقِيَهُنَّ وَاتَّقَى رُكُوعَهُنَّ وَخُشُوعَهُنَّ كَانَ لَهُ عَلَى اللَّهِ عَهْدٌ أَنْ يَغْفِرَ لَهُ وَمَنْ لَمْ يَفْعَلْ فَلَيْسَ لَهُ عَلَى اللَّهِ عَهْدٌ إِنْ شَاءَ غَفَرَهُ وَإِنْ شَاءَ عَذَّبَهُ. (رواه احمد و ابو داود)

(477/5) It is related by Ubaidah bin Samit رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Allah has prescribed five prayers, whoever performs *wudu* properly for them and offers them up at the right time and carries out *ruku* and *sujood*² as they ought to be and offers them with the feeling of deep reverence, for him it is the firm promise of Allah that He will forgive him (his sins), and whoever does not do so, for him there is no promise of Allah. He will forgive or punish him as He likes."

(Musnad Ahmad and Abu Dawood)

Commentary: It shows that a believing person who takes care to offer prayer in a fitting manner will, in the first instance, do his best not to violate a God-given law and should he ever fall into error and commit a sin he will be granted the good fortune to repent earnestly for his misdeeds and seek the forgiveness of Allah

① An-Nur, 24:40

② Plural of Sajda

as the common experience is — owing to the propitiousness of prayer. Apart from it, prayer will act towards the atonement of his sins. It is a propitiatory and purificatory worship of such a high order as to arouse the envy of the angels. Forgiveness is, thus, assured for those who habitually offer prayer with devotion and humility and with a due regard for rules and proprieties. As for those who neglect prayer, in spite of claiming to be Muslims, the Almighty will decide about them as He please. He may punish or pardon them. In any case, they are in grave peril and there is no assurance of forgiveness for them.

Source of Forgiveness And Purification

(٤٧٨/٦) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ أَرَأَيْتُمْ لَوْ أَنَّ نَهْرًا بِبَابِ أَحَدِكُمْ يَغْتَسِلُ فِيهِ كُلُّ يَوْمٍ خَمْسًا هَلْ يَبْقَى مِنْ ذَنْبِهِ شَيْءٌ قَالُوا لَا يَبْقَى مِنْ ذَنْبِهِ شَيْءٌ قَالَ فَذَلِكَ مَثَلُ الصَّلَوَاتِ الْخَمْسِ يَمْحُو اللَّهُ بِهِنَ الْخَطَايَا (رواه البخاري و مسلم)

(478/6) It is related on the authority of Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that, one day, the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said to his companions: "Tell me, if a stream flows at the door of anyone of you and he takes a dip in it five times a day, will any grime be left on his body." "No Messenger of Allah ﷺ!", The Companions رضي الله عنهم replied. "No grime will be left." The Prophet, thereupon, remarked: "It is the same with the five daily prayers. Allah removes sins and impurities through them." (Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: When a truthful Believer, mentally and spiritually aware of the reality of prayer occupies himself with it, his soul so to speak, dives deep into the ocean of Divine Power and Majesty, and just as a dirty garment is washed clean when it is dipped into the waves of the river, the rays of Divine Glory washes away all his filthiness, and if it is repeated five times a day, not a trace of dirt or impurity will be left on him.

(٤٧٩/٧) عَنْ أَبِي ذَرٍّ أَنَّ النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ خَرَجَ زَمَنَ الشِّتَاءِ وَالْوَرَقُ يَتَهَافُ فَأَخَذَ بِغُصْنٍ مِنْ شَجَرَةٍ قَالَ فَجَعَلَ ذَالِكَ الْوَرَقُ يَتَهَافُ .

قَالَ فَقَالَ يَا أَبَا ذَرٍّ قُلْتُ لَيْكَ يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ قَالَ إِنَّ الْعَبْدَ الْمُسْلِمَ لِيُصَلِّيَ
الصَّلَاةَ يُرِيدُ بِهَا وَجْهَ اللَّهِ تَتَهَافُ عَنْهُ ذُنُوبُهُ كَمَا تَهَافُ هَذَا الْوَرَقُ عَنْ هَذِهِ
الشَّجَرَةِ (رواه احمد)

(479/7) Abu Zarr رضي الله عنه narrated "Once during the cold weather the Messenger of Allah ﷺ went out and the leaves of the trees were falling (as it was the autumn). The Prophet ﷺ caught hold of two branches of a tree (and shook them) and its leaves began to fall suddenly. Addressing me, he said, 'Abu Zarr رضي الله عنه'. 'I am here, O Messenger of Allah', I replied. When a person offers prayer solely for the sake of Allah,' said the Prophet, 'his sins fall away like these leaves.' (Musnad Ahmad)

Commentary: Just as the leaves are dried by the rays of the sun and winds, so too the sins and lapses of anyone who prays five times a day are dried up by the rays of Divine light and mercy of Allah.

(٤٨٠/٨) عَنْ عُثْمَانَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَا مِنْ أَمْرٍ
مُسْلِمٍ تَحْضُرُهُ صَلَاةٌ مَكْتُوبَةٌ فَيُحْسِنُ وُضُوءَهَا وَخُشُوعَهَا وَرُكُوعَهَا إِلَّا
كَانَتْ كَفَّارَةً لِمَا قَبْلَهَا مِنَ الذُّنُوبِ مَا لَمْ يَأْتِ كَبِيرَةً وَذَلِكَ الدَّهْرُ كُلُّهُ
(رواه مسلم)

(480/8) It is related by Uthman رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "A Muslim who performs wudu properly for a fard prayer when the time for it comes, and, then, offers it with humbleness and with good ruku and sujood, that prayer will become an atonement for his previous sins unless he has been guilty of a major transgression, and this propitiousness of prayer will reach him forever. (Muslim)

Commentary: It shows that prayer can become an atonement for previous sins and remove the impurity of earlier misdeeds only when a person has not committed a grievous sins. The unholy effects of a major transgression are so great that sincere repentance alone removes them. Allah, however, can wipe them out even without a cause or reason. There is no one to check or restrain Him, indeed.

The Promise of Forgiveness And Paradise

(٤٨١/٩) عَنْ عُقْبَةَ بْنِ عَامِرٍ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَا مِنْ مُسْلِمٍ يَتَوَضَّأُ فَيُحْسِنُ وُضُوْءَهُ ثُمَّ يَقُومُ فَيُصَلِّي رَكْعَتَيْنِ مُقْبِلًا عَلَيْهِمَا بِقَلْبِهِ وَوَجْهِهِ إِلَّا وَجَبَتْ لَهُ الْجَنَّةُ — (رواه مسلم)

(481/9) It is related by Uqbah bin 'Aamir رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Paradise shall be granted (as of right) to the Muslim bondsman who performs *Wudu* thoroughly, and, then, stands up before Allah and offers two rak'ats of prayer with single-minded devotion." (Muslim)

Commentary: It tells that even if two *Rak'ats* are offered earnestly and attentively and care is, also, taken to perform the ablution for the prayer according the method prescribed by the sacred Prophet ﷺ, their value is so high in the Judgement of Allah that the devotee who is fortunate enough to do so shall be admitted to Heaven.

(٤٨٢/١٠) عَنْ زَيْدِ بْنِ خَالِدٍ الْجُهَنِيِّ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَنْ صَلَّي سَجْدَتَيْنِ لَا يَسْهُو فِيهِمَا غَفَرَ اللَّهُ لَهُ مَا تَقَدَّمَ مِنْ ذَنْبِهِ . (رواه احمد)

(482/10) It is related by Zayd bin Khalid Juhani رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "The bondsman who offers two rak'ats of prayer in such a way that there is not a trace of negligence in it, Allah will forgive all his previous sins in return for them." (Musnad Ahmad)

Commentary: The comments on the forgoing hadith apply here too. A SAD COMMENTARY It is very sad that in spite of these clear sayings of the Holy Prophet ﷺ, a large number of Muslims neglect prayer and deprive themselves of its blessings.

وَمَا ظَلَمَهُمُ اللَّهُ وَلَكِنْ كَانُوا أَنْفُسَهُمْ يَظْلِمُونَ ؕ (النحل: ١٦)

❶. Literally, obligatory. Here it denotes the five daily prayers which are not to be missed on any account

Most Pleasing Deed

(٤٨٣/١١) عَنْ ابْنِ مَسْعُودٍ قَالَ سَأَلْتُ النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ أَيُّ الْأَعْمَالِ أَحَبُّ إِلَى اللَّهِ قَالَ الصَّلَاةُ لَوْ قَتَلَهَا قُلْتُ ثُمَّ أَيُّ قَالَ بِرُّ الْوَالِدَيْنِ قُلْتُ ثُمَّ أَيُّ قَالَ الْجِهَادُ فِي سَبِيلِ اللَّهِ .
(رواه البخارى و مسلم)

(483/11) Abdullah bin Mas'ud رضي الله عنه related to us that he once asked the Holy Prophet ﷺ which act, among all religious duties, was most Pleasing to Allah . The Prophet ﷺ said: 'To offer prayer at the right time'. I , then, asked: 'Which act is most pleasing (to Him) after it?' To serve one's parents', replied the Prophet ﷺ. I, again, asked: "Which act is most pleasing (to Him) after it?" To do *Jihad* in the path of Allah,' came the reply."

(Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: The Prophet ﷺ has said here that prayer is more dear to Allah than even serving parents and engaging in jihad. Indeed, such is the station of *As-salah*. I have written a detailed account about this in my booklet, *Haqiqat-e-Namaz* (Urdu).

HOURS OF SALAT

The lofty aims, ideals and advantages associated with *as-salah* and the unique joy and satisfaction the fortunate bondsmen of Allah derive from it would require that it was enjoined upon them as an obligatory duty to devote most of the hours of the day and night, if not the whole lifetime, to its performance. But since Allah, in His Infinite Wisdom, has assigned many other duties too, to mankind, only five daily prayers have been prescribed and their hours have been determined so judiciously that the objects of prayer are fulfilled and the other obligations, also, do not suffer from negligence.

The *Fajr*¹ prayer is enjoined on waking up in the morning (i. e., after dawn and before the rising of the sun) so that the day should begin with presence in the celestial Court of the Almighty and the renewal of the covenant of submission and surrender. There is, then, no prayer till noon (i.e., till the declining of the sun) in order that people attend to their worldly tasks and other responsibilities during the long stretch of time. After the interval of half-a-day, the prayer of *Zuhr*² is to be offered, and it, too, with the option that one can do it at the beginning of the specified time or an hour or so later according to the circumstances. Anyhow it is necessary that the *Zuhr* prayer offered after this extended gap so that the period of negligence or absence from the Divine Court should not be longer. Again, the *Asr*³ prayer is to be offered when the evening begins to set in so that believing men and women present themselves in the Court of Almighty Allah and offer adoring prayer to Him at a time when people, generally, lay aside the day's work and take to relaxation and entertainment. When the day is done and the sun has

-
- ❶. The early morning prayer
 - ❷. The early afternoon prayer
 - ❸. The later afternoon prayer

set the *Maghrib*¹ prayer is performed in order that we, again, adore and pay homage to Allah and renew the covenant of servility at the end of the day and the beginning of the night. After it, the Prayer of *Isha*² is enjoined so that it is the last act of our daily life and we go to sleep after establishing the contact of humility and renewing the compact of faith and bondage with our Master.

Sufficient latitude has, further, been given for our convenience in the hours of the five obligatory prayers. We can offer them at the beginning or the middle of the specified time or towards the end of it.

As a little thought on this arrangement will show, the intervals between the prayers from *Zuhr* to *Isha*, are so brief that a faithful Believer who is aware of the worth and importance of prayer and has experienced the felicity and blessedness that goes along with it is obliged to wait anxiously for the '*Asr*' after the *Zuhr* for the *Maghrib* after the '*Asr*', and for the *Isha* after the *Maghrib* prayer. Thus, during all this time, his heart will, so to speak, remain oriented towards Allah and attuned to prayer. The gap between the *Fajr* and *Zuhr* prayers is to enable the bondsmen to attend to their material interests and other needs. The exhortation, however, is there for the bondsmen who can manage it to offer, as well, four *Rak'ats* of *Chast*³ during the intervening period. Similarly considering sleep to be a necessity, no prayer has been prescribed for the period between *Isha* and *Fajr* and this interval has been made the longest. But here, too, the bondsmen have been urged to get up and offer a few *Rak'ats* of *Tahajjud*⁴ at any time after the passage of first half of the night. The Prophet ﷺ has described great virtues in it and he had made such a regular practice of it with himself that he did not miss it even when on a journey.

The exhortatory sayings of the holy Prophet ﷺ about the *Chasht* and *Tahajjud* prayers will be taken up at the proper place. The introductory remarks, here, have been confined to the five daily obligatory prayers.

①. The evening prayer

②. The night prayer before one goes to bed.

③. A supererogatory prayer said during the earlier part of the day. The word *Chasht* denotes the middle hour between sunrise and the meridian.

④. A supererogatory prayer said during the later part of the night.

Timetable of The Daily Prayers

(٤٨٤/١٢) عَنْ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ عَمْرٍو بْنِ الْعَاصِ أَنَّهُ قَالَ سَأَلَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ عَنْ وَقْتِ الصَّلَاةِ فَقَالَ وَقْتُ صَلَاةِ الْفَجْرِ مَا لَمْ يَطْلُعْ قَرْنُ الشَّمْسِ الْأَوَّلُ وَوَقْتُ صَلَاةِ الظُّهْرِ إِذَا زَالَتِ الشَّمْسُ عَنْ بَطْنِ السَّمَاءِ مَا لَمْ تَخْضِرَ الْعَصْرُ وَوَقْتُ صَلَاةِ الْعَصْرِ مَا لَمْ تَصْفُرْ الشَّمْسُ وَيَسْقُطُ قَرْنُهَا الْأَوَّلُ وَوَقْتُ صَلَاةِ الْمَغْرِبِ إِذَا غَابَتِ الشَّمْسُ مَا لَمْ يَسْقُطِ الشَّفَقُ وَوَقْتُ صَلَاةِ الْعِشَاءِ إِلَى نِصْفِ اللَّيْلِ . (رواه البخارى و مسلم و اللفظ لمسلم)

(484/12) It is related by Abdullah bin 'Amr bin al 'Aas ؓ that (once) the Messenger of Allah ﷺ was asked about the (specified) time of prayers upon which he said: 'The time for the *Fajr* prayer lasts till the first edge of the sun appears (i.e., it comes to an end when the sun begins to rise in the morning and its outer extremity becomes visible on the horizon), and the time for *Zuhr* comes when the sun declines towards the West from the middle of the sky (i.e., the meridian) and lasts till the time of 'Asr commences, and the time for 'Asr lasts till the sun turns pale and its first edge begins to set, and the time for Maghrib comes when the sun sinks below the horizon altogether and lasts till the twilight disappears, and the time for Isha lasts upto midnight.' (Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: In this Tradition the Prophet ﷺ has mostly mentioned the furthest limit of the hours of prayer-services which denotes that the questioner, probably, wanted only to know how far did the time for the five daily services extend and up to when could each prayer be offered. The time the prayers began was, perhaps, already known to him.

About the *Maghrib* prayer it tells that its time remains till the twilight disappears. The legist-doctors have differed over the significance of 'twilight'. Every one knows that a faint diffused light is visible in the west after sunset which disappears after some time and a sort of whiteness takes its place. This whiteness also fades away quickly and it grows dark. According to a majority of the authorities, the word 'twilight' signifies the glow which is seen after sunset, and, as such, the time for *Maghrib* ends and that of *Isha* begins when the glow after sunset and the whiteness that follows

are covered by 'twilight'. Thus, horizon ends and darkness spreads. It is only then that, according to him, the time for Isha begins. But another report, also, attributed to Imam Abu Hanifa conforms to the view point of the other doctors and has been upheld by both of his celebrated pupils, Imam Abu Yusuf and Imam Muhammad as well. In fact, most of the Hanafi authorities have based their judgement upon it.

The time for Isha has been indicated in the above and some other narratives as lasting till the middle of the night but from a few other sayings it appears that it lasts till the dawn of day. The Traditions in which the time for Isha has been specified however, have been taken to mean, on the whole, that it is legitimate to offer the *Isha* prayer up to the middle of the night and *Mukrooh*¹ after that.

(٤٨٥/١٣) عَنْ بُرَيْدَةَ قَالَ إِنَّ رَجُلًا سَأَلَ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ عَنْ وَقْتِ الصَّلَاةِ فَقَالَ لَهُ صَلَّى مَعَنَا هَذَيْنِ يَغِيْبُ الْيَوْمَيْنِ فَلَمَّا زَالَتِ الشَّمْسُ وَ أَمْرِبِلَالًا فَأَذَنَ ثُمَّ أَمْرَهُ فَأَقَامَ الظُّهْرَ ثُمَّ أَمْرَهُ فَأَقَامَ الْعَصْرَ وَالشَّمْسُ مُرْتَفِعَةً بَيْضَاءُ نَقِيَّةٌ ثُمَّ أَمْرَهُ فَأَقَامَ الْمَغْرِبَ حِينَ غَابَتِ الشَّمْسُ ثُمَّ أَمْرَهُ فَأَقَامَ الْعِشَاءَ حِينَ غَابَ الشَّفَقُ ثُمَّ أَمْرَهُ فَأَقَامَ الْفَجْرَ حِينَ طَلَعَ الْفَجْرُ فَلَمَّا أَنْ كَانَ الْيَوْمُ الثَّانِي أَمْرَهُ فَأَبْرَدَ بِالظُّهْرِ فَأَبْرَدَ بِهَا فَأَنْعَمَ أَنْ يُبْرَدَ بِهَا وَصَلَّى الْعَصْرَ وَالشَّمْسُ مُرْتَفِعَةً آخِرَهَا فَوْقَ الَّذِي كَانَ وَصَلَّى الْمَغْرِبَ قَبْلَ أَنْ يَغِيْبَ الشَّفَقُ وَصَلَّى الْعِشَاءَ بَعْدَ مَا ذَهَبَ ثُلُثُ اللَّيْلِ وَصَلَّى الْفَجْرَ فَاسْفَرَ بِهَا ثُمَّ قَالَ أَيْنَ السَّائِلُ عَنْ وَقْتِ الصَّلَاةِ فَقَالَ الرَّجُلُ أَنَا يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ قَالَ وَقْتُ صَلَاتِكُمْ بَيْنَ مَا رَأَيْتُمْ (رواه مسلم)

(485/13) It is related by Sayyidina Buraidah رضي الله عنه that (once) someone enquired from the Messenger of Allah ﷺ about the hours of prayers and the Prophet ﷺ told him to offer prayer with him on the two following days (i.e., on that day and the next). Then, as soon as the sun declined (after mid-day) the Prophet ﷺ ordered Bilal رضي الله عنه and Bilal رضي الله عنه gave the *Azan*².

①. Any act or thing forbidden not absolutely by the Shari'ah but from which it is advisable to abstain.

② The Summons to prayers, generally proclaimed from the minarets of a mosque.

Thereafter, he ordered Bilal رضي الله عنه and Bilal رضي الله عنه called the *Iqamat*¹ for *Zuhr* (and the prayer of *Zuhr* was observed), and this *Azan* and prayer took place at a time when the sun was quite high, clear and bright. Then, immediately after sunset, the Prophet ﷺ ordered Bilal رضي الله عنه and Bilal رضي الله عنه called upon the *Iqamah* of *Maghrib* (and the *Maghrib* prayer was offered). Then, after the twilight had disappeared, the Prophet ﷺ ordered Bilal رضي الله عنه and Bilal رضي الله عنه called the *Iqamah* of *Isha* (and the *Isha* prayer was offered). Then, as soon as it was dawn and the night had ended, the Prophet ﷺ ordered Bilal رضي الله عنه and Bilal رضي الله عنه called the *Iqamah* for *Fajr* (and the *Fajr* prayer was offered). Afterwards, on the day after it, the Prophet ﷺ ordered Bilal رضي الله عنه to establish the *Zuhr* prayer when it had become cooler and said that the *Zuhr* (should, today, be delayed) till it was cooler. So, in compliance with the Prophet's ﷺ command, Bilal رضي الله عنه called the *Iqamah* of *Zuhr* when it had grown cooler and allowed the day was offered up pretty late, when the time for it was about to end), and the *Asr* prayer was offered at such a time that though the sun was still bright, it was later than on the previous day, and the Prophet ﷺ offered the *Maghrib* prayer before the fading away of the twilight and *Isha* after one-third of the night has passed, and the prayer of *Fajr* at the time of *Isfar* (i.e., when the light of day had spread). The Prophet ﷺ, thereupon, enquired. 'Where is the man who wanted to know about the hours of prayer?' 'O Messenger of Allah! Here am I', replied the man. 'The time for your prayer is between what you saw' " (Muslim)

Commentary: To make the questioner understand when the hours of the five daily prayers began and ended, the holy Prophet ﷺ thought it advisable to demonstrate the whole thing by his own action. He, therefore, told him to offer prayer with him for two days. On the first day the Prophet ﷺ offered every prayer during the early part of the specified time and on the next delayed it as far as it could be done legitimately and explained to the questioner that the beginning and the end of the time for each service was when he had seen him observing it.

(٤٨٦/١٤) عَنْ سَيَّارِ بْنِ سَلَامَةَ قَالَ دَخَلْتُ أَنَا وَابْنُ أَبِي بَرزَةَ الْأَسْلَمِيُّ

①. The second call to prayer which is uttered immediately before the beginning of congregation.

فَقَالَ لَهُ أَبِي كَيْفَ كَانَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يُصَلِّي الْمَكْتُوبَةَ
فَقَالَ كَانَ يُصَلِّي الْهَجِيرَ الَّتِي تَدْعُونَهَا الْأُولَى حِينَ تَذْخَضُ الشَّمْسُ وَيُصَلِّي
الْعَصْرَ ثُمَّ يَرْجِعُ أَحَدَنَا إِلَى رَحْلِهِ فِي أَقْصَى الْمَدِينَةِ وَالشَّمْسُ حَيَّةٌ وَنَسِيتُ
مَا قَالَ فِي الْمَغْرِبِ وَكَانَ يَسْتَحِبُّ أَنْ يُؤَخِّرَ الْعِشَاءَ الَّتِي تَدْعُونَهَا الْعَتَمَةَ
وَكَانَ يَكْرَهُ النَّوْمَ قَبْلَهَا وَالْحَدِيثَ بَعْدَهَا وَكَانَ يَنْفَتِلُ مِنْ صَلَاةِ الْغَدَاةِ حِينَ
يَعْرِفُ الرَّجُلُ جَلِيسَهُ وَيَقْرَأُ بِالسِّتِينَ إِلَى الْإِمَاءِ . (رواه البخارى)

(486/14) It is narrated by Sayyar bin Salamah, My father and I visited Abu Barzah al-Aslami and my father asked him how the Messenger of Allah ﷺ used to observe the prescribed prayer. He replied, "He used to pray the *Zuhr* (noon) prayer (al-hajeer), which you call the first, when the sun was past the meridian; he would pray the *Asr* (afternoon) prayer, after which one of us would return to his dwelling in the outskirts of Madinah while the sun was still bright. (I forget what he said about the *Maghrib* [sunset] prayer): he liked to postpone the *Isha* (night) prayer, which you call al-'atama, objecting to sleeping before it or taking after it; and he would turn away from (finish) the *Fajr* (morning) prayer when a man could recognise his neighbour, and he would recite from sixty to a hundred verses during it."

(Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: The narrator of the hadith, Sayyar bin Salamah forgot what Abu Barzah had said about the time of the *Maghrib* prayer. We know, however, from the other ahadith that the Prophet ﷺ generally offered this prayer at the initial time as the sunset. It was only for certain extra ordinary reasons that he sometimes delayed it.

(٤٨٧/١٥) عَنْ مُحَمَّدِ بْنِ عَمْرِو بْنِ الْحَسَنِ بْنِ عَلِيٍّ قَالَ سَأَلْنَا جَابِرَ بْنَ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ عَنْ صَلَاةِ النَّبِيِّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ فَقَالَ كَانَ يُصَلِّي الظُّهْرَ بِالْهَاجِرَةِ وَالْعَصْرَ وَالشَّمْسُ حَيَّةٌ وَالْمَغْرِبَ إِذَا وَجَبَتْ وَالْعِشَاءَ إِذَا أَكْثَرَ النَّاسُ عَجَلَ وَإِذَا قُلُوا آخِرَ وَالصُّبْحَ بِغُلَسٍ . (رواه البخارى و مسلم)

(487/15) It is related by Muhammad bin Amr bin Al-Hasan, the grandson of Hasan bin Ali ؓ, I enquired from Jaber bin Abdullah ؓ about the prayer of the Messenger of Allah ﷺ

(i.e., about their timings) and he replied, "The Prophet offered the prayer of *Zuhr* at midday (as soon as the sun began to decline), and of *Asr* when the sun was still fully alive (i.e., its light and heat had not diminished), and *Maghrib* at sunset, and about the *Isha* service (his custom was to) offer it early (when people came in a large number to join the congregation) but late when the people were few, and he offered up the prayer of *Fajr* when it was still dark'." (Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: From it we learn about *Zuhr* that Prophet ﷺ offered it up as soon as the sun began to decline but from the other reports reproduced below it is clear that he did so on days besides the summer. When it was very hot, the Prophet ﷺ used to delay the prayer till it became cooler and he has, also, commended it to the *Ummah*.

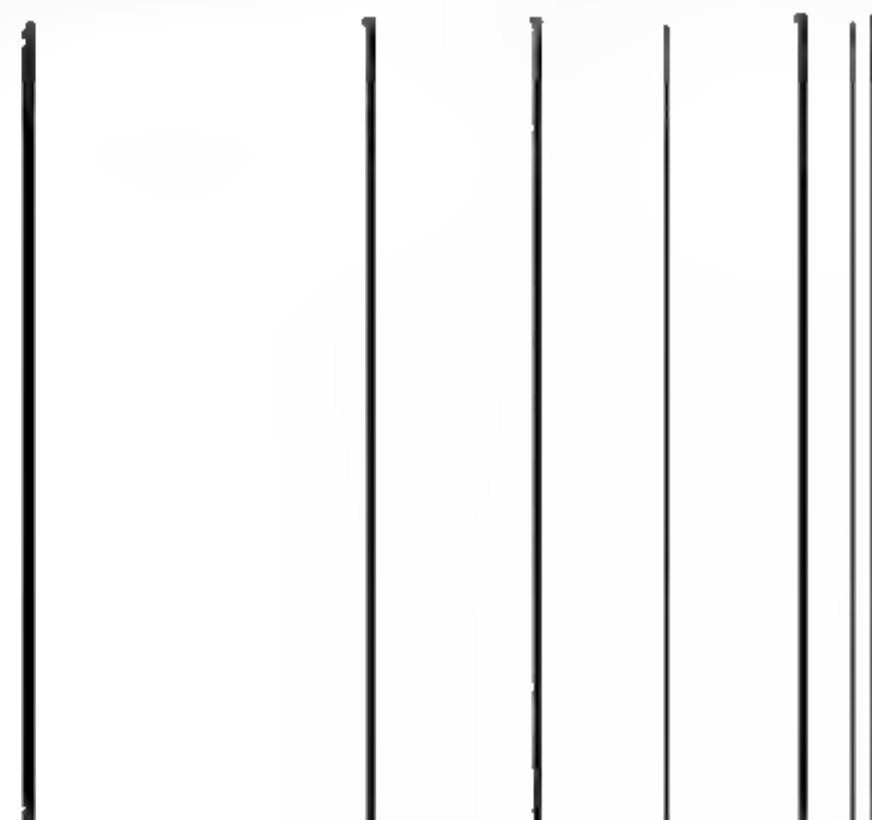
(٤٨٨/١٦) عَنْ أَنَسٍ قَالَ كَانَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا كَانَ الْحَرُّ ابْرَدَ بِالصَّلَاةِ وَإِذَا كَانَ الْبَرْدُ عَجَّلَ . (رواه النسائي)

(488/16) It is related on the authority of Anas رضي الله عنه that it was the custom of the Messenger of Allah ﷺ that when it was hot he delayed the *Zuhr* prayer until it had grown cooler, and when it was winter he offered it early (i.e., at the beginning of the specified time)". (Nasai)

(٤٨٩/١٧) عَنْ أَبِي سَعِيدٍ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا اشْتَدَّ الْحَرُّ فَأَبْرِ دُونَ الظُّهْرِ فَإِنَّ شِدَّةَ الْحَرِّ مِنْ فَيْحِ جَهَنَّمَ . (رواه البخاري)

(489/17) Abi Sa'eed Khudri رضي الله عنه narrated that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "When it is too hot, offer *Zuhr* when it becomes cooler for the intensity of heat is from the fury of the fire of Hell." (Bukhari)

Commentary: There are some apparent causes of what we see and



reproduced earlier, shows that when the proposal of the bell was made the Prophet ﷺ remarked that it was the thing of the Charistians.

We suppose that the correct explanation of the divergence between the two statements is that among the few suggestions made to the Prophet ﷺ for summoning the faithful to prayer those of hoisting the flag, lighting the fire and blowing the horn were rejected by him outright and that was why one suggestion was made quickly after the other. But about the last proposal of ringing the bell the Prophet ﷺ had simply observed that it was the thing of the Charistians and said no other word that could be taken for a distinct expression of disapproval.

It is, moreover, quite possible that from the Prophet's ﷺ reaction some Companions ؓ had imagined that he preferred, in some degree the idea of the bell and concluded, on the basis of it, that the bell would be used till a better method was discovered.

Be that as it may, in our view Sayyidina Abdullah bin Zayd ؓ has used the phrase *Amra bin naqoos*, in the above Tradition, to describe the same situation. Sometimes, the word *Amr* is also employed to denote 'permission' or 'authorisation', numerous instances of which can be found in the Qur'an and the Traditions.

Secondly, in this report, the *Kalimas*¹ occurring four times in the *Azan* have been mentioned only twice in *Iqamah*. From Sayyidina Anas bin Maalik's ؓ narrative we are going to quote later, it, again, appears that these words were to be pronounced only once. But in other reports, a few of which will be taken up here and about whose genuineness, too, there can be no doubt, it is stated that these *Kalimas* will be said twice in *Iqamah* as in *Azan*. Some authorities have shown preference for the reports for those that want them to be pronounced twice. It is, however, clear that the validity of both the forms of *Iqamah* is undeniable and the distinction can only be made on the ground of preference.

(٥٠٥/٣٣) عَنْ أَنَسِ بْنِ مَالِكٍ قَالَ لَمَّا كَثُرَ النَّاسُ ذَكَرُوا أَنْ يُعْلَمُوا وَقْتُ

الصَّلَاةِ بِشَيْءٍ يَعْرِفُونَهُ فَذَكَرُوا أَنْ يُؤْزَرُوا نَارًا أَوْ يَضْرِبُوا نَاقُوسًا فَأَمَرَ بِلَالٌ أَنْ

①. A *Kalima* is a group of words forming a sub-section of a section or functioning as a single part of speech.

يَشْفَعُ الْأَذَانَ وَيُوتِرُ الْإِقَامَةَ . (رواه البخارى و مسلم و اللفظ له)

(505/33) It is reported by Anas bin Malik رضي الله عنه that when the number of men (coming to prayers at the mosque) increased, they discussed ways to summon people which they would recognise. The kindling of fire and the ringing of the bell were to repeat the (words of) *Azan* twice and the *Iqamah* once.

(Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: This hadith narrates the incident very briefly, even omitting the dream of Abdulah bin Zayd رضي الله عنه. Such narrators know that listeners are aware of the details or it is not necessary to mention them.

Sayyidina Anas رضي الله عنه has also said that the words of *iqamah* be called out once. Those scholars who hold that these words are called out twice tell us that the words were called out once in the initial days of *Azan*.

However, after about seven or eight years when they were returning from the Battle of Hunayn, the Holy Prophet ﷺ taught Abu Mahzurah¹ رضي الله عنه to call out the *azan* and the *iqamah*, he asked him to repeat the words twice in the *iqamah* too. Therefore, the latter command is preferred.

I subscribe to the opinion of Shah Waliullah رحمة الله عليه as the final word when he says that in the same as the various recitations of the Qur'an all of which are known to have been taught by the Prophet ﷺ, the words of *azan* and *iqamah* too are taught by him and therefore, correct and worth observing.²

Teaching of *Azan* to Abu Mahdoorah رضي الله عنه

(٥٠٦/٣٤) عَنْ أَبِي مَحْدُورَةَ قَالَ أَلْقَى عَلَيَّ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ التَّأْذِينَ هُوَ بِنَفْسِهِ فَقَالَ قُلْ اللَّهُ أَكْبَرُ اللَّهُ أَكْبَرُ، اللَّهُ أَكْبَرُ اللَّهُ أَكْبَرُ، أَشْهَدُ أَنْ لَا إِلَهَ إِلَّا اللَّهُ، أَشْهَدُ أَنْ لَا إِلَهَ إِلَّا اللَّهُ، أَشْهَدُ أَنْ مُحَمَّدًا رَسُولُ اللَّهِ، أَشْهَدُ أَنْ مُحَمَّدًا رَسُولُ اللَّهِ ثُمَّ تَعَوَّدُ فَقَوْلُ أَشْهَدُ أَنْ لَا إِلَهَ إِلَّا اللَّهُ . أَشْهَدُ أَنْ لَا إِلَهَ إِلَّا اللَّهُ ، أَشْهَدُ أَنْ مُحَمَّدًا رَسُولُ اللَّهِ ، أَشْهَدُ أَنْ مُحَمَّدًا رَسُولُ اللَّهِ ،

①. The Urdu book has the name *Makhadurah* but Sahih Muslim, Abu Dawood, the Mishkah have it *Mahzurah*.

②. Hujjatul Allah al Balighah , v 1 p191

حَيَّ عَلَى الصَّلَاةِ، حَيَّ عَلَى الصَّلَاةِ، حَيَّ عَلَى الْفَلَاحِ، حَيَّ عَلَى الْفَلَاحِ .
 اللَّهُ أَكْبَرُ اللَّهُ أَكْبَرُ . لَا إِلَهَ إِلَّا اللَّهُ .
 (رواه مسلم)

(506/34) Abu Mahzurah رضي الله عنه related to us: "The Messenger of Allah ﷺ taught me the *Azan* personally. He told me to say: *Allahu Akbar, Allahu Akbar; Ash-hadu Allaa-ilaaha il-lal-laah, Ash-hadu al-laa-ilaaha il-lal-laah; Ash-hadu an-na Muhammadar-rasoo-lul-laah, Ash-hadu an-na Muhammadar-Rasoo-lul-laah; He then, told me to repeat it: Ash-hadu allaa-ilaaha il-lal-laah, Ash-hadu al-laa-ilaaha il-lal-laah; Ash-hadu an-na Muhammadar-Rasoo-lul-laah, Ash-hadu anna-Muhammadar-Rasoo-lul-laah; Hayya alas-Salaah, Hayya alas-Salaah; Hayya alal-falaah, Hayya alal-falaah; Allahu Akbar, allahu akbar; laa-ilaaha il-lal-laah.* (Muslim)

(٥٠٧/٣٥) عَنْ أَبِي مَحْزُورَةَ أَنَّ النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ عَلَّمَهُ الْآذَانَ
 تِسْعَ عَشْرَةَ كَلِمَةً وَالْإِقَامَةَ سَبْعَ عَشْرَةَ كَلِمَةً .

(رواه احمد و الترمذى و ابو داؤد و النسائى و الدارمى و ابن ماجه)

(507/35) Narrates Abu Mahzurah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ taught me *Azan*, 19 *Kalimas*, and *iqamah*, 17 *Kalimas*."

(Musnad Ahmad, Tirmizi, Abu Dawood, Nasai, Daarami, and ibn Majah)

Commentray: Of the two Traditions given above, the former contains the full 19 *Kalimas* of *Azan*, the four *Kalimas* of Affirmation having occurred twice, and the *Kalimas* of *Iqamah* are 17 in it because the *Kalimas* of Affirmation are not to be repeated. The number of *Kalimas* will, thus, be reduced by four and with the addition of the two *Kalimas* of *Qad Quamatis Salah, qad qaamatis salaah*, it will come to 17.

The event of the teaching of *Azan* by the sacred Prophet ﷺ to Abu Mahzurah رضي الله عنه took place in *Shawwal*¹, 8 AH., when the Prophet ﷺ was returning from the battle of Hunayn. The details of it, as collected from various sources, will, perhaps, bear reproduction.

When, after the victory of Makkah, the Prophet ﷺ marched with his army towards Hunayn, a number of Makkans he had

①. The tenth month of the Mohammeden year.

pardoned and set free accompanied him. Abu Mahzurah ؓ, who was a hot-headed young man and had not embraced Islam had, also, left for Hunayn with nine other like-minded friends. He relates "the Messenger of Allah ﷺ was returning from Hunayn when we met him on the way. When the time for prayer came, the *Muazzin* of the Prophet ﷺ gave the *Azan*. We hated *Azan*, (or, rather, the religion of *Azan*). So, we began to imitate the *Azan* scornfully, and I gave the *Azan*, like the *Muazzin*, with a very loud voice. As our voice reached the Prophet ﷺ, he sent for us and we were produced before him. Tell me, he asked, 'Whose voice among you is the loudest'. My friends, thereupon, pointed towards me, and it was, also, a fact. The Prophet ﷺ detained me and ordered the rest of us to be released. He, then told me to stand up and give the *Azan* again. My condition, at that time, was such that nothing (in the world) was more abhorrent to me than the Prophet ﷺ and the *Azan* he had commanded me to pronounce. My heart, God be our refuge, was filled with repugance for him. But I was helpless. So I stood up unwillingly to carry out the command. The Prophet ﷺ, himself, began to teach me the *Azan* and told me to say: *Allahu Akbar, Allahu Akbar, Allahu Akbar, Allahu Akbar*.....(The *Azan* has already been given in Tradition above — Author). When I had finished the *Azan*, the Prophet ﷺ gave me a purse which contained some silver and placed his hands on the front part of my head, and, then, he moved his blessed hand over my face and the front upper part of my body i.e., chest, heart and liver and, after it, lower down up to the navel. He, then, blessed me with these words: *Barak Allah feeh wa barak Allah alaik* (May God bestow blessing upon thee)! He made the invocation thrice. (By the blessedness of the Prophet's ﷺ prayer and his hand, the curse of infidelity and hatred disappeared from my heart and I attained the wealth of Faith and love.) I begged him to make me the *Muazzin* of the mosque of Makkah. The Prophet ﷺ replied, 'Go I order you to give *Azan* in the mosque of Makkah from now on'."

It is evident from the above why the Prophet ﷺ had made Abu Mahzurah ؓ pronounce the *Kalimas* of Affirmation, i.e., *Ashdu al-laa ilaaha illallah* and *Ash-hadu an-na Mhuammadar rasool ul-laa* not twice but four times. Till then, Faith had not permeated

his heart and he had stood up to give the *Azan* merely under compulsion and the two *Kalimas* of Affirmation were exceedingly revolting to him. After Abu Mahzurah had pronounced them once the Prophet ﷺ told him to repeat them in a full-throated manner. We, also, believe that the holy Prophet ﷺ was imploring Allah inwardly, while he was making Abu Mahurah utter the *Kalima*, to instil and infuse them into the heart of the bondsman. Anyway, it is not inconceivable that owing to the peculiar case of Abu Mahzurah the Prophet ﷺ had made him pronounce those *Kalima* over a second time otherwise from an authentic report does it appear that the Prophet ever bade his permanent *Muazzin*, Bilal ؓ, to say them four times each. Similarly, in reliable reports of Abdullah bin Zayd's dream the two *Kalima* of Affirmation occur only twice.

Nevertheless Sayyidina Abu Mahzurah ؓ continued to pronounce the aforesaid *Kalimas* four times over in the *Azan* in Makkah perhaps for the reason that he had been taught that by the Prophet ﷺ and it was through its propitiousness that the boon and blessing of Faith had reached him. Like a true lover, it was his heart's desire to give the *Azan* exactly as the Prophet ﷺ instructed or else he must have known how the Prophet's ؓ *Muazzin*, Bilal ؓ, did it.

In other Traditions referring to the same incident it is, also, stated that Abu Mahzurah never shaved or cut the hair growing just above the forehead where the Prophet ﷺ had been pleased to place his hand. Just as it was love's idiosyncrasy, in the same way he always gave the *Azan* by uttering four times both the *Kalima* of Affirmation. The Prophet ﷺ must have known it but he never forbade him which should be enough to leave on one in doubt about its allowability. We are again reminded of the suggestion of Shah Waliullah رحمه الله عليه that the different versions of *azan* and *iqamah* are like the differences in the recital of Qur'an.

Principles of Religion Lie in *Azan* & *Iqamah*

Apparently, both *Azan* and *iqamah* are a means of announcing to the faithful that the time for the obligatory prayer was near and summoning them to it. Allah however, has inspired such comprehensive *Kalima* for it as are symbolic of the entire spirit of

Faith. The question of the Being and Attributes of Allah forms the starting point of the entire religious scheme of things and for the proclamation of the Islamic view-point there could be no better and more trenchant words than *Allah-u-Akbar, Allah-u-Akbar*. Then comes the creed of Divine Unity which elaborates and brings to completion the question Attributes. Nothing could signify it more effectively and admirably in a few words than the *Kalima* of *Ash-hadu al-laa-ilaaha illAllah-laa*. When it has been known, positively, that Allah alone is our Lord and Diety and no one aside of Him is worthy of worship and submission, the question automatically arises from where one can know about the path that leads up to Him or the method through which the correct bond of servility and obedience is forged. The *Kalima* of *Ash-hadu an-na Muhammadar Rasool ul-laa* provides the aptest answer to it. Through *Hayya alas Saluah* the bondsman is summoned to prayer which is the first step towards Allah and the most sublime way to establish the contact of devotion and obeisance with Him. Next, it is proclaimed through *Hayya alal-falaah* that this is the path of success and salvation, and those who will leave it and follow any other path shall never attain felicity. It, thus, asserts and makes known the doctrine of the Hereafter and in the words that not only affirm it but also confront us with the most fundamental problem of life. In the end, it is, again, announced through *Allahu Akbar, Allahu Akbar, Laa ilaaha illAllah* that Allah alone is great, the Supreme Being, Unequalled and Unpartnered, and, therefore, it is His countenance and good pleasure the seeking of which ought to be the aim and object of all our aspirations and endeavours.

How wonderful, comprehensive and puissant this proclamation of the principal tenets of Islam is and how soul-stirring is the invitation to it contained in the few, short *Kalima* of *Azan* and *iqamah*! This powerful, heart-stirring call of Faith is given from every mosque five times a day.

If we, the Muslims, could only make our children learn the *Azan* by heart, and, also, explain to them its meaning, specially that of:

أَشْهَدُ أَنْ لَا إِلَهَ إِلَّا اللَّهُ

Ash-hadu an-laa ilaaha illAllah, and;

أَشْهَدُ أَنَّ مُحَمَّدًا رَسُولُ اللَّهِ

Ash-hadu an-na Muhammadar-rasool ul-laah,

in relation to the times and the environment, they would Insha Allah, never fall a prey to an un-Islamic nation or movement.

Some Commands And Directives

(٥٠٨/٣٦) عَنْ جَابِرٍ أَنَّ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ قَالَ لِبِلَالٍ إِذَا أَذَّنْتَ فَتَرَمَّلْ وَإِذَا أَقَمْتَ فَاحْدَرْ وَاجْعَلْ بَيْنَ أَذَانِكَ وَإِقَامَتِكَ قَدْ رَمَا يَفْرَغُ الْأَكْلَ مِنَ الْأَكْلِ وَالشَّارِبُ مِنْ شُرْبِهِ وَالْمُعْتَصِرُ إِذَا دَخَلَ لِقَضَاءِ حَاجَتِهِ وَلَا تَقُومُوا حَتَّى تَرَوْنِي . (رواه الترمذی)

(508/36) It is related by Sayyidina Jabir رضی اللہ عنہ that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said to his *Muazzin*, Bilal رضی اللہ عنہ: "When you give the *Azan*, give it slowly (i.e., by stopping for a few moments and taking afresh breath after every *Kalima*), and when you call the *Iqamah*, say it flowingly, and let there be such an interval between your *Azan* and *Iqamah* that a person who is eating may finish his meal and a person who has to answer the call of nature may ease himself, and do not stand up till you have seen me." (Tirmizi)

Commentary: The instructions contained in the above Tradition regarding *Azan* and *Iqamah* are clear and unambiguous except, of course, the last one which says: "And do not stand up till you have seen me." Perhaps, people, occasionally, stood up for prayer before the Holy Prophet ﷺ had emerged from his apartment, thinking that he was about to come to lead the congregation. The Prophet ﷺ forbade it and said that the devotees should not stand up until he had arrived in the mosque. For the worshippers to stand up beforehand was to put themselves to unnecessary trouble, and, then, there was always the possibility of the Prophet ﷺ being held up for some reason and taking a little more time in coming. It would, again, not have been pleasing to his modest and unassuming nature that the bondmen of Allah waited for him, drawn up in ranks.

(٥٠٩/٣٧) عَنْ سَعْدِ مُوَذِّنِ رَسُولِ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ أَنَّ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ

صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ أَمْرًا لَا أَنْ يَجْعَلَ اصْغَعِي فِي أُذُنِهِ قَالَ إِنَّهُ أَرْفَعُ لَصَوْتِكَ .
(رواه ابن ماجه)

(509/37) It is related by Sa'd رضي الله عنه who was appointed the Muazzin of the mosque of Quba that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ commanded Bilal رضي الله عنه to place his fingers in his ears when giving the *Azan*. "In this way", he said to Bilal رضي الله عنه, "your voice will be stronger."
(Ibn-i-Majah)

(٥١٠/٣٨) عَنْ زِيَادِ بْنِ الْحَارِثِ الصُّدِّيِّ قَالَ أَمَرَنِي رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ أَنْ أَذِّنَ فِي صَلَاةِ الْفَجْرِ فَأَذَّنْتُ فَأَرَادَ بِلَالٌ أَنْ يَقِيمَ فَقَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِنَّ أَحَاضِدَاءِ قَدْ أَذَّنَ وَمَنْ أَذَّنَ فَهُوَ يَقِيمُ .

(رواه الترمذی و ابو داؤد و ابن ماجه)

(510/38) It is related by Ziyad bin Harith رضي الله عنه that, once, at the time of the Fajr prayers the Messenger of Allah ﷺ bade me to give *Azan* which I did. Afterwards, when the time for pronouncing *Iqamah* came, Bilal wanted to say it but the Prophet ﷺ said about me, "This Sa'd has given *Azan* and the rule is that whoever gives the *Azan* should (also) say *Iqamah*."

(Tirmizi, Abu Dawood and Ibn Majah)

(٥١١/٣٩) عَنْ عُثْمَانَ بْنِ أَبِي الْعَاصِ قَالَ إِنَّ مِنْ آخِرِمَا عَهِدَ إِلَيَّ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ أَنْ اتَّحِذْ مُوَدَّنًا لَا يَأْخُذُ عَلَيَّ أَذَانَهُ أَجْرًا .

(رواه الترمذی)

(511/39) Uthman bin Abi Al-Aas رضي الله عنه related "When the Messenger of Allah sent me to Taif as the Governor, one of the instructions he gave (at the time of my departure) was to appoint such a (man as) *Muazzin* who did not accept a remuneration for giving *Azan* (but did it wholly for the sake of Allah and with the object of earning the reward of the Hereafter)."

(Tirmizi)

Commentary: Many legist-doctors, including Imam Abu Hanifah, have concluded from this Tradition that it is improper to accept remuneration for calling the *Azan*. Others have ascribed the instruction contained in it to pitey and devotion. Some latter-day jurists of the *Hanfi* school, also, have held that, in the changed

conditions of the times, justification can be found for remuneration. The dignity and sublimity of acts like *Azan* and *Imamat*¹, anyhow, demand that they should be performed solely for the sake of Allah and if it was unavoidable to agree to an emolument is ought to be accepted for the other related duties and the matter should be settled explicitly at the time of taking up the appointment.

(٥١٢/٤٠) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ الْإِمَامُ ضَامِنٌ وَالْمُؤَذِّنُ مُؤْتَمَنٌ اللَّهُمَّ ارْشِدِ الْإِمَامَةَ وَاعْفِرْ لِلْمُؤَذِّنِينَ .

(رواه احمد و ابو داؤد و الترمذى و الشافعى)

(512/40) It is related by Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "*Imam*² is the surety and *Muazzin* is trustee. O Allah! Guide the *Imams* and forgive the *Muazzins*."

(Musnad Ahmad, Abu Dawood, Tirmizi and Musnad Shafi'i)

Commentary: It shows that upon the Imams rests the responsibility of their own prayer as well of those who offer it behind them. Their endeavour should, therefore, be to observe prayer in the best possible manner, both inwardly and outwardly. As for the *Muazzin*, people rely upon him for *Azan* and so he should discharge the duty with the fullest sense of responsibility by giving the *Azan* at the right time, regardless of his own convenience. This hadith mentions the responsibility of both of them and the Prophet has prayed for both.

(٥١٣/٤١) عَنْ مَالِكِ بْنِ الْحُوَيْرِثِ قَالَ أَتَيْتُ النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ أَنَا وَابْنُ عَمِّ لِي فَقَالَ إِذَا سَافَرْتُمَا فَادْنَا وَاقِيمَا وَلْيُؤْمِكُمَا الْكَبِيرُ كَمَا .

(رواه البخارى)

(513/41) It is related by Maalik bin Huwayrith رضي الله عنه "(Once) I went to the Messenger of Allah ﷺ and my cousin (i.e., uncle's son), also, was with me. The Prophet ﷺ said: 'When you are on a journey, say *Azan* and *Iqamah* for prayer, and the eldest of you should act as Imam and lead the service.'" (Bukahri)

Commentary: In another version of the same incident, appearing, also, in *Sahih Bukhari*, it is stated that Maalik bin Huwayrith had

①. Leading the congregational

②. One who leads congregational

gone to the Prophet with some other men of his tribe and stayed with him for about twenty days with the object of learning about Faith and profiting from his blessed company. The Prophet's remark mentioned by Maalik bin Huwayrith was, probably, made when he was taking leave of him. Two things have been stressed in it: (i) care should be taken to call the *Azan* and the *Iqamah* for prayer even during a journey, and (ii) the oldest man in the party should lead the service. Since from the point of view of Faith and its knowledge Maalik bin Huwayrith and his companions were, apparently, of the same level and standard and on one enjoyed superiority over the other, the Prophet ﷺ advised that the eldest of them should function as the *Imam* and lead the service. In fact, it is the general rule for a situation like this.

Merit And Pre-eminence of *Azan* and *Muazzin*

(٥١٤/٤٢) عَنْ أَبِي سَعِيدٍ الْخُدْرِيِّ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ لَا يَسْمَعُ مَدَى صَوْتِ الْمُؤَذِّنِ جَنَّ وَلَا إِنْسٍ وَلَا شَيْءٍ إِلَّا شَهِدَ لَهُ يَوْمَ الْقِيَمَةِ.
(رواه البخارى)

(514/42) Abi Sa'eed al-Khudri ؓ had narrated that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Within the range of the Muazzin's voice, whoever hears him — man, jinn or anything--shall testify on his behalf on the Day of Resurrection." (Bukhari)

Commentary: Allah has granted, in some measure, the awareness of Himself to everything that exists.

وَإِنْ مِنْ شَيْءٍ إِلَّا يُسَبِّحُ بِحَمْدِهِ (الاسراء ١٧: ٢٢)

And there is not a thing but hymneth His praise. (Al-Isra'a 17:44)

Hence, when the *Muazzin* calls the *Azan* and proclaims the Glory and Greatness of Allah and His Oneness, and the mission of His messenger and his Call, all the creatures, along with men and jinn, hear it, and they shall testify to it on the Day of Ressurrection. Indeed, this is an enviable merit of *Azan* and the *Muazzin*.

(٥١٥/٤٣) عَنْ جَابِرٍ قَالَ سَمِعْتُ النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَقُولُ إِنَّ

الشَّيْطَانُ إِذَا سَمِعَ النِّدَاءَ بِالصَّلَاةِ ذَهَبَ حَتَّى يَكُونَ مَكَانَ الرَّوْحَاءِ.

(رواه مسلم)

(515/43) Sayyidina Jabir رضي الله عنه has said that the Prophet ﷺ said, "When the devil hears the call of prayer, he flees as far as Ar-Rawha." (Muslim)

Commentary: Among the creations of Allah some things are not tolerated by others. For example, darkness cannot stand the sun. Just as the sun rises, darkness disappears. Again, fire is not tolerated by cold; for as the fire is kindled, cold disappears. It is something like that between the devil and the azan. The Messenger of Allah ﷺ has said that as he hears the call to prayer he flees far away, say as far as Ar-Rawha is from Madinah. (Talha bin Nafi' who is one of those who have transmitted this hadith from Sayyidina Jabir رضي الله عنه has said that Ar-Rawha is 36 miles from Madinah).

The gist of the hadith is that the *azan* is the call to prayer and faith. It is much dear to Allah and His pious slaves rush towards the mosque on hearing it but it is like an explosive for the devil who flees from it on hearing it.

(٥١٦/٤٤) عَنْ مُعَاوِيَةَ قَالَ سَمِعْتُ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَقُولُ

الْمُؤَذِّنُونَ أَطْوَلُ النَّاسِ أَعْنَاقًا يَوْمَ الْقِيَمَةِ .

(رواه مسلم)

(516/44) Sayyidina Mu'awiyah رضي الله عنه said that he heard the Messenger of Allah ﷺ say, "The mu'azzin will have the longest necks on the Day of Resurrection." (Muslim)

Commentary: That they will have the longest neck is the literal meaning of the hadith but scholars have extended various explanations for it. In my opinion it means that they will have their heads raised on that day. On the Day of Resurrection, they will be on mounds of musk as the next hadith says. This will be their distinction that day.

(٥١٧/٤٥) عَنْ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ عُمَرَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ

ثَلَاثَةٌ عَلَى كُتُبَانِ الْمِسْكِ يَوْمَ الْقِيَمَةِ عَبْدٌ آذَى حَقَّ اللَّهُ وَحَقَّ مَوْلَاهُ وَرَجُلٌ أَمَّ

قَوْمًا وَهُمْ بِهِ رَاضُونَ وَرَجُلٌ يَنَادِي بِالصَّلَاةِ الْخَمْسِ كُلَّ يَوْمٍ وَلَيْلَةٍ

(رواه الترمذی)

(517/45) It is related by Abdullah bin Umar that the Messenger of Allah said: "On the Day of Final Resurrection three of (kinds of) men will be on mounds of musk: (i) the worthy slave who gives the rights of Allah and of his master: (ii) the man who leads a party (or community) and they are pleased with him (on account of his integrity and good behaviour); and (iii) the bondsman who called the *Azan* five times every day and night."

(Tirmizi)

(٥١٨/٤٦) عَنْ ابْنِ عَبَّاسٍ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَنْ أَذَّنَ سَبْعَ سِنِينَ مُحْتَسِبًا كُتِبَ لَهُ بَرَاءَةٌ مِنَ النَّارِ.

(رواه الترمذی و ابو داؤد و ابن ماجه)

(518/46) It is related by Abdullah bin Abbas رضی اللہ عنہ that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Freedom from the Fire of Hell is written down for the bondsman who calls *Azan* for seven years for the sake of Allah." (Tirmizi, Abu Dawood, and Ibn Majah)

(٥١٩/٤٧) عَنْ جَابِرٍ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِنَّ الْمُؤَذِّنِينَ وَالْمَلْبِّينَ يَخْرُجُونَ مِنْ قُبُورِهِمْ يُؤَذِّنُ الْمُؤَذِّنُ وَيَلْبِي الْمَلْبِي.

(رواه الطبرانی فی الاوسط)

(519/47) It is related on the authority of Jabir رضی اللہ عنہ that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Those who give the *Azan* and those who recite *Talbiya*¹ shall rise from their graves in such a state that the graves of *Azan* will be giving *Azan* and the reciters of *Talbiya* will be reciting *Talbiya*." (Tabrani)

Commentary: The secret of the exceptional virtues of *Azan* and *Muazzin* lies in the fact that *Azan* is a distinguishing feature and practice of Islam and makes a most eloquent and comprehensive call of Faith, and the *Muazzin* is its giver, and, so to speak, the herald and proclaimer of Allah.

We, alas, have grown heedless of it and the calling of *Azan* is now regarded a lowly profession. May Allah forgive us this sin

①. *Talbiya* is the special recital of the pilgrims performing the Hajj or Umra. The words of *Talbiya* are: Labbaik allahumma labbaik; labbaik la sharika lak labbaik; in-nal hamda wan-nimata laka wal mulk; la shrika lak (O Allah! Here I am in your presence! You have no partner! Here I am! All praise is for You and from You are all Blessing! To You alone belongs all Power (and Rule)! You are without a partner!)

which is common to all of us. And, may He inspire us to repent and reform!

Responding to Azan And The Supplication Made After It

(٥٢٠/٤٨) عَنْ عُمَرَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا قَالَ الْمُؤَذِّنُ اللَّهُ أَكْبَرُ اللَّهُ أَكْبَرُ فَقَالَ أَحَدُكُمْ اللَّهُ أَكْبَرُ اللَّهُ أَكْبَرُ ثُمَّ قَالَ أَشْهَدُ أَنْ لَا إِلَهَ إِلَّا اللَّهُ قَالَ أَشْهَدُ أَنْ لَا إِلَهَ إِلَّا اللَّهُ ثُمَّ قَالَ أَشْهَدُ أَنَّ مُحَمَّدًا رَسُولُ اللَّهِ قَالَ أَشْهَدُ أَنَّ مُحَمَّدًا رَسُولُ اللَّهِ ثُمَّ قَالَ حَتَّى عَلَى الصَّلَاةِ قَالَ لَا حَوْلَ وَلَا قُوَّةَ إِلَّا بِاللَّهِ ثُمَّ قَالَ حَتَّى عَلَى الْفَلَاحِ قَالَ لَا حَوْلَ وَلَا قُوَّةَ إِلَّا بِاللَّهِ ثُمَّ قَالَ اللَّهُ أَكْبَرُ اللَّهُ أَكْبَرُ ثُمَّ قَالَ لَا إِلَهَ إِلَّا اللَّهُ قَالَ لَا إِلَهَ إِلَّا اللَّهُ مِنْ قَلْبِهِ دَخَلَ الْجَنَّةَ . (رواه المسلم)

(520/48) It is related on the authority of Umar رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "When the *Muazzin* calls out *Allahu Akbar, Allahu Akbar*, and (in reply to it) one of you should say, *Allahu Akbar, Allahu Akbar*; and after it, when the *Muazzin* says, *Ash-hadu al-laa ilaaha illAllaah*, and (in reply to it) he, too, must say, *Ash-hadu al-laa ilaaha illAllaah*; and after it, when the *Muazzin* calls, *Ash-hadu an-na Muhammadar Rasoolul-laah*, and (in reply to it) he, too, should say, *Ash-hadu an-na Muhammadar Rasoolul-laah*; and after it, when *Muazzin* says, *Hayya alas-Salaah*, and (in reply of it) he must say, *Laa hawla wa laa quwwata il-lla bil-laah*; and, after it, when the *Muazzin* says, *Hayya alal falaah*, and (in reply to it) he must say, *Laa hawla wa laa quwwata il-lla bil-laah*; and, after it, when the *Muazzin* says, *Allahu Akbar, Allahu Akbar*, and (in reply to it) he, too, should say, *Allahu Akbar, Allahu Akbar*, and, after it, when the *Muazzin* says, *Laa-ilaaha, il-lal-laah*, and (in reply of it) he, too must say *Laa-ilaaha, il-lal-laah*, if all this is said from the heart, he shall go to Heaven." (Muslim)

Commentary: As we have seen earlier, there are two aspects of *Azan*. One is that it is the summons to prayers, and the other is that it is the call of Faith and a public declaration of Islam. In the former case, it is the duty of a Muslim to get ready for observing prayer as soon as he hears the *Azan* and reaches the mosque in

time while, in the latter, he is called upon when he hears it. All the Muslims are, thus, to renew the bond and covenant of Faith at the time of every *Azan*. It shows why *Azan* though, apparently, it is a minor effect on the post of the listener.

(٥٢١/٤٩) عَنْ سَعْدِ بْنِ أَبِي وَقَّاصٍ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَنْ قَالَ حِينَ يَسْمَعُ الْمُؤَذِّنَ أَشْهَدُ أَنْ لَا إِلَهَ إِلَّا اللَّهُ وَحْدَهُ لَا شَرِيكَ لَهُ وَأَشْهَدُ أَنَّ مُحَمَّدًا عَبْدُهُ وَرَسُولُهُ رَضِيتُ بِاللَّهِ رَبًّا وَبِمُحَمَّدٍ رَسُولًا وَبِالْإِسْلَامِ دِينًا غُفِرَ لَهُ ذَنْبُهُ. (رواه مسلم)

(521/49) It is related by Sa'd bin Abu Waqqas ؓ that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Whoever, on hearing the *Azan* (i.e., when the *Azan* comes to an end) says: *Ash-hadu al-laa ilaaha illAllaah wahdahu laa sharika lahu wa ash-hadu an-na Muhammadan abduhu wa rasooluhu; raditu bil-laahi rabba wa bi Muhammadar rasoola wa bil-Islam-i-deena*. (I affirm that there is no god but Allah, One and Unpartnered, and Muhammad is His slave and Messenger ﷺ, and I am pleased with Allah as Lord, and in Muhammad as Messenger, and in Islam as the religion), his sins will be forgiven." (Muslim)

Commentary: We have spoken on sins being forgiven on doing righteous deeds when we discussed the *Wudu*, the same principle applies here.

(٥٢٢/٥٠) عَنْ جَابِرٍ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَنْ قَالَ حِينَ يَسْمَعُ الْبَدَاءَ اَللّٰهُمَّ رَبِّ هَذِهِ الدَّعْوَةِ التَّامَّةِ وَالصَّلَاةِ الْقَائِمَةِ اَنْتَ مُحَمَّدٌ الْوَسِيْلَةُ وَالْفَضِيْلَةُ وَابْعَثْهُ مَقَامًا مَحْمُودًا الَّذِي وَعَدْتَهُ حَلَّتْ لَهُ شَفَاعَتِي يَوْمَ الْقِيَمَةِ (رواه البخارى)

(522/50) It is related by Jabir ؓ that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Whoever will, at the time of hearing *Azan*, make the prayer to Allah: *Allahumma rab-ba haathihid-da'wat-it-ta-ammati was-salaat-il-ga-imati aati Muhammada nil-waseelata wal-fazeelata wab-as-hu muqaman mahmuda nil-lazi wa'a-tahu* (O God, the Lord of this perfect Call and the long-lasting and unchanging prayer, bestow upon Muhammad ﷺ the place of special honour and intercession and elevate him to the place of

choicest favour and worthiness which You have promised for him), that bondsman will be worthy of my intercession on the Day of Resurrection." (Bukahri)

Commentary: In this Tradition we are exhorted to pray for three things for the sacred Prophet ﷺ and assured that the bondsmen who will act accordingly on hearing the *Azan* will have a special claim to his intercession. These three things are, intercession, honour and place of choicest favour and worthiness. In a Tradition quoted in *Sahih Muslim* it is explained about the 'place of intercession' that it is a most distinctive station of Divine esteem and affection and a rank of unparalleled glory and exaltation in Paradise which is going to be conferred upon only one bondsman of the Lord, and the 'place of honour' is another name for the same way, the 'place of choicest favour and worthiness' implies that one who will be honoured with it will be held in high respect by everyone and all men will praise and be grateful to him.

Traditions relating to Intercession have already appeared in the earlier part of this book in which it is stated that on the Day of Recompense which will be a special occasion for the display of Divine Majesty and Splendour, everyone, irrespective of his rank or station on the earth, will be seized with fear and anxiety, so much so that exalted Prophets عليهم السلام like Nuh, Ibrahim, Musa and Isa will not have the courage to plead with the Almighty. The Prophet Muhammad ﷺ will, then step forward with "I am for it. I am for it" on his lips and beseech Allah humbly, first of all, for whole mankind that the state of anxious, uncertainty and expectation may be ended, the Reckoning done and the Judgement pronounced. After it, the door of intercession on behalf of the sinners and of their being taken out of Hell will, also, open at his request and initiative. As the Prophet ﷺ himself has said, "I will be the first intercessor and my intercession will be accepted in the first place", and, also, "On the Day of Resurrection, the Banner of Praise will be in my hand, and Adam, and, in addition to him, all the Prophets and Messengers عليهم السلام and their followers will be under it." This is the place of choicest favour and worthiness' about which it has been said to the Prophet ﷺ in the Qur'an:

عَسَىٰ أَنْ يَبْعَثَكَ رَبُّكَ مَقَامًا مَّحْمُودًا (الاسراء ١٧: ٧٩)

It may be that thy Lord will raise thee to the praised estate
(Al-Asra' 17:79)

In fine, the singular rank that has been referred to as 'Intercession' and 'Honour' in above saying and the praised estate mentioned in the Qur'an are going to be bestowed upon the holy Prophet. It has been decreed beforehand by Allah and it is out of sheer kindness that the Prophet ﷺ has exhorted us to pray to God to raise him to those ranks and station and promised that whoever will do so will earn a special claim to his intercession on the Day of Reckoning.

Note: The method of acting on it is that every *Kalima* of *Azan* should be repeated after the *muazzin*, as mentioned in the narrative of Sayyidina Umar ؓ, and, afterwards,

أَشْهَدُ أَنْ لَا إِلَهَ إِلَّا اللَّهُ

Ash hadu an la' ilaha illal-lah

uttered, as shown in the report by Sa'd bin Abu Waqas ؓ, and, finally, the supplication,

اللَّهُمَّ رَبِّ هَذِهِ الدَّعْوَةُ التَّامَّةُ وَالصَّلَاةُ الْقَائِمَةُ أَيْ مُحَمَّدٌ الْوَسِيلَةُ
وَالْفَضِيلَةُ وَابْعَثْهُ مَقَامًا مَحْمُودًا الَّذِي وَعَدْتَهُ

*Allahumma rab-ba haazihid-da'wat-it-ta-ammati
was-salaat-il-qa-imati aati Muhammada nil-waseelata
wal-fazeelata wab-as-hu muqamam mahmuda nil-lazi
wa'a-tahu*

made, as indicated in the above saying, for the Prophet ﷺ

It is stated by Ibn Hajr in *Fath-ul-Bari* that in the Tradition quoted in *Baihaqi*, the words,

“إِنَّكَ لَا تُخْلِفُ الْمِيعَادَ”

In-naka laa tukhliful miyad

(Verily, you do never break your promise),

are added at the end of the prayer.

MOSQUES

Their Grandeur & Significance, Rights & Proprieties.

For the realisation of sublime aims and ideals associated with prayer, some of which have been indicated in the preceding Chapter with reference of Shah Waliullah رحمه الله عليه, it is essential to give it a collective design and character. In the Islamic *Shari'ah*, the mosque and the congregation have been provided the instruments of it, and it is hard to over-emphasise the role these two things play in the generation, organisation and protection of the religious life of Muslims.

The Prophet ﷺ has, on one hand, taken utmost pains to enjoin the observation of prayer with a collective arrangement and given stern warnings of punishment to those who act otherwise, and, on the other, laid an exceptional stress on the significance of the mosques and called them the House of Allah, next in importance only to the *Ka'bah*. He has made them the spiritual centres of the *Ummah*, and, explaining their glory and preciousness in the sight of Allah, urged upon his followers that wherever they are, and at whatever time, their hearts and souls should remain attached to them. Besides, the Prophet ﷺ has, also, taught us the rights of mosques and etiquettes to be observed there.

Significance

(٥٢٣/٥١) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ أَحَبُّ

الْبِلَادِ إِلَى اللَّهِ مَسَاجِدُهَا وَأَبْغَضُ الْبِلَادِ إِلَى اللَّهِ أَسْوَاقُهَا. (رواه مسلم)

(523/51) It is related by Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "The parts of land dearest to Allah are the

mosques and the most hateful, the market-places." (Muslim)

Commentary: Human life has two aspects. One is angelic and spiritual which is the celestial and the refined aspect and the other is material and bestial which is the terrestrial and the vulgar one. The angelic and spiritual aspect calls for virtuous deeds like Divine Worship and God-remembrance through which its disciplining and evolution takes place and a man becomes worthy of the good grace of Allah. The foremost centres of these acts are the mosques where divine honours are paid to Allah all the time and owing to which they bear a close association with the *Bayt Allah* / House of Allah. In cities and other human dwellings, the most pleasing to God, at all events, are mosques.

On the contrary, the market-places, by their very nature, are related to the material urges of man, and, in them, he generally grows negligent of his duty to Allah. On account of this apathy and abundance of sin and immorality, their atmosphere, on whole, is unhealthy and spiritually harmful. The markets are, therefore, the most detestable of all the places in the judgement of Allah.

The sustance of this Tradition is that the Believers should feel more attached to the mosques and go to the baaars only when it is necessary, taking care to protect themselves against the evils that are commonly associated with them, such as, falsehood and deceit. With in these limits, it is quite permissible to go to the market-places and engage in buying and selling goods for which people meet there. The Prophet ﷺ, indeed, has given the glad tidings of Paradise to those who carry on trade with honesty and due regard of the God-Given laws. It is like this that though the lavatory is, basically, a most abominable place, one cannot refuse to have anything to do with it. The bondsman, in fact, earns the Divine reward, in good measure if he is heedful of the commands of the *Shari'ah* and abides by the confirmed practice of the Prophet ﷺ while going to the toilet for answering the call of nature.

(٥٢٤/٥٢) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ سَبْعَةٌ يُظِلُّهُمْ اللَّهُ فِي ظِلِّهِ يَوْمَ لَا ظِلَّ إِلَّا ظِلُّهُ، إِمَامٌ عَادِلٌ وَشَابٌّ نَشَأَ فِي عِبَادَةِ اللَّهِ وَرَجُلٌ قَلْبُهُ مُعَلَّقٌ بِالْمَسْجِدِ إِذَا خَرَجَ مِنْهُ حَتَّى يَعُودَ إِلَيْهِ وَرَجُلَانِ تَحَابَّا فِي

اللَّهُ اجْتَمَعَ عَلَيْهِ وَتَفَرَّقَ عَلَيْهِ وَرَجُلٌ ذَكَرَ اللَّهَ خَالِيًا فَفَاضَتْ عَيْنَاهُ وَرَجُلٌ
دَعَتْهُ امْرَأَةٌ ذَاتُ حَسَبٍ وَجَمَالٍ فَقَالَ إِنِّي أَخَافُ اللَّهَ وَرَجُلٌ تَصَدَّقَ بِصَدَقَةٍ
فَأَخْفَاهَا حَتَّى لَا تَعْلَمَ شِمَالُهُ مَا تُنْفِقُ يَمِينُهُ.

(رواه البخارى و مسلم)

(524/52) It is related by Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger ﷺ of Allah said: "There are seven kind of men whom Allah will accord a place under the shadow of His Mercy on the Day, on which there will be no other shadow than that of His Mercy (i) the ruler who ruled with justice, (ii) the young man who grew up in worship (i.e. was worshipful in childhood as well as in youth and the desires and impulses that were peculiar to young age did not distract him); (iii) the truthful Believer whose condition was that even when he went out of the mosque his heart was attached to it (and felt restless) till he returned; (iv) the two persons who loved each other for the sake of Allah and remained united on it and parted (from one another) on it (i.e. the affection between whom was not conditional on presence, as the case, on the whole, was with the worldly people but they loved each other for the sake of Allah while they were together as well as out of one another's sight)' (v) the bondsman who wept when he remembered Allah in solitude, (vi) the man whom a beautiful, wealthy and respectable woman invited to sin but he said: 'I fear Allah, and, (therefore), I cannot proceed towards what is prohibited'; and (vii) the person who spent in the way of Allah and did it so secretly that his left hand did not know what he gave away with the right hand or to whom it was given."

(Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: In it the glad tidings of the shadow of Divine mercy have been given, in the third place, to the bondsman whose heart dwells in the mosque even when he is away from it. May Allah cause us to be one of the servants. *Aameen!*

(٥٢٥/٥٣) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَنْ غَدَا
إِلَى الْمَسْجِدِ أَوْ رَاحَ أَعَدَّ اللَّهُ لَهُ نَزْلَةً مِنَ الْجَنَّةِ كُلَّمَا غَدَا أَوْ رَاحَ .

(رواه البخارى و مسلم)

(525/53) Sayyidina Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه said that the Messenger ﷺ of Allah said: "If anyone goes out in the morning or in evening to the mosque, Allah will prepare for him his food in

Paradise as often as he goes out in the morning or in the evening."

(Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: As many times as a worshipper goes to the Mosque in the morning or in the evening, or during the day, the Kind Lord looks at him as His dear guest and each time as feast is arranged for him. He will find it on reaching there. We cannot imagine what reception is arranged for us there. *Kanz al-A'mal* quotes Abdullah bin Abbas on the authority of *Tareekh Hakim* as narrating this hadith.

"Mosques are houses of Allah. The Believers who come there are visitors (and guests) of Allah. If anyone comes to meet someone then he must honour and serve the visitor."

الْمَسَاجِدُ بَيْتُ اللَّهِ وَالْمُؤْمِنُونَ
رُؤَاؤُ اللَّهِ وَحَقُّ عَلَى الْمَزُورِ أَنْ
يُكْرِمَ زَائِرَهُ

(كنز العمال ص ١٢٤ ج ٤)

The *ahadith* of *Tareekh Hakim* are weak in the sight of scholars of hadith but the subject of the foregoing extract corresponds to the above hadith of Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه. Hence, it is quoted here.¹

(٥٢٦/٥٤) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ صَلَاةُ الرَّجُلِ فِي الْجَمَاعَةِ تُضَعَّفُ عَلَى صَلَاتِهِ فِي بَيْتِهِ وَفِي سَوَاقِهِ خَمْسَةً وَعِشْرِينَ ضِعْفًا وَذَلِكَ أَنَّهُ إِذَا تَوَضَّأَ فَأَحْسَنَ الْوُضُوءَ ثُمَّ خَرَجَ إِلَى الْمَسْجِدِ لَا يُخْرِجُهُ إِلَّا الصَّلَاةُ لَمْ يَخْطُ خُطْوَةً إِلَّا رُفِعَتْ بِهَا دَرَجَةٌ وَخُطَّ عَنْهُ بِهَا خَطِيئَةٌ فَإِذَا صَلَّى لَمْ تَزَلِ الْمَلَائِكَةُ تُصَلِّي عَلَيْهِ مَا دَامَ فِي مُصَلَاةٍ اللَّهُمَّ صَلِّ عَلَيْهِ اللَّهُمَّ ارْحَمْهُ وَلَا يَزَالُ أَحَدُكُمْ فِي صَلَاةٍ مَا انْتَهَرَ الصَّلَاةَ .

(رواه البخارى و مسلم)

(526/54) It is related by Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "(The reward on) offering prayer congregationally in the mosque in twenty-five times as much as on saying it at home or in the market-placed and it is so because when the bondsman goes to the mosque, after performing *wudu* properly, and there is no other object of his going except (the offering up) prayer, he is elevated by one rank at each step and

①. *Kanzal-A'mal* has another hadith on this topic from Ibn Mas'ud رضي الله عنه on the authority of Mu'ajjam Tabarani.

one sin of his forgiven. Moreover, when he offers the prayer, the angles continuously pray for mercy and benevolence on his behalf as long as he remains at his place. The supplication of the angles is: "Our Lord! Bestow your special grace upon this bondsman, bestow upon him Your mercy. And all the time anyone waits (in the mosque) for prayer, in the sight of Allah and in His reckoning, he is as if engaged in prayer."

(Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: In another version of the same Tradition the supplication of the angles is mentioned with the addition that 'O God! Forgive this bondsman his sins and accept his repentance. It is also stated that the angles will continue to supplicate for him until he causes pain to anyone through his arm or tongue or his *wudu* is voided.

(٥٢٧/٥٥) عَنْ عُثْمَانَ بْنِ مَظْعُونٍ أَنَّهُ قَالَ يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ إِئْذَنْ لَنَا فِي التَّهَرُّبِ فَقَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِنَّ تَرْهَبَ أُمَّتِي الْجُلُوسُ فِي الْمَسَاجِدِ إِنْ تَظَارَ الصَّلَاةَ .
(رواه في شرح السنة)

(527/55) Uthman bin Maz'oon رضي الله عنه narates that once he said to the Prophet ﷺ, "O Messenger of Allah! Please grant me permission to adopt monasticism." The Prophet ﷺ replied: "Monasticism for my followers lies in sitting in the mosque and waiting for prayer to begin."
(Sharah-as-Sunnah)

Commentary: Sometimes the Companions felt like withdrawing from the world and giving up its pleasures and they sought the Prophet's ﷺ advice about it. The inclination of Sayyidina Uthman bin Maz'oom, too, was very strong towards the monastic way of life and, once, he said several things like that to Prophet, the last of which was that he might be permitted to take up monsticism so that he could lead the life of a hermit. The above Tradition shows that the spiritual aims and the gains of the Hereafter for which monasticism was practised by the ancient communities could be attained by the Muslims by sitting in the mosque and waiting for prayer. As a matter of fact, to sit in the mosque and wait for prayer is a kind of *I'tikaf*¹.

①. Retiring to the mosque for sometime. In Ramazan, the I'tikaf in the last days is a collective obligation on every neighbourhood.

(٥٦/٥٢٨) عَنْ بُرَيْدَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ
بَشِّرِ الْمَشَّائِينَ فِي الظُّلَمِ إِلَى الْمَسَاجِدِ بِالنُّورِ النَّامِ يَوْمَ الْقِيَمَةِ

(رواه الترمذی و ابو داؤد)

(528/56) It is related by Buridah رضی اللہ عنہ that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "To those who go to the mosques in darkness, give the glad tidings that (in return for it) perfect light will be granted to them on the Day of Resurrection." (Tirmizi Abu Dawood)

Commentary: To go the mosque regularly for prayer in the darkness of the night takes a lot of effort and is a sign of sincere devotion to Allah. Whoever does so has been given the good tidings by Allah, through the Prophet ﷺ that in the darkness of the Day of Resurrection perfect light will be made available to him.

Supplication to be Made on Entering and Coming Out of the Mosque

(٥٧/٥٢٩) عَنْ أَبِي أُسَيْدٍ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا دَخَلَ أَحَدُكُمْ الْمَسْجِدَ فَلْيَقُلْ اللَّهُمَّ افْتَحْ لِي أَبْوَابَ رَحْمَتِكَ وَإِذَا خَرَجَ فَلْيَقُلْ اللَّهُمَّ إِنِّي أَسْأَلُكَ مِنْ فَضْلِكَ .

(رواه مسلم)

(529/57) It is related by Abu Usad Sa'adi that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "When anyone of you enters a mosque he should supplicate Allah: *Allahummafatah li abwaaba rahmatika* (O Allah, open the gates of your mercy for me), and when he comes out of it, he should supplicate: *Allahumma asaluka min fadlika* (O Allah, I beseech You for Your grace)." (Muslim)

Commentary: In the Qur'an and the traditions, generally the word *Rahmah* (i.e. grace) is used for heavenly rewards of the Hereafter and *Fadl* (i.e. grace) for earthly blessings like sustenance. The Prophet ﷺ has, therefore, exhorted us to beseech the Lord for the opening of the gates of mercy as we go into the mosque, for it is the place for seeking religious and spiritual benefits and blessings of the hereafter and for His grace i.e. abundance in the material things of life as we leave it for it is the proper thing for the world outside the mosque. The Real object of it all is the bondsman should not become negligent while going into the mosque or coming out of it but on both the occasions his thoughts should be

directed towards Allah like a beggar.

Tahayyatul Masjid

(٥٣٠/٥٨) عَنْ أَبِي قَتَادَةَ أَنَّ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ قَالَ إِذَا دَخَلَ

أَحَدُكُمْ الْمَسْجِدَ فَلْيَرْكَعْ رَكْعَتَيْنِ قَبْلَ أَنْ يَجْلِسَ . (رواه البخارى و مسلم)

(530/58) It is related by Abu Qatadah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "When anyone of you enters the mosque he should offer two raka'at prayer before he sits down."

(Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: The mosques bear a close association with Allah. It is for this reason that they are known as the Houses of Allah. It is thus, among the proprieties of coming to the mosque that one should offer two *raka'at* prayer before sitting down. It is, so to stay, the act of salutation in the Court of Almighty. This prayer on account of it, is called *Tahayyatul Masjid* (i.e. *Salutation to the Mosque*). According to most of the authorities, however, this command belongs to the category of supererogatory acts the performance of which is meritorious but omission is not sinful.

Note: It is distinctly stated in the above Tradition that the two rak'at should be offered before one sits in the mosque. But it has been seen that some people, first, deliberately sit down in the mosque, on entering it, and then get up and offer the *Tahayyatul Masjid*. Allah alone knows how and when this erroneous practice began. We learn from Mulla Ali Qari that it existed even in his time, i.e. four hundred years ago.

(٥٣١/٥٩) عَنْ كَعْبِ بْنِ مَالِكٍ قَالَ كَانَ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ لَا يَقْدَمُ

مِنْ سَفَرٍ إِلَّا نَهَاراً فِي الضُّحَى فَإِذَا قَدِمَ بَدَأَ بِالْمَسْجِدِ فَصَلَّى فِيهِ رَكْعَتَيْنِ ثُمَّ

جَلَسَ فِيهِ . (رواه البخارى و مسلم)

(531/59) It is related by Ka'ab bin Maalik رضي الله عنه 'the practice of the Messenger of Allah ﷺ was that when he returned from a journey, he entered Madinah during the day-light, at the time of *Chasht*, and the first thing he did was to go to the mosque where he offered two raka'at prayer and then sat down (for some time)."

(Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: In some other Traditions it is mentioned in detail that when the Prophet ﷺ returned from a journey he, generally, made the last halt in the vicinity of Madinah owing to which people knew where he was staying and they came to him in the morning. Early on the next morning he would leave for Madinah, reaching there after the light of day had spread. He would then, go straight to the mosque, or, in other words, pay the tribute of submission in the court of the King of Kings before meeting the members of his family. He sat in the mosque for some time and met the people who came to see him.

Attachment to The Mosque is a Sign of Faith

(٥٣٢/٦٠) عَنْ أَبِي سَعِيدٍ الْخُدْرِيِّ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا رَأَيْتُمُ الرَّجُلَ يَتَعَاهَدُ الْمَسْجِدَ فَاشْهَدُوا لَهُ بِالْإِيمَانِ فَإِنَّ اللَّهَ يَقُولُ إِنَّمَا يَعْمُرُ مَسَاجِدَ اللَّهِ مَنْ آمَنَ بِاللَّهِ وَالْيَوْمِ الْآخِرِ. (رواه الترمذى وابن ماجه والدارمى)
(532/60) It is related by Abu Sa'eed Khudri ؓ that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "When you see that a person is attached to the mosque and looks after it (devotedly), give the testimony of Faith for him because Allah says that only they frequent His mosques and keep them filled who believe in Him and the Last Day." (Tirmizi, Ibn-e-Majah and Daarmi)

Commentary: The mosque is the place of worship and a symbol of Faith. Sincere attachment to it, care and concern for its maintenance and anxiety to see it humming with worship and God-remembrance are, thus, the signs of true Faith.

Keeping the Mosques Clean and Supplied with a Pleasant Odour

(٥٣٣/٦١) عَنْ عَائِشَةَ قَالَتْ أَمَرَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ بِنَاءَ الْمَسْجِدِ فِي الدُّورِ وَأَنْ يُنْظَفَ وَيُطَيَّبَ. (رواه ابو داود و الترمذى و ابن ماجه)
(533/61) It is related by Sayyidah Ayshah ؓ that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ gave the order for the construction of mosques in mohallas (i.e. quarters or paths) of the town, and he gave the order for keeping them clean and pleasantly smelling.
(Abu Dawood, Tirmizi and Ibn-e-Majah)

Commentary: It shows that if the different quarters of a town are wide apart, as it was in Madinah, mosques should be built in them according to need. The mosques should, further be kept free from dirt and supplied with perfume.

Reward on Construction of Mosques

(٥٣٤/٦٢) عَنْ عُثْمَانَ رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ

وَسَلَّمَ مَنْ بَنَى لِلَّهِ مَسْجِدًا بَنَى اللَّهُ لَهُ بَيْتًا فِي الْجَنَّةِ (رواه البخارى ومسلم)

(534/62) It is related by Uthman رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Whoever builds a mosque for Allah (i.e. solely for His pleasure and with the aims of earning the Diving reward), Allah will have a mansion built for him in Paradise." (Bukhari & Muslim)

Commentary: It occurs repeatedly in the Qur'an and the Traditions that the recompense in the Hereafter will be proportionate to the deed. The grant of a mansion in the Paradise to anyone who builds a mosque should, therefore, seem natural.

Adornment and Embellishment of the Mosque

(٥٣٥/٦٣) عَنْ ابْنِ عَبَّاسٍ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَا

أَمُرْتُ بِتَشْيِيدِ الْمَسَاجِدِ قَالَ ابْنُ عَبَّاسٍ لَتُزَخَّرَ فُتُهَا كَمَا زَخَّرَفَتِ الْيَهُودُ

وَالنَّصَارَى (رواه ابوداؤد)

(535/63) It is related by Abdullah bin Abbas رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "I have not been commanded to build tall and imposing mosques." (After narrating it, Abdullah bin Abbas added by way of a prophecy): "Surely, you will begin decorating your mosques as the Jews and Christians have decorated their places of worship." (Abu Dawood)

Commentary: Its purport is that outward splendour and ornamentation is not desirable for the mosques. The emphasis ought to be on simplicity. As for the prediction made by Sayyidina Abdullah bin Abbas رضي الله عنه he would have, evidently, learnt about it from the sacred Prophet ﷺ some time or the other. The following saying of the Prophet ﷺ has, further, been quoted in Ibn-e-Majah on the authority of Abdullah bin Abbas رضي الله عنه himself.

"I am seeing that at a time (when I will not be present in your midst) you, too, will make your mosques as grand and imposing as the Jews have made their synagogues and the Christians their churches."

أَرَأَيْتُمْ سَتَشْرِقُونَ مَسَاجِدَ كُمْ
بَعْدِي كَمَا شَرَفَتِ الْيَهُودُ
كَنَائِسَهُمْ وَ كَمَا شَرَفَتِ
النَّصَارَى بِيَعَاهَا .

(كنز العمال بحواله ابن ماجه)

It is, also, possible that Sayyidina Abdullah bin Abbas رضي الله عنه, who lived for eight years after the death of the Prophet ﷺ, had made the prophecy on the basis of the direction of and the speed with which transformation had begun to take place in the mental character and way of life of the Muslims. Anyway, whatever the ground, the prediction has proved literally true. In some parts of our own country mosques are found which surpass even the churches and synagogues in grandeur.

(٥٣٦/٦٤) عَنْ أَنَسٍ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِنَّ مِنْ أَشْرَاطِ
السَّاعَةِ أَنْ يُتَبَاهَى النَّاسُ فِي الْمَسَاجِدِ .

(رواه ابو داؤد ، و النسائي والدارمي و ابن ماجه)

(536/64) It is related by Anas رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "One of the protents of the Hour (of Doom) is that people will begin to excel one another (in the construction of) mosques." (Abu Dawood, Nasai, Daarmi and Ibn-e-Majah)

Commentary: Among the protents of the Day of Ressurrection there are some which will occur just on the eve of it, such as, the appearance of Dajjal and the rising of the sun in the west and others that will become evident some time before it. The evils and calamities the Prophet ﷺ has forecast as the precursors of the Last Day belong to the latter category and the keen-ness to surpass one another in the erection of mosques is some of them.

No one Should Come to the Mosque After Eating a Thing Giving out a Disagreeable Smell

(٥٣٧/٦٥) عَنْ جَابِرٍ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَنْ أَكَلَ مِنْ
هَذِهِ الشَّجَرَةِ الْمُنتَنَةِ فَلَا يَقْرَبَنَّ مَسْجِدَنَا فَإِنَّ الْمَلَائِكَةَ تَتَأَذَّى مِنْهَا تَأَذَّى مِنْهُ
الْإِنْسُ

(رواه البخارى و مسلم)

(537/65) It is related by Jabir رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Whoever eats of this evil-smelling plant (i.e. onion or garlic) should not come to our mosques for what is disagreeable to men is, also, disagreeable to angles." (Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: The religious significance of the mosques and the unique association they bear with Allah demands, among other things, that these should be protected from every kind of foul odour. Since onion and garlic possess a sort of unpleasant smell — and during the time of the Prophet ﷺ people often ate them raw — it was commanded by him that no one should come to the mosque after eating them and the reason he gave for it was that anything that was hurtful to men was hurtful to the angles of Allah as well, and, as the angles visit the mosques often and join men, particularly in prayer it is essential that distress is not caused to the holy and distinguished visitors by a thing like foul smell.

Another Tradition referring to the same incident and quoted in *Abu Dawood*, on the authority of Mu'awiya bin Qurrah, tells that the Prophet ﷺ distinctly mentioned onion and garlic as the thing people should avoid eating when they came to the mosque. It is, further, stated that if anyone wanted to eat them he should have them cooked so that their unpleasant smell was destroyed.

Though only onion and garlic are spoken of in this report, it, obviously, applies to all foul-smelling articles of food, or, rather, to everything repulsive to the people of good taste.

Forbidding The Recitation of Poetry and Buying and Selling of Goods in The Mosque

(٥٣٨/٦٦) عَنْ عُمَرَ وَبْنِ شُعَيْبٍ عَنْ أَبِيهِ عَنْ جَدِّهِ قَالَ نَهَى رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ عَنْ تَنَاشُدِ الْأَشْعَارِ فِي الْمَسْجِدِ وَعَنِ الْبَيْعِ وَالْإِشْتِرَاءِ فِيهِ وَأَنْ يَتَحَلَّقَ النَّاسُ يَوْمَ الْجُمُعَةِ قَبْلَ الصَّلَاةِ فِي الْمَسْجِدِ . (رواه ابوداؤد و الترمذی)

(538/66) Amr bin Shu'ayb reported on the authority of his father Shu'ayb that his grand father said that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ forbade the recitation of poetry and the purchase and sale of goods in the mosque, and he, also forbade the sitting of people in circles in the mosques, on a Friday, before the commencement of the prayers. (Abu Dawood and Tirmizi)

Commentary: The sanctity of the mosques, again, requires that these should not be used for activities which though legitimate in themselves, are not closely related to Faith and worship, as for instance, the holding of a poetic symposium and the carrying out of trade. As for the last part of the above Tradition, concerning a Friday, it, apparently, shows that people who reached the mosque before time, which has of course, been urged in the Traditions, should occupy themselves with prayer and God-remembrance till the start of the service instead of becoming separate circles.

Protection From Little Children and Noise

(٥٣٩/٦٧) عَنْ وَائِلَةَ قَالَتْ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ جَنِّبُوا مَسَاجِدَكُمْ صِبْيَانَكُمْ وَمَجَانِينَكُمْ وَشِرَاءَكُمْ وَبَيْعَكُمْ وَخُصُومَاتِكُمْ وَرَفْعَ أَصْوَاتِكُمْ وَإِقَامَةَ خُذُودِكُمْ وَسَلَّ مِیُوفِكُمْ .
(رواه ابن ماجه)

(539/67) It is related by Wathilah bin al-Asqa' that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Keep away from your mosques your little children and the lunatics, and, in the same way, keep away from the mosques your buying and selling, and your mutual quarrels, and your hubbub, and (your) inflicting penalty (for a transgression of the law of Allah), and drawing swords. (Nothing of the sort should be done within the precincts of the mosques as all this is inimical to their sanctity and reverence)."

(Ibn-e-Maajah)

Forbidding of Wordly Talk in The Mosques

(٥٤٠/٦٨) عَنِ الْحَسَنِ مُرْسَلًا قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَأْتِي عَلَى النَّاسِ زَمَانٌ يَكُونُ حَدِيثُهُمْ فِي مَسَاجِدِهِمْ فِي أَمْرَدُنْيَاهُمْ فَلَا تُجَالِسُوهُمْ فَلَيْسَ لِلَّهِ فِيهِمْ حَاجَةٌ .
(رواه البيهقي في شعب الایمان)

(540/68) It is related, in the nature of Mursal,¹ by Hasan Basri that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "A time will come when the conversation of the people in the mosques will centre around their wordly affairs. You must not sit with such people. Allah

①. A Tradition which is related by a Taba'ee without giving the name of the companion through whom it had reached him is called Mursal in the special terminology of Islam.

has nothing to do with them."

(Baihaqi)

Commentary: The mosque being the House of Allah it is in the fitness of the things that nothing was said there which was not aimed at the propitiation of Allah or related to Him in any other way. Social and collective problems of the Muslims can, of course, be discussed in the mosques but due regard must be shown in it, also, to proprieties, and everything that is done must be within the frame work of Divine guidance.

Presence of Women in the Mosques

(٥٤١/٦٩) عَنْ ابْنِ عُمَرَ قَالَ قَالَ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا اسْتَأْذَنْتُكُمْ نِسَاءَكُمْ بِاللَّيْلِ فَأَذْنُو لَهُنَّ .
(رواه البخارى و مسلم)

(541/69) It is related by Abdullah bin Umar رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "When your wives ask you for permission to go to the mosque, give it to them."

(Bukhari And Muslim)

(٥٤٢/٧٠) عَنْ ابْنِ عُمَرَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ لَا تَمْنَعُوا نِسَاءَكُمْ الْمَسَاجِدَ وَبُيُوتَهُنَّ خَيْرٌ لَهُنَّ .
(رواه ابو داود)

(542/70) Abdullah bin Umar رضي الله عنه related to us that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Do not stop your women from going to the mosques, but it is better for them in their homes."

(Abu Dawood)

Commentary: During the lifetime of the Prophet ﷺ, when he personally led all the five daily services, many pious and right-minded ladies wanted to be allowed to offer up at least the two nightly prayers of *Isha* and *Fajr* behind him though the Prophet ﷺ had repeatedly made it clear that it was better and more meritorious for women to offer prayers at home. But some people did not permit their wives to go to the mosque. It was, however, not due to any misgiving or fear of mischief as the moral and social stands in the Muslim society were very high at that time but a sense of pride which was wholly un-Islamic. Hence, the Prophet ﷺ felt that if women asked for permission to go to the mosque in the night it should be given to them but to the women, themselves, he always advised that it was better to offer Prayer at home.

(٥٣٤/٧١) عَنْ أُمِّ حُمَيْدٍ السَّاعِدِيَّةِ أَنَّهَا جَاءَتْ إِلَى رَسُولِ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ فَقَالَتْ يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ إِنِّي أُحِبُّ الصَّلَاةَ مَعَكَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ قَدْ عَلِمْتُ أَنَّكَ تُحِبُّ الصَّلَاةَ مَعِيَ وَصَلَاتُكَ فِي بَيْتِكَ خَيْرٌ مِّنْ صَلَاتِكَ فِي حُجْرَتِكَ وَصَلَاتُكَ فِي دَارِكَ خَيْرٌ مِّنْ صَلَاتِكَ فِي مَسْجِدِ قَوْمِكَ وَصَلَاتُكَ فِي مَسْجِدِ قَوْمِكَ وَخَيْرٌ مِّنْ صَلَاتِكَ فِي مَسْجِدِي .

(رواه احمد، كنز العمال)

(543/71) Narrated Umm-e-Humayd Sa'idiyah wife of Abu Humayd Sa'idi that once she went to the Messenger of Allah ﷺ and said: "I wish that I offered prayer (congregationally) with you in the mosque." "I know", replied the Prophet ﷺ, "that you want very much to offer prayer with me (i.e. behind me in congregation), but the principles of the *Shari'ah* is that the prayer you offer in the inner part of your house is superior to the prayer you offer in the outer verandah of it, and the prayer you offer in the outer courtyard of your house is superior to the prayer you offer in the mosque of your tribe (which is nearer to your house), and the prayer you offer in the mosque of your tribe is superior to the prayer you offer in my mosque."

(Kanzul 'Amaal with reference to Musnad-e-Ahmad)

Commentary: From many other Traditions, too, it appears that the Prophet ﷺ often explained the above position to women as regards the offering of prayer in the mosque. Yet, many ladies ardently desired that though it was better in the judgement of the Lord for them to offer prayer at home, they might be allowed to go to the mosque, atleast in the night, and offer it behind the Prophet ﷺ and since the underlying sentiment was that of true religious devotion to the Prophet ﷺ and there was no apprehension of mischief during those days, the sacred Prophet ﷺ advised the Companions to allow their wives to go to the mosque at night if they wanted to do so. Anyhow, this command was given at a time when there was no fear of an unwanted thing taking place if the women went out and it was disliked by some Companions only because of a false sense of vanity or natural inclination. But as the state of the society underwent a change and social and moral evils crept into it,

it no longer remained desirable¹. What no less a person than Sayyidah Ayshah رضى الله عنها had to say about it is given in the next Tradition.

(٥٤٤/٧٢) عَنْ عَائِشَةَ قَالَتْ لَوْ أَدْرَكَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَا أَحْدَثَ النِّسَاءُ لَمَنْعَهُنَّ الْمَسَاجِدَ كَمَا مَنَعَتْ نِسَاءَ بَنِي إِسْرَائِيلَ.

(رواه البخارى و مسلم)

(544/72) It is related that Sayyidah Ayshah رضى الله عنها said: "Were the Messenger of Allah ﷺ to see the things women have now acquired (in their conduct and deportment), he would have forbidden them from going to the mosque in the same way as the women of Bani Israel had been forbidden (to go to their places of worship) during the days of the earlier Prophets."

(Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: This observation was made by Sayyidah Ayshah رضى الله عنها in her time (after the passing away of the holy Prophet ﷺ), and for this reason, according to Shah Waliullah رحمه الله عليه, the Companions رضى الله عنهم, generally, had come to hold that women should no longer be permitted to go to the mosque. With the rapid transformation of social values in the succeeding generations and in the context of our mournful moral degeneration it is now absolutely out of the question.

①. Comments on the above narratives are adapted from Shah Waliullah's *Hujjat*, Vol. II, p26.

CONGREGATION

We have seen how *as-salah* (prayer) is not merely an obligatory mode of worship but also a sign and symbol of Islam. To observe it is a proof of one's wholehearted allegiance to Islam and its omission denotes indifference to Faith and an attitude of inattention and unconcern towards Allah and the Prophet ﷺ. It was, therefore, essential to have an arrangement that enabled everyone to offer prayer openly and for all to see. The Prophet ﷺ, consequently, prescribed the method of congregation and made it compulsory for every Muslim who was not ill or had any other valid excuse to offer prayer individually or at home. We believe, the real wisdom behind the institution of congregational prayer is that the Muslims, in that way, were subjected to supervision and superintendence five times a day. Moreover, our everyday experience is that many Muslims who offer prayer regularly, thanks to congregational service, would not have maintained such regularity without it.

The institution of congregational prayer moreover, is a unique informal plan for the religious instruction of Muslims and offers them a wonderful opportunity to come into contact with one another and know about each-other's welfare regularly.

The atmosphere of worship, devotness and repentance that pervades the mosques and the effect it produces in the hearts, the bestowal of Divine favours that takes place when the hearts of the bondsmen of different religious and spiritual levels turn in unison towards Allah, and the company of the angels with which the devotees are blessed in congregational prayer, as a number of the Traditions tell, are, again, the singular advantages of the system of congregation.

Besides, it can be most helpful in the promotion of the sense of

the solidarity and cooperation among the Muslims. It should not be difficult for any one to appreciate, in the modern times, the tremendous social and other benefits to which the five daily get-togethers in the mosques of the locality and the greater weekly congregation in the central mosque of the town on Fridays and even greater congregations of the 'Eids, twice in a year, can be put.

Be that as it may, it is owing to these blessing and advantages that everyone is required to offer prayers congregationally unless there is a genuine excuse like illness, and as long as the teachings of the Prophet ﷺ were sincerely observed, every Muslim, with the exception of the sick and the hypocrites, took care to offer prayers congregationally, and negligence concerning it was, commonly, considered to be a sign of hypocrisy.

Importance

(٥٤٥/٧٣) عَنْ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ مَسْعُودٍ قَالَ لَقَدْ رَأَيْتُنَا وَمَا يَتَخَلَّفُ عَنِ الصَّلَاةِ إِلَّا مُنَافِقٌ قَدْ عَلِمَ بِفَاقِهِ أَوْ مَرِيضٌ إِنْ كَانَ الْمَرِيضُ لَيَمْشِي بَيْنَ رَجُلَيْنِ حَتَّى يَأْتِيَ الصَّلَاةَ وَقَالَ إِنْ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ عَلَّمَنَا سُنَنَ الْهُدَى وَإِنْ مِنْ سُنَنِ الْهُدَى الصَّلَاةُ فِي الْمَسْجِدِ الَّذِي يُؤْذَنُ فِيهِ وَفِي رِوَايَةٍ إِنْ اللَّهُ خَرَعَ لِنَبِيِّكُمْ سُنَنَ الْهُدَى وَإِنَّهُنَّ (أَيِ الصَّلَوَاتِ حَيْثُ يُنَادَى بِهِنَّ) مِنْ سُنَنِ الْهُدَى وَلَوْ أَنَّكُمْ صَلَّيْتُمْ فِي بُيُوتِكُمْ كَمَا يُصَلِّي هَذَا الْمُتَخَلِّفُ فِي بَيْتِهِ لَعَرَّكْتُمْ سُنَّةَ نَبِيِّكُمْ وَلَوْ تَرَكَتُمْ سُنَّةَ نَبِيِّكُمْ لَضَلَلْتُمْ (رواه مسلم)

(545/73) Abdullah bin Mas'ud رضي الله عنه related to us "I have seen ourselves (i.e., the Muslims) in the state that he who did not offer prayer in congregation was either a hypocrite whose hypocrisy was not hidden from anyone or an unfortunate sick invalid (who could not come to the mosque owing to illness), and even some sick people came to the mosque, supported by two men, and joined the congregation".....After it, Abdullah bin Mas'ud رضي الله عنه said, "The Messenger of Allah ﷺ has imparted to us the knowledge of *Sunan Huda* (i.e., of the things of Faith and *Shari'ah* on which our guidance and felicity are dependent or with which they are related) and one of these *Sunan Huda* is the offering of prayers in congregation in a mosque where *Azan* is called.

In another version of the same Tradition Abdullah bin Mas'ud رضي الله عنه is stated to have said: "O Muslims! Allah has prescribed *Sunan Huda* for your Prophet (i.e., enjoined upon him acts that are capable of taking one to the place of propinquity and good pleasure of Allah) and to offer the five daily prayers in congregation in the mosque in one of them. You will forsake the way of the Prophet ﷺ if you will start offering prayer at home and away from the congregation like this man (the reference is to some particular person who lived in those days), and if you forsook the way of the Prophet ﷺ, be sure you will forsake the path of Guidance and fall in the abyss of destruction." (Muslim)

Commentary: We are told by an illustrious Companion رضي الله عنه of the Prophet ﷺ, Sayyidina Abdullah bin Mas'ud رضي الله عنه, that offering of all the five daily prayers in congregation is among the Prophet's ﷺ teachings that are popularly known as *Sunan Huda*. In other words, it is a part of his more important precepts with which the guidance of the *Ummah* is closely connected.

Sayyidina Abdullah bin Mas'ud رضي الله عنه, further, said that to omit the congregation and offer prayer at home is to stray away from the path of the Prophet ﷺ, and that during the earliest days of Islam, which was the finest imaginable phase of the *Ummah*, everyone except the sick and the hypocrites offered prayer with the congregation and even the invalids came to the mosque, supported by others, to participate.

It is clear from the above Tradition that the opinion of Sayyidina Abdullah bin Mas'ud رضي الله عنه and the general body of the Companions رضي الله عنهم the position of congregation is similar to that of an obligatory duty. Thus, those who draw the inference from the term, *Sunan Huda*, that according to the jurisprudential usage congregation is no more than a *Sunnah* have, perhaps, not kept the whole of Abdullah bin Mas'ud رضي الله عنه narrative in mind.

(٥٤٦/٧٤) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ لَيْسَ صَلَاةُ
الْأَقْلَ عَلَى الْمُنَافِقِينَ مِنَ الْفَجْرِ وَالْعِشَاءِ وَلَوْ يَعْلَمُونَ مَا فِيهِمَا لَا تَوَهُمَا وَلَوْ
حَبُورًا لَقَدْ هَمَمْتُ أَنْ أَمْرًا مَوْذَنًا فَيَقِيمَ ثُمَّ أَمْرًا رَجُلًا يَوْمَ النَّاسِ ثُمَّ أَخَذَ شُعْلًا

مِنْ نَارٍ فَاحْرَقْ عَلَى مَنْ لَا يَخْرُجُ إِلَى الصَّلَاةِ بَعْدُ. (رواه البخارى و مسلم)

(546/74) It is related by Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "No Prayer is more heavy on the hypocrites than *Fajr* and *Isha*, and if they knew what reward awaited them against these prayers, and what blessings, they would join them even if they had to drag themselves on their knees (i.e., they would come to the mosque crawling along the ground if they could not walk due to illness). I, sometimes, feel like asking the *Muazzin* to call the *Iqamah*, and, then, appointing someone to lead the prayers in my place, take a torch in my hand and set fire to the houses of the people who did not come out of their homes for joining the congregation even after hearing the *Azan*."

(Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: An equally awe-inspiring Tradition has been quoted in *Ibn Majah*, on the authority of Sayyidina Usama رضي الله عنه. It reads:

"People must give up the habit of staying away from congregation otherwise I shall burn down their houses."

لَيْتَهُنَّ رِجَالٌ عَنْ تَرْكِ
الْجَمَاعَةِ أَوْ لَا حَرَقَنَ بُيُوتَهُمْ
(كنز العمال بحواله ابن ماجه)

Whether the wilful defaulters of congregation against whom the Prophet ﷺ has expressed such a strong indignation be the hypocrites of belief or action, this warning is about the act of omitting the congregation. This has led some authorities of old, including Imam Ahmad Hanbal, to believe that it is obligatory for an able-bodied person to offer prayers with congregation. In other words, as the offering of prayer is a religious duty so, also, is the offering of it with congregation and he who neglects congregation, neglects a fundamental religious obligation. But the doctors of the Hanafi school have, after examining the relevant Traditions, concluded that it belongs to the class of *Wajib*¹, not *Fard*, and the remark of the sacred Prophet ﷺ contained in the above narrative is in the nature of a warning and admonition.

(٥٤٧/٧٥) عَنْ ابْنِ عَبَّاسٍ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَنْ

سَمِعَ الْمُنَادِيَ فَلَمْ يَمْنَعْهُ مِنْ إِيْبَاعِهِ عُدْرًا قَالُوا وَمَا الْعُدْرُ قَالَ خَوْفٌ أَوْ مَرَضٌ

①. Meaning a thing requisite or proper to be done.

لَمْ تُقْبَلْ مِنْهُ الصَّلَاةُ الَّتِي صَلَّى . (رواه ابو داؤد و الدارقطني)

(547/75) It is related by Abdullah bin Abbas رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Whoever hears the call of the *Muazzin* for prayer with congregation and there is no genuine excuse for him for not responding to it (i.e., of not joining the congregation, and, in spite of it, he prays individually), prayer of his shall not find acceptance with Allah." (Upon it), some Companions رضي الله عنهم said: Messenger of Allah ﷺ what can be a genuine excuse?" "Danger to life or property or sickness," replied the Prophet ﷺ. (Abu Dawood and Daarami)

Commentary: In it, too, a severe warning is administered to those who stay away from congregation. Some ancient legists have held, on the basis of it, that like wudu, congregation, also, is among the essential conditions of prayer and the prayer of anyone who offers it individually without a valid reason is as good as unoffered. But it is not the view of the majority of the doctors of Islamic jurisprudence. According to them, such a prayer is discharged but it is of a very poor quality, the reward on which is little and the real aim of seeking the countenance of Allah remains unfulfilled. This, in their view, is the meaning of not finding acceptance with Allah. Anyhow, the truth is that the omission of congregation without a cogent excuse is most improper.

(٥٤٨/٧٦) عَنْ أَبِي الدَّرْدَاءِ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَا مِنْ

ثَلَاثَةٍ فِي قَرْيَةٍ وَلَا بَدْوٍ لَا تُقَامُ فِيهِمُ الصَّلَاةُ إِلَّا قَدْ اسْتَحْوَذَ عَلَيْهِمُ الشَّيْطَانُ

فَعَلَيْكَ بِالْجَمَاعَةِ فَإِنَّمَا يَأْكُلُ الذِّئْبُ الْقَاصِيَةَ. (رواه احمد و ابو داؤد و النسائي)

(548/76) It is related by Abu Darda رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "If there are three persons in a habitation or *Badiyah*¹ and they do not offer prayer in congregational form then Satan will, surely, obtain control over them. You should, therefore, make it obligatory for yourselves to observe congregation. The wolf devours only the sheep that strays away from the flocks." (Musnad Ahmad, Abu Dawood and Nasai)

Commentary: It shows that if only three praying persons live

- ①. Denoting the forest in which there is no permanent habitation but someone may have stayed in it for sometime.

somewhere they should offer prayer congregationally or else they will fall an easy prey to the machinations of the devil

Superiority And Blessedness

(٥٤٩/٧٧) عَنْ ابْنِ عُمَرَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ صَلَاةُ

الْجَمَاعَةِ تَفْضُلُ صَلَاةَ الْفَلْدِ بِسَبْعٍ وَعِشْرِينَ دَرَجَةً. (رواه البخارى ومسلم)

(549/77) It is related by Abdullah bin Umar رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "To offer prayers with the congregation is twenty-seven times more meritorious than to offer it alone." (Bukahri and Muslim)

Commentary: Just as there is a difference of grade and degree in the properties of the things of the material world, and their worth and utility varies in accordance with it, our deeds, too, belong to various grades and standards the detailed knowledge is which is possessed only by Allah. When the Prophet ﷺ tells about an act that it is superior to such-and-such an act by so many degrees he does so on the basis of the knowledge vouchsafed to him by the Almighty. Thus, the observation made in the above Tradition about prayer observed with the congregation to be twenty-seven times more deserving of Divine reward than the one said individually is a truth inspired by Allah to the Prophet ﷺ and conveyed by him to his followers. It is, now, the duty of the faithful bondsmen that, believing wholeheartedly in its veracity, they take care always to offer prayer with the congregation.

It, also, shows incidentally, that a prayer offered singly is not lost altogether but is of a lesser grade by twenty-seven times which, clearly, is a matter of great sorrow and misfortune in itself.

(٥٥٠/٧٨) عَنْ أَنَسٍ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَنْ صَلَّى لِلَّهِ

أَرْبَعِينَ يَوْمًا فِي جَمَاعَةٍ يُدْرِكُ التَّكْبِيرَةَ الْأُولَى كُتِبَ لَهُ بَرَاءَةٌ تَنْبَرَأُ مِنَ

النَّارِ وَبَرَاءَةٌ مِنَ النِّفَاقِ. (رواه الترمذى)

(550/78) It is related by Anas رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Whoever offers every prayer for forty days like this that even the first *Takbir*¹ is not missed by him, freedom from

two things is decreed for him: the Fire of Hell and hypocrisy."

(Tirmizi)

Commentary: It tells that to offer prayers for full forty days with such regularity that not even the first Takbir omitted is so pleasing to Allah that it can be taken for granted about him that his heart is not tainted with hypocrisy and he is the dweller of Paradise of such a class that he shall never know what the Fire of Hell is. If we form a sincere intention to do it then surely Allah will make it easy for us.

We, further, learn from it that to do a virtuous thing consistently for forty days possesses a usefulness and efficacy of its own.

Full Reward on Intention

(٥٥١/٧٩) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَنْ تَوَضَّأَ فَأَحْسَنَ وُضُوئَهُ ثُمَّ رَاحَ فَوَجَدَ النَّاسَ قَدْ صَلُّوا أَعْطَاهُ اللَّهُ مِثْلَ أَجْرِ مَنْ صَلَّاهَا وَحَضَرَهَا، لَا يَنْقُصُ ذَلِكَ مِنْ أَجُورِهِمْ شَيْئًا. (رواه أبو داود والنسائي)

(551/79) It is related by Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Whoever performed *wudu* and performed it well, and, then, went to the mosque (with the intention of offering prayer congregationally), but on reaching there found that the people had already offered the congregational prayer, Allah would bestow upon him the same reward as upon those who participated in the congregation and there would be no reduction in their reward as well." (Abu Dawood and Nasai)

Commentary: It shows that if a person who takes due care to offer prayer congregationally goes to the mosque to say the prayers in congregation, after performing the ablution properly, and finds that the prayer was over, he will, as a result of his intention and preparation for offering the prayers congregationally, receive, in full, the reward promised on the congregation as he had not missed it deliberately but owing to some error like misclaculation of time.

When it is Premissible to Say Namaz Individually or At Home

(٥٥٢/٨٠) عَنْ ابْنِ عُمَرَ أَنَّهُ أَذَّنَ بِالصَّلَاةِ فِي لَيْلَةٍ ذَاتِ بَرْدٍ وَرِيحٍ ثُمَّ قَالَ لَا صَلُّوا فِي الرِّحَالِ ثُمَّ قَالَ إِنَّ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ كَانَ يَأْمُرُ الْمُؤَذِّنَ إِذَا كَانَتْ لَيْلَةٌ ذَاتُ بَرْدٍ وَمَطَرٍ يَقُولُ لَا صَلُّوا فِي الرِّحَالِ.

(رواه البخارى ومسلم)

(552/80) Abdullah bin Umar رضي الله عنه has narrated that one night when it was very cold and a strong breeze was blowing he called the *Azan*, and, then, called, out, "Oh people! offer prayers in your houses." He said further, "It was the custom of the Prophet ﷺ that when it was very cold in the night and rain as falling he ordered the *Muazzin* also to announce to the people to offer prayers at home."

(Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: In it, it is said about the weather that when it is unusually inclement, cold and stormy. In the same way, when it is raining so heavily that there is the danger of getting wet in going to the mosque or the path is slippery or under water or covered with mud, one can offer prayers at home. It is not necessary, then, to go to the mosque for the congregation.

(٥٥٣/٨١) عَنْ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ عُمَرَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا وَضِعَ عَشَاءُ أَحَدِكُمْ وَاقِيَمَتِ الصَّلَاةُ فَأَبْدُوا بِالْعَشَاءِ وَلَا يُعَجَّلْ حَتَّى يَفْرَغَ مِنْهُ.

(رواه البخارى ومسلم)

(553/81) It is related by Abdullah bin Umar رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "When the meal of the night is laid for anyone of you and the worshippers stand up for the prayers (in the mosque), he should, first, eat his meal and refrain from hurrying till he has eaten."

(Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: Commentators are agreed that the aforesaid command applies to the situation in which a man is feeling hungry and the food has been served for him. If, in such a case, he is commanded to leave the meal and hurry to the mosque it is quite possible that his heart would remain attached to the food while he was saying the prayers. The Divine Law and commonsense both demand that, in circumstances like these, a man, first, has his meal,

and, then, offers prayers.

It is mentioned about the narrator himself, in Bukhari as well as Muslim, in connection with the above Tradition, that, sometimes, it happened that as the meal was laid before him, the congregation stood up in the mosque. He, then, would not leave the food and rush to the mosque but finish it. Since the mosque was very close to his house, he could hear the recital as he went on with the meal.

(٥٥٤/٨٢) عَنْ عَائِشَةَ رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهَا قَالَتْ سَمِعْتُ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَقُولُ لَا صَلَاةَ بِحَضْرَةِ الطَّعَامِ وَلَا وَهُوَ يُدَا فِعُهُ الْأَخْبَثَانِ .
(رواه مسلم)

(554/82) Sayyidah Ayshah رضى الله عنها said that she heard the Messenger of Allah ﷺ say, "Prayer is not to be offered when food is served, or when calls of nature prevent it." (Muslim)

(٥٥٥/٨٣) عَنْ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ أَرْقَمَ قَالَ سَمِعْتُ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَقُولُ إِذَا أُقِيمَتِ الصَّلَاةُ وَوَجَدَ أَحَدُكُمْ الْخَلَاءَ فَلْيَبْدَأْ بِالْخَلَاءِ .
(رواه الترمذى وروى مالك و أبو داود والنسائى نحوه)

(555/83) It is narrated by Abdullah bin Arqam ؓ that he heard the Messenger of Allah ﷺ say: "When the congregation stands up and anyone of you has the need to answer the call of nature, he should, first, get done with it."

(Tirmizi, Muwatta, Abu Dawood and Nasai)

Commentary: The above Traditions go to show how *Shari'ah* makes allowance for the needs and difficulties of the people.

He has not laid upon you any
impendiment in religion.

(Al-Hajj: 22, 78)

مَا جَعَلَ عَلَيْكُمْ فِي الدِّينِ مِنْ
حَرَجٍ .
(الحج : ٢٢ : ٧٨)

Arrangement of Rows

For the congregation of prayers the Prophet ﷺ has decreed that the devotees should stand, side by side, in rows. No better and more dignified arrangement could be imagined for collective worship like prayer. The Prophet ﷺ has urged that the rows must be perfectly straight with no one being ahead or in the rear even by an inch. The front row should be completed before the second is

formed behind it. Eminent and responsible members of the community and men of learning and understanding should try to secure a place in the front rows, nearer to the *Imam*¹, and small children should stand in the rear, and if ladies were participating in the congregation, they should stand from the last row, at the back of all the male worshippers. The Imam is to stand in the centre, in front of everyone.

The aim of it all is to make the congregation flawless and more beneficial. The Prophet ﷺ gave due attention to these things and, also, exhorted the *Ummah* to be particular about them. Occasionally, he would speak of the divine reward that was promised on observing these directions and warn those who disregarded them of severe chastisement in the life to come.

(٥٥٦/٨٤) عَنْ أَنَسٍ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ

سَوِّوْا صُفُوفَكُمْ فَإِنَّ تَسْوِيَةَ الصُّفُوفِ مِنْ إِقَامَةِ الصَّلَاةِ. (رواه البخاري ومسلم)

(556/84) It is related by Anas رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Oh people! Keep the rows straight and orderly in prayer for keeping the rows straight and in order is a part of observing prayer properly." (Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: In another report quoted in *Abu Dawood* etc., again on the authority of Sayyidina Anas رضي الله عنه, it is stated, "When the Prophet ﷺ stood up to lead the service he would, first, turn his face towards the right and tell the people: 'Stand abreast and make the rows straight,' and, then, towards the left and tell the people: 'Stand abreast and make the rows straight.' From other reports, too, it appears that the Prophet ﷺ used, often, to exhort the people to take care of the rows in prayer, specially at the time he stood up to lead the congregation.

(٥٥٧/٨٥) عَنِ النُّعْمَانِ بْنِ بَشِيرٍ قَالَ كَانَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ

يُسَوِّي صُفُوفَنَا حَتَّى كَأَنَّمَا يُسَوِّي بِهَا الْقِدَاحَ حَتَّى رَأَى أَنَا قَدْ عَقَلْنَا عَنْهُ ثُمَّ

خَرَجَ يَوْمًا فَقَامَ حَتَّى كَادَ أَنْ يُكْبِرَ فَرَأَى رَجُلًا بَادِيًا صَدْرُهُ مِنَ الصَّفِّ فَقَالَ

عِبَادَ اللَّهِ لَتَسَوَّنَّ صُفُوفَكُمْ أَوْ لَيُعَذِّبَنَّ اللَّهُ بَيْنَ وَجُوهِكُمْ. (رواه مسلم)

①. One who leads the service

(557/85) An-Nu'man bin Bashir رضي الله عنه has said, "The Messenger of Allah ﷺ used to straighten our rows as if he were trying to make them as straight as arrows until he saw that we had learned it from him. One day he came out, stood up, and was just about to say *Allahu Akbar* when he saw a man whose chest projected from the row, so he said, 'Servants of Allah, you must straighten your rows, or Allah will certainly put your faces in contrary directions.' " (Muslim)

Commentary: The words *as straight as arrows* in the hadith may be understood if we bear in mind the Arab practice of keeping their arrows absolutely straight when they went to hunt or waged a war. Thus this came to be used in their language as an example. The narrator emphasises that the Prophet ﷺ made them straighten their rows to such an extent that they did not dis-align even by a fraction of an inch. With regular emphasis, it came naturally to the worshippers and they stood straight in the rows. However, when once someone made a mistake, the Prophet ﷺ reprimanded him severely and remarked that Allah will cause them to differ if they did not keep their rows straight. This warning is found in a number of ahadith. There is a definite relation between the carelessness and the punishment but, as in all other things, we have become negligent in observing this command too.

(٥٥٨/٨٦) عَنْ أَبِي مَسْعُودٍ الْأَنْصَارِيِّ قَالَ كَانَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَمْسَحُ مَنَاكِبَنَا فِي الصَّلَاةِ وَيَقُولُ اسْتَوُوا وَلَا تَخْتَلِفُوا فَتَخْتَلِفَ قُلُوبُكُمْ لِيَلِينِي مِنْكُمْ أُولُو الْأَحْلَامِ وَالنُّهَى ثُمَّ الَّذِينَ يَلُونَهُمْ ثُمَّ الَّذِينَ يَلُونَهُمْ.

(رواه المسلم)

(558/86) Abu Mas'ud Ansari رضي الله عنه related that in prayer (i.e., when the devotees stood up for the congregational prayer) the Messenger of Allah ﷺ used to pat us on the shoulders and say: "Get abreast and do not be dissimilar (i.e., ahead of or behind one another) lest, God forbid, your hearts get separated." He would, also, say: "Nearest to me (in congregation) should be those who are men of knowledge and wisdom, then those who are next to them, and, then, those who are next to them (in knowledge and wisdom)." (Muslim)

Commentary: Besides the orderliness of the rows, the Prophet ﷺ instructed that closest to him, in the congregation, should stand those whom Allah had distinguished for learning and understanding, after them those who belonged to the second grade of it, and, after them, those who belonged to the third grade. Apart from being natural, from the point of view of training and instruction, too, the arrangement that people of good and outstanding capabilities should, grade by grade, be in the forward part of the congregation and nearer to the Prophet ﷺ is most desirable.

(٥٥٩/٨٧) عَنِ النُّعْمَانِ بْنِ بَشِيرٍ قَالَ كَانَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ

يُسَوِّي صُفُوفَنَا إِذَا قُمْنَا إِلَى الصَّلَاةِ فَإِذَا اسْتَوَيْنَا كَبَّرَ . (رواه ابو داؤد)

(559/87) Nu'man bin Bashir رضي الله عنه narrates that it was the practice of the Prophet ﷺ was that when he stood up to lead the congregation he would, first, have the rows arranged in proper order and say *Takbir* (only) when the rows had become straight and orderly. (Abu Dawood)

Front Rows to Be Completed First

(٥٦٠/٨٨) عَنْ أَنَسٍ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ اتِمُّوا الصَّفَّ

الْمُقَدِّمَ ثُمَّ الَّذِي يَلِيهِ فَمَا كَانَ مِنْ نَقْصٍ فَلْيَكُنْ فِي الصَّفِّ الْمَوْخِرِ (رواه ابو داؤد)

(560/88) It is related by Anas رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Oh people! First complete the front row, then the row next to it so that if there is an insufficiency it should be in the last row." (Abu Dawood)

Commentary: It shows that worshippers should not stand in the rear row until the front row had been filled up. In that way, the front row would be complete and whatever deficiency there was would be in the rear.

Superiority of Front Row

(٥٦١/٨٩) عَنْ أَبِي أُمَامَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِنَّ اللَّهَ

وَمَلَائِكَتَهُ يُصَلُّونَ عَلَى الصَّفِّ الْأَوَّلِ قَالُوا يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ وَعَلَى الثَّانِي قَالَ إِنَّ

اللَّهُ وَمَلَائِكَتُهُ يُصَلُّونَ عَلَى الصَّفِّ الْأَوَّلِ قَالُوا يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ وَعَلَى الثَّانِي قَالَ
 إِنَّ اللَّهَ وَمَلَائِكَتَهُ يُصَلُّونَ عَلَى الصَّفِّ الْأَوَّلِ قَالُوا يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ وَعَلَى الثَّانِي
 قَالَ وَعَلَى الثَّانِي . (رواه احمد)

(561/89) It is related by Abu Umamah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Allah shows mercy to the first row and His angels make supplication of mercy for it." Some Companions رضي الله عنهم said: "O Messenger of Allah! And for the second row also?" The Prophet ﷺ said again: "Allah shows mercy to the first row and the angels make supplication of mercy for it." 'It was, once more, enquired from him: "And for the second row also?" The Prophet repeated what he had said earlier," It was, once again, asked: "And for the second row also?" The Prophet gave the same reply (for the third time). The Companions, again, said: "O Messenger of Allah! And for the second row also?" At that (i.e., the fourth) time, the Prophet ﷺ replied: "And for the people of the second row also." (Abu Dawood)

Commentary: It shows that the people of the front row are deserving of the special grace of the Lord and invocations of the angels, and though those of the second row, too, have a share in them, they are far behind. Or, in other words, although, in our sight the difference between the first and second rows is very little, in the judgement of Allah it is great. The seeker of Divine mercy should, therefore, take pains to find a place in the first row, the only way to which is that he reached the mosque early.

In another saying, quoted in *Bukhari* and *Muslim*, it is stated that "If people knew what reward there is on standing in the first row and how are they going to be requitted (in the Hereafter), there would take place such a tussle among them that, ultimately, lot would have to be drawn." May Allah grant us belief in these facts! *Aameen!*

Method

(٥٦٢/٩٠) عَنْ أَبِي مَالِكٍ الْأَشْعَرِيِّ قَالَ أَلَا أَحَدٌ تُكْمُ بِصَلَاةِ رَسُولِ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ قَالَ أَقَامَ الصَّلَاةَ وَصَفَّ الرِّجَالُ وَصَفَّ خَلْفَهُمُ الْعِلْمَانُ ثُمَّ صَلَّى بِهِمْ فَلَذَكَرَ صَلَاتَهُ ثُمَّ قَالَ هَكَذَا صَلَاةُ أُمَّتِي . (رواه ابو داود)

(562/90) It is related on the authority of Abu Maalik Al-Ash'ari رضي الله عنه that he asked: "May I tell you about the prayer of the Prophet ﷺ?" He, then, said: "He would established prayer. He, first, formed the rows of men, and, behind them, the rows of children, and, then, led the congregation. Afterwards, the Prophet ﷺ remarked: 'This is the method of the prayers of my followers'." (Abu Dawood)

Commentary: It denotes that the correct and *Musnoon*¹ way is that the rows of men were in front and the children stood in a separate row behind them. From the Traditions to be taken up later it will appear that if women, too, are participating in the congregation they should stand even in the rear of the children.

Imam Should Stand in The Middle

(٥٦٣/٩١) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ
تَوَسَّطُوا الْإِمَامَ وَسُدُّوا الْخَلَلَ .
(رواه ابو داود)

(563/91) It is stated by Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Oh people! Take the Imam in your middle (i.e., arrange the rows in such a way that the *Imam* stood between the tow ends of the front row), and fill up the gaps in the rows." (Abu Dawood)

How Should *Muqtadis*² Stand if There Were Only One or Two of Them?

(٥٦٤/٩٢) عَنْ جَابِرٍ قَامَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ لِيُصَلِّيَ فَجِئْتُ حَتَّى قُمْتُ عَنْ يَسَارِهِ فَأَخَذَ بِيَدِي فَأَدَارَنِي حَتَّى أَقَامَنِي عَنْ يَمِينِهِ ثُمَّ جَاءَ جَبَّارُ بْنُ صَخْرٍ فَقَامَ عَنْ يَسَارِ رَسُولِ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ فَأَخَذَ بِيَدَيْنَا جَمِيعًا فَدَفَعَنَا حَتَّى أَقَامَنَا خَلْفَهُ .
(رواه مسلم)

(564/92) Jabir رضي الله عنه narrated that "(Once) as the Messenger of Allah ﷺ stood up for prayer (i.e., began to offer it up) I arrived and (after the formulation of intention) stood to his left. The Prophet ﷺ, then, grasped my arm and guiding me past his back made me stand to his right side. In the meantime, Jabbar bin

①. Signifying an act or observance confirmed by the practice of the sacred Prophet

②. Meaning those offering up prayers behind the Imam.

Sakhr رضي الله عنه (also) came and stood on his left. The Prophet ﷺ, therupon, directed both of us to the rear by holding our arms and made us stand behind (himself).” (Muslim)

Commentary: This hadith tells us that if there is only one *Muqtadi* he should stand on the right side of the *Imam*, and in case he stands to the left on the *Imam* by mistake, the *Imam* should bring him to his right, and in case another *Muqtadi* came and joins the congregation, the *Imam* should stand in front with both the *Muqtadis* forming a row in the rear. It is disallowed to stand alone behind the rows.

(٥٦٥/٩٣) عَنْ وَابِصَةَ بْنِ مَعْبُدٍ قَالَ رَأَى رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ رَجُلًا يُصَلِّي خَلْفَ الصَّفِّ وَحْدَهُ فَأَمَرَهُ أَنْ يُعِيدَ الصَّلَاةَ.

(رواه احمد و الترمذى و ابو داؤد)

(565/93) Sayyidina Wabisah bin Ma'bad رضي الله عنه has said that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ saw a man praying alone behind the row and ordered him to repeat his prayer. (Ahmad, Tirmizi, Abu Dawood)

Commentary: To pray alone behind a row of worshippers is contrary to the spirit of congregation and colectiveness. It is so much disliked that the Prophet ﷺ asked the man to repeat his prayer.

Observation: If anyone arrives at the mosque and finds the last row full and has no one else to stand with him in the next row then he must pull one of the men from that row to stand with him. However, he must do it only if he is confident that the man he is pulling will respond. If he does not find anyone likely to submit to his pull then he must, for necessity, stand alone in the last row.

Women Should Stand Separately And at The Back of Men And Even Children.

(٥٦٦/٩٤) عَنْ أَنَسٍ قَالَ صَلَّيْتُ أَنَا وَيَتِيمٌ فِي بَيْتِنَا خَلْفَ النَّبِيِّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ وَأُمُّ سُلَيْمٍ خَلْفَنَا.

(رواه مسلم)

(566/94) Sayyidina Anas رضي الله عنه said: "I offered prayer behind the Prophet ﷺ in my house, and with me was my brother, Yatim¹

①. According to some authorities Yatim was not the name but the title of one of the brothers of Sayyidina Anas رضي الله عنه.

(i.e., we both formed a row behind the Prophet), and our mother, Umm Sulaym, stood at the back of both of us." (Muslim)

Commentary: It shows that though only one woman was participating in the service, she should stand in the rear, apart from men and children, so much so that even if her own children were forming the front row she must not stand with them but at their back.

It is stated in another account of the same incident that the Prophet ﷺ himself had made Umm Sulaym stand in the rear.

These *ahadith* emphasise that women should stand in the last rows even behind young children. If a woman is alone, she must even then stand behind the men and children on her own.

IMAMAT

Among all the religious acts the foremost place is occupied by prayer. In islam its position is akin to that of the heart in the body. The *Imamat*¹ of prayer too is a most important religious fuction and it entails a heavy responsibility. In a way, it denotes the deputyship of the Prophet ﷺ. It is, therefore, essential that one who is most suited among the devotees participating in the congregation is appointed as the Imam. The criterion of it can, naturally, be relative propinquity with the Prophet ﷺ and an inner resemblance with him. In other words, he should have taken a share in the Prophet's ﷺ spiritual heritage and since the Qur'an is of paramount importance in that legcy, he ought to have, after having been blessed with true Faith, cultivated a special fondness and inclination for it, learnt it by heart, understood its message and injunctions and translated its teachings into practice. Should, however, all the worshippers be of equal merit and stature, preference will be given to him who possesses a greater knowledge of the *Sunnah* and the *Shari'ah* because after the Qur'an comes the *Sunnah*, and suppose that in this respect, too, there is nothing to mark out anyone among the participants the choice will fall on him who is distinguished for religious virtues like piety and good morals, and if ,even then, no one can be singled out, the oldest man in the congregation shall lead it for seniority in age, also, is a universally accepted mark of superiority.

Selection of *Imam*

(٥٦٧/٩٥) عَنْ أَبِي مَسْعُودٍ الْأَنْصَارِيِّ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَوْمَ الْقَوْمِ أَقْرَاهُمْ لِكِتَابِ اللَّهِ فَإِنْ كَانُوا فِي الْقِرَاءَةِ سَوَاءً فَأَعْلَمُهُمْ بِالسُّنَّةِ فَإِنْ كَانُوا فِي السُّنَّةِ سَوَاءً فَأَقْدَمُهُمْ هِجْرَةً فَإِنْ كَانُوا فِي الْهَجْرَةِ سَوَاءً

①. The act of conducting the service.

فَأَقْدَمُهُمْ سِنًا وَلَا يُؤَمِّنُ الرَّجُلُ الرَّجُلَ فِي سُلْطَانِهِ وَلَا يَقْعُدُ فِي بَيْتِهِ عَلَى
تَكْرِمَتِهِ إِلَّا بِإِذْنِهِ
(رواه مسلم)

(567/95) It is related on the authority of Abu Mas'ud Ansari رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "He should lead the congregation who reads the Book of Allah (i.e., the Qur'an) much among them, and if all of them be equal then he who possesses a greater knowledge of the *Sunnah* and the *Shari'ah*, and if all be equal in this respect, also, then he who may have been the first to Migrate (among them), and if all be equal in it as well (i.e., the time of their migration is the same) then he who is senior in age. And no one should act as anyone's Imam in his area (or territory) of leadership and authority or sit, without his permission, in his special place of sitting in his house." (Muslim)

Commentary: The reading of the Qur'an mentioned in the above Tradition should not be taken in the literal sense. Here it does not merely signify the recitation of the Qur'an or the learning of the whole of it by heart, but along with it, a deep understanding of the Holy Book and an exceptional attachment to it as well. Thus, the import of this Tradition will be that he is more worthy and qualified to be chosen as *Imam* who enjoys superiority over others in the knowledge of the Qur'an as well as devotion to it. In the Prophet's ﷺ time it was considered to be the greatest religious distinction and the more a person was noted for familiarity with the Qur'an the more was he recognised as the bearer and trustee of the glorious heritage of the Prophet ﷺ.

The next standard of superiority was the knowledge of the *Sunnah* and the *Shari'ah* and whoever possessed the knowledge of Qur'an and the *Sunnah*, also acted upon them as there was no question of knowledge without practice during those days.

The third was precedence in *Hijrah*, i.e., migration from Makkah to Madinah. But it was peculiar to the circumstances prevailing at that time. Later, it ceased to operate and the legists of Islam correctly prescribed piety and good-doing in its place.

The last determining factor was seniority in age. If no one was worthier and superior, judged by the first three standards, the oldest member of the congregation was to lead it.

Two other instructions have been given at the end of the Tradition. One is that when a person happens to be in anyone else's sphere of *Imamat* and authority, he should not act as an *Imam* but offers his prayers behind him. It is a different matter that the latter insisted on it. Secondly, if a person goes to anyone's house, he should avoid sitting at his place or on his seat. The wisdom of these exhortations is self-evident.

The Best Among You Should Be Made The *Imam*

(٥٦٨/٩٦) عَنْ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ عُمَرَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ
اجْعَلُوا أَيْمَنَكُمْ خِيَارَكُمْ فَإِنَّهُمْ وَقَدْ كُنْتُمْ فِيْمَا بَيْنَكُمْ وَبَيْنَ رَبِّكُمْ .

رواه الدارقطني و البيهقي (كنز العمال)

(568/96) It is related by Abdullah bin Umar رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Make them the *Imam* who are the best and worthiest of you because they are your representatives in the august presence of your Lord and Master."

(Dar Qutni and Baihaqi)

Commentary: The *Imam* acts as the representatives of the whole of the congregation before the Almighty. It is, therefore, the duty of the congregation to appoint the best of its members to the high office of *Imamat*.

In his lifetime the Prophet ﷺ himself used to lead the congregation, but when, during his last illness, he was rendered unable to perform the duty he ordered that Sayyidina Abu Bakr رضي الله عنه should act as the *Imam* who was the worthiest member of the community from the point of view of the knowledge and practice of Faith.

Unfortunately, greivous indifference was shown, in the succeeding eras, to this important directive and *Sunnah* of he sacred Prophet ﷺ with the result that the entire design and organisation of the *Ummah* was thrown into disorder.

Responsibility of *Imam*

(٥٦٩/٩٧) عَنْ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ عُمَرَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ
مَنْ أَمَّ قَوْمًا فَلْيَتَّقِ اللَّهَ وَلْيَعْلَمْ أَنَّهُ ضَامِنٌ مِّمَّا سُئِلَ لِمَا ضَمِنَ وَإِنْ أَحْسَنَ كَانَ لَهُ

مِنَ الْأَجْرِ مِثْلُ أَجْرِ مَنْ صَلَّى خَلْفَهُ مِنْ غَيْرِ أَنْ يُنْقُصَ مِنْ أَجُورِهِمْ شَيْئًا وَمَا كَانَ
مِنْ نَقْصٍ فَهُوَ عَلَيْهِ .
(رواه الطبراني في الاوسط (كنز العمال)

(269/97) It is related by Abdullah bin Umar رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Whoever acts as the *Imam* of the congregation should fear Allah and believe that he is responsible, also, for the prayer (of the *Muqtadis*) and will be questioned about it. If he has led the prayer well, he will get the reward equal to the total reward of the *Muqtadis* and no reduction will be made in their reward, and should there be a fault in the prayer, he alone, will be called to account." (Tabarani)

Convenience of *Muqtadis*

(٥٧٠/٩٨) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا
صَلَّى أَحَدُكُمْ لِلنَّاسِ فَلْيَخَفِفْ فَإِنَّ فِيهِمُ السَّقِيمَ وَالضَّعِيفَ وَالْكَبِيرَ وَإِذَا
صَلَّى أَحَدُكُمْ لِنَفْسِهِ فَلْيُطَوِّلْ مَا شَاءَ .
(رواه البخاري ومسلم)

(570/98) It is related by Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "When anyone of you stands up as the *Imam* to lead the prayers, he should keep it light (i.e., avoid making it too long) because there are sick and old and infirm people, too, among the *Muqtadis* (for whom a prolonged prayer might be a source of hardship), and when anyone of you offers his own prayers singly, he may lengthen it as much as he likes."

(Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: Some Companions who led the prayer in the mosques of their localities or tribes used to lengthen prayers out of religious fervour. Owing to it, much hardship was, sometimes, caused to the participants who were old, sick or tired. The sacred Prophet ﷺ, thus, often discouraged the practice. What the above Tradition, however, denotes is that the *Imam* should remember that there might be a sick or aged person among the worshippers and refrain from making the prayers too long and not only should smaller verses be recited but also the *Tasbih*¹ must be recited not

①. The act of praising the Lord by repeating the formulas of Subhana Rabbi yal-Azeem and Subhana Ribbiyal-a'ala.

more than thrice in *Ruku*¹ and *Sajda*². The moderate prayers the Prophet himself led serve as a perfect model for us and the significance of these instructions should be understood in that light.

(٥٧١/٩٩) عَنْ قَيْسِ بْنِ أَبِي حَازِمٍ قَالَ أَخْبَرَنِي أَبُو مَسْعُودٍ أَنَّ رَجُلًا قَالَ
وَاللَّهِ يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ إِنِّي لَا تَأْخُرُ عَنْ صَلَاةِ الْغَدَاةِ مِنْ أَجْلِ فَلَانٍ مِمَّا يُطِيلُ بِنَا
فَمَا رَأَيْتُ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ فِي مَوْعِظَةٍ أَشَدَّ غَضَبًا مِنْهُ يَوْمَئِذٍ
ثُمَّ قَالَ إِنَّ مِنْكُمْ مُنْفِرِينَ فَأَيُّكُمْ مَاصِلِي بِالنَّاسِ فَلْيَتَجَوَّزْ فَإِنَّ فِيهِمُ الضَّعِيفَ
وَالْكَبِيرَ وَذَالَجَاجَةٍ . (رواه البخاري و مسلم)

(571/99) Qays bin Abi Haazim said that Abu Mas'ud Ansari رضي الله عنه told him that (once) a person said to the Prophet ﷺ, "O Messenger of Allah! I swear by Allah that I do not attached the morning service because of such-and-such a man (and am compelled to offer prayer alone). He Keeps us very long (which is beyond my endurence)." The narrator of the Tradition, Abu Mas'ud Ansari رضي الله عنه, went on to add that he had never seen the Prophet ﷺ more angry. He delivered a sermon that day. The Prophet ﷺ, in the course of the sermon, said: "There are some among you who drive (the bondsmen of the Lord) away (by their wrongful behaviour). It is incumbent upon whoever of you became the Imam of the people and led them in prayer to make it short (i.e., refrain from prolonging it excessively because among them there are, also, the sick and the aged and those who have some business to attend." (Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentray: The Companions against whom the complaint was made was Ubayy bin Ka'b. A similar incident in respect of Sayyidina Mu'az رضي الله عنه is reported in *Bukhari* and *Muslim*. It is stated that he was in the habit of delaying the Isha prayers. One day, as usual, he began the prayer late and started reciting the *surah*³ *al Baqarah*. One of the *Muqtadis*, who was feeling tired after the day's work, disassociated himself from the prayer and offered his

- ①. Bowing low in prayer with the hands resting on the knees.
- ②. Prostrating in such a way that the forehead and the nasal bone as well as the knees and the toes of both the feet touch the ground.
- ③. Meaning a Chapter of the Qur'an.

prayers separately and went away. When the matter was brought to the notice of the Prophet ﷺ, he admonished Sayyidina Mu'az ؓ, and said: "O Mu'az! Do you want to bring harm to the people and involve them in mischief?" He, then, told to recite the *Surahs Wash-shams-i-wad-duhaha, Wal-ayl-i-iza Yaghshaha, and Wad-duha wal-layl-i-iza Saja* in prayer.

(٥٧٢/١٠٠) عَنْ أَبِي قَتَادَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِنِّي لَا
دُخُلُ فِي الصَّلَاةِ وَأَنَا أُرِيدُ إِطَالَتَهَا فَاسْمَعْ بُكَاءَ الصَّبِيِّ فَاتَجَوَّزْ فِي صَلَاتِي
مِمَّا أَعْلَمُ مِنْ شِدَّةِ وَجْدِ أُمِّهِ مِنْ بُكَائِهِ
(رواه البخارى)

(572/100) It is related by Abu Qatadah Ansari ؓ that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Sometimes it happens that I begin the prayer and I have the intention of prolonging it to some extent, but, then, I hear a child crying I cut short my prayer for I know how worried the mother would be on hearing it crying."
(Bukhari)

Commentary: Believing that the child's mother too would be in the congregation, the Prophet ﷺ respected her emotions and shortened his prayers when a child cried.

(٥٧٣/١٠١) عَنْ أَنَسٍ قَالَ مَا صَلَّيْتُ وَرَاءَ إِمَامٍ قَطُّ أَخَفَّ صَلَاةً وَلَا أَمَّ
صَلَاةً مِنَ النَّبِيِّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ وَإِنْ كَانَ لَيَسْمَعُ بُكَاءَ الصَّبِيِّ فَيُخَفِّفُ
مَخَافَةَ أَنْ تُفْتَنَ أُمُّهُ
(رواه البخارى ومسلم)

(573/101) Sayyidina Anas ؓ said "I never prayed behind an *Imam* who was more brief and more perfect than the Prophet ﷺ. If he heard a child crying while leading the congregation, he cut it short for fear that the mother would be worried (and her prayer would be affected by it)."
(Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: The guiding principle for the *Imam* is indicated in the above Tradition. His prayer should be brief but, at the same time, perfect and every part of it should be completed and every act carried out properly and in accordance with the confirmed practice of the Prophet ﷺ.

Guidance for Muqtadis

(٥٧٤/١٠٢) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ لَا تَبَادِرُوا الْإِمَامَ إِذَا كَبَّرَ فَكَبِّرُوا وَإِذَا قَالَ وَلَا الضَّالِّينَ فَقُولُوا آمِينَ وَإِذَا رَكَعَ فَأَرْكَعُوا وَإِذَا قَالَ سَمِعَ اللَّهُ لِمَنْ حَمِدَهُ فَقُولُوا اللَّهُمَّ رَبَّنَا لَكَ الْحَمْدُ

(رواه البخارى)

(574/102) It is related by Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "O people! Do not try to go ahead of the *Imam*. (On the other hand, follow him closely and carefully). Say *Allahu Akbar* when he says *Allahu Akbar*, and say *Aameen*! when he says *Walad dhalleen*, and perform *ruku* when he performs *ruku*, and say *Allaahumma Rabbana lakal Hamd* when he says *Sami Allahu liman Hamidah*." (Bukhari)

Commentary: What it shows, briefly, is that the *Muqtadis* should follow the *Imam* strictly in all the essential and obligatory factors of prayer and never try to surpass him.

(٥٧٥/١٠٣) عَنْ عَلِيٍّ وَ مُعَاذِ بْنِ جَبَلٍ رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُمَا قَالَا قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا أَتَى أَحَدُكُمْ الصَّلَاةَ وَالْإِمَامُ عَلَى حَالٍ فَلْيُصْنَعْ كَمَا يَصْنَعُ الْإِمَامُ

(رواه الترمذى)

(575/103) It is related by Ali and Mu'az bin Jabal رضي الله عنهما that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "When anyone of you comes for prayers and no matter in what state the *Imam* is (i.e., whether he is in the state of *qayam*¹, *ruku* or *sajda*), he should do as the *Imam* is doing." (Tirmizi)

(٥٧٦/١٠٤) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا جِئْتُمْ إِلَى الصَّلَاةِ وَنَحْنُ سُجُودٌ فَاسْجُدُوا وَلَا تَعْدُوا شَيْئًا وَمَنْ أَذْرَكَ رُكْعَةً فَقَدْ أَذْرَكَ الصَّلَاةَ

(رواه ابو داود)

(576/104) It is related by Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "When you come for prayer and find us in *sajda*, join in the *sajda* and make no count of it, and whoever gains the *ruku* with the *Imam*, gained the prayer (i.e., that *Rak'at* of it)." (Abu Dawood)

①. The posture of standing erect in *Namaz* with the arms folded below the navel.

Commentary: It denotes that if the *Muqtadis* join the *Imam* in *ruku* it is equal to participation in the whole of the *rak'at*, but if he joins only in *sajda*, it will not serve for the *rak'at* but he will be recompensed fully for the *sajda*. The *sajda*, however, will not be counted.

PERFORMANCE OF PRAYER

How prayer should be offered

(٥٧٧/١٠٥) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ أَنَّ رَجُلًا دَخَلَ الْمَسْجِدَ وَرَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ جَالِسٌ فِي نَاحِيَةِ الْمَسْجِدِ فَصَلَّى ثُمَّ جَاءَ فَسَلَّمَ عَلَيْهِ فَقَالَ وَعَلَيْكَ السَّلَامُ إِرْجِعْ فَصَلِّ فَإِنَّكَ لَمْ تُصَلِّ فَرَجَعَ فَصَلَّى ثُمَّ جَاءَ فَسَلَّمَ فَقَالَ وَعَلَيْكَ السَّلَامُ إِرْجِعْ فَصَلِّ فَإِنَّكَ لَمْ تُصَلِّ فَقَالَ فِي الثَّالِثَةِ أَوْفَى الَّتِي بَعْدَهَا عَلَّمَنِي يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ فَقَالَ إِذَا قُمْتَ إِلَى الصَّلَاةِ فَاسْبِغِ الْوُضُوءَ ثُمَّ اسْتَقْبِلِ الْقِبْلَةَ فَكَبِّرْ ثُمَّ اقْرَأْ بِمَا تيسَّرَ مِنْ الْقُرْآنِ ثُمَّ ارْكَعْ حَتَّى تَطْمَئِنَّ رَاكِعًا ثُمَّ ارْفَعْ حَتَّى تَسْتَوِيَ قَائِمًا ثُمَّ اسْجُدْ حَتَّى تَطْمَئِنَّ سَاجِدًا ثُمَّ ارْفَعْ حَتَّى تَطْمَئِنَّ جَالِسًا ثُمَّ اسْجُدْ حَتَّى تَطْمَئِنَّ سَاجِدًا ثُمَّ ارْفَعْ حَتَّى تَطْمَئِنَّ جَالِسًا (وَفِي رِوَايَةٍ لَمْ يَرْفَعْ حَتَّى تَسْتَوِيَ قَائِمًا) ثُمَّ افْعَلْ ذَلِكَ فِي صَلَاتِكَ كُلِّهَا

(رواه البخاري ومسلم)

(577/105) It is related by Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that (once) the Messenger of Allah ﷺ was sitting in the mosque and a man came in and offered prayers. Afterwards, he came to the Prophet ﷺ and saluted him. The Prophet ﷺ returned the salutation and remarked: "Go and offer the prayer again. You have not offered it properly." He went back and repeated the prayers again and returned to the Prophet ﷺ, and saluted him. The Prophet ﷺ, returning the salutation, and once again remarked: "Go and offer the prayers again. You have not said it properly". After repeating the prayers for the third (on the fourth) time, the man said to the Prophet ﷺ: "Messenger of Allah ﷺ teach me." The Prophet ﷺ replied: "When you decide to pray, first perform *wudu* thoroughly and well, then turn to *Qiblah*, then begin with *Takbir Tahrima*¹. After that recite some part of the Qur'an which

①. Meaning Allahu Akbar

you know and can recite easily. (In other Traditions relating to the same incident it is stated that He told the questioner, specifically, to recite *Sura Fateha* and whatever he liked, in addition to it). Then, after the recital, perform *ruku* till you are still and at ease in *ruku*. then, arise from *ruku* till you stand erect. Then, perform the *sajda* till you are still and at ease in *Sajda*. Then, arise till you sit up comfortably. (According to another narrator, the Prophet, instead of it, said: 'Then arise till you stand erect). Then, do like that throughout the prayer (i.e., in every *Rak'ut* carry out all acts like *ruku*, *sujud*¹, *Qauma*² and *Jalsa*³ in a calm and collected manner)." (Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: The incident mentioned above related to Khallad bin Rafi' ؓ, the brother of the well-known Companion, Rifaah bin Rafi' ؓ. According to *Nasai*, he had offered two *Rak'ats* in the Prophet's mosque and some other commentators have suggested that these were *Tahiyyat-ul-Masjid* which Khallad, had offered rather hurriedly, and, he was reproached by the Prophet and told to offer them again.

It shows that the Prophet did not plainly tell Khallad bin Rafi', at the first time, what was wrong with his prayer and how it was to offered correctly, but at the third or fourth time, and, then, at his own request. It was, probably, for the simple reason that a lesson imparted in such a manner suffices for a lifetime and gets talked about among others as well.

The Prophet ؐ did not teach him what to recite in the different positions because he was aware of that. His mistake was that he hurried through his postures.

As for the difference in the two versions, the concluding part of the hadith some *ulama* suggest that one should sit down a while before standing up from the *sajdah*. They consider the first version correct; others prefer the second version.

The practical teaching imparted in the above Tradition is that prayer should be offered in a calm and composed manner and if it is offered hurriedly and without making the necessary pauses and carrying out the various acts properly it may be as good as unoffered

①. Plural of Sajda

②. The posture of standing for Ruku in Prayer

③. The act of sitting between two Sajdas in Prayers.

Prayer of The Prophet ﷺ

(٥٧٨/١٠٦) عَنْ عَائِشَةَ قَالَتْ كَانَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَسْتَفْتِحُ الصَّلَاةَ بِالتَّكْبِيرِ وَالْقِرَاءَةَ بِالْحَمْدِ لِلَّهِ رَبِّ الْعَالَمِينَ وَكَانَ إِذَا رَكَعَ لَمْ يُشْخِصْ رَأْسَهُ وَلَمْ يُضَوِّبْهُ وَلَكِنْ بَيْنَ ذَلِكَ وَكَانَ إِذَا رَفَعَ رَأْسَهُ مِنَ الرُّكُوعِ لَمْ يَسْجُدْ حَتَّى يَسْتَوِيَ قَائِمًا وَكَانَ إِذَا رَفَعَ رَأْسَهُ مِنَ السَّجْدَةِ لَمْ يَسْجُدْ حَتَّى يَسْتَوِيَ جَالِسًا وَكَانَ يَقُولُ فِي كُلِّ رَكْعَتَيْنِ التَّحِيَّةَ وَكَانَ يَفْتَرِشُ رِجْلَهُ الْيُسْرَى وَيَنْصِبُ رِجْلَهُ الْيُمْنَى وَكَانَ يَنْهَى عَنْ عُقْبَةِ الشَّيْطَانِ وَيَنْهَى أَنْ يَفْتَرِشَ الرَّجُلُ ذِرَاعَيْهِ إِفْتِرَاشَ السَّبُعِ وَكَانَ يَخْتِمُ الصَّلَاةَ بِالتَّسْلِيمِ

(رواه مسلم)

(578/106) Sayyidah Aysha رضى الله عنها narrated that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ commenced his prayers with *Takbir* and the recital with *Al-hamdu lillilahuhi Rabil Aalameen*¹, and while performing ruku he neither raised his head upwards nor bent it downwards but kept it in the middle position (i.e., in line with the waist), and when he raised the head from *ruku* he did not go into *sajda* till he had stood erect, and when he raised the head from *sajda*, he did not perform the second *sajda* until he had sat upright, and he recited *At-Tahiyyatu* after every two rak'ats, and, at that time, he flattened the left foot under him and kept the right foot in the upright position, and he forbade *Uqbatish Shaytan* (sitting like the Devil), and he, also, forbade that a man sat (in *Sajda*) with his forearms (i.e., parts of arms between elbow and wrist) placed on the ground like the animals, and he brought the prayer to an end by saying *As-salamu 'Alaikum wa rahmatullah*.² (Muslim)

Commentary: Prayer is a worship of a very high order. For it such forms and postures of *qayam*, *qaood*², *ruku* and *sujood* have been prescribed as constitute the finest marks and expressions of adoration and humbleness, and all the unbecoming manners of holding the body that are indicative of vanity, awkwardness or indifference, or bear a resemblance with the lowly creatures have been, particularly, forbidden. The Holy Prophet ﷺ has, accordingly, ordered us not to sit in *Sajda* with forearms spread on

①. The Opening chapter of the Qur'an, popularly known as Sura-i-i-Fatiha.

②. Denoting the posture of sitting in Namaz.

the ground as the dogs and wolves do or in the manner which, in this Tradition, has been described as *Uqbatish Shaytan*, and, in another, as *Aq'aa-al-kalb*.

Commentators have differed in their explanations of the two terms. In our humble view, however, they denote sitting on the heels with the feet held upright on the toes and since this posture gives the impression of haste and exaggerated self-esteem and only the knees touch the ground and it is the way dogs and wolves and other wild animals, generally, sit, the Prophet ﷺ took special care to forbid against sitting like that in prayer.

It is to be remembered that such a manner of sitting is disallowed only one is not constrained to do so owing to a disease or deformity. It is narrated by Sayyidina Abdullah bin Umar ؓ that, sometimes, he used to sit like that on account of a painful ailment in his feet. Similarly, the version of Sayyidina Abdullah bin Abbas ؓ describes this style as the practice of the "your Prophet". Perhaps he may have sat down in that manner on account of some difficulty.

(٥٧٩/١٠٧) عَنْ أَبِي حُمَيْدٍ السَّاعِدِيِّ قَالَ فِي نَفَرٍ مِنْ أَصْحَابِ رَسُولِ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ أَنَا أَحْفَظُكُمْ لِصَلَاةِ رَسُولِ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ رَأَيْتُهُ إِذَا كَبَّرَ جَعَلَ يَدَيْهِ حِذَاءَ مَنْكِبَيْهِ وَإِذَا رَكَعَ أَمَكَّنَ يَدَيْهِ مِنْ رُكْبَتَيْهِ ثُمَّ هَضَرَ ظَهْرَهُ فَإِذَا رَفَعَ رَأْسَهُ اسْتَوَى حَتَّى يَعُودَ كُلُّ فَقَارٍ مَكَانَهُ فَإِذَا سَجَدَ وَضَعَ يَدَيْهِ غَيْرَ مُفْتَرِشٍ وَلَا قَابِضَهُمَا وَاسْتَقْبَلَ بِأَطْرَافِ رِجْلَيْهِ الْقِبْلَةَ فَإِذَا جَلَسَ فِي الرُّكْعَتَيْنِ جَلَسَ عَلَى رِجْلَيْهِ الْيُسْرَى وَنَصَبَ الْيُمْنَى فَإِذَا جَلَسَ فِي الرُّكْعَةِ الْآخِرَةِ قَدَّمَ رِجْلَهُ الْيُسْرَى وَنَصَبَ الْآخِرَى وَقَعَدَ عَلَى مَقْعَدَيْهِ (رواه البخاري)

(579/107) Sayyidina Abu Humayd As-Sa'idi ؓ said to a company of the Companions ؓ that among them he was the best versed in the way the Messenger of Allah ﷺ prayed. He said, "I saw when he said the *takbeer* he placed his hands opposite his shoulders, when he bowed into the *ruku'* he rested his hands on his knees and bent his back; when he raised his head he stood erect with his spine straight; when he prostrated himself he placed his arms so that they were not spread out and the fingers were not drawn in and the points of his toes were

facing the *qiblah*; when he sat up at the end of the two *rak'at* he sat on his left foot and raised the right; and when he sat up after the last *raka'ah* he put forward the left foot, raised the other, and sat on his hips." (known as *tawarruk*). (Bukhari)

Commentary: This hadith speaks of the Prophet ﷺ raising his hands upto the shoulders at the first Takbeer. But, the hadith narrated by Maalik bin Huwayrith ؓ transmitted by *Bukhari* and *Muslim* tells us that he raised the hands upto his earlobes. There is no contradiction in the too. When the hands are raised to the ears, the arms are against the shoulders and we can describe that as raising hands to the ears.

Abu Dawood has transmitted a hadith narrated by Wa'il bin Hujr ؓ that makes the issue very clear.

He raised his hands so high that they were in line with the shoulders while the thumbs aligned with the ears.

رَفَعَ يَدَيْهِ حَتَّى كَانَتْ بِحِجَالِ
مَنْكِبَيْهِ وَخَاذِي إِبْهَامَيْهِ أُذُنَيْهِ

Abu Humayd has said about the Prophet's ﷺ last sitting which is known as *تَوَرُّك* (*tawarruk*). However, we have read the hadith narrated by Sayyidah Ayshah رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهَا reproduced earlier that he sat in the last sitting in the same posture as described by *Abu Humayd Sa'idi* ؓ for the first sitting which is known as *iftirash*.

Some scholars have suggested that the Prophet ﷺ sat in exactly the same manner as described by Sayyidah Ayshah رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهَا but he may have been constrained to adopt the style described as *tawarruk* for convenience. But other Ulama hold the opposite view. We might say that both methods were observed.

Particular Supplications & Methods of God-remembrance.

The inner feeling of earnestness and deep devotion that runs through the prayer-formulas through which the Prophet ﷺ used to revere and adore the Lord during the various parts or acts of *Namaz* like *qayam*, *ruku* and *sujood*, and the entreaties he made in them, from the essence of *Namaz*. The sayings we are now going to discuss should be read from the point of view and the endeavour should be to produce the same emotional and spiritual state of

feeling because it is the characteristic legacy of the holy Prophet ﷺ.

(٥٨٠/١٠٨) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ كَانَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَسْكُتُ بَيْنَ التَّكْبِيرِ وَبَيْنَ الْقِرَاءَةِ إِسْكَاتَةً فَقُلْتُ يَا أَبِى أَنْتَ وَأُمِّى يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ إِسْكَاتَكَ بَيْنَ التَّكْبِيرِ وَبَيْنَ الْقِرَاءَةِ مَا تَقُولُ؟ قَالَ أَقُولُ اللَّهُمَّ بَاعِدْ بَيْنِي وَبَيْنَ خَطَايَايَ كَمَا بَاعَدْتَ بَيْنَ الْمَشْرِقِ وَالْمَغْرِبِ اللَّهُمَّ نَقِّنِي مِنَ الْخَطَايَا كَمَا يُنْقَى الثَّوبُ الْأَبْيَضُ مِنَ الدَّنَسِ اللَّهُمَّ اغْسِلْ خَطَايَايَ بِالْمَاءِ وَالتَّلْجِ وَالْبَرْدِ

(رواه البخارى و مسلم)

(580/108) Sayyidina Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه said that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ used to observe a period of silence between the *takbeer* and the recitation of the Qur'an, so he asked him, "Messenger of Allah for whom I would give my father and mother as ransom, what do you say during your period of silence between the *takbeer* and the recitation?" He said that he made the supplication:

اللَّهُمَّ بَاعِدْ بَيْنِي وَبَيْنَ خَطَايَايَ كَمَا بَاعَدْتَ بَيْنَ الْمَشْرِقِ وَالْمَغْرِبِ اللَّهُمَّ نَقِّنِي مِنَ الْخَطَايَا كَمَا يُنْقَى الثَّوبُ الْأَبْيَضُ مِنَ الدَّنَسِ اللَّهُمَّ اغْسِلْ خَطَايَايَ بِالْمَاءِ وَالتَّلْجِ وَالْبَرْدِ

"O Allah, remove my lapses far from me as You have removed the east far from the west. O Allah, purify me from lapses as a white garment is purified from filth. O Allah, wash away my sins with water, snow and hail." (Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: The Prophet ﷺ was innocent and free from sins and lapses, yet he held fear within himself

This was also the supplication the Prophet ﷺ made sometimes after the *takbeer* and before *al-Fatiha*.

(٥٨١/١٠٩) عَنْ عَائِشَةَ قَالَتْ كَانَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا افْتَتَحَ الصَّلَاةَ قَالَ سُبْحَانَكَ اللَّهُمَّ وَبِحَمْدِكَ وَتَبَارَكَ اسْمُكَ وَتَعَالَى جَدُّكَ وَلَا إِلَهَ غَيْرُكَ

(رواه الترمذى و ابو داؤد)

(581/109) Sayyidah Ayshah رضي الله عنها related that when the Messenger of Allah ﷺ began (to offer) prayer he first glorified

the Lord in these words:

سُبْحَانَكَ اللَّهُمَّ وَبِحَمْدِكَ وَتَبَارَكَ اسْمُكَ وَتَعَالَى جَدُّكَ وَلَا إِلَهَ غَيْرُكَ

Subhaanakal-laa-humma wa bihamdika wa tabarakasmuka wa ta'ala jadduka wa la ilaaha ghairuka.

(O Allah, with Your glorification and your praise; blessed is Your Name; and there is no God save You).

(Tirmizi and Abu Dawood)

Commentary: Hafiz Muijahuddin Ibn Taymiyas writes in *Muntaqa* about Sayyidina Abu Bakr ؓ, on the authority of *Sunnan Saed bin Mansur*, and about Sayyidina Umar ؓ on the authority of *Sahih Muslim*, and about Sayyidina Uthman ؓ and Sayyidina Abdullah bin Mas'ud ؓ, on the authority of *Qutni*, that they began their *Salah* with *Subhaanakal-laa-humma wa bihamdika* and, then goes on to observe that it appears from it that the Prophet ﷺ, usually, recited this short prayer after *Takbir* in prayer. It, therefore, enjoys preference over all the other prayers of adoration mentioned in the Traditions with relation to the commencement of the prayer though there is no harm in reciting the other proven hymns, as for instance, the one occurring in the next Tradition related on the authority of Sayyidina Ali ؓ.

(٥٨٢/١١٠) عَنْ عَلِيٍّ رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ قَالَ كَانَ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا

قَامَ إِلَى الصَّلَاةِ كَبَّرَ ثُمَّ قَالَ وَجْهْتُ وَجْهِي لِلَّذِي فَطَرَ السَّمَوَاتِ وَالْأَرْضَ

حَنِيفًا وَمَا أَنَا مِنَ الْمُشْرِكِينَ إِنَّ صَلَاتِي وَنُسُكِي وَمَحْيَايَ وَمَمَاتِي لِلَّهِ رَبِّ

الْعَالَمِينَ لَا شَرِيكَ لَهُ وَبِذَلِكَ أُمِرْتُ وَأَنَا مِنَ الْمُسْلِمِينَ اللَّهُمَّ أَنْتَ

الْمَلِكُ لَا إِلَهَ إِلَّا أَنْتَ رَبِّي وَأَنَا عَبْدُكَ ظَلَمْتُ نَفْسِي وَاعْتَرَفْتُ بِذُنُوبِي

فَاغْفِرْ لِي ذُنُوبِي جَمِيعًا إِنَّهُ لَا يَغْفِرُ الذُّنُوبَ إِلَّا أَنْتَ وَاهْدِنِي لِأَحْسَنِ الْأَخْلَاقِ

لَا يَهْدِي لِأَحْسَنِهَا إِلَّا أَنْتَ وَاصْرِفْ عَنِّي سَيِّئَهَا لَا يَصْرِفُ عَنِّي سَيِّئَهَا إِلَّا

أَنْتَ، لِيُكَ وَتَعَالَيْتَ اسْتَغْفِرُكَ وَأَتُوبُ إِلَيْكَ وَإِذَا رَكَعَ قَالَ اللَّهُمَّ

لَكَ رَكَعْتُ وَبِكَ أَمِنْتُ وَلَكَ أَسْلَمْتُ خَشَعَ لَكَ سَمْعِي وَبَصَرِي،

وَمُخَيَّ وَعَظْمِي وَعَصْبِي، فَإِذَا رَفَعَ رَأْسَهُ قَالَ اللَّهُمَّ رَبَّنَا لَكَ الْحَمْدُ

مِلَّا السَّمَوَاتِ وَالْأَرْضِ وَمَا بَيْنَهُمَا وَمِلَّا مَا شِئْتَ مِنْ شَيْءٍ بَعْدَ وَإِذَا سَجَدَ قَالَ
 اللَّهُمَّ لَكَ سَجَدْتُ وَبِكَ آمَنْتُ وَلَكَ أَسْلَمْتُ سَجَدَ وَجْهِي لِلَّذِي خَلَقَهُ
 وَصُورَهُ وَشَقَّ سَمْعَهُ وَبَصَرَهُ تَبَارَكَ اللَّهُ أَحْسَنُ الْخَالِقِينَ ثُمَّ يَكُونُ مِنْ آخِرِ
 مَا يَقُولُ بَيْنَ التَّشَهُّدِ وَالتَّسْلِيمِ اللَّهُمَّ اغْفِرْ لِي مَا قَدَّمْتُ وَمَا أَخَّرْتُ وَمَا أَسْرَرْتُ
 وَمَا أَعْلَنْتُ وَمَا أَسْرَفْتُ وَمَا أَنْتَ أَعْلَمُ بِهِ مِنِّي أَنْتَ الْمُقَدِّمُ وَأَنْتَ الْمُؤَخِّرُ
 لَا إِلَهَ إِلَّا أَنْتَ

(رواه مسلم)

(582/110) Ali عليه السلام related that when Messenger of Allah ﷺ stood up to offer prayer he recited the following words after Takbir:

Waj-jah tu Waj-hiya-lilazi
 fataras-samawati wal-
 ardha hanifan wa
 m a - a n a
 minal-mushrikeena
 in-na salaati wa nusuki
 wa mahya-ya wa ma-
 matillahi rabbil
 'Aalimeena La sharika
 Lahu wa bithalika
 Umirti wa Ana Minal
 Muslimina allaahumma
 antal maliku laa ilaaha
 illa anta rabi wa ana
 abduka zalamtu nafsi
 wa-'ataraftu bizanbi
 faghfirli zunubi
 jamee'an in-nahu laa
 Yaghfiruz zunuba illa
 anta wah-dini li-ahsanil
 akhlaq laa yahdi
 li-ahsaniha illa anta
 was-rif'anni sayyiha-la

yasrif'anni sayyiaha ila anta labaika wa sa'adaika wal-khairru
 kul-luhu fi-yadaika was-sharru laisa ilaika ana bika wa ilaika
 tabarakta wa ta'aalaita astaghfiruka wa atoobu ilaik.

وَجْهْتُ وَجْهِي لِلَّذِي فَطَرَ السَّمَوَاتِ
 وَالْأَرْضَ حَنِيفًا وَمَا أَنَا مِنَ الْمُشْرِكِينَ. إِن
 صَلَوَتِي وَنُسُكِي وَمَحْيَايَ وَمَمَاتِي لِلَّهِ رَبِّ
 الْعَالَمِينَ لَا شَرِيكَ لَهُ وَبِذَلِكَ أُمِرْتُ
 وَأَنَا مِنَ الْمُسْلِمِينَ اللَّهُمَّ أَنْتَ الْمَلِكُ لَا
 إِلَهَ إِلَّا أَنْتَ رَبِّي وَأَنَا عَبْدُكَ ظَلَمْتُ نَفْسِي
 وَاعْتَرَفْتُ بِذُنُوبِي فَاعْفِرْ لِي ذُنُوبِي جَمِيعًا إِنَّهُ
 لَا يَغْفِرُ الذُّنُوبَ إِلَّا أَنْتَ وَاهْدِنِي لِأَحْسَنِ
 الْأَخْلَاقِ لَا يَهْدِي إِلَّا أَنْتَ لِأَحْسَنِهَا إِلَّا أَنْتَ
 وَاصْرِفْ عَنِّي سَيِّئَهَا لَا يَصْرِفْ عَنِّي سَيِّئَهَا
 إِلَّا أَنْتَ، لِيَبْكَ وَسَعْدِيكَ وَالْخَيْرُ كُلُّهُ
 فِي يَدَيْكَ وَالشَّرُّ لَيْسَ إِلَيْكَ أَنَا بِكَ
 وَإِلَيْكَ تَبَارَكْتَ وَتَعَالَيْتَ اسْتَغْفِرُكَ
 وَأَتُوبُ إِلَيْكَ

(I have turned away from every direction and set my face towards Allah who is the Creator of the heavens and the earth, and I am not of those who associate anyone with Him in allegiance. My worship, and my every religious act, and my life and my death are for Allah alone, the Lord of the Worlds. To this I have been commanded and I am of those who obey. O Allah! You are the Sovereign and Master. No one is worthy of obedience save You. You are my Lord and Owner, and I am Your slave. I have wronged my soul, and ruined myself, and I confess my inequities. O Lord! Forgive me my sins; no one can forgive sins except You. And remove all bad manners and deplorable morals from my side, and take them away from me. This, too, no one aside, of You can do. I am in Your presence, for Your service, and Your victory. Here I am, O Lord! All the good things, and every kind of piety and virtue are in Your hands, and evil has no access towards You. You are the Blessed, the Most High. You are my only hope and my face is turned towards You. I beg Your forgiveness and unto You do I turn penitent).

This prayer the Prophet ﷺ recited after *Takbir* and before the commencement of recitation from the Qur'an. Then, as he performed *ruku*, (after completing the recital), he used to say:

*Allaahumma laka rak'atu wa
hika uamantu wa laka aslamtu
khasha'a laka sam'ee wa
basari wa mukhkhi wa 'azmi
wa 'asbi.*

اَللّٰهُمَّ لَكَ رَكَعْتُ وَبِكَ اٰمَنْتُ
وَلَكَ اَسْلَمْتُ خَشَعْتُ لَكَ
سَمْعِيْ وَبَصَرِيْ ، وَ مَخْيِ
وَعَظْمِيْ وَعَصْبِيْ

(O Allah! I am bowed low before You, and I have believed in You and placed myself in Your charge. My ears, and my eyes, and my marrow, and my bones, and my muscles, and my nerves are all bent in submission to You).

Later, as the Prophet ﷺ raised his head from *ruku* and stood erect, he said:

*Allaahumma rabbanal
lakal-hamdu mil-as-samawaati
wal-ardhi wa ma bainahuma*

اَللّٰهُمَّ رَبَّنَا لَكَ الْحَمْدُ
مِلَّا السَّمَوَاتِ وَالْأَرْضِ وَمَا

*wamila-a ma shi-ata min
shaiyyan b'adu".*

بَيْنَهُمَا وَمِثْلَ مَا شِئْتَ مِنْ شَيْءٍ بَعْدُ

(O Allah! Praise is for You alone, such boundless praise as may cover the extensiveness of the heavens and the earth and fill all the empty space between them).

After it, when the Prophet ﷺ performed *sajda*, he used to say (placing his forehead on the ground):

*Alahumma laka sajad-tu wa
bika amantu wa laka aslamtu
sajada waj-hiyya-lillazi
khalafa-hu wa sawwara-tuh
wa sha-qa sam-'ahu wa
basara-hu tabarakal-allahu
ahsanul khaliqeen.*

اَللّٰهُمَّ لَكَ سَجَدْتُ وَبِكَ
اٰمَنْتُ وَلَكَ اَسْلَمْتُ سَجَدُ
وَجْهِيْ لِلَّذِيْ خَلَقَهُ وَصَوَّرَهُ وَشَقَّ
سَمْعَهُ وَبَصَرَهُ تَبَارَكَ اللهُ اَحْسَنُ
الْخَالِقِيْنَ

(O Allah! I am prostrating myself for Your sake, and in Your presence, and I have believed in You, and I have placed myself in Your charge. My face is carrying out genuflexion before the Creator who create it, and gave it its shape, and its ears, and its eyes out of nothing. Blessed, indeed, is the Best of Creators).

In the end, between *At-tahiyyatu*¹ and *Salutation*², he would pray:

*Allaahu haghfirli ma
qaddamtu wa ma akhkhartu wa
ma a'altu wa ma asraftu wa
ma asrartu wa ma anta
a'alamu bihi minni
antal-muqadimu wa antal
muwakhkhiru la ilaaha illa
anta.*

اَللّٰهُمَّ اغْفِرْ لِيْ مَا قَدَّمْتُ وَمَا
اَخَّرْتُ وَمَا اَسْرَرْتُ وَمَا اَعْلَنْتُ
وَمَا اَسْرَفْتُ وَمَا اَنْتَ اَعْلَمُ بِهِ مِنِّيْ
اَنْتَ الْمُقَدِّمُ وَاَنْتَ الْمُؤَخِّرُ لَا اِلٰهَ
اِلَّا اَنْتَ

(O Allah! Forgive me all the sins I have committed earlier or later, and secretly or openly and whatever inequity I have been guilty of, and of which. You are better informed than me. You are the one Who raises to higher ranks and reduces to lower positions. Verily, there is no deity save You)." (Muslim)

Commentary: From the narratives relating to the Prayer of the Prophet ﷺ it is clear that it was not the Prophet's ﷺ regular

①. Also known as Tashahhud. It is recited during the Qa'dah.

②. Finishing salute, first to the right, then to the left.

practice to recite the supplications mentioned by Sayyidin Ali ؑ in Fard prayers. Perhaps, he did so occasionally, and, most probably, in *Tahajjud*. In fact, Imam Muslim has quoted this Tradition in connection with the Traditions appertaining to *Tahajjud*.

Many other supplications were, also, made by the sacred Prophet ﷺ in prayer, particularly in *Tahajjud* which will be taken up at the appropriate time. These possess a special significance and are charged with rare feeling. The *Imam* can read them in *Fard* prayers as well if he is satisfied that it will not be hard with the *Muqtadis*, and, as far as supererogatory services are concerned, there is no reason why one should not avail oneself of this marvellous bequest.

Recital of Qur'an in *Namaz*

Like *qayam*, *ruku* and *sujud*, recital of the Qur'an, also, is a principal part of prayer, and it is done during *qayam*. It is common knowledge that after *Takbir* some prayers in the nature of a hymn are recited. We have just mentioned two of them from the Traditions. It is followed by the recital of the first *Surah* or opening Chapter of the Qur'an, i.e., *Surah al-Fatihah*, which is a priceless gem of adoration and contains a most inspiring and comprehensive description of the Attributes of Allah. Along with the rejection and repudiation of every form of polytheism there is, in it, an emphatic affirmation of Divine Oneness and towards Faith and the *Shari'ah*. Anyhow, first of all, this *surah* is recited without which there can be no prayer. After it, the worshipper is required to recite any other *surah* or a part of it. Whatever passage of the Qur'an he recites will, invariably, impart a message of guidance to him. Either it will be by way of glorification of the Lord and exposition of His Immaculate Attributes or dealing with the Last Day, Heaven and Hell, and Divine reward and punishment or conveying a command for practical life or narrating an event that has a religious or moral significance. It will, thus, be a ready answer to the worshipper's entreaty for guidance. In the second *rak'at*, too, any other *surah* or some verses of it will be recited after *sura al-Fatihah* but if the service consists of three or four *rak'at*, *surah al-Fatihah* will, of

course, be recited in the third and fourth *rak'at*, but it is not necessary to recite some other surah with it.

Now, the Traditions.

(٥٨٣/١١١) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ أَنَّ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ قَالَ لَا صَلَاةَ إِلَّا بِقِرَاءَةٍ، قَالَ أَبُو هُرَيْرَةَ فَمَا أَعْلَنَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ أَعْلَنَاهُ وَمَا أَخْفَاهُ أَخْفَيْنَاهُ لَكُمْ (رواه مسلم)

(583/111) It is related by Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "There can be no prayer without the recital of the Qur'an." proceeding, Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه remarks on his own, "We recited the Qur'an with a loud voice in the prayer in which the Prophet ﷺ recited it with a loud voice and silently in the prayers in which the Prophet recited it silently." (Muslim)

Commentary: This *haidth* tells us that recital is part of the prayers. Sayyidina Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه has said that they used to recite audibly in prayers in which the Prophet ﷺ recite audibly, but when he recited inaudibly, they too recited without being heard.

(٥٨٤/١١٢) عَنْ عُبَادَةَ بْنِ الصَّامِتِ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ لَا صَلَاةَ لِمَنْ لَمْ يَقْرَأْ بِفَاتِحَةِ الْكِتَابِ .

(رواه البخاري ومسلم وفي رواية لمسلم لمن لم يقرأ بام القرآن فصاعداً)
(584/112) It is recited by Ubadah bin Samit that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Whoever did not recite *surah al-Fatihah* in prayers did not offer prayers at all." (Bukhari and Muslim)

In another version of the above Tradition, quoted in *Sahih Muslim*, it is stated that "Whoever did not recite *surah al-Fatihah* and something else after it did not offer prayer at all."

Commentary: It shows that while *surah al-Fatihah* is an essential constituent of prayers it is, also, necessary to recite something else from the Qur'an after it, although one is at liberty to make one's choice.

Rulings of Legist-Doctors on The Question of Recital of Al-Fatihah

Imam Shafa'i and some other leading legist-doctors have inferred from the foregoing and a few other similar Traditions that it is obligatory to recite *surah al-Fatihah* in prayer whether one is offering it alone or in congregation, leading the congregation or participating in it as a *Muqtadi*, and offering an audible prayer or an inaudible. Imam Maalik and Imam Ahmad Hanbal, and other Scholars on the other hand, hold that if the worshipper be a *Muqtadi* and prayer is an audible one, the recital of *surah al-Fatihah* by the Imam will suffice for the *Muqtadis*. In that case, the *Muqtadi* should abstain from reciting it. But in all other circumstances one must recite *surah al-Fatihah* in prayers. The same view is supported by Imam Abu Hanifah who, further, believes that the recital by the *Imam* will do for the *Muqtadis* as well in *Rak'ats* that are offered silently.

Below we shall consider one of the sayings that have led these doctors to conclude as above.

(٥٨٥/١١٣) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِنَّمَا
جُعِلَ الْإِمَامُ لِيُوتَمَّ بِهِ فَإِذَا كَبَّرَ فَكَبِّرُوا وَإِذَا قَرَأَ فَانصِتُوا .

(رواه ابو داؤد و النسائي و ابن ماجه)

(585/113) It is related by Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "The *Imam* has been appointed for on other reason than that the *Muqtadis* follow him. Thus, say *Allahu Akbar* when the Imam says *Allahu Akbar*, and listen in silence when he is engaged in recitation."

(Abu Dawood, Nasai and Ibn Majah)

Commentary: Some other Companions رضي الله عنهم, too, have related, exactly in the same words, the advice of the Prophet ﷺ about listening quietly when the *Imam* is engaged in recitation. For instance, in the course of a long Tradition, quoted in *Sahih Muslim*, on the authority of Abu Musa Ash'ari رضي الله عنه, the afore-mentioned instruction is given in identical words. The Prophet's ﷺ exhortation, evidently, is based upon the Qur'anic injunction.

When the Qur'an is recited,
give ear to it and pay heed (in
silence) that ye may obtain
mercy. (Al-A'raf 7:204)

”وَإِذَا قُرِءَ الْقُرْآنُ فَاسْتَمِعُوا لَهُ
وَأَنْصِتُوا لَعَلَّكُمْ تُرْحَمُونَ“
(الاعراف ٧: ٢٠٤)

Imam Abu Hanifah's view that even in prayer which is offered silently recitation by the *Imam* will suffice for the *Muqtadis* is derived from Sayyidina Jabir's رضي الله عنه narrative mentioned, in their compilations, by Imam Muhammad, Imam Tahaawi and Imam Dar Qutni, on the authority of Imam Abu Hanifah himself. The report cited in Imam Muhammad's Muwatta reads:

”عَنْ جَابِرِ بْنِ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ عَنِ النَّبِيِّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ أَنَّهُ قَالَ مَنْ صَلَّى خَلْفَ
الْإِمَامِ فَإِنْ قَرَأَ قَرَأَ الْإِمَامُ لَهُ قِرَاءَةً.“

It is related by Jabir bin Abdullah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: 'Whoever offers prayers behind the Imam, the *Imam's* recitation is his own as well.'

Note: The issue whether the *Muqtadi* should recite surah al-Fatihah behind the Imam or not has been the subject of a vehement controversy. And during the present century and hundreds of books have been written on it from both sides. But to go over the discussion here will not only be redundant, but can, also, be dangerous, in some ways, for the classes and the purpose for which *Ma'arif ul-Hadith*¹ is being written. The proper attitude to adopt in such disputes is to think highly of all jurists-doctors, to have faith in their sincerity and to believe that whatever conclusions they have arrived at, in the light of the Qur'an and the *Sunnah* and the conduct of the companions رضي الله عنهم, are in good faith and none of them is guilty of falsehood or distortion. It is not, at all, opposed or antihetical to aligning oneself with a particular school of jurisprudence. The path of justice and moderation pursued by Shah Waliullah رحمة الله عليه in *Hujjatullah-il-Baligha* is, in our view, the best and the wisest course in the current circumstances through which unity can be brought back into the disintegrated ranks of the Muslims.

①. The name of this book in Urdu.

Recital of The Qur'an by The Prophet ﷺ During *Fajr*

(٥٨٦/١١٤) عَنْ جَابِرِ بْنِ سَمُرَةَ قَالَ كَانَ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَقْرَأُ فِي الْفَجْرِ بِقِ وَالْقُرْآنِ الْمَجِيدِ وَنَحْوَهَا وَكَانَتْ صَلَاتُهُ بَعْدَ تَخْفِيفٍ .

(رواه مسلم)

(586/114) jahir bin Samurah narrated that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ recited surah *Qaaf* and other *surah* like it in the *Fajr* prayers, and, later on, his prayers used to be light. (Muslim)

Commentary: Commentators have interpreted the concluding part of the above Tradition in two ways: One that the Prophet's ﷺ prayers after the *Fajr* service, i.e., those of *Zuhr*, *Asr*, *Maghrib* and *Isha* used to be lighter, and in the other recited less of the Qur'an as compared to *Fajr*, and the other that the Prophet's ﷺ prayers were usually long in the earlier days of Islam when the Companions were few in number and those who formed the congregation behind him were Muslims of the highest calibre, but later when the number of worshippers had increased and they included Believers of the second and third grades as well, the Prophet ﷺ began to offer comparatively shorter prayers as the more worshippers, the greater was the possibility of there being among them some weak, sick and faint-hearted people for whom long prayers could be tiresome.

Both the interpretations are correct from the factual point of view, but, to us, the latter appears to be more convincing.

(٥٨٨/١١٥) عَنْ عَمْرِو بْنِ حُرَيْثٍ أَنَّهُ سَمِعَ النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَقْرَأُ فِي الْفَجْرِ وَاللَّيْلِ إِذَا عَسَفَسَ .

(رواه مسلم)

(587/115) It is related on the authority of 'Amr bin Hurayth that he heard the Messenger of Allah reciting *Wal-leyl-i-Iza-'as-'as* (i.e., *Surah al-Takwir*) in the *Fajr* prayers. (Muslim)

(٥٨٨/١١٦) عَنْ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ السَّائِبِ قَالَ صَلَّى لَنَا رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ الصُّبْحَ بِمَكَّةَ فَاسْتَفْتَحَ سُورَةَ الْمُؤْمِنِينَ حَتَّى جَاءَ ذِكْرُ مُوسَى وَهَارُونَ أَوْ ذِكْرُ عِيسَى أَخَذَتِ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ سَعْلَةً فَرَكَعَ .

(رواه مسلم)

(588/116) Sayyidina Abdullah bin Sa'b رضي الله عنه said that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ led us in prayer in Makkah and began with the *surah Al-Mu'minun* but when he had come to the reference of the Sayyidina Musa and Harun عليهما السلام, or to the reference of Sayyidina Isa عليه السلام, a cough got the better of him, and he (stopped and) went into the *ruku'*. (Muslim)

(٥٨٩/١١٧) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ إِنَّ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ قَرَأَ فِي رَكْعَتَيِ الْفَجْرِ قُلْ يَا أَيُّهَا الْكَافِرُونَ وَقُلْ هُوَ اللَّهُ أَحَدٌ. (رواه مسلم)

(589/117) Sayyidina Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه said that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ recited in both *raku'at* of Fajr the *surah Qul ya ayyu hal kafirun* (*Al-Kafirun*) and *Qul hu wa Allahu ahad* (*Al-Ikhlus*). (Muslim)

(٥٩٠/١١٨) عَنْ مَعَاذِ بْنِ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ الْجُهَنِيِّ قَالَ إِنَّ رَجُلًا مِّنْ جُهَيْنَةَ أَخْبَرَهُ أَنَّهُ سَمِعَ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ قَرَأَ فِي الصُّبْحِ إِذَا زُلْزِلَتْ فِي الرُّكْعَتَيْنِ كِلْتَاهُمَا فَلَا أَدْرِي أَنَسِيَ أَمْ قَرَأَ ذَلِكَ عَمْدًا. (رواه أبو داود)

(590/118) Mu'z bin Abdulalh al-Juhani related that a member of the tribe of Juha' na told him that once he heard the Messenger of Allah ﷺ recite, *Iza zulzilal* in both the *rak'at* of *Fajr* (The narrator, then, added that) he did not know whether the Prophet ﷺ had forgotten or did it deliberately. (Abu Dawood)

Commentary: The usual practice of the Prophet was to recite different *surah* in the two *rak'at* of a prayer. So, when he, once, recited the *surah* of *Iza zulzilal* in both the *rak'at* the Companion رضي الله عنه, on whose authority the above Tradition has been related, felt uncertain if the Prophet ﷺ had done so unintentionally or intentionally in order to indicate that it, too, was permissible.

(٥٩١/١١٩) عَنْ ابْنِ عَبَّاسٍ قَالَ كَانَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَقْرَأُ فِي رَكْعَتَيِ الْفَجْرِ قُولُوا آمَنَّا بِاللَّهِ وَمَا أُنْزِلَ إِلَيْنَا وَالَّتِي فِي آلِ عِمْرَانَ قُلْ يَا أَهْلَ الْكِتَابِ تَعَالَوْا إِلَى كَلِمَةٍ سَوَاءٍ بَيْنَنَا وَبَيْنَكُمْ. (رواه مسلم)

(591/119) Ibn 'Abbas related that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ used to recite the verses, *Qooloo aamanna billahi wa ma unzila ilaina*..... of *Surah Al Baqara*, and the verses, *Qul yaa ahl*

al-kitaabi ta'alaw ilaa kalimatin Sawaa-in bain-nana wa bainakum..... of Surah Aal-Imran (respectively) in the two Rak'at of Fajr. (Muslim)

(٥٩٢/١٢٠) عَنْ عُقْبَةَ بْنِ عَامِرٍ قَالَ كُنْتُ أَقُوذُ لِرَسُولِ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ نَاقَتَهُ فِي السَّفَرِ فَقَالَ لِي يَا عُقْبَةُ لَا أَعْلِمُكَ خَيْرَ سُورَتَيْنِ قُرْنَتَا فَعَلَّمَنِي قُلْ أَعُوذُ بِرَبِّ الْفَلَقِ وَقُلْ أَعُوذُ بِرَبِّ النَّاسِ . قَالَ فَلَمْ يَرِنِّي سُورَتٌ بِهِمَا جِدًّا فَلَمَّا نَزَلَ لِصَلَاةِ الصُّبْحِ صَلَّى بِهِمَا صَلَاةَ الصُّبْحِ لِلنَّاسِ فَلَمَّا قَرَعَ انْتَفَتَ إِلَيَّ قَالَ يَا عُقْبَةُ كَيْفَ رَأَيْتَ . (رواه احمد و ابو داود و النسائي)

(592/120) It is related by Uqba bin 'Aamir رضي الله عنه "In a journey I was going along on foot, holding the reins of the Prophet's ﷺ camel in my hand. During the journey, the Prophet ﷺ said to me: 'Uqba, may I teach you two of the best *surah* of the Qur'an?' And, he taught (me) the *Surah Qul 'aoozu be rabbil falaqa*, and *Qul 'aoozu be rabbil naas*. He, then, felt that I had not been very happy with the choice of the two *Surah*. So, when the Prophet ﷺ dismounted for the *Fajr* prayers, he led the prayers by reciting both the *Surah*. At the end of the prayers, he turned towards me and said: 'Uqba! What did you see and how did you feel?' (Musnad Ahmad, Abu Dawood and Nasai)

(٥٩٣/١٢١) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ كَانَ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَقْرَأُ فِي الْفَجْرِ يَوْمَ الْجُمُعَةِ بِآلِمِ تَنْزِيلٍ فِي الرُّكْعَةِ الْأُولَى وَفِي الثَّانِيَةِ هَلْ أَتَى عَلَى الْإِنْسَانِ . (رواه البخارى و مسلم)

(593/121) It is related on the authority of Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ used to recite *Alif laam mim tanzil* (i.e., the *Surah As-sajda*) in the first rak'at of Fajr, and *Halata al alinsan* (i.e., *Surah Ad-Dahr*) in the second rak'at.

(Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: All the reports concerning the recital of the Qur'an by the holy Prophet ﷺ in *Fajr* show that, generally, it used to be longer than in the other services, but, sometimes, he, also, recited the shorter *surah* like *Qul 'aoozu be rabbil falaq* and *Qul 'aoozu be rabbil naas* (probably owing to a special reason). It is, again, related that though the customary practice of the Prophet ﷺ was to

recite full *Surah* in a prayer, occasionally, he recited only a few verses from a *surah*. Similarly, at certain times, he recited the same *surah* in both the *rak'at*.

Dwelling upon the significance of the recitation of the *surah* of *Alif laam mim tanzilas-sajda* and *Ad-Dahr* in the *Fajr* prayer on Fridays, Shah Waliullah رحمه الله عليه remarks that "in both of them the events of the Last Day and Final Requital have been described most vividly, and, as it appears from the Traditions that the Hour (of Doom) is going to be on a Friday, the Prophet ﷺ preferred to recite them in the *Fajr* on that day, perhaps with the object of putting the people in mind of the Resurrection and Final Judgement. But Allah knows best.

During *Zuhr* And *Asr*

(٥٩٤/١٢٢) عَنْ أَبِي قَتَادَةَ قَالَ كَانَ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَقْرَأُ فِي الظُّهْرِ فِي الْأُولَيَيْنِ بِأَمِّ الْكِتَابِ وَشُورَتَيْنِ وَفِي الرَّكْعَتَيْنِ الْآخِرَتَيْنِ بِأَمِّ الْكِتَابِ وَ يُسَمِعُنَا الْآيَةَ أَحْيَانًا وَ يُطَوِّلُ فِي الرَّكْعَةِ الْأُولَى مَا لَا يُطِيلُ فِي الرَّكْعَةِ الثَّانِيَةِ وَهَكَذَا فِي الْعَصْرِ وَهَكَذَا فِي الصُّبْحِ . (رواه البخاري ومسلم)

(594/122) It is related by Abu Qatadah ؓ that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ used to recite *Surah al-Fatehah*, and, besides it, two other *surah* in the first two *rak'at* of *Zuhr*, and *surah al-Fatihah* alone in its last two *Rak'at* and, sometimes, (in the *Rak'at* that are offered quietly) he recited one or two verses audibly that we could hear it, and, in the first *Rak'at*, he made a long recital, and, in the second *ra'at*, he did not make it so long. And the same was his practice for the *Asr* and *Fajr* prayers.

(Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: It shows that, occasionally, in *rak'at* that are to be offered in silence, the Prophet ﷺ recited a few verses with such a loud voice that those offering the prayers behind him heard it. Commentators have remarked that it could be due to excessive absorption in prayers. And it was, also, possible that, sometimes, he did it intentionally so that people knew what he was reciting or he wanted to demonstrate by his action that it was quite legitimate if one or two verses were recited so loudly in *rak'at* that were to be

offered silently that the *Muqtadis* could hear them and prayer did not suffer by reason of it.

(٥٩٥/١٢٣) عَنْ جَابِرِ بْنِ سَمُرَةَ قَالَ كَانَ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَقْرَأُ فِي الظُّهْرِ بِاللَّيْلِ إِذَا يَغْشَى وَفِي رِوَايَةٍ بِسَبْحِ اسْمِ رَبِّكَ الْأَعْلَى وَفِي الْعَصْرِ نَحْوَ ذَلِكَ وَفِي الصُّبْحِ أَطْوَلَ مِنْ ذَلِكَ . (رواه مسلم)

(595/123) It is related by Jabir bin Samurah رضي الله عنه that the Prophet ﷺ used to recite the surah *Wal-layl izu yaghsha* in Zuhr prayers. In another report it is stated that he recited the surah of *Subbi hisma rabbika- a'ala*. And a surah of almost an equal length in Asr prayers and a little longer one in Fajr prayers.

(Muslim)

During The *Maghrib*

(٥٩٦/١٢٤) عَنْ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ عُتْبَةَ بْنِ مَسْعُودٍ قَالَ قَرَأَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ فِي صَلَاةِ الْمَغْرِبِ بِحَمِّ الدُّخَانِ . (رواه النسائي)

(596/124) It is related on the authority of Abdullah bin Utbah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ recited the Surah *Ha-Mim ud-Dukha* in *Maghrib* prayers.

(Nasasi)

(٥٩٧/١٢٥) عَنْ جُبَيْرِ بْنِ مُطْعِمٍ قَالَ سَمِعْتُ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَقْرَأُ فِي الْمَغْرِبِ بِالطُّورِ . (رواه البخاري ومسلم)

(597/125) It is related by Jubayr bin Mut'im رضي الله عنه "I have heard the Messenger of Allah ﷺ recite the Surah *Al-Tur* in *Maghrib* prayers.

(Bukhari and Muslim)

(٥٩٨/١٢٦) عَنْ أُمِّ الْفَضْلِ بِنْتِ الْحَارِثِ قَالَتْ سَمِعْتُ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَقْرَأُ فِي الْمَغْرِبِ بِالْمُرْسَلَاتِ عُرْفًا . (رواه البخاري ومسلم)

(598/126) It is reported by Umm al-Fadl bin Al-Harith رضي الله عنها that she heard the Messenger of Allah ﷺ recite the surah *wal mursalati 'urfan* in *Maghrib* prayers.

(٥٩٩/١٢٧) عَنْ عَائِشَةَ رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهَا قَالَتْ إِنَّ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ صَلَّى الْمَغْرِبَ بِسُورَةِ الْأَعْرَافِ فَرَقَّهَا فِي رَكْعَتَيْنِ . (رواه النسائي)

(599/127) It is related by Sayyidah Ayshah رضى الله عنها that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ recited the whole of the *Surah Al-A'raf* in the *Maghrib* prayers by dividing it between two *rak'at*. (Nasai)

Commentary: None of the surah mentioned in the above Traditions is among the shorter ones which, in the Islamic terminology, are called *Qisar*. On the contrary, all of them belong to the category of longer *surah*, called *Itwal*, and *Surah Al-A'raf* which has been mentioned in Sayyidah Ayshah's رضى الله عنها narrative, is, in fact, spread over one and a quarter *Juz*¹ of the Qur'an. In all the four Traditions, however, it is stated that the Prophet ﷺ recited the longer surah in the *Maghrib* prayers while from some of the Traditions, given below, we learn that his normal practice was to recite the shorter *surahs* in that prayers. Most of the authorities, however, are of the opinion that the facts appertaining to *Maghrib* prayer mentioned in the foregoing narratives, showing that the Prophet ﷺ recited the longer surah, are merely incidental while, as a rule, he recited the shorter surah. This view is also supported by the letter written by Sayyidina Umar رضى الله عنه to Abu Musa Al-Ash'ari رضى الله عنه which we shall take up later.

During 'Isha

(٦٠٠/١٢٨) عَنْ الْبَرَاءِ قَالَ سَمِعْتُ النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَقْرَأُ فِي الْعِشَاءِ وَالتَّيْنِ وَالزَّيْتُونِ، وَمَا سَمِعْتُ أَحَدًا أَحْسَنَ صَوْتًا مِنْهُ (رواه البخارى ومسلم)

(600/128) It is related by Sayyidina Bara رضى الله عنه "I heard the Messenger of Allah ﷺ recite the *Surah Wat-teen-i-waz-zaitoon* in '*Isha* prayers and I have never heard anyone possessing a better voice (than him)." (Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: From some reports quoted, again, in *Sahih Bukhari* and *Sahih Muslim* it appears that the event referred to in this Tradition took place in the course of a journey and the Prophet ﷺ had recited the surah *Wat-teen* in one of the *rak'ats* of the *Maghrib* prayers during it.

(٦٠١/١٢٩) عَنْ جَابِرٍ قَالَ كَانَ مَعَادُ بْنُ جَبَلٍ يُصَلِّيُ مَعَ النَّبِيِّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ ثُمَّ يَأْتِي فَيَوْمُ قَوْمَهُ، فَصَلَّى لَيْلَةً مَعَ النَّبِيِّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ الْعِشَاءَ

①. One of the division of the Qur'an 30 *Juz* (parts).

ثُمَّ أَتَى قَوْمَهُ فَأَمَّهُمْ فَافْتَتَحَ بِسُورَةِ الْبَقَرَةِ فَأَنحَرَفَ رَجُلٌ فَسَلَّمَ ثُمَّ صَلَّى وَخْدَهُ
وَأَنْصَرَفَ فَقَالُوا لَهُ أَنَا فَتَى يَا قَلَانُ؟ قَالَ لَا وَاللَّهِ وَلَا يَتَّبِعُ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ
عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ فَأَخْبِرْنِي فَأَتَى رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ فَقَالَ يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ
إِنَّا أَصْحَابُ نَوَاضِحٍ نَعْمَلُ بِالنَّهَارِ وَإِنْ مَعَاذًا صَلَّى مَعَكَ الْعِشَاءَ ثُمَّ أَتَى قَوْمَهُ
فَافْتَتَحَ بِسُورَةِ الْبَقَرَةِ ، فَأَقْبَلَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ عَلَى مَعَاذٍ فَقَالَ
يَا مَعَاذُ أَفَتَأَنَّ أَنْتَ ؟ إِقْرَأِ وَالشَّمْسُ وَضُحَاهَا، وَالضُّحَى، وَاللَّيْلُ إِذَا يَغْشَى،
وَسَبِّحْ اسْمَ رَبِّكَ الْأَعْلَى.

(رواه البخاري ومسلم)

(601/129) Sayyidina Jabir رضي الله عنه said that Sayyidina Mu'az bin Jabal رضي الله عنه used to pray along with the Prophet ﷺ then come and lead his people in prayer. One night he prayed the Isha prayer with him then came to his people and led them in prayer beginning with (surah *al-Fatihah* followed by) *al-Baqarah*. A man turned aside pronouncing the salutation, and prayed his individual prayer and departed. (Since it was novel to shun the congregation) the people said to him, "Have you become a hypocrite?" He replied, "I swear by Allah that I have not, but I shall certainly go to the Messenger of Allah ﷺ and tell him." So he went to him and said, "Messenger of Allah ﷺ, we look after camels used for watering and work by day. After having offered the *Isha* prayer with you, Mu'az رضي الله عنه came and began with *surah Al-Baqarah* (as he led us in prayer). The Messenger of Allah ﷺ then approached Mu'az رضي الله عنه and said, "Are you a troubler, Mu'az?" Recite, *Wash shamsi wa duhaha*, the surah *Ad-Duha*, *Al-Layl* *iza yaghsha* and *Sabbihisma rabbika al-a'ala*." (Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: It seems that Sayyidina Mu'az رضي الله عنه offered the *Isha* prayers twice with the Prophet ﷺ and as Imam of his people. The ulama are agreed that one of these must have been an optional prayer. Imam Sahfa'i believes that he offered the prayer in the Masjid Nabawi as *Fard* while when he led his people, he formed an intention of an optional prayer. That is why, Imam Shafa'i holds that one may offer one's *Fard* prayer behind an Imam who prays the supererogatory prayer. However, Imam Abu Hanifa and Imam Malik hold that one cannot offer one's obligatory prayers behind an Imam who prays that optional prayer. They believe that he led his

tribe in the *Isha Fard* prayers and formed his intention accordingly and since he was with the Prophet ﷺ at the time of *Isha*, he did not miss the opportunity of obtaining blessings of his prayers. He, therefore, offered his supererogatory prayers behind the Prophet ﷺ when he led the *Fard Isha*. A detailed discussion on this subject is found in *Fath Al-bari*, *Umdah Al-Qari* and *Fath al-Mulhim*.

Nevertheless, the lesson the hadith offers is that the *Imam* should not lengthen his prayers to such an extent as to inconvenience the *Muqtadi* - the old and weak among them.

During The Namaz of Different Hours

(٦٠٢/١٣٠) عَنْ سُلَيْمَانَ بْنِ يَسَارٍ عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ مَا صَلَّيْتُ وَرَاءَ أَحَدٍ أَشَبَّ صَلَاةَ رَسُولِ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مِنْ فَلَانٍ قَالَ سُلَيْمَانُ صَلَّيْتُ خَلْفَهُ فَكَانَ يُطِيلُ الرَّكْعَتَيْنِ الْأُولَيَيْنِ مِنَ الظُّهْرِ وَيُخَفِّفُ الْآخِرَتَيْنِ وَيُخَفِّفُ الْعَصْرَ وَيَقْرَأُ فِي الْمَغْرِبِ بِقِصَارِ الْمُفْصَلِ وَيَقْرَأُ فِي الْعِشَاءِ بِوَسْطِ الْمُفْصَلِ وَيَقْرَأُ فِي الصُّبْحِ بِطَوَالِ الْمُفْصَلِ . (رواه النسائي)

(602/130) It is related by Sulayman bin Yaseer, the Taba'ee on the authority of Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه, that he (i.e., Abu Hurayrah), (speaking of an Imam of his time), said: "I have never offered a prayer behind anyone which was more comparable to that of the Messenger of Allah ﷺ than the prayer offered behind him." Sulayman bin Yasaar added that I too, prayed behind that *Imam*. His usual practice was that he recited the longer surah in the first two and the shorter surah in the last two *Rak'at* of *Zuhr*, and kept the *Asr* light, and in *Maghrib* he recited *Qisar Mufasssal*, and in *'Isha*, *Ausat Mufasssal*, and, in *Fajr*, *Tiwal Mufasssal*." (Nasai)

Commentary: The term *Mufasssal* is used to describe the Surah of the last *Manzil*¹ of the Qur'an, i.e., from the surah *al-Hujurat* up to the end. It has, further, been divided into three parts: The surah from *al-Hujurat* to *al-Buruj* are called *Tiwal Mufasssal*, from *al-Buruj* up to *al-Bayyinah* are called *Ausat Mufasssal*, and from *al-Bayyinah* till the end of the Qur'an are called *Qisar Muffasssal*.

Neither Sayyidina Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه nor Sulayman bin Yasaar

①. The Qur'an is divided into seven Manzils, each beginning with a particular surah.

has given the name of the *Imam* but it has no bearing on the substance of the report. What is material to our study is that the general practice of the Prophet ﷺ regarding recital in the five daily prayers was similar to what was done by the Imam, i.e., longer recitation in *Zuhr*, shorter in *Asr*, *Qisar Mufasssal* in *Maghrib*, *Ausat Mufasssal* in *'Isha*, and *Tiwal Mufasssal* in *Fajr*.

The Same advice is contained in Sayyidina Umar's ﷺ letter to Abu Musa al Ash'ari we have just mentioned. It reads: "Recite *Qisar Mufasssal* in *Maghrib*, *Ausat Mufasssal* in *Isha* and *Tiwal Mufasssal* in *Fajr*. (Nasb-ur-Rayah).

”كَتَبَ عُمَرُ إِلَى أَبِي مُوسَى أَنْ
اقْرَأَ فِي الْمَغْرِبِ بِقِصَارِ الْمُفْصَّلِ
وَفِي الْعِشَاءِ بِوَسْطِ الْمُفْصَّلِ وَ
فِي الصُّبْحِ بِطَوَالِ الْمُفْصَّلِ“
(نصب الراية)

Alluding to this letter, Imam Tirmizi has, also, mentioned the advice about the recitation of *Ausat Mufasssal* in the *Zuhr* prayers.

Evidently, Sayyidina Umar ﷺ would have given the advice only when he had been led to it by the vocal or practical guidance of the Prophet ﷺ. Most of the authorities have, as such, held the letter of Sayyidina Umar ﷺ to be the main guiding factor regarding the length of the recital in the various obligatory services and the conduct forming to it as most comendable.

During The Friday Prayers And The Two 'Id Prayers

(٦٠٣/١٣١) عَنْ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ أَبِي رَافِعٍ قَالَ اسْتَخْلَفَ مَرْوَانُ أَبَاهُ رِيْرَةً عَلَى
الْمَدِيْنَةِ وَخَرَجَ إِلَى مَكَّةَ فَصَلَّى لَنَا أَبُو هُرَيْرَةَ الْجُمُعَةَ فَقَرَأَ سُورَةَ الْجُمُعَةِ فِي
السُّجْدَةِ الْأُولَى وَفِي الْآخِرَةِ إِذَا جَاءَكَ الْمُنَافِقُونَ فَقَالَ سَمِعْتُ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ
صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَقْرَأُ بِهِمَا يَوْمَ الْجُمُعَةِ . (رواه مسلم)

(603/131) Ubaydullah bin Abu Rafi' (son of the Prophet's ﷺ well-known attendant, Abu Rafi' ﷺ) narrated to us that Marwan, (when he was Amir Mu'awiya's Governor in Madinah), went to Makkah (for some reason) and appointed Abu Hurayrah to officiate (during his absence). So, Abu Hurayrah led the Friday Prayers, and, he recited *Surah al-Jumu'a* in the first and *Surah al-Munafiqoon* in the second *rak'at*, and remarked: "I

have heard the Messenger of Allah ﷺ recite the two *surah* on Fridays." (Muslim)

(٦٠٤/١٣٢) عَنْ النُّعْمَانِ بْنِ بَشِيرٍ قَالَ كَانَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَقْرَأُ فِي الْعِيدَيْنِ وَفِي الْجُمُعَةِ بِسَبِّحِ اسْمَ رَبِّكَ الْأَعْلَى وَهَلْ أَتَاكَ حَدِيثُ الْغَاشِيَةِ قَالَ وَإِذَا اجْتَمَعَ الْعِيدُ وَالْجُمُعَةُ فِي يَوْمٍ وَاحِدٍ قَرَأَ بِهِمَا فِي الصَّلَوَتَيْنِ (رواه مسلم)

(604/132) Nu'man bin Bashir رضي الله عنه narrated that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ used to recite *Sabbi-his-ma rabbikal a'ala* and *Hal atā -ka hadeethul ghashiyah* in the two *Eids* and Fridays, and if the 'Id occurred on a Friday, he recited the two *surah* in *Eid* and Friday prayers. (Muslim)

(٦٠٥/١٣٣) عَنْ عُبَيْدِ اللَّهِ أَنَّ عُمَرَ بْنَ الْخَطَّابِ سَأَلَ أَبَا وَقْدٍ اللَّيْثِي مَا كَانَ يَقْرَأُ بِهِ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ فِي الْأَضْحَى وَالْفِطْرِ فَقَالَ يَقْرَأُ فِيهِمَا بِقِ وَالْقُرْآنِ الْمَجِيدِ وَاقْتَرَبَتِ السَّاعَةُ. (رواه مسلم)

(605/133) It is related on the authority of Ubaidullah bin Utbah, (the nephew of Abdullah bin Mas'ud رضي الله عنه) that Umar bin Khattab (once) enquired from Abu Waqid al-Laythe what the Messenger of Allah ﷺ used to recite in the *Eidul Adha* and *Eidul Fitr*?¹ Abu Waqid replied " He recited *Qaf wal Quran-ul-majeed* and *Iqatara-ba-tis sa'ah* in both of them." (Muslim)

Commentary: From the above Traditions we learn that the Prophet ﷺ habitually recited the *Surah al-Juma* and *al-Munafiqoon* or *al-A'ala* and *al Ghashiyah* in the two *ra'kat* of the Friday.

In the two *Eids*, he either recited the *Surah A'ala* and *al-Ghashiyah* or of *Qaff wal Quran-ul-majeed* and *Iqatara batis sa'ah*.

We conclude from the Traditions concerning the recitation of Qur'an in the five daily prayers and those of Friday and the two

①. Some commentators have remarked the Sayyidina Umar's رضي الله عنه enquiry could, obviously, not have been due to ignorance or failure of memory. It is hard to imagine such a thing about him. What is more plausible is that either he wanted to test the range of information and memory of Abu Waqid or to let others hear it from him or to seek the confirmation of his own knowledge.

'Ids, discussed above, that:

- (i) The general practice of the Prophet ﷺ was that he made long recitals in *Fajr*, and mostly recited *Tiwal Mufasssal*, and in *Zuhr*, too, made fairly long recitals, and *Asr* and *Maghrib*, he kept light, and in *Isha* he preferred to recite *Ausat Mufasssal*. But, occasionally, he departed from the practice.
- (ii) The Prophet ﷺ neither commanded his followers to recite a particular *surah* in a prayer nor did he set aside any *surah* for a prayer. It is, however, clear that, generally, the Prophet ﷺ liked to recite certain *surah* in certain prayers.

Remarks Shah Waliullah رحمه الله عليه:

"The Prophet ﷺ preferred to recite some particular *Surah* in some prayers, but he neither determined them positively nor enjoined upon others to follow it as a rule. Thus, if anyone emulates his example, and, usually, recites those verses in the prayers, it is good, and whoever does not, there is no harm in it either."¹

وقد اختار رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم بعض السور في بعض الصلوات لفوائد من غير حتم ولا طلب مؤكداً فمن اتبع فقد احسن ومن لا فلا حرج
 "حجة الله البالغة" (مقصد دوم ٢)

Aameen at The End of Surah al-Fatiha

The first three verses of *Surah al-Fatihah*, which is uniformly recited in all the *Rak'at* of prayer, are devoted to praise and glorification of Allah, in the fourth, there is the affirmation of Divine Oneness, and the next three, with which the *surah* concludes, contain an earnest supplication to the Almighty to show the Straight Path, the the Path of Guidance. The sacred Prophet ﷺ has taught that *Aameen* should be said at the end of *surah al-Fatiha*, and, further, that when the prayer is observed behind the *Imam*, in congregation, the *Muqtadis* should, also, utter *Aameen* with the *Imam* at the completion of the *surah*. He has informed that the angels, too, say *Aameen* at that time.

(٦٠٦/١٣٤) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا
أَمَّنَ الْإِمَامُ فَأَمِنُوا فَإِنَّهُ مَنْ رَافَقَ تَامِينُهُ تَامِينَ الْمَلَائِكَةِ غُفِرَ لَهُ مَا تَقَلَّمَ مِنْ ذَنْبِهِ.

(رواه البخارى و مسلم)

(606/134) It is related by Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "When the *Imam* says *Aameen* (at the end of *Surah al-Fatiha*), you, the *Muqtadis*, should, also, say *Aameen*. His previous sins will be forgiven whose *Aameen* coincides with the *Aameen* of the Angels." (Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: Various interpretations have been offered of anyone's *Aameen* synchronizing with the *Aameen* of the angels. The most convincing of them, however is that it denotes the *Aameen* that is said with the *Aameen* of angels, neither earlier nor later. And the time of the angels' *Aameen* is when the *Imam* pronounces it. The Prophet's ﷺ observation would, thus, mean that the *Muqtadis* should say *Aameen* when the *Imam* says it at the conclusion of *Surah al-Fatiha* for the angels utter *Aameen* at that very time. The decision of Allah is that all previous sins of the bondsman will be forgiven who says *Aameen* with the angels.

(٦٠٧/١٣٥) عَنْ أَبِي مُوسَى الْأَشْعَرِيِّ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا صَلَّيْتُمْ فَأَقِيمُوا صُفُوفَكُمْ ثُمَّ لِيَوْمُكُمْ أَحَدُكُمْ فَإِذَا كَبَّرَ فَكَبِّرُوا وَإِذَا قَالَ غَيْرَ الْمَغْضُوبِ عَلَيْهِمْ وَلَا الضَّالِّينَ فَقُولُوا آمِينَ يُجِبْكُمْ اللَّهُ. (رواه مسلم)

(607/135) It is related by Abu Musa al-Ash'ari رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "When you begin to offer prayers, first correct your rows and make them straight; one of you should become the *Imam*. When the *Imam* says *Takbir*, you too say it and when he recites *Ghairil Maghdoobi 'alaih* *wa-lad-dhallee* (i.e., the last verse of *surah al-Fatiha*, say *Aameen* (if you will do so) Allah will grant your supplication for guidance made in *Surah al-Fatiha*." (Muslim)

Commentary: *Aameen*, in fact, is an earnest request for the acceptance of the supplication and an admission of the truth, on the part of the bondsman, that he has no claim upon Allah for his petition to be granted. By saying *Aameen* after the supplications he beseeches Allah humbly to allow his entreaty and fulfil his need by His grace.

It is reported in *Sunnan Abu Dawood*, on the authority of Abu Zubair Numeiri ؓ. "One night when we were going with the Prophet ﷺ we passed by a man who was supplicating to with profound earnestness and absorption. The Prophet ﷺ (on seeing him) remarked, 'If he set the seal on his supplication, it will, surely, be accepted.' 'The seal of what?' enquired one of the Companions ؓ. 'The seal of *Aameen*¹, replied the Prophet ﷺ.

It shows that the pronunciation of *Aameen* after supplication one of the things that can be looked forward to for enhancing the prospects of its acceptance.

Should '*Aameen*' Be Said With A Loud Voice or In Silence?

It has needlessly been disputed whether *Aameen* should be said aloud after *Al-Fatihah* or in silence. Reports of both the ways of uttering it are found in the authentic compilations of the Traditions. It is, also, incontrovertible that among the Companions ؓ and the *Taba'een* there were some who said it with a loud voice and some who said it silently. This, in itself, shows that both the methods are confirmed by the practice of the sacred Prophet ﷺ and were freely acted upon in his time. It could not be that *Aameen* was never said aloud during the lifetime of the Prophet ﷺ and some Companions ؓ took it upon themselves to do so after his death. Likewise, it is inconceivable that the utterance of *Aameen* in silence was, at no time, acted upon during the days of the Prophet ﷺ and yet some Companions ؓ started doing so when he had passed away.

Be that as it may, both the methods were in vogue during the Prophet's ﷺ time. Later, some authorities concluded, on the basis of their knowledge and research, that the correct position was that *Aameen* was said loud enough to be heard by the other participants and it was what was mostly practised during the Prophet's lifetime although, occasionally, it was, also, uttered in silence. Hence, while to say *Aameen* silently was premissible, it was better and more commendable that it was said loudly. On the contrary, other concluded that *Aameen*, which is not mentioned in the Qur'an, ought to be said in silence and so was it done, generally, in the

①. Meaning "let it be so," "accept our supplication".

days of the Prophet ﷺ though, sometimes, it was also said with a loud voice, and, hence, it was preferable to utter it in silence, but to pronounce it loudly, too, was allowable. The difference among the legists, therefore, is only over the state of being superior and no one has challenged the legitimacy either of the two methods.

Rafa' Yadayn (Raisin Hands)

Indental is the case with *Rafa' Yadayn* i.e., the raising of hands upto the ears in prayer. It is established beyond doubt that the Prophet ﷺ did it, not only at the time of saying *Takbir Tahrima* but, also, at bending low for *ruku*, at rising up from it, from *sajda*, and at standing up for the third *rak'at*. We learn it on the authority of a number of holy Companions ﷺ like Abdullah bin Umar ﷺ, Wail bin Hujr ﷺ and Abu Hamayd Sa'idi ﷺ. At the sametime, it is, also, known for certain that the Prophet ﷺ offered prayer by carrying out *Rafa' Yadayn* merely at the time of *Takbir Tahrima* and on no other occasion during the whole prayers as Abdullah bin Masud ﷺ, Bara bin Aazib ﷺ and many other Companions ﷺ tell. Both the procedures, were current among the Companions ﷺ as well as the *Tabe'een*. The difference among the legist-doctors, in this regard, also, is, thus, of choice and preference otherwise there is no question regarding the legality of the one or the other method.

(٦٠٨/١٣٦) عَنْ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ عُمَرَ أَنَّ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ كَانَ يَرْفَعُ يَدَيْهِ حَذْوِ مَنْكَبَيْهِ إِذَا فَتَحَ الصَّلَاةَ وَإِذَا كَبَّرَ لِلرُّكُوعِ وَإِذَا رَفَعَ رَأْسَهُ مِنَ الرُّكُوعِ رَفَعَهُمَا كَذَلِكَ وَقَالَ سَمِعَ اللَّهُ لِمَنْ حَمِدَهُ رَبَّنَا لَكَ الْحَمْدُ وَكَانَ لَا يَفْعَلُ ذَلِكَ فِي السُّجُودِ .
(رواه البخارى ومسلم)

(608/136) Abdullah bin Umar ﷺ narrates that when the Messenger of Allah ﷺ commenced the prayers, he raised both the hands up to the shoulders (as he said *Takbir Tahrima*), and, (also), at the time of saying *Takbir* for bowing low for *ruku*, and, in the same way, when he rose from *ruku*, he, also raised both the hands like that, and said: *sami Allahu liman hamidah*, but he did not do so in *Sajdah*. (Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: In this narrative of Sayyidina Abdullah bin Umar رضي الله عنه, the raising of hands is mentioned only at the time of bowing down for ruku and rising from it, in addition, of course, to *takbir tahrima*, and it is distinctly stated that the Prophet ﷺ did not do so in *sajdah*. But from some of his other reports, quoted, again in *Bukhari*, we learn that the Prophet ﷺ, also, raised his hands while rising up for the third *rak'at*. And in the narratives of Maalik bin al-Huwayritha and Wa'il bin Hujr, cited by Imam Nasai and Imam Abu Dawood, the raising of hands at the time of *sajdah*, as well, is mentioned which has been specifically denied by Abdullah bin Umar رضي الله عنه.

In truth, each of these reports in correct, and conformity between the statement of Maalik bin Al-uwayrith and Wa'il bin Hujr that the Prophet ﷺ carried out *Rafa' Yadayn* at the time of kneeling down for *sajdah* and rising up from it and that of Abdullah bin Umar رضي الله عنه that he refrained from it in *sajdah* can be obtained by concluding that the Prophet ﷺ did so only occasionally which was seen by Maalik bin al-Huwayrith and Wa'il bin Hujr but, by chance, Abdullah bin Umar رضي الله عنه did not see the Prophet ﷺ carrying it out, and, therefore, he repudiated it on the strength of his knowledge. Had the Prophet ﷺ been performing it always or frequently, a Companion رضي الله عنه of the stature of Abdullah bin Umar رضي الله عنه could not remain unaware.

(٦٠٩/١٣٧) عَنْ عَلْقَمَةَ قَالَ قَالَ لَنَا ابْنُ مَسْعُودٍ أَلَا أَصَلَّى بِكُمْ صَلَاةَ رَسُولِ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ فَصَلَّى فَلَمْ يَرْفَعْ يَدَيْهِ إِلَّا فِي أَوَّلِ مَرَّةٍ.

(رواه الترمذی و ابو داؤد والنسائی)

(609/137) It is related by 'Alqamah, the favourite pupil of Abdullah bin Masud رضي الله عنه, "Once Ibn Ma'sud رضي الله عنه said to us: 'Let me show you how the Prophet ﷺ prayed.' On saying it, he led the service in which he performed *Rafa' Yadayn* only once (which *Takbir Tahrima*) (and) did not perform it again, at all."

(Tirmizi, Abu Dawood and Nasai)

Commentary: Sayyidina Abdullah bin Mas'ud was one of the celebrated Companions رضي الله عنه who had been specially instructed by the Prophet ﷺ to stand close to him, in the front row, in prayers. In order to teach his pupils how the Prophet ﷺ offered prayers he led

the prayers, and, he raised the hands upto the ears only once, i.e., at the time of *takbir tahrima*.

It will now be admitted, on the basis of the above Tradition, that what Abdullah bin Umar ؓ and other have said about the carrying out of *Rafa' Yadayn* while bowing down of ruku and rising from it, also was not the usual practice of the Prophet ﷺ or else Abdullah bin Mas'ud ؓ who used to stand near him in prayer must have known it, and, he would not, in any case, have omitted it when he was demonstrating to his pupils the Prophet's ﷺ characteristic way of offering prayer.

Taking all the reports together, it should not be difficult to conclude that the holy Prophet ﷺ observed *Rafa' Yadayn* in prayer as well as he did not. Sometimes, he raised the hands up to the ears only at the time of *takbir tahrima*, and, sometimes, while bowing down for ruku and raising from it as well, and, on a few occasions, it, also, happened that he did so as he knelt down for *sajdah* and rose from it.

From their repeated observation and experience, Companions ؓ like Abdullah bin Mas'ud ؓ felt that the omission of *Rafa' Yadayn* was the rule in prayers while those like Abdullah bin Umar ؓ thought that its observance was the right thing. The same divergence persisted in the views of *Taba'een* and the latter days theologists.

Imam Tirmizi, after reproducing the aforementioned narrative of Abdullah bin Umar ؓ and pointing out that such-and-suh other Companions ؓ have related in the same vein, observes that "some Companions ؓ of the Prophet, as for instance, Abdullah bin Umar ؓ, Jabir ؓ, Abu Hurayrah ؓ and Anas ؓ have adopted *Rafa' Yadayn*, and, similarly, such-and-such among the *taba'een* and latter-day legists, too, consider it correct."

Proceeding, he quotes the narrative of Ibn Mas'ud ؓ showing the omission of *Rafa' Yadayn* and another identical Tradition related by Bara' bin 'Aazib ؓ and remarks that "a number of Companions ؓ have decided in favour of the omission of *Rafa' Yadayn*, and, similarly, such-and-such of the *Taba'een* and latter-day legists, too, consider it to be correct."

In sum, like the pronouncing of *Aameen* loudly or in silence,

both the raising of hands up to the ears and its omission are established by the practice of the sacred Prophet ﷺ. The variance of preference among the Companions ﷺ arose because by their intuition and understanding and study and observation of the settled behaviour of the Prophet ﷺ some of them felt that the omission of *Rafa' Yadayn* was the regular thing in prayer, and when *Rafa' Yadayn* had been carried out, it was only for a time — Companions ﷺ like Ibn Mas'ud ﷺ were of that view and legist-doctors like Imam Abu Hanifah and Imam Sufyan Suri have decided in favour of it — while Companions ﷺ like Abdullah bin Umar ﷺ and Jabir ﷺ thought otherwise and by it, and the difference, again, was only overexcellence and perfection, otherwise the propriety and legitimacy of neither of the two acts, the carrying out of *Rafa' Yadayn* and its omission, has not been challenged by anyone.

RUKU AND SUJUD

Clearly, prayer signifies the expression of one's humbleness, by word and deed, body and soul before the Almighty, in a particular way. This is the essence of *qiyam* and *q'ood*, *ruku* and *sujud*, and all that is recited in them. Among the various postures of prayer, however, the foremost manifestations of submissiveness and humility are *ruku* and *sujud*. To keep the head high is a sign of vanity, and to keep it low is a sign of self-abasement. To bend it down before anyone in the form of *ruku* is an extraordinary gesture of reverential homage which is to be paid exclusively to Allah, and *sajdah* is its ultimate form. In *sajdah*, the bondsman places his forehead and nose on the ground which are the most honourable parts of the human body. Hence, *sajdah* and *ruku* form the most essential factors of prayer, and, owing to it, the sacred Prophet ﷺ has enjoined that these acts should be performed fittingly and in a becoming manner and exhorted us, through the spoken word as well as his own example, to exalt and glorify Allah and suplicate Him earnestly in these postures.

Performance of *Ruku* And *Sujud*

(٦١٠/١٣٨) عَنْ أَبِي مَسْعُودٍ الْأَنْصَارِيِّ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ لَا تُجْزَى صَلَاةُ الرَّجُلِ حَتَّى يُقِيمَ ظَهْرَهُ فِي الرُّكُوعِ وَالسُّجُودِ

(رواه أبو داود و الترمذی و النسائی و ابن ماجه و الدارمی)

(610/138) It is related by Abu Mas'ud Ansari ؓ that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "A man's prayer does not become adequate (i.e., it remains faulty and incomplete) until he straightens out his back in *ruku* and *sajdah*."

(Abu Dawood, Tirmzi, Nasai, Ibn Majah, and Daarami)

(٦١١/١٣٩) عَنْ طَلْقِ بْنِ عَلِيٍّ الْحَنَفِيِّ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ لَا يَنْظُرُ اللَّهُ عَزَّوَجَلَّ إِلَى صَلَاةِ عَبْدٍ لَا يَقِيمُ فِيهَا صُلْبَهُ بَيْنَ خُشُوعِهَا وَسُجُودِهَا (رواه احمد)

(611/139) It is related by Talq bin Ali al-Hanafi رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "The bondsman who does not straighten out his back in *ruku* and *sajdah*, Allah does not look at his prayer" (Abu Dawood, Tirmzi, Nasai, Ibn Majah, and Daarami)

Commentary: The refusal of Allah to look at the prayer, as shown in this Tradition, denotes that such a prayer is not acceptable to Allah otherwise He sees everything and nothing in the heavens and the earth is hidden from His view. Both the sayings given above signify, in a nutshell, that the prayer of anyone who does not carry out *ruku* and *sajda* correctly shall not find acceptance with Him.

(٦١٢/١٤٠) عَنْ أَنَسٍ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ اِغْتَدِلُوا فِي السُّجُودِ وَلَا يَبْسُطْ أَحَدُكُمْ ذِرَاعَيْهِ ابْسَاطَ الْكَلْبِ. (رواه البخارى ومسلم)

(612/140) It is related by Anas رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Carry out *sajdah* with moderation and do not spread your arms, on the ground as a dog does." (Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: The doing of *sajdah* with moderation, apparently, means that it should be performed in a calm and tranquil manner, and not hurriedly. The other thing is that the wrists should be kept raised from the ground and the example of the dog is intended to bring home the unseemliness of spreading the arms while performing *sajdah*.

(٦١٣/١٤١) عَنِ الْبَرَاءِ بْنِ عَازِبٍ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا سَجَدْتَ فَضَعْ كَفَّيْكَ وَارْفَعْ مِرْفَقَيْكَ. (رواه مسلم)

(613/141) Sayyidina Bara bin Azib رضي الله عنه has said that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "When you prostrate yourself, place the palms of your hands on the ground and raise your elbows." (Muslim)

(٦١٤/١٤٢) عَنْ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ مَالِكٍ ابْنِ بَحِينَةَ قَالَ كَانَ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ

وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا سَجَدَ فَرَجَ بَيْنَ يَدَيْهِ حَتَّى يَبْذُرَ بَيَاضَ إِبْطَيْهِ (رواه البخارى ومسلم)
 (614/142) Sayyidina Abdullah bin Malik Ibn Buhayana ؓ said that the when the Prophet ﷺ prostrated himself he spread out his arms so that the whiteness under his armpits was visible.
 (Bukhari and Muslim)

(٦١٥/١٤٣) عَنْ وَائِلِ بْنِ حُجْرٍ قَالَ رَأَيْتُ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا سَجَدَ وَضَعَ رُكْبَتَيْهِ قَبْلَ يَدَيْهِ وَإِذَا نَهَضَ رَفَعَ يَدَيْهِ قَبْلَ رُكْبَتَيْهِ (رواه ابو داود و الترمذى و النسائى و ابن ماجه)
 (615/143) Sayyidina Wa'il bin Hujr ؓ said that he saw that when the Messenger of Allah ﷺ prostrated himself he got down on his knees before putting his hands on the ground. And when he got up he raised his hands before his knees.
 (Abu Dawood, Tirmizi, Nasai, Ibn Majah.)

(٦١٦/١٤٤) عَنْ ابْنِ عَبَّاسٍ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ أُمِرْتُ أَنْ أَسْجُدَ عَلَى سَبْعَةِ أَعْظُمٍ عَلَى الْجَبْهَةِ وَالْيَدَيْنِ وَالرُّكْبَتَيْنِ وَأَطْرَافِ الْقَدَمَيْنِ وَلَا نَكْفِتُ الثِّيَابَ وَالشَّعْرَ. (رواه البخارى و مسلم)
 (616/144) It is related by Abdullah bin Abbas ؓ that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "I have been commanded (i.e., God has commanded me) to perform *sajdah* on seven limbs (i.e. with all the seven limbs resting on the ground): both the feet, and, also, that we do not gather up our clothes and hair."
 (Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: The seven limbs described in it are known as the "limbs of *sajdah*". These should rest on the ground. Some people try to protect their clothes and hair while performing *sadjah* which is against its spirit, and, therefore, has been forbidden.

What is To Be Recited in *Ruku* And *Sajda*?

(٦١٧/١٤٥) عَنْ عُقْبَةَ بْنِ عَامِرٍ لَمَّا نَزَلَتْ فَسَبِّحْ بِاسْمِ رَبِّكَ الْعَظِيمِ، قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ اجْعَلُوهَا فِي رُكُوعِكُمْ فَلَمَّا نَزَلَتْ سَبِّحْ اسْمَ رَبِّكَ الْأَعْلَى قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ اجْعَلُوهَا فِي سُجُودِكُمْ. (رواه ابو داود و ابن ماجه و الدارمى)

(617/145) Sayyidina Uqbah bin Aamir رضي الله عنه has narrated that when *Fa sabbih bismi rabbikal-azim* was revealed, the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said, "Let it be for your *ruku*." (He meant that we must say in the bowing posture: *Subhana rabbiya-azim*). Then when *sabbiha ismi rabbik al-a'la* was revealed, he said, "Let it be for your *sajdah*," (meaning that we should say in prostration: *subhana rabbiy al-a'la*).

(Abu Dawood Ibn Majah, Darami)

(٦١٨/١٤٦) عَنْ حَدِيثِ أَنَّهُ صَلَّى مَعَ النَّبِيِّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ وَكَانَ يَقُولُ فِي رُكُوعِهِ سُبْحَانَ رَبِّيَ الْعَظِيمِ وَفِي سُجُودِهِ سُبْحَانَ رَبِّيَ الْأَعْلَى .

(رواه النسائي و ابن ماجه و رواه الترمذى و ابو داؤد و الدارمى مع زيادة)

(618/146) Sayyidina Huzayfah رضي الله عنه has said that he prayed with the Prophet ﷺ and he recited in *ruku'* (the bowing posture): *subhana rabbiyal-azeem*, and in *sajdah* (prostration): *subhana rabbiy al-a'al*. (Nasai and Ibn Majah; and Tirmizi Abu dawood, Darami with additional narration.)

(٦١٩/١٤٧) عَنْ عَوْنِ بْنِ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ عَنْ ابْنِ مَسْعُودٍ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا رَكَعَ أَحَدُكُمْ فَقَالَ فِي رُكُوعِهِ سُبْحَانَ رَبِّيَ الْعَظِيمِ ثَلَاثَ مَرَّاتٍ فَقَدْتُمْ رُكُوعَهُ وَذَلِكَ أَذْنَاهُ وَإِذَا سَجَدَ فَقَالَ فِي سُجُودِهِ سُبْحَانَ رَبِّي الْأَعْلَى ثَلَاثَ مَرَّاتٍ فَقَدْتُمْ سُجُودَهُ وَذَلِكَ أَذْنَاهُ .

(رواه الترمذى و ابو داؤد و ابن ماجه)

(619/147) It is related by 'Aun bin Abdullah, on the authority of Abdulah bin Mas'ud رضي الله عنه, that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "When anyone says *Subhaana rabbi-al Azeem* (Glory to God, the Most Great) thrice in *ruku*, his *ruku* is completed, and it is of a low grade. In the same way, when anyone says *Subhaana rabbi-al a'ala* (Glory to God, the Most High) thrice in *sajdah*, his *sajdah* is completed, and it is of a low grade."

(Tirmizi, Abu Dawood and Ibn-i-Maja)

Commentary: It shows that if the *Tasbih*¹ is said less than three times in *ruku* and *sajdah*, the *ruku* and *sajdah* will remain faulty to some extent. For complete fulfilment, it is necessary to say the *Tasbih* at least thrice, and, better still, more. But the *Imam* should

①. Act of praising and glorifying Allah.

take care not to prolong the *ruku* and *sajdah* to the extent of wearying the *Muqtadis*. It is related by *Abu Dawood* and *Nasai*, on the authority of *Sa'eed bin Jubayr Taba'ee*, that *Sayyidina Anas* ؓ once remarked about *Sayyidina Umar bin Abdul Aziz* ؓ that this prayer was very much like that of the Prophet's ؐ. *Ibn Jubayr* said that they then calculated that *Umar bin Abdul Aziz* recited *Tasbih* ten times in *ruku* and *sajdah*. We, thus, know that the Messenger of Allah ؐ recited the *Tasbih* that many times, approximately, during the two acts. For anyone who leads the congregation, it will, as such, be appropriate that he recited *Tasbih* at least three and at the most ten times in *ruku* and *sajdah*.

The above Tradition shows that the Prophet ؐ instructed his followers to recite *Subhaana rabbi-al Azeem* and *Subhaana rabbi-al a'ala* in *ruku* and *sajdah*, respectively, and such was, also, his own normal practice. But in other reports, some of which are given below, it is stated that he recited other formulas of prayer and glorification as well.

(٦٢٠/١٤٨) عَنْ عَائِشَةَ أَنَّ النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ كَانَ يَقُولُ فِي رُكُوعِهِ
وَسُجُودِهِ سُبُوحٌ قُدُّوسٌ رَبُّ الْمَلَائِكَةِ وَالرُّوحِ . (رواه مسلم)

(620/148) It is related by *Sayyidah Ayshah* رضى الله عنها that the Messenger of Allah ؐ used to recite *Subboohun Qudoosun rabbul malaikati warrooh* (Most Holy and Most Sublime is the Lord of the angels and the spirit) in *ruku* and *sadjah*. (Muslim)

(٦٢١/١٤٩) عَنْ عَائِشَةَ رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهَا قَالَتْ كَانَ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يُكَبِّرُ أَنْ يَقُولَ فِي رُكُوعِهِ وَ سُجُودِهِ سُبْحَانَكَ اللَّهُمَّ رَبَّنَا وَ بِحَمْدِكَ
اللَّهُمَّ اغْفِرْ لِي يَتَأَوَّلُ الْقُرْآنَ . (رواه البخارى و مسلم)

(621/149) *Sayyidah Ayshah* رضى الله عنها has narrated that the Prophet ؐ used to recited very much in *ruku* and *sajdah*: *Subhaanaka allahumma rabbana wa bi-hamdika, allahumma-ghfirlee* (Glory be unto Thee, O Allah, our Lord! We celebrate Thy praise. O God! forgive me). (By reciting it) he acted up to the commandment of the *Qur'an*. (Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: Its last sentence shows that the Prophet ؐ used to praise and glorify Allah and beg His forgiveness, also, through the

words indicated in it, in *ruku* and *sajdah*, in obedience to the Divine Command contained in the *Surah An-Nasr*:

فَسَبِّحْ بِحَمْدِ رَبِّكَ وَاسْتَغْفِرْهُ (النصر ١١٠:٣)

Then hymn the praises of Your Lord, and seek forgiveness of Him. (Al-Nasr 110:3)

It is narrated also on her authority that after the revelation of the *surah an-Nasr* the Prophet ﷺ used frequently to recite comprehensive formulas of praise, glorification and repentance.

(٦٢٢/١٥٠) عَنْ عَائِشَةَ رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهَا قَالَتْ فَقَدْتُ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ لَيْلَةً مِنَ الْفَرَاشِ فَالْتَمَسْتُهُ فَوَقَعَتْ يَدِي عَلَى بَطْنِ قَدَمَيْهِ وَهُوَ فِي الْمَسْجِدِ وَهُمَا مَنْصُوبَتَانِ وَهُوَ يَقُولُ اللَّهُمَّ إِنِّي أَعُوذُ بِرِضَاكَ مِنْ سَخَطِكَ وَمُعَافَاتِكَ مِنْ عُقُوبَتِكَ وَأَعُوذُ بِكَ مِنْكَ لَا أُحْصِي ثَنَاءً عَلَيْكَ أَنْتَ كَمَا أَثْنَيْتَ عَلَى نَفْسِكَ (رواه مسلم)

(622/150) Sayyidah Ayshah رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهَا has said that one night when she woke up she did not find the Messenger of Allah ﷺ on his bed. When she looked for him (in the darkness) her hand came on the soles of his feet while he was in *sajdah* and he was saying:

اللَّهُمَّ إِنِّي أَعُوذُ بِرِضَاكَ مِنْ سَخَطِكَ وَمُعَافَاتِكَ مِنْ عُقُوبَتِكَ وَأَعُوذُ بِكَ مِنْكَ لَا أُحْصِي ثَنَاءً عَلَيْكَ أَنْتَ كَمَا أَثْنَيْتَ عَلَى نَفْسِكَ

"O Allah! I seek refuge in Your good pleasure from Your anger, and in Your forgiveness from Your punishment and I seek refuge in You from Your wrath. I cannot reckon Your praise. You are as You have praised Yourself." (Muslim)

(٦٢٣/١٥١) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ قَالَ كَانَ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَقُولُ فِي سُجُودِهِ اللَّهُمَّ اغْفِرْ لِي ذُنُوبِي كُلَّهَا دِقَّةً وَجُلَّةً وَأَوَّلَهُ وَآخِرَهُ وَعَلَانِيَةً وَسِرَّةً (رواه مسلم)

(623/151) Abu Hurayrah رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ narrated that the Prophet ﷺ also (occasionally) recited this supplication in *sajdah*; *Allahumma ghfirli thanbi kulahu wa jalahu wa Awalahu wa akhiruhu, wa 'alanyatahu wa sirrahu* (On God! Forgive me all my sins,

major as well as minor, and earlier as well as later, and manifest as well as hidden). (Muslim)

Commentary: On certain grounds, some authorities have expressed the view that the Prophet ﷺ mostly used to recite these supplications in *Tahajjud* and other optional prayers, but it is clear that, sometimes, he recited them, also, during the obligatory prayers.

Those of us who appreciate the meaning of these supplications should, occasionally, recite these in *ruku* and *sajdah*, along with *Tasbih*, particularly during a optional prayers where one is free to devote as much time to *ruku* and *sajdah* as one likes. Of course, in an obligatory prayer the *Imam* must see that the *Muqtadis* are not put to unnecessary hardship.

Qur'an Should Not be Recited in *Ruku* and *Sajdah*

(٦٢٤/١٥٢) عَنْ ابْنِ عَبَّاسٍ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ لَا إِنِّي نَهَيْتُ أَنْ أَقْرَأَ الْقُرْآنَ أَنْ رَاكِعًا أَوْ سَاجِدًا فَأَمَّا الرُّكُوعُ فَعَظُمُوا فِيهِ الرَّبُّ وَأَمَّا السُّجُودُ فَاجْتَهِدُوا فِي الدُّعَاءِ فَقِمْنَ أَنْ يُسْتَجَابَ لَكُمْ. (رواه مسلم)

(624/152) It is related by Abdullah bin Abbas رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "It is forbidden to me to recite the Qur'an in the postures of *ruku* and *sajdah*. So, exalt your Lord in *ruku* and supplicate to Him earnestly in *sajdah*. The supplication of *sajdah* is, (sepcially), worthy of acceptance." (Muslim)

Commentary: Recital of Qur'an is an essential factor of prayer, but its place is *Qiyam* and the dignity and solemnity of the Divine Word demands that it should be recited while standing erect. For *ruku* and *sujud* the proper thing is that these should be reserved, exclusively, for the glorification of the Lord and the affirmation of one's own abasement and for supplication and repentance. Such was the life-long custom of the sacred Prophet ﷺ, and, in this Tradition, he has advised his followers to act similarly.

In the Traditions discussed earlier we are exhorted to recite *Subhaana rabbi-al a'ala* in *sajdah*, and, as we have seen, the Prophet ﷺ did the same. In the above Tradition we are, further, advised to supplicate to the Lord in *sajdah*. There is, in truth, no contradiction between the two exhortations. A simple and

straightforward form of begging is that the supplicant, directly, asked for the fulfilment of his need, and another is that he only extolled the virtues of the person whose favour was solicited. The latter method is quite popular among the beggars in our midst. In any case, it is a form of supplication, and, that is why *Al-hamdu lillaah* has been described in one of the sayings as the best of entreaties and solicitations. Hence, *Subhaana rabbi-al a'ala*, too, is a formula of supplication and the *sajdah* of anyone who only repeats the *Tasbih* is not, definitely, bereft of invocation.

(٦٢٥/١٥٣) عَنْ مَعْدَانَ بْنِ طَلْحَةَ قَالَ لَقِيتُ ثَوْبَانَ مَوْلَى رَسُولِ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ فَقُلْتُ أَخْبِرْنِي بِعَمَلٍ أَعْمَلُهُ يَدْخِلُنِي اللَّهُ بِهِ الْجَنَّةَ فَسَكَتَ ثُمَّ سَأَلْتُهُ فَسَكَتَ ثُمَّ سَأَلْتُهُ الثَّالِثَةَ فَقَالَ سَأَلْتُ عَنْ ذَلِكَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ فَقَالَ عَلَيْكَ بِكَثْرَةِ السُّجُودِ لِلَّهِ فَإِنَّكَ لَا تَسْجُدُ لِلَّهِ سَجْدَةً إِلَّا رَفَعَكَ اللَّهُ بِهَا دَرَجَةً وَحَطَّ بِهَا عَنْكَ خَطِيئَةٌ قَالَ مَعْدَانُ ثُمَّ لَقِيتُ أَبَا الدَّرْدَاءِ فَسَأَلْتُهُ فَقَالَ لِي مِثْلَ مَا قَالَ ثَوْبَانُ . (رواه مسلم)

(625/153) Ma'dan bin Talha said, "I met Thauban رضي الله عنه the freed slave and special attendant of Allah's Messenger ﷺ. I asked him to tell me something which, if I do, would get me into Paradise. He did not answer, so I asked him again but he still gave no reply. I asked him a third time and he said that he had asked the Messenger of Allah ﷺ the same question and was told, "Make prostrations before Allah often for He will raise you a degree against every prostration you make and He will remove a sin from you against it." Madan said, "I met Abu Darda رضي الله عنه later and when I asked him the same question, I received a similar reply." (Muslim)

(٦٢٥/١٥٤) عَنْ رَبِيعَةَ بْنِ كَعْبٍ قَالَ كُنْتُ أَبِيتُ مَعَ رَسُولِ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ فَاتَيْتُهُ بِوَضُوئِهِ وَحَاجَّتِهِ فَقَالَ لِي سَلْ فَقُلْتُ أَسْأَلُكَ مُرَافَقَتَكَ فِي الْجَنَّةِ، قَالَ أَوْغَيْرَ ذَلِكَ؟ قُلْتُ هُوَ ذَلِكَ، قَالَ فَأَعِنِّي عَلَى نَفْسِكَ بِكَثْرَةِ السُّجُودِ . (رواه مسلم)

(626/154) Rabia bin Ka'b Aslami (Who was one of the Companions رضي الله عنه of Sufiah and used to accompany the Prophet

ﷺ in his travels) said, "I was with the Messenger of Allah ﷺ at night and when I brought him his water for ablution and what he required (for *tahajjud*), he told me to make a request. I said 'I ask to accompany you in Paradise.' He asked if I had any other request to make and when I replied that that was all, he said. "Then help me to get you this by devoting yourself often to prostration."

Commentary: Those who are near to Allah, sometimes sense a precious moment when they would get what they ask from Allah. The Prophet ﷺ may have sensed that opportunity and so he asked Rabi'a to make a request. He asked for the Prophet's ﷺ company in Paradise and was advised to make frequent prostrations. Frequency of prostration refers to offering prayers often. Instead of saying that he should increase the number of raka'at offered, prostration is mentioned because that is the posture in prayers most liable to lead to Paradise.

Quauma and Jalsa

Between ruku and sajdah, *qauma*¹ is enjoined, and between the two sajdah of the same *rak'at*, *jalsa*² has to be carried out. For the Prophet's instructions concerning them and his own practice we will refer to the following Traditions.

(٦٢٧/١٥٥) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا قَالَ الْإِمَامُ سَمِعَ اللَّهُ لِمَنْ حَمِدَهُ فَقُولُوا اللَّهُمَّ رَبَّنَا لَكَ الْحَمْدُ فَإِنَّهُ مِنْ وَاقِعِ قَوْلِهِ قَوْلَ الْمَلَائِكَةِ غُفِرَ لَهُ مَا تَقَدَّمَ مِنْ ذَنْبِهِ . (رواه البخاري ومسلم)

(627/155) It is related by Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "When (on rising from ruku) the *Imam* says *Sami' -al laahu liman hamidah* (God has heard the one who has praised Him), you (the *Muqtadis*) should say *Allahumma Rab-banaa lukal hamd* (O Allah! Our Lord, praise be to You). All his previous sins will be forgiven whose recital (of it) will be in accord and agreement with that of the angels."

(Bukhari and Muslim)

-
- ❶. Meaning the standing position assumed after *ruku* and before kneeling down for *sajdah*.
 - ❷. Denoting the act of seating oneself between the two prostrations of the same *rak'at*.

Commentary: It shows that in the congregational prayers the angels, too, say *Allahumma Rab-banaa lakal hamd* when the *Imam* says *Sami'al laahu liman hamidah* while assuming the standing position after performing *ruku*, and the Prophet ﷺ has exhorted that those offering prayers behind the *Imam* should, also, utter these words at that time, and revealed that all the previous sins of the *Muqtadis* will be forgiven whose recital of it will be "in accord and agreement" with that of the angels which, apparently, denotes that it occurs at the same instant.

As we have stressed repeatedly in the past, generally, minor transgressions are meant when the remission of all previous sins is spoken of in a Tradition as a result of the auspiciousness of a particular deed. About the major sins it appears from the Qur'an and the Traditions of the Prophet ﷺ that their remission is related fundamentally to *Tawba* i.e., sincere repentance. God, nevertheless, has the power to forgive even the most grievous misdeeds if and when He likes.

(٦٢٨/١٥٦) عَنْ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ أَوْفَى قَالَ كَانَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا رَفَعَ ظَهْرَهُ مِنَ الرُّكُوعِ قَالَ سَمِعَ اللَّهُ لِمَنْ حَمِدَهُ اللَّهُمَّ رَبَّنَا لَكَ الْحَمْدُ مِلَأَ السَّمَوَاتِ وَمِلَأَ الْأَرْضِ وَمِلَأَ مَا بَيْنَهُمَا مِنْ شَيْءٍ بَعْدُ . (رواه مسلم)

(628/156) Abdulah bin Awfa ؓ has said that when the Messenger of Allah ﷺ raised his back from *ruku'* he pronounced:

سَمِعَ اللَّهُ لِمَنْ حَمِدَهُ اللَّهُمَّ رَبَّنَا لَكَ الْحَمْدُ مِلَأَ السَّمَوَاتِ وَمِلَأَ الْأَرْضِ وَمِلَأَ مَا بَيْنَهُمَا مِنْ شَيْءٍ بَعْدُ

"Allah listens to him who praises Him. O Allah, our Lord, to You be the praise in all the heavens and all the earth and all that it pleases You to create afterwards." (Muslim)

Muslim has also transmitted from Abu Sa'eed Khudri ؓ the same supplication with some more words. It seems that the Prophet ﷺ said سَمِعَ اللَّهُ لِمَنْ حَمِدَهُ and responded merely with: اللَّهُمَّ رَبَّنَا لَكَ الْحَمْدُ. But sometimes lengthened the supplication as stated by Abu Sa'eed Khudri ؓ. Sometimes, he stood so long that worshippers behind him thought he had forgotten as we will see in the *hadith* of

Sayyidina Anas رضي الله عنه.

(٦٢٩/١٥٧) عَنْ رِفَاعَةَ بْنِ رَافِعٍ قَالَ كُنَّا نُصَلِّي وَرَاءَ النَّبِيِّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ فَلَمَّا رَفَعَ رَأْسَهُ مِنَ الرُّكْعَةِ قَالَ سَمِعَ اللَّهُ لِمَنْ حَمِدَهُ فَقَالَ رَجُلٌ وَرَاءَهُ رَبَّنَا وَلَكَ الْحَمْدُ حَمْدًا كَثِيرًا طَيِّبًا مُبَارَكًا فِيهِ فَلَمَّا انْصَرَفَ قَالَ مَنْ الْمُتَكَلِّمُ إِنِّمَا قَالَ أَنَا قَالَ رَأَيْتُ بِضْعَةَ وَثَلَاثِينَ مَلَكًا يَتَدَرُّونَهَا أَيُّهُمْ يَكْتُبُهَا أَوَّلًا.

(رواه البخاري)

(629/157) It is narrated by Rifa'ah bin Rafi' رضي الله عنه. "We were praying behind the Prophet ﷺ and when he raised his head from the ruku' he said:

سَمِعَ اللَّهُ لِمَنْ حَمِدَهُ

(Allah listens to him who praises Him.)

A man behind him said,

ربنا ولك الحمد حمدا كثيرا طيبا مباركا فيه

(Our Lord, to You be the praise abundant, good, blessed and sufficient.)

When he ended (the prayer) the Prophet ﷺ asked, 'Who was the speaker just now?' and the man identified himself. He said, 'I saw over thirty angels racing over another to be the first to record it.'

(Bukhari)

Commentary: Perhaps it was the man's particular learning and sincerity with which he said those words that so many angels raced to record his words.

(٦٣٠/١٥٨) عَنْ حُذَيْفَةَ أَنَّ النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ كَانَ يَقُولُ بَيْنَ السُّجْدَتَيْنِ رَبِّ اغْفِرْ لِي.

(رواه النسائي والدارمي)

(630/158) It is related by Huzaifah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ used to recite *Rab-bighfirlee* (O Lord! Forgive me) in *Jalsa* between the two *sajdah*.

(Nasai and Daarami)

(٦٣١/١٥٩) عَنْ ابْنِ عَبَّاسٍ قَالَ كَانَ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَقُولُ بَيْنَ السُّجْدَتَيْنِ اللَّهُمَّ اغْفِرْ لِي وَارْحَمْنِي وَاهْدِنِي وَعَافِنِي وَارْزُقْنِي.

(رواه ابوداؤد والترمذي)

(631/159) It is related by Abdullah bin Abbas رضي الله عنه that the Prophet ﷺ used to recite between the two *sajdah*: *Allahummaghfirlee warhamni wa hidini wa-'aafini warzuqni* (O God! Forgive me, and have mercy on me, and bestow upon me the blessing of guidance, and pardon me, and provide me with sustenance.). (Abu Dawood and Tirmizi)

(٦٣٢/١٦٠) عَنْ أَنَسٍ قَالَ كَانَ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا قَالَ سَمِعَ اللَّهُ لِمَنْ حَمِدَهُ قَامَ حَتَّى يَقُولَ قَدْ أَوْهَمَ ثُمَّ يَسْجُدُ وَيَقْعُدُ بَيْنَ السَّجْدَتَيْنِ حَتَّى يَقُولَ قَدْ أَوْهَمَ . (رواه مسلم)

(632/160) It is related by Sayyidina Anas رضي الله عنه that when the Prophet ﷺ said *Sami' Allahu liman hamidah* on rising from ruku, he remained standing (for such a long time) that we felt that, probably, he had forgotten; and, then, he performed *sajdah*, and, after raising from it, sat (for such a long time) between the two *sajdahs* that we felt that, probably, he had forgotten. (Muslim)

Commentary: While the above Tradition shows that, sometimes, the *Quama* and *Jalsa* of the Prophet ﷺ lasted so long that the Companions رضي الله عنهم began to doubt that he had forgotten, it, also, makes it clear that such a thing happened only rarely and it was not his regular practice. Had the Prophet ﷺ been doing so habitually or often the Companions would not have thought as they did.

As in *ruku* and *sujud*, the supplications the Prophet ﷺ used to recite in *quama* and *jalsa*, too, are most auspicious and deserving of Divine acceptance. But should the *Imam* propose to recite them he must be prudent enough to see that undue inconvenience was not caused, thereby, to the *Muqtadis*.

Q'adah, Thshahhud and Salaam

The prayers come to an end with *q'adah*¹ and *salaam*.² These are its last acts or parts, but if these are three or four *rak'ats*, the devotee sits also, after the completion of the first two *rak'ats*, and this is known as *q'adah-i-oola* or the First *q'adah*. In it, only *tahsahhud*³ is recited after which the devotee stands up and sits

①. The act of sitting down on the left foot keeping the right foot erect.

②. Finishing salute by turning the face first to the right, and, then, to the left.

③. Denoting the recital of At-tahiyyat.

again after the third or fourth *rak'at*. The prayer is, then, brought to end with *salaam* after the recital of *durood*¹ after *tashahhud*.

The correct method of *Q'adah*

(٦٣٣/١٦١) عَنْ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ عُمَرَ أَنَّ النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ كَانَ إِذَا جَلَسَ فِي الصَّلَاةِ وَضَعَ يَدَيْهِ عَلَى رُكْبَتَيْهِ وَرَفَعَ إصْبَعَهُ الْيُمْنَى الَّتِي تَلَى الْإِبْهَامَ قَدْعًا بِهَا وَيَدُهُ الْيُسْرَى عَلَى رُكْبَتِهِ بَاسِطَهَا عَلَيْهَا. (رواه مسلم)

(633/161) It is related by Abdullah bin Umar رضي الله عنه that when the Prophet ﷺ sat down in prayer he used to place both the hands above his knees and make a sign by raising the finger of the right hand which was next to the thumb (i.e., the index finger), and, at that time, his left hand remained rested above the left knee (i.e., he made no sign with it.)." (Muslim)

Commentary: Other Companions, besides Abdullah bin Umar رضي الله عنه, have also related the raising of the forefinger and making a sign with it at the time of the pronouncement of *Kalima Shahadah*, i.e., the formula of Affirmation, and there can be no doubt about it that it was the regular practice of the Prophet ﷺ. Its underlying significance, perhaps, was that when the devotee was testifying to the Oneness of Allah by reciting *Ash-hadu aun-laa-ilaaha-il-lal-laha*, his heart, too, should be filled with the conviction of Divine Unity and he, also, made an affirmation of it with his body by raising one of the fingers.

Another version tells us that the Prophet ﷺ followed this gesture with his eyes too. Abdullah bin Umar has quoted the Prophet ﷺ.

"This gesture of the index finger is made more painful to the devil than a sharp-eyed knife or sword." (Mishkat)

لَيْسَ أَشَدُّ عَلَى الشَّيْطَانِ مِنْ
الْحَدِيدِ.

(٦٣٤/١٦٢) عَنْ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ عُمَرَ أَنَّكَ كَانَ يَرَى عَبْدَ اللَّهِ بْنَ عُمَرَ يَتَرَبَّعُ فِي الصَّلَاةِ إِذَا جَلَسَ فَقَعَلْتُهُ وَأَنَا يَوْمَئِذٍ حَدِيثُ السِّنِّ فَتَنَاهَنِ عَبْدَ اللَّهِ بْنَ عُمَرَ وَقَالَ إِنَّمَا سُنَّةُ الصَّلَاةِ أَنْ تَنْصِبَ رِجْلَكَ الْيُمْنَى وَتُثْبِتَ الْيُسْرَى فَقُلْتُ

①. The invocation of Divine blessings on the Prophet.

إِنَّكَ تَفْعَلُ ذَلِكَ فَقَالَ إِنَّ رِجْلَيْي لَا تَحْمِلَانِي. (رواه البخاري)

(634/162) It is related by Abdullah, son of Abdullah bin Umar رضي الله عنه, "I saw my father (i.e., Abdullah bin Umar رضي الله عنه) that he sat cross-legged in prayer, (and), I, too, began to sit cross-legged though I was quite young at that time. On seeing it, my father told me not to sit like that and explained that, from the point of view of *Shari'ah*, the correct way of sitting was to keep the right foot erect (on the toes) and the left one in a reclining position (under the rumps). I, thereupon, remarked, 'But you sit cross-legged'. My father replied: '(It is because of feebleness and infirmity). My legs, now, do not support my wieght'."

(Bukhari)

Commentary: Abdullah was, also, the name of one of Abdulah bin Umar's sons and this incident was in respect of him. Abdullah bin Umar رضي الله عنه lived up to the ripe old age of 84, and, according to a report, of 86 years. Towards the end of his life he had grown so weak that he could not sit on his feet in prayer, according to the prescribed method. It has, also, been reported that there was some defect in his feet which rendered him unable to sit in *Q'adah* as the sacred Prophet ﷺ did. Anyhow, simply to follow his father's example, Abdullah رضي الله عنه, too, had begun to sit cross-legged. When Abdullah bin Umar رضي الله عنه saw that, he checked him and said that the correct way of sitting was that one should seat oneself on the left foot, keeping the right foot erect, with the heel pointing upwards and the toes of the feet bent outward. About himself he explained that he sat cross-legged owing to an ailment or debility.

The fact that he said that his legs did not support his weight any more showed that this sitting posture is assumed in a manner that bears the weight of the body.

Brevity and Haste in *Q'adah-i-Oola*

(٦٣٥/١٦٣) عَنْ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ مَسْعُودٍ قَالَ كَانَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ

إِذَا جَلَسَ فِي الرَّكْعَتَيْنِ كَانَهُ عَلَى الرَّحْضِ حَتَّى يَقُومَ. (رواه الترمذی و النسائی)

(635/163) It is related by Abdullah bin Mas'ud رضي الله عنه that when the Messenger of Allah ﷺ sat down after the first two *rak'ats* (i.e., performed *Q'adah-i-Oola*, he did it so hurriedly) as if he was

sitting on hot bricks until he stood up for the third *rak'at*.

(Tirmizi and Nassai)

Commentary: Authorities have concluded from it that the devotee should stand up quickly after reciting only the *Tashahhud* in *Q'udah-i-Oola*.

Tashahhud

(٦٣٦/١٦٤) عَنْ ابْنِ مَسْعُودٍ قَالَ عَلَّمَنِي رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ التَّشَهُّدَ كَفِّي بَيْنَ كَفْيِهِ كَمَا يُعَلِّمُنِي السُّورَةَ مِنَ الْقُرْآنِ التَّحِيَّاتُ لِلَّهِ وَالصَّلَوَاتُ وَالطَّيِّبَاتُ السَّلَامُ عَلَيْكَ أَيُّهَا النَّبِيُّ وَرَحْمَةُ اللَّهِ وَبَرَكَاتُهُ السَّلَامُ عَلَيْنَا وَعَلَى عِبَادِ اللَّهِ الصَّالِحِينَ أَشْهَدُ أَنْ لَا إِلَهَ إِلَّا اللَّهُ وَأَشْهَدُ أَنَّ مُحَمَّدًا عَبْدُهُ وَرَسُولُهُ (رواه البخارى ومسلم)

(636/164) It is related by Abdullah bin Mas'ud ؓ "The Messenger of Allah ﷺ taught me *Tashahhud* in such a state that my hand was in his hands, i.e., in the way (in which) he used to teach the Surah of the Qur'an (he taught): *At-tahiyyatu lillaahi was-salawaatu wat-taiyyabatu as-salaamu 'alaika ayyuhan nabeyu wa rahmatul laahi wa bara-kaatuh, as-salaamu 'alainaa wa-alaa ibaadil laahis saaliheen, ash-hudu al laa ilaaha il-lal-laah, wa ash-hudu an-na mohammadan 'abduhu wa rasuluhu* (All reverence, all worship, all sanctity unto Allah. Peace be on You, O Prophet, as well as the Mercy of Allah, and His blessings. Peace be on us as well as on the pious bondsmen of Allah. I attest that there is no god save Allah, and I attest that Muhammad ﷺ is His slave and Messenger)." (Bukhari and Mustim)

Commentary: Of all the things the Prophet taught to the Companions, the teaching of the Qur'an received his greatest attention. Yet he taught *Tashahhud* (or *At-tahiyyat*) with the same care and solicitude as marked by his teaching of a surah of the Qur'an. The holding of the hand of Abdullah bin Mas'ud ؓ in his own hands by the Prophet ﷺ was, also, a part of it, and according to a report quoted by Tahawi, the Prophet ﷺ had taught it phrase by phrase to Abdullah bin Mas'ud ؓ in the same way as it is done when anyone wants to make a child or an illiterate person

remember something. In another Tradition, reproduced in *Musnad Ahmad*, it is, further, stated that the Prophet ﷺ taught *Tashahhud* to Abdullah bin Mas'ud and bade him to teach it to others. Besides Abdullah bin Mas'ud ﷺ, *Tashahhud* has been related on the authority of Sayyidina Umar ﷺ, Sayyidina Abdullah bin Abbas ﷺ, Sayyidah Ayshah رضى الله عنها and some other Companions as well and there is merely a variation of a word or two in all the reports. Commentators, however, are agreed that judged from the chain of narrators, the *Tashahhud* of Abdullah bin Mas'ud ﷺ commands preference though the other narratives, too, are correct and the *Tashahhud* mentioned in them, can, also, be recited.

Some scholars suggest that the *tashahhud* represents the exchange of dialogue in the *mi'raj*. When the Prophet ﷺ reached there he submitted:

التَّحِيَّاتُ لِلَّهِ وَالصَّلَوَاتُ وَالطَّيِّبَاتُ

All reverence, all worship all sanctity unto Allah.

Allah said:

السَّلَامُ عَلَيْكَ أَيُّهَا النَّبِيُّ وَرَحْمَةُ اللَّهِ وَبَرَكَاتُهُ

(Peace be on you, O Prophet, the mercy of Allah and His blessings).

The Prophet ﷺ remarked:

السَّلَامُ عَلَيْنَا وَعَلَى عِبَادِ اللَّهِ الصَّالِحِينَ

(Peace be on us and on the pious slaves of Allah).

Then, he added to renew his declaration of Faith:

أَشْهَدُ أَنْ لَا إِلَهَ إِلَّا اللَّهُ وَأَشْهَدُ أَنَّ مُحَمَّدًا عَبْدُهُ وَرَسُولُهُ

(I bear witness that there is no god but Allah and I bear witness that Muhammad is His slave and Messenger ﷺ).

In *Sahih Bukhari* it is, also, quoted on the authority of Abdullah bin Mas'ud ﷺ that "In *Tashahhud* we used to recite, *As-salaamu 'alaika ayyuhan nabeeyu* during the lifetime of the Prophet, but after his passing away, we began to recite, *As-salaamu 'ala-n-nabeeyu* instead of it. But from the general practice of the Ummah it is clear that the words taught by the Prophet ﷺ, i.e., *As-salaamu 'alaika ayyuhan nabeeyu* were retained in their original form even after his death, and, there is, indeed, a unique joy in them for people of discernment. Now, those who strive to propound the cult

about the Prophet ﷺ that he is present and seeing from the mood and form of the words of his salutation are the victims of polytheistic mentality and betray a lamentable lack of appreciation of the Arabic idiom.

INVOCATING BLESSINGS ON THE PROPHET ﷺ

After Allah, the greatest obligation on mankind, specially on the bondsmen who have attained Faith through the guidance of a Prophet ﷺ, is of the Prophet ﷺ through whose endeavours the Divine Message reached them. As far as the Muslims are concerned, the wealth of Faith has, doubtlessly, been gained by them by the merciful agency of the Last of the Prophets عليهم السلام. Prophet Muhammad ﷺ (Peace and Blessings of Allah be upon him). He is their greatest benefactor, next, of course, to Allah. Hence, as it is the claim of Allah that He should be worshiped, in the same way it is the claim of the Prophets that blessings and salutation be sent to them with all sincerity and deference, i.e., an invocation be made to Allah to magnify them further and bestow upon them His choicest favours. This is what *Salah* on the Prophet and *Salaam* mean¹. These are the offerings of love, loyalty and gratitude to these benefactors, otherwise it is obvious that they do not stand in need of our invocations.

All the same, Allah causes our blessings to be carried to them and there does take place an increase in the Divine favours on them as a result of our entreaties. But the real gain is our own. Our spiritual ties grows stronger and we become deserving of, at least, ten blessings of Allah in return for one invocation made with a sincere heart. Herein lies the main secret and advantage of *Durood* and *Salaam*.

A distinctive wisdom behind *Durood* and *Salaam*, also, is that they strike sharply at the roots of polytheism. The most reverable beings, after the almighty, are the Prophets عليهم السلام and when the

①. The Urdu word is durood but the words Salatu a'lan Nabi are used for invoking blessings on the Prophet. The word is Salah which also means the regular prayer. The word durood is used to distinguish it from prayer.

command is given that *durood* and *salaam* be sent to them, i.e., supplications made to Allah to magnify them it distinctly shows that they, too, are dependent on Allah for peace and blessings, and, by virtue of the loftiness of their rank and position, they are entitled only to this much that Divine favours were invoked on them. Peace and blessings do not lie in their hands, and, this being so, it logically follows that these things do not lie in the hands of any created being for the Prophets عليهم السلام are superior to all of them and the essential element of polytheism is that gain and benediction were imagined to be in the control of anyone aside of Allah.

The Command in the Qur'an to invoke blessings on The Prophet ﷺ

Allah has commanded us in the following verse that we should invoke blessings on the Prophet ﷺ.

"Surely Allah and His angels send blessings on the Prophet. O you who believe! Send your blessings on him and salute him with a becoming salutation. (al-Ahzab, 33:56)

إِنَّ اللَّهَ وَمَلَائِكَتَهُ يُصَلُّونَ عَلَى النَّبِيِّ
يَا أَيُّهَا الَّذِينَ آمَنُوا صَلُّوا عَلَيْهِ
وَسَلِّمُوا تَسْلِيمًا (احزاب ٣٣: ٥٦)

This verse does not qualify the command with prayer just as the Qur'an frequently commands us to praise and glorify Allah but does not restrict that command to prayer alone or outside prayer. But, the Holy Prophet ﷺ understood prayer to be the particular occasion to praise and glorify Allah (as we have seen in the hadith the origin of the *tasbeeh* of *ruku'* and *sajdah* in the verses:

سبح اسم ربك الاعلى and فسبح باسم ربك العظيم

Consequently, it is my humble opinion that when this was revealed the Prophet ﷺ instructed his Companions رضي الله عنهم that this command should best be obeyed in prayer in the final qa'dah (sitting posture). I base my opinion on a point raised in the next hadith where I will elucidate it.

Text

(٦٣٧/١٦٥) عَنْ كَعْبِ بْنِ عُجْرَةَ قَالَ سَأَلْنَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ

وَسَلَّمَ فَقُلْنَا يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ كَيْفَ الصَّلَاةُ عَلَيْكُمْ أَهْلَ الْبَيْتِ فَإِنَّ اللَّهَ قَدْ عَلِمَنَا
 كَيْفَ نُسَلِّمُ عَلَيْكَ فَقَالَ قُولُوا اَللّٰهُمَّ صَلِّ عَلَى مُحَمَّدٍ وَعَلَى آلِ مُحَمَّدٍ كَمَا
 صَلَّيْتَ عَلَى إِبْرَاهِيمَ وَعَلَى آلِ إِبْرَاهِيمَ إِنَّكَ حَمِيدٌ مُّجِيدٌ. اَللّٰهُمَّ بَارِكْ
 عَلَى مُحَمَّدٍ وَعَلَى آلِ مُحَمَّدٍ كَمَا بَارَكْتَ عَلَى إِبْرَاهِيمَ وَعَلَى آلِ إِبْرَاهِيمَ
 إِنَّكَ حَمِيدٌ مُّجِيدٌ. (رواه البخارى و مسلم)

(637/165) It is related by Ka'b bin 'Ujrah ؓ "We said to the Messenger of Allah ﷺ: 'Allah has told us how to sent salutation to you (i.e., you have informed us on behalf of Allah that we should sent the salutation to you by saying, *As-salaamu 'alaika ayyuhan nabeeyu wa rahmatul-laahi wa bara-kaatuh* in Tashahhud); now tell us how are we to send blessings on you'. The Prophet replied: 'Do so by saying, *Allaahumma sal-li-ala Muhammadin kamaa sal-laita 'alaa Ibrahima wa-'alaa aal-i-Ibrahim in-naka hameedum majeed. Allaahumma baarik 'alaa Muhammadin wa 'alaa aal-i-Muhammadin kamaa baarakta 'alaa Ibrahima wa 'alaa aal-i-Ibrahim in-naka hameedum mujeed.* (O Allah, bless Muhammad and his family as You did bless Ibrahim and his family: Verily, You are the Praiseworthy, the Majestic. O Allah! Favour Muhammad ﷺ and his family as You have favoured Ibrahim and his family; Verily You are the Praiseworthy, the Majestic)

(Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: In this narrative of K'ab ؓ it is not mentioned whether the above invocation is to be recited during prayer or apart from it. But another Tradition, bearing almost the same subject-matter, is related on the authority of Abu Mas'ud Ansari ؓ, and, in some versions of it, it is stated that the question was put to the Prophet ﷺ in these words:

"Messenger of Allah! When we send blessings on you during prayer, how it is to be done¹."

كَيْفَ نُصَلِّيْ عَلَيْكَ إِذَا نَحْنُ
 صَلَّيْنَا عَلَيْكَ فِي صَلَاتِنَا

It clearly shows that the enquiry of the Companions ؓ was about the recitation of durood in prayer. This much they had already learnt from the Prophet ﷺ that the prayer was the special occasion for the recitation of durood.

①. *Sahih Muslim* p. 175.

It is, moreover, related by Haakim in *Mustadark*, on the authority of Abdullah bin Mas'ud رضي الله عنه:

"One should recite *Tashahhud* in prayer (i.e., in the last *Qa'udah*), then send blessings

يَتَشَهُدُ الرَّجُلُ ثُمَّ يُصَلِّي عَلَى
النَّبِيِّ ثُمَّ يَدْعُو النَّفْسِ

on the Prophet, and, then, supplicate for oneself.¹

Abdullah bin Mas'ud رضي الله عنه surely, would have said so only on hearing it from the sacred Prophet ﷺ, and not on his own that *Durood* was to be recited after *Tashahhud* in prayer.

It should now be clear that it was from the Prophet ﷺ that the Companions رضي الله عنهم had come to know that the special occasion for the compliance of the Commandment contained in *Sura Al-Ahzab*² concerning the sending of blessings on and salutation to the Prophet ﷺ was prayer, and, that too, is the last *Q'udah*. After that, they enquired from him how and in what words were they to do it and he taught them *Durood Ibrahim* which we recite in our prayers.



Meaning of 'Aal' in *Durood Sharif*

We have translated the word *Aal*, occuring four times in the aforementioned *Druood Ibrahim* as 'family'. In fact, in the Arabic language, particularly in the idiom of the Qur'an and the Traditions, all those who are connected to a person in a special way are called his *Aal*, whether this connection be of lineage and relationship or of association, companionship, allegiance and affection. Thus, in the literal sense, it can here, convey both the meanings. But, as the narrative of Abu Humayd Sa'idi we are now going to discuss, shows *Aal*, in the present context, denotes only the Prophet's عليهم السلام family, i.e., his wives and descendants.

(٦٣٨/١٦٦) عَنْ أَبِي حُمَيْدٍ السَّاعِدِيِّ قَالَ قَالُوا يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ كَيْفَ نُصَلِّي
عَلَيْكَ فَقَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ قُولُوا . اَللّٰهُمَّ صَلِّ عَلَى مُحَمَّدٍ
وَاَزْوَاجِهِ وَذُرِّيَّتِهِ كَمَا صَلَّيْتَ عَلَى اِلِ اِبْرَاهِيْمَ وَبَارِكْ عَلَى مُحَمَّدٍ وَاَزْوَاجِهِ
وَذُرِّيَّتِهِ كَمَا بَارَكْتَ عَلَى اِلِ اِبْرَاهِيْمَ اِنَّكَ حَمِيْدٌ مُّجِيْدٌ. (رواه البخارى ومسلم)


①. Fathe-el-Baari p. 305.

②. Chapter XXXIII of the Qur'an.

(638/166) It is related on the authority of Abu Humayd Sa'idi  that (once) it was enquired from the Messenger of Allah  how were they to send blessings on him. He, thereupon, replied: "Pray to Allah thus: *Allaahumma sal-li-'alaa Mohammasin wa azwajihi wa Zurriyatihi kamaa sal-laita 'alaa all-i-Ibrabima wa baark 'alaa Mohammasin wa azwajihi wa zurriyatihi Kamaa barakta 'alaa all-i-Ibrahima, in-naka hameedum majeed* (O God! bless Muhammad and his wives and descendant as you did bless the family of Ibrahim, and favour Muhammad and his wives and descendants as You did favour the family of Ibrahim. Verily You are the Praiseworthy, the Majestic)."

(Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: The words of this *Durood* are slightly different from those of the preceding one, but their import, basically, is the same. According to the authorities, both of these *Durood* can be recited in prayer, but the common practice is to recite the former one.

In the latter, saying the words, *azwajihi wa zurriyatihi* have been used in the place of *Aal* which, apparently, settles it that the word *Aal* occurring in the former Tradition denotes the Prophet's  family, i.e., his pious wives and descendants, and just as they enjoyed the nobility and eminence of relationship with him which others do not, though they may be superior to them, Allah has, also, bestowed upon them the distinction of partnership in *Durood* and *Salaam*, but it does not, at all, mean that they are better than everyone else in the *Ummah*. It is like this when he admirers of a holy man or anyother venerable person send a gift to him their natural wish is that he and the members of his family may use it in spite of the fact that in their own judgement, some of his frineds or attendants might be worthier than his dependants. *Durood* and *Salaam*, too, are an offering of love and gratitude and these should be seen in the light of the general and instinctive impulsions of a strong emotional attachment. To raise a polemical or legalistic controversy over superiority or otherwise will be uncalled for and not in good taste.

Place And Wisdom of *Durood* in Prayer

As we have seen, *Durood* is recited at the end of prayer i.e., in the last *Q'adah*, after *Tashahhud*. The bondsman attained the blessings of Faith thanks to the teachings and endeavours of the Prophet ﷺ; he obtained the knowledge of Allah and was favoured with presence in His court and with the good fortune to exalt His name and to glorify Him which reached the culminating point at *Tashahhud* in the last *Q'adah*. Now, he is commanded that before taking his leave and supplicating for himself he make the choicest invocations for the Prophet ﷺ and his pious wives and descendants in acknowledgement of the enormous debt of gratitude he owed to him. There can be no more suitable way to express his loyalty and thankfulness, nor a better offering of love, and the slave has nothing else with him.

This discussion pertains to prayer, so we have limited ourselves to only two *hadith* on forms of *durood*. There are many other *ahadith* and forms of *durood*. You can see them, *Inshu Allah*, in the Book of Supplications.

Supplication After *Durood* and Before *Salaam*

We have just quoted Sayyidina Abdullah bin Mas'ud ؓ that the devotee should recite *durood* after *tashahhud*, and, then, make a supplication. In fact the instructions to make the supplications were there even before the *durood* was prescribed. For it, the holy Prophet ﷺ has taught some special formulas. Below we will reproduce only three Traditions with regard to it.

(٦٣٩/١٦٧) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا قَرَأَ أَحَدُكُمْ مِنَ التَّشَهُّدِ الْآخِرِ فَلْيَتَعَرَّضْ بِاللَّهِ مِنْ أَرْبَعٍ مِنْ عَذَابٍ جَهَنَّمَ وَمِنْ عَذَابِ الْقَبْرِ وَمِنْ فِتْنَةِ الْمَحْيَا وَالْمَمَاتِ وَمِنْ شَرِّ الْمَسِيحِ الدَّجَالِ . (رواه مسلم)

(639/167) It is related by Abu Hurayrah ؓ that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "When anyone of you completes the last *Tashahhud*, he should seek the protection of Allah from four things: (i) the punishment of Hell; (ii) the punishment of the grave; (iii) the trial and temptations of life and death and (iv) the evil of Dajjal." (Muslim)

(٦٤٠/١٦٨) عَنْ ابْنِ عَبَّاسٍ أَنَّ النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ كَانَ يُعَلِّمُهُمْ هَذَا الدُّعَاءَ كَمَا يُعَلِّمُهُمُ السُّورَةَ مِنَ الْقُرْآنِ يَقُولُ قُولُوا "اَللّٰهُمَّ اِنِّىْ اَعُوْذُ بِكَ مِنْ عَذَابِ جَهَنَّمَ وَاَعُوْذُ بِكَ مِنْ عَذَابِ الْقَبْرِ وَاَعُوْذُ بِكَ مِنْ فِتْنَةِ الْمَسِيْحِ الدَّجَالِ وَاَعُوْذُ بِكَ مِنْ فِتْنَةِ الْمَحْيَا وَالْمَمَاتِ . (رواه مسلم)

(640/168) It is related by Abdullah bin Abbas رضي الله عنه that the Prophet ﷺ used to teach this prayer to the Companions رضي الله عنهم in the same way as he taught a *Surah* of the Qur'an: *Allaahumma in-ni a-'oozu-hika min 'azaab-i-jahannuma, wa a-'oozu-bika min 'azaab-il-qabr-i, wa a-'oozu-bika min fitna'til maseeh-i-dajjal, wa a-'oozubika min fitnatil mahyaa wal mamaat* (O Allah! I seek refuge in You from the punishment of Hell, and from the punishment of grave, and from the calamity of Dajjal, and I seek refuge in You from the trials and temptations of life and death)." (Muslim)

Commentary: The above supplication is remarkable by all-embracing for seeking protection from the calamities of both the worlds. Protection is, first sought from the punishment of the grave and hell which is the most terrible of all the punishments, and, then, from the calamity of Dajjal which is the severest of all the calamities that are going to overtake the world and at the time of which it will be most difficult for the faith of anyone to survive. After it, an entreaty is made, in general terms, for refuge against the various trials and mischiefs of life and death which includes all major and minor sins, adversities, corruption and profligacy.

Though, in this Tradition, it is not stated for what occasion the Prophet ﷺ had taught the above supplication to be recited, from Abu Hurayrah's رضي الله عنه narrative, quoted, earlier, it is clear that the special time for it is after Tashahhud and before *Salaam* in the last *Q'adah*. It is about the same supplication that *Bukhari* and *Muslim* have transmitted a hadith by Sayyidah Ayshah رضي الله عنها that the Prophet ﷺ used to make it in prayer and add these words in the end:

اَللّٰهُمَّ اِنِّىْ اَعُوْذُ بِكَ مِنَ الْمَآْثِمِ وَمِنَ الْمَغْرَمِ .

"O Allah! I seek refuge in You from everything sinful and from the burdan of debt."

(٦٤١/١٦٩) عَنْ أَبِي بَكْرٍ الصِّدِّيقِ رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ قَالَ قُلْتُ يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ
 عَلَّمْنِي دُعَاءَ أَذْعُو بِهِ فِي صَلَاتِي قَالَ قُلْ اَللّٰهُمَّ اِنِّیْ ظَلَمْتُ نَفْسِیْ ظُلْمًا کَثِیْرًا
 وَلَا یَغْفِرُ الذُّنُوْبَ اِلَّا اَنْتَ فَاعْفِرْ لِیْ مَغْفِرَةً مِنْ عِنْدِکَ وَارْحَمْنِیْ اِنَّکَ اَنْتَ
 الْغَفُوْرُ الرَّحِیْمُ.
 (رواه البخاری و مسلم)

(641/169) It is related by Abu Bakr رضی اللہ عنہ, "I said to the Prophet ﷺ: O Messenger of Allah! Teach me a supplication which I may make in my prayer.' He replied: "Say: *Allaahumma in-ni Zalamtu nafsi zulman katheeran, wa laa yaghfiruz-zunooba il-laa anta, faghfir-lee maghfiratam min indika warhamni in-nika antal ghafoorur-rahim* (Oh Allah! I have done my soul a great harm and no one can forgive sins except You; so grant me forgiveness with Your pleasure, and have pity on me. You are the Most Forgiving, the Most Merciful.)' (Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: It shows that the Prophet ﷺ had taught this supplication, at his request, to Sayyidina Abu Bakr رضی اللہ عنہ for recitation in prayer. Though it is not stated in so many words that it was meant for recitation before *salaam*, commentators have observed that since it was the most proper time for supplication in prayer and the Prophet ﷺ had exhorted the Companions رضی اللہ عنہم to choose a good supplication for beseeching Allah after *Tashahhud* and before *Salaam*, and beseech Him through it, as we learnt from Abdullah bin Mas'ud's رضی اللہ عنہ narrative given earlier, one can safely conclude that Abu Bakr رضی اللہ عنہ had requested him to teach him a supplication for that very occasion and it was thus that the Prophet ﷺ had taught this prayer.

What is particularly worthy of note, here, is that Sayyidina Abu Bakr رضی اللہ عنہ had repeatedly been favoured with the happy tidings of Paradise, and was, definitely, the most superior bondsman of Allah in the whole of the *Ummah*; his prayer was the best and most perfect among all the followers of the Prophet ﷺ so much so that the Prophet ﷺ, himself, had made him the Imam during his last illness and offered prayers behind him. He asked the Prophet ﷺ to teach him a supplication which he could supplicate to the Lord in prayer and the Prophet ﷺ taught him this supplication in response to his request. The Prophet ﷺ, as if one would say, told him, "O

Abu Bakr! Never, never imagine, even after offering prayer, that you have worshipped Allah as He should be worshipped, and have done your bit, but even after an act of worship like prayer, consider yourself to be at fault and blameworthy, and, confessing your dereliction and guiltiness before Him, beseech His pardon and mercy in these words: "O God! I have nothing to my credit, no good deed, no virtuous act, which may give me a claim to Your mercy. Forgive me my sins solely out of Your benevolence."

These suplications must be made after *Tashahhud* and *Durood* and before *Salaam*. It should not be difficult to learn them by heart and to know their meaning.

It is very unfortunate if we deprive ourselves of the precious teachings of the Prophet ﷺ which are worthier than the world and every thing in it.

***Salaam* Marking the End of Prayer**

As the Prophet ﷺ has taught the *Kalima* of *Allah-u-Akbar* for the commencement of the prayer than which there can be no better *kalima* to mark its beginning, so, also, has he instructed that prayer should be brought to an end with:

السَّلَامُ عَلَيْكُمْ وَرَحْمَةُ اللَّهِ

As-Salaamu alaikum wa rahmatullah (Peace be upon you and the mercy of God).

There can, of course, be no more appropriate words for the conclusion of the prayer. Salutation, as everyone knows, is made when people meet for the first time after being away from each-other for some time. The teaching of *As-salaamu alaikum wa rahmatullah* denotes, or, rather, directs that the bodysman should cut himself aloof from the world, even from those who pray with him, sitting to his left and right, and no one besides God should be present before his mind's eye when he enters into prayer by pronouncing *Allah-u-Akbar* and begins his submission to Allah. Throughout the prayer, it should be like that. When he has completed his prayer, after reciting *Tahsahhud* and *Durood*, and making his last supplication in the presence of Almighty in the final qadah, his inner state should be as if he had returned to this

world, and to his own environment from some other planet and was meeting, again, the men or angels on both the sides of him and wishing them peace and blessings of Allah. This, in our humble opinion, is the real significance of *As-salaamu alaikum wa rahmatullah*.

(٦٤٢/١٧٠) عَنْ عَلِيٍّ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مِفْتَاحُ الصَّلَاةِ الطُّهُورُ وَتَحْرِيمُهَا التَّكْبِيرُ وَتَحْلِيلُهَا التَّسْلِيمُ.

(رواه أبو داود والترمذي والدارمي وابن ماجه)

(642/170) It is related on the authority of Sayyidina Ali عليه السلام that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Cleanliness (i.e., wudu) is the key of prayer and the utterance of *Alla-u-Akbar* is its *Tahrim*¹, and the way to loosen its restrictions is to say *As-salaamu alaikum wa rahmatullah*." (Abu Dawood, Tirmizi, Daarami, and Ibn Majah)

Commentary: Three things have been stressed in the above saying:

- (i) The key, i.e., the first pre-requisite of prayer is cleanliness and *wudu*. Without it, the door of the divine court does not open.
- (ii) The opening *Kalima* of prayer is *Allah-u-Akbar* and all the restrictions that are peculiar to prayer (for instance, even legitimate acts like eating, drinking and conversation are forbidden till prayer lasts) come into force.
- (iii) The conclusive kalima of prayer, with which the restrictions come to an end, is *As-salaamu alaikum wa rahmatullah*.

(٦٤٣/١٧١) عَنْ سَعْدِ بْنِ أَبِي وَقَّاصٍ قَالَ كُنْتُ أَرَى رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ

عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يُسَلِّمُ عَنْ يَمِينِهِ وَعَنْ يَسَارِهِ حَتَّى أَرَى بَيَاضَ خَدَيْهِ. (رواه مسلم)

(643/171) Sa'ad bin Abi Waqqas رضي الله عنه related to us, "I saw the Messenger of Allah ﷺ that he turned his face to the right and (then) to the left at the time of *Salaam*, and turned the face so much to the right and to the left that we could see the fair colouring of his cheeks." (Muslim)

Commentary: this very message with a slight difference of words is also related by Abdullah bin Hab'id رضي الله عنه in the four books and by Aamar bin Yasar in *Ibn Majah*.

①. The commencement of prayer when all the worldly thoughts are forbidden.

Supplication After Salaam

We have just seen the supplication the Prophet ﷺ used to make at the end of prayer, before *salaam*, or the prayers he taught for that occasion. Now, we shall take up the sayings showing the guidance he gave to his followers regarding the supplications and *zikr* (God-remembrance) after final salutation and his own usual practice.

(٦٤٤/١٧٢) عَنْ أَبِي أُمَامَةَ قَالَ قِيلَ يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ أَيُّ الدُّعَاءِ أَسْمَعُ قَالَ جَوْفَ اللَّيْلِ الْآخِرِ وَذُبُرُ الصَّلَوَاتِ الْمَكْتُوباتِ . (رواه الترمذی)

(644/172) Abu Umama رضی اللہ عنہ narrated (once) it was enquired from the Messenger of Allah ﷺ: Messenger of Allah! Which supplication is heard most (i.e., a supplication made at what time has the greatest likelihood of being granted). "During the latter part of the night and at the end of an obligatory prayer," replied the Prophet ﷺ. (Tirmizi)

(٦٤٥/١٧٣) عَنْ مَعَاذِ بْنِ جَبَلٍ قَالَ أَخَذَ بِيَدِي رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ فَقَالَ إِنِّي لَأُحِبُّكَ يَا مَعَاذُ فَقُلْتُ وَأَنَا أُحِبُّكَ يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ قَالَ فَلَا تَدْعُ أَنْ تَقُولَ فِي ذُبُرِكُلِّ صَلَاةٍ "رَبِّ أَعِنِّي عَلَى ذِكْرِكَ وَشُكْرِكَ وَحُسْنِ عِبَادَتِكَ". (رواه احمد و ابو داؤد و النسائي)

(645/173) Mu'az bin Jabal رضی اللہ عنہ said that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ held him by his hand and said, 'O Mu'az, I love you! Mu'az رضی اللہ عنہ said to him "Messenger of Allah! I too love you!" he said, "So (because of that I say to you) be sure to make this supplication to Allah after every prayer:

رَبِّ أَعِنِّي عَلَى ذِكْرِكَ وَشُكْرِكَ وَحُسْنِ عِبَادَتِكَ

"O Allah! help me in remembering You, in being grateful to You and in the worshipping You well." (Ahmad, Abu Dawood, Nasa'i)

(٦٤٦/١٧٤) عَنْ ثَوْبَانَ رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ قَالَ كَانَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا انْصَرَفَ مِنْ صَلَاتِهِ اسْتَغْفَرَ ثَلَاثًا وَقَالَ اللَّهُمَّ أَنْتَ السَّلَامُ وَمِنْكَ السَّلَامُ تَبَارَكْتَ يَا ذَا الْجَلَالِ وَالْإِكْرَامِ . (رواه مسلم)

(646/174) It is stated by Thauban رضي الله عنه that when the Messenger of Allah ﷺ finished offering his prayers he sought forgiveness of Allah three times and then made this supplication:

اللَّهُمَّ أَنْتَ السَّلَامُ وَمِنْكَ السَّلَامُ تَبَارَكْتَ يَا ذَا الْجَلَالِ وَالْإِكْرَامِ

"O Allah ! You are Peace, and peace comes from You. Blessed are You, O Possessor of glory and honour. (Muslim)

Commentary: This hadith tells us that after he had offered prayers the Prophet ﷺ would say *استغفر الله* three times. In fact, it is a sign of perfection of worship that a man having offered prayers considers his effort imperfect and regards himself responsible for that. So, he seeks the forgiveness of Allah.

The short supplication that Sayyidina Thauban رضي الله عنه has spoken of is exactly that much. The additional words commonly used after *ومنك السلام* are later additions and not taught by the Prophet ﷺ, these additional words are:

وإليك يرجع السلام محينا ربنا بالسلام وادخلنا الجنة دارالسلام

The only words taught by the Prophet ﷺ are repeated here:

اللَّهُمَّ أَنْتَ السَّلَامُ وَمِنْكَ السَّلَامُ تَبَارَكْتَ يَا ذَا الْجَلَالِ وَالْإِكْرَامِ

But Allah knows best.

(٦٤٧/١٧٥) عَنِ الْمُغِيرَةِ بْنِ شُعْبَةَ أَنَّ النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ كَانَ يَقُولُ

فِي ذِكْرِ كُلِّ صَلَاةٍ مَكْتُوبَةٍ لَا إِلَهَ إِلَّا اللَّهُ وَحْدَهُ لَا شَرِيكَ لَهُ لَهُ الْمُلْكُ وَلَهُ

الْحَمْدُ وَهُوَ عَلَى كُلِّ شَيْءٍ قَدِيرٌ . اللَّهُمَّ لَا مَانِعَ لِمَا أَعْطَيْتَ وَلَا مُعْطِيَ لِمَا

مَنْعْتَ وَلَا يَنْفَعُ ذَا الْجَدِّ مِنْكَ الْجَدُّ . (رواه البخاري ومسلم)

(647/175) Mughirah bin Shu'bah رضي الله عنه narrated that after every

fard prayer the Messenger of Allah ﷺ used to say: *La ilaaha*

ill-allaah wahduhu laa sharika-lahu, lahul mulku wa lahul

hamdu, wa hua 'alaa kulli shai'in qadeer, Alluhumma lau

maani'a lima ataita wa laa mu'ti lima mana'ta wa laa

yanfa'uzal-jaddi minkal jadd (There is no one worthy of

worship save Allah. He is One and without a partner. Unto Him

belongs Sovereignty and unto Him belongs all praise. In His

Hand is all good and He has power over all things. O Allah! No

one can withhold what You bestow, and no one can bestow

what You decide to withhold, and the prosperity of no

prosperous one can make him independent of You i.e., even the wealthiest and most powerful person is a beggar at the door of Your mercy." (Bukhari and Muslim)

(٦٤٨/١٧٦) عَنْ أَبِي الزُّبَيْرِ قَالَ سَمِعْتُ عَبْدَ اللَّهِ بْنَ الزُّبَيْرِ يَخُطُبُ عَلَى هَذَا الْمِنْبَرِ وَهُوَ يَقُولُ كَانَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَقُولُ إِذَا سَلَّمَ فِي دُبُرِ الصَّلَاةِ وَالصَّلَوَاتِ لَا إِلَهَ إِلَّا اللَّهُ وَحْدَهُ لَا شَرِيكَ لَهُ لَهُ الْمُلْكُ وَلَهُ الْحَمْدُ وَهُوَ عَلَى كُلِّ شَيْءٍ قَدِيرٌ لَا حَوْلَ وَلَا قُوَّةَ إِلَّا بِاللَّهِ لَا إِلَهَ إِلَّا اللَّهُ وَلَا نَعْبُدُ إِلَّا إِيَّاهُ لَهُ النِّعْمَةُ وَلَهُ الْفَضْلُ وَلَهُ الثَّنَاءُ الْحَسَنُ لَا إِلَهَ إِلَّا اللَّهُ مُخْلِصِينَ لَهُ الدِّينَ وَلَوْ كَرِهَ الْكَافِرُونَ . (رواه مسلم)

(648/176) Abu Az-Zubayr the Taba'ee has said that Abdullah bin Zubayr said while delivering the sermon on this pulpit that after the Messenger of Allah ﷺ turned in salutation and ended prayers, he would recite:

لَا إِلَهَ إِلَّا اللَّهُ وَحْدَهُ لَا شَرِيكَ لَهُ لَهُ الْمُلْكُ وَلَهُ الْحَمْدُ وَهُوَ عَلَى كُلِّ شَيْءٍ قَدِيرٌ لَا حَوْلَ وَلَا قُوَّةَ إِلَّا بِاللَّهِ لَا إِلَهَ إِلَّا اللَّهُ وَلَا نَعْبُدُ إِلَّا إِيَّاهُ لَهُ النِّعْمَةُ وَلَهُ الْفَضْلُ وَلَهُ الثَّنَاءُ الْحَسَنُ لَا إِلَهَ إِلَّا اللَّهُ مُخْلِصِينَ لَهُ الدِّينَ وَلَوْ كَرِهَ الْكَافِرُونَ
"There is no God but Allah alone Who has no partner. To Him belongs the kingdom, to Him praise is due, and He is omnipotent. There is no might or power except in Allah. There is no god but Allah. And we do not worship any except Him. To Him belongs wealth, to Him belongs grace, and to Him is worthy praise accorded. There is no god but Allah to Whom we are sincere in devotion even though the disbelievers have it. (Muslim)

(٦٤٩/١٧٧) عَنْ سَعْدِ أَنَّهُ كَانَ يُعَلِّمُ بَنِيهِ هَؤُلَاءِ الْكَلِمَاتِ وَيَقُولُ إِنَّ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ كَانَ يَتَعَوَّذُ بِهِنَ دُبُرِ الصَّلَاةِ . اَللّٰهُمَّ اِنِّىْ اَعُوْذُ بِكَ مِنَ الْجُبْنِ وَاَعُوْذُ بِكَ مِنَ الْبُخْلِ وَاَعُوْذُ بِكَ مِنْ اَرْدَلِ الْعُمْرِ وَاَعُوْذُ بِكَ مِنْ فِتْنَةِ الدُّنْيَا وَعَذَابِ الْقَبْرِ . (رواه البخارى)

(649/177) Sa'ad bin Abi Waqqas ؓ related to us that he used to teach the *Kalimas* of "refuge" to his children and tell them that

he had heard the Messenger of Allah ﷺ seek the refuge of Allah after prayer in these words: *Allahumma in-ni- a'uzubika minal jubni, wa a'uzthubika minal bukhli wa a'uthubika min arzail-'umri' wa a'uthubika min fitnatid-duniya wa' athaabil qabr* (Oh Allah! I seek refuge in You from stinginess, and I seek refuge in You from worthless age (when he organs and senses lose their function through old age and a man becomes unwanted and a burden on others), and I seek refuge in You from the ills and evils of life and the punishment of death).

(Bukhari)

(٦٥٠/١٧٨) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَنْ سَبَّحَ اللَّهَ فِي ذِكْرِ كُلِّ صَلَاةٍ ثَلَاثًا وَثَلَاثِينَ وَحَمِدَ اللَّهَ ثَلَاثًا وَثَلَاثِينَ وَكَبَّرَ اللَّهَ ثَلَاثًا وَثَلَاثِينَ فَبَلَكَ بِسَعَةِ رِزْقِهِ وَقَالَ تَمَامَ الْإِيمَانِ لَا إِلَهَ إِلَّا اللَّهُ وَحْدَهُ لَا شَرِيكَ لَهُ لَهُ الْمُلْكُ وَلَهُ الْحَمْدُ وَهُوَ عَلَى كُلِّ شَيْءٍ قَدِيرٌ غُفِرَتْ خَطَايَاهُ وَإِنْ كَانَتْ مِثْلَ زَبَدِ الْبَحْرِ . (رواه مسلم)

(650/178) It is related by Abu Hurayrah ؓ that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Whoever, after every prayer, recites *Subhan Allah* (Glory to Allah) 33 times, and, in the same way, *Al-hamdu lillaah* (Praise to Allah) 33 times, and *Allah-u-Akbar* (Allah is Great) 33 times, — these make 99 Kalimas, and, then, in order to complete the figure of 100, says

لَا إِلَهَ إِلَّا اللَّهُ وَحْدَهُ لَا شَرِيكَ لَهُ لَهُ الْمُلْكُ وَلَهُ الْحَمْدُ وَهُوَ عَلَى كُلِّ شَيْءٍ قَدِيرٌ
La ilaaha illallahu wahduhu laa sharika-lahu, lahul mulku wa lahul hamdu, wahuwa 'ala kulli shai'in qadeer (No one is worthy of worship save Allah. He is One and without a partner. Unto Him belongs Sovereignty and unto Him belongs all praise. In His Hand is all good and He has power over all things) all his sins will be forgiven even if they be as profuse as the foam of the sea."

(Muslim)

Commentary: It is necessary to bear in mind, that, what has been said earlier about glad tidings on the remission of sins owing to a virtuous deed.

In this Tradition we are exhorted to recite 33 times each the 3 Kalimas of *Subhan Allah*, *Al-hamdu lillaah* and *Allah-u-Akbar*, and, then once the *Kalima* of *La ilaaha ill-ullaahu wahaduhu laa*

sharika lahu — in order to attain the round figure of 100. But in the narrative of some other Companions like Ka'b bin 'Ujrah ؓ it is stated that *Subhan Allah* and *Al-hamdu lillah* should be recited 33 times and *Allah-u-Akbar*, 34 times, arriving, thus at the total of 100.

In fact, the Prophet ﷺ has, sometimes, spoken of the one, and sometimes, of the other method of reciting it. Both of these are correct and based on unquestionable evidence, and one can adopt either of them according to one's inclination. The Prophet ﷺ has, also, advised the recitation of the three *Kalimas* at the time of retiring to bed. In common parlance, it is known as *Tasbih Fatimah*.

(٦٥١/١٧٩) عَنْ عَائِشَةَ رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهَا قَالَتْ كَانَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا سَلَّمَ لَمْ يَقْعُدْ إِلَّا مِقْدَارَ مَا يَقُولُ اللَّهُمَّ أَنْتَ السَّلَامُ وَمِنْكَ السَّلَامُ تَبَارَكْتَ يَا ذَا الْجَلَالِ وَالْإِكْرَامِ . (رواه مسلم)

(651/179) It is related by Sayyidah Ayshah رضى الله عنها that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ did not sit, after making the finishing salutation (*Salaam*), but for so long as to say: *Allaahumma antas-salaamu wa minkas-salaamu, tabarrakta yaa zal-jalaal-i-wal ikraam* (Oh God! You are Peace, and peace comes from You, Blessed are You, O Owner of Majesty and Glory.) (Muslim)

Commentary: Apparently, the above Tradition tells that, after *salaam*, the Prophet sat only for such a little time as it took to recite *Allaahumma antas-salaam* —, and, then, he stood up. But from the Traditions quoted earlier it seems that he, also, recited some other prayers and *Kalimas* of *zikr* after the finishing salutation and exhorted others, as well, to do the same.

Some authorities have tried to explain the divergence by suggesting that the Prophet did not recite the other formulas of *zikr* and prayer immediately after *Salaam* but when he had completed *sunnah* and *nafl rak'ats*, and his exhortation to the *Ummah* to recite them, too, was for that occasion.

From the words of most of the sayings discussed above as well as of numerous other reports bearing upon the same subject.

however, it is evident that the Prophet ﷺ recited these prayers and *Kalimas* of *zikr* soon after *Salaam*. We, on our part, believe that the correct position, in this regard is what has been stated by Shah Waliullah رحمه الله عليه. He Writes:

"It is better that these supplications and formulas of *Zikr* are recited before the sunnahs that are to be offered up immediately after *salaam* for some of the Traditions belonging to that category denote it explicitly while the words of the others seem to convey the same impression. As for Sayyidah Ayshah's رضي الله عنها narrative the Prophet ﷺ did not sit after *salaam* but for so long as to say *Allaahumma antas-Salaam* —, it can be interpreted in various ways. It is possible that what she meant was that the Prophet ﷺ sat in the posture of prayer only for that little while after *salaam*, and, then, changed the manner of sitting and turned to the left or the right or towards the *Muqtadis*, as some other reports, also, indicate, as well as that it was not his regular practice but, occasionally, it, too, happened that the Prophet ﷺ got up only after reciting *Allaahumma antas-Salaam* — when he had completed the finishing salute, and it was done with the object of impressing upon the followers that the recitation of these formulas of prayer and *zikr* was not obligatory or *Wajib* but supererogatory and commendable."¹

Note: We conclude that the recitation of these supplications after *salaam* is confirmed by the teachings as well as the practice of the sacred Prophet ﷺ and there can be no two opinions about it. But the habit of the *Muqtadis* to consider themselves bound to follow the *Imam* in supplication after *salaam* and or regard it unbecoming to get up before him though they may have the need to leave earlier is without foundation and calls for correction. The band between *Imamat* and *Iqtida*² ends with *salaam*, and it is not necessary to follow the *Imam* after it. One can get up before the *Imam* after making a short supplication, or go on praying as long as one likes.

①. Hujjat, Vol. II, p. 12.

②. Meaning following or taking after.

SUNNAH AND NAWAFIL PRAYER

The five daily prayers are obligatory in Islam. Apart from them, the Prophet ﷺ has exhorted us to offer some other *Rak'at* as well before or after the *Fard* prayer or at some other time. Of these, the prayers he strongly advised or took pains to observe himself are, commonly, known as *Sunnah* while the rest as *Nawafil*¹.

The apparent wisdom behind the *Sunnah* and *Nawafil* that are to be offered before the *Fard* is that. *Fard* prayer is a very special kind of presence in the Court of the Almighty, and, that is why, it is observed congregationally in the mosque. Therefore, before engaging in it one should get attuned inwardly to the solemn event and develop an affinity with the celestial world by offering two or four *Rak'at* individually. As for the *Sunnah* and *Nafl Ra'kat* that are required to be offered after the obligatory prayer the wisdom seems to be that amends be made through them for the deficiency that might have remained in the *Fard*.

There are some obligatory prayers before or after which we are not called upon, or positively forbidden, to offer *Sunnah* or *Nafl Rak'ats*. The significance of it will be discussed later, at the appropriate place.

Besides the *Sunnah* and *Nafl* prayers which are offered before or after an obligatory prayer, there are a few like *Chasht* in the day and *Tahajjud* in the night that occupy a unique place in the Islamic design of worship. For the seekers of the countenance of Allah and His propinquity these prayers are an exceptional means to advancement and distinction.

①. plural of *Nafl*, meaning supererogatory. In the Traditions all the prayers, aside of the *Fard* are called *Nawafil*.

Sunnat-i-Muakkadah

(٦٥٢/١٨٠) عَنْ أُمِّ حَبِيبَةَ قَالَتْ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَنْ صَلَّى فِي يَوْمٍ وَلَيْلَةٍ ثِنْتَيْ عَشْرَةَ رَكْعَةً بَنَى لَهُ بَيْتٌ فِي الْجَنَّةِ أَرْبَعًا قَبْلَ الظُّهْرِ وَرَكْعَتَيْنِ بَعْدَهَا وَرَكْعَتَيْنِ بَعْدَ الْمَغْرِبِ وَرَكْعَتَيْنِ بَعْدَ الْعِشَاءِ وَرَكْعَتَيْنِ قَبْلَ صَلَاةِ الْفَجْرِ (رواه الترمذی)

(652/180) Umm Habibah رضى الله عنها related to us that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Whoever will offer 12 *Rak'at* during the the day and the night (apart from the Fard prayers), for him a mansion will be built in Heaven. (The 12 *Rak'ats* are): 4 before and 2 after *Zuhr*, 2 after *Maghrib*, 2 after *Isha*, and 2 before *Fajr*." (Tirmizi)

This Tradition is also mentioned in *Muslim* but the number of *rak'at* are not mentioned there.

Commentary: This *hadith* mentions four *raka'at* to be offered before the *Fard* of *Zuhr*. A *hadith* of the same import narated Sayyidah Ayshah رضى الله عنها is transmitted by *Sunan Nasa'i* and others. Besides, the *hadith* transmitted by *Muslim* and narrated by Sayyidah Ayshah رضى الله عنها tells us of the practice of the Prophet ﷺ.

"He offered four *raka'at* at home before the *Zuhr* prayer which he offered in the mosque and then came home and offered two *rak'at*. Similarly, after he had led the *Maghrib* in the mosque, he came home and offered two *raka'at* and after having led the *Isha* prayer, he came home and offered two *raka'at*."

Finally she said that before the *Fajr*, he offered two *raka'at* at home after *Subh Sadiq* (dawn). However, in some *ahadith* the prayers before *Zuhr* are mentioned as comprising two *raka'at* not four. We will see those *ahadith*.

(٦٥٣/١٨١) عَنْ ابْنِ عُمَرَ قَالَ صَلَّيْتُ مَعَ رَسُولِ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ رَكْعَتَيْنِ قَبْلَ الظُّهْرِ وَرَكْعَتَيْنِ بَعْدَهَا وَرَكْعَتَيْنِ بَعْدَ الْمَغْرِبِ فِي بَيْتِهِ وَرَكْعَتَيْنِ بَعْدَ الْعِشَاءِ فِي بَيْتِهِ قَالَ وَخَدَّثَتْنِي حَفْصَةُ أَنَّ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ كَانَ يُصَلِّي رَكْعَتَيْنِ خَفِيفَتَيْنِ حِينَ يَطْلُعُ الْفَجْرُ. (رواه البخارى ومسلم)

(653/181) Ibn Umar رضي الله عنه said, "I prayed along with the Messenger of Allah ﷺ two *raka'at* before and two *raka'at* after *Zuhr* prayer, two after *Maghrib* in his house, and two after *Isha* in his house." He said that (his sister, the mother of the Believers) Sayyidah Hafsa رضي الله عنها told him that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ used to pray two short *raka'at* after subh *Sadiq* (dawn).

(Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: Taking into account all the reports in this connection it would appear that the Prophet ﷺ usually offered 4 *raka'at* before *Zuhr*, and, occasionally, only 2. Both of these courses were adopted by the Prophet ﷺ and whichever of the two is followed, the *Sunnah* will be fulfilled. Our own experience is that some theologians, generally offer 4 *raka'at* before *Zuhr* but when the time for the congregation is short, they rest content with 2 *raka'at*.

Since the sacred Prophet was very particular about the 10 or 12 *raka'at* of *Sunnah* mentioned in these Traditions and laid a great stress on them, these are known as *Sunnat Mukkadah*¹. Among them he attached the greatest importance to the *Sunnah* of *Fajr*.

Special Significance of *Sunnats* of *Fajr*

(٦٥٤/١٨٢) عَنْ عَائِشَةَ رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهَا قَالَتْ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ رَكْعَتَا الْفَجْرِ خَيْرٌ مِنَ الدُّنْيَا وَمَا فِيهَا . (رواه مسلم)

(654/182) It is narrated by Sayyidah Ayshah رضي الله عنها that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said, "The two *raka'at* (sunnah) of *Fajr* are better than this world and what it contains." (Muslim)

Commentary: It means that the reward awaiting anyone in the hereafter against the two *raka'at* *sunnah* of *Fajr* is more valuable than the world and what it contains. These things are all perishable while the reward is lasting. We will come to know of this in the next world. *Insha Allah*.

(٦٥٥/١٨٣) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ لَا تَدْعُوا هُمَا وَإِنْ طَرَدَتْكُمُ الْخَيْلُ (رواه ابوداؤد)

①. Denoting the class of prayers which the Prophet used to offer regularly and has ordered his followers to do the same. One must not omit them without a cogent reason.

(655/183) it is related by Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Do not omit the 2 rak'ats of the *Sunnats* of *Fajr* even though the circumstances be that horses were chasing you (i.e., you were being carried along in a journey on galloping horses)." (Abu Dawood)

(٦٥٦/١٨٤) عَنْ عَائِشَةَ رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهَا قَالَتْ لَمْ يَكُنِ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ عَلَى شَيْءٍ مِنَ النَّوَافِلِ أَشَدَّ تَعَاهُداً مِنْهُ عَلَى رَكْعَتَيِ الْفَجْرِ.

(رواه البخاري و مسلم)

(656/184) It is related by Sayyidah Ayshah رضي الله عنها that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ did not show more anxiety for any other Sunnah or Nafl prayers than the 2 rak'at before *Fajr*.

(Bukhari and Muslim)

(٦٥٧/١٨٥) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَنْ لَمْ يُصَلِّ رَكْعَتَيِ الْفَجْرِ فَلْيُصَلِّهُمَا بَعْدَ مَا تَطْلُعُ الشَّمْسُ.

(رواه الترمذی)
(657/185) It is related by Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Whoever may not have offered the *sunnah* of *Fajr* should do so after sunrise." (Tirmizi)

Superiority of *Sunnah* and *Nawafil* at Other Times

(٦٥٨/١٨٦) عَنْ أَبِي أَيُّوبَ الْأَنْصَارِيِّ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ أَرْبَعٌ قَبْلَ الظُّهْرِ لَيْسَ فِيهِنَّ تَسْلِيمٌ تَفْتَحُ لَهُنَّ أَبْوَابُ السَّمَاءِ.

(رواه ابوداؤد وابن ماجه)

(658/186) It is related by Abu Ayub Ansari رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "The gates of Paradise open for the for *Rak'at* before *Zuhr* during which *Saluam* is not carried out (i.e., which are offered together)." (Abu Dawood and Ibn Majah)

(٦٥٩/١٨٧) عَنْ عَائِشَةَ أَنَّ النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ كَانَ إِذَا لَمْ يُصَلِّ أَرْبَعًا قَبْلَ الظُّهْرِ صَلَّاهُنَّ بَعْدَهَا.

(رواه الترمذی)
(659/187) Sayyidah Ayshah رضي الله عنها relates that the practice of the Prophet ﷺ was that if he had not offered the four rak'at before *Zuhr* he did so after he had completed the *Zuhr*. (Tirmizi)

Commentary: In the report quoted in *Ibn Majah* it is made clear

that in such a case the Prophet ﷺ offered the four pre-Zuhr *rak'at* after he had offered the two *rak'at* of *Sunnah* after *Zuhr*.

(٦٦٠/١٨٨) عَنْ أُمِّ حَبِيبَةَ قَالَتْ سَمِعْتُ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَنْ حَافِظًا عَلَى أَرْبَعٍ رَكَعَاتٍ قَبْلَ الظُّهْرِ وَأَرْبَعٍ بَعْدَهَا حَرَّمَ اللَّهُ عَلَى النَّارِ .

(رواه أحمد و الترمذی و ابوداؤد و النسائی و ابن ماجه)

(660/188) It is related on the authority of Umm Habiba رضي الله عنها that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Whoever regularly offers 4 *rak'at* before and 4 after *Zuhr*, Allah will forbid the Fire of Hell for him." (Musnad Ahmad, Abu Dawood, Nasai and Ibn Majah)

Commentary: Some commentators have observed that since it is established by authentic hadith that the Prophet ﷺ, generally, offered 2 *rak'at* of *Sunnah* after *Zuhr*, as is, also, borne out by the aforementioned narratives of Sayyidah Ayshah رضي الله عنها, Sayyidina Abdullah bin Umar رضي الله عنه and Sayyidah Umm Habiba رضي الله عنها, the *Muakkadah Sunnat* after *Zuhr* are only 2 *rak'at*. The manner of offering 4 *rak'ats* will, therefore, be to say 2 *Nafl rak'at* in addition to the 2 *Muakkadah rak'at*.

Note: In our country it is quite common to offer an additional 2 *Rak'at* of *Nafl* after the *Sunnah* of *Zuhr*, but people, generally, offer these *Nafl*, as all other *Nafl rak'at*, in the sitting posture and believe that *Nafl rak'at* should always be offered sitting, though it is altogether wrong. A Tradition clearly has it that a prayer offered in the sitting position fetches half the reward of the one offered standing.

(٦٨١/١٨٩) عَنْ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ عُمَرَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ رَحِمَ اللَّهُ امْرَأً صَلَّى قَبْلَ الْعَصْرِ أَرْبَعًا .

(رواه أحمد و الترمذی و ابوداؤد)

(681/189) It is related on the authority of Abdullah bin Umar رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Blessings of the Lord be on the bondsman who offers 4 *rak'at* before *Asr*."

(Musnad Ahmad, Tirmizi and Abu Dawood)

Commentary: It contains the Prophet's ﷺ exhortation about the 4 *rak'at* of *Nafl* before the *Asr* prayer and his usual practice is reported to have been the same, though it, too, is related that, sometimes, he said only 2 *rak'at* before *Asr*.

(٦٦٢/١٩٠) عَنْ مُحَمَّدِ بْنِ عَمَّارٍ بْنِ يَاسِرٍ قَالَ رَأَيْتُ عَمَّارَ بْنَ يَاسِرٍ يُصَلِّي بَعْدَ الْمَغْرِبِ سِتَّ رَكَعَاتٍ وَقَالَ رَأَيْتُ حَبِيبِي صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يُصَلِّي بَعْدَ الْمَغْرِبِ سِتَّ رَكَعَاتٍ وَقَالَ مَنْ صَلَّى بَعْدَ الْمَغْرِبِ سِتَّ رَكَعَاتٍ غُفِرَتْ لَهُ ذُنُوبُهُ وَإِنْ كَانَتْ مِثْلَ زَبَدِ الْبَحْرِ.

(رواه الطبرانی)

(662/190) It is related by Muhammad bin Ammar bin Yasir "I saw my father, Ammar bin Yasir, that he used to offer 6 rak'ats after Maghrib. He said, 'I have seen my beloved, the Prophet, offering 6 rak'at after Maghrib and saying that whoever offers 6 rak'at after Mahgrib, his sins will be forgiven even if they are as profuse as the foam of the sea.' (Tabarani)

Commentary: Two Rak'at after Maghrib are *Sunnat Muakkadah*, as we have already seen in the Traditions related by Sayyidah Ayshah رضي الله عنها, Sayyidina Abdulah bin Umar رضي الله عنه and Sayyidah Umm Habibah رضي الله عنها. If, besides, 4 rak'at of *Nafl* are also offered, it will make 6 rak'at and the bondsman will become worthy of the glad tidings given in the above Tradition.

(٦٦٣/١٩١) عَنْ عَائِشَةَ رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهَا قَالَتْ مَا صَلَّى رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ الْعِشَاءَ قَطُّ فَدَخَلَ عَلَى إِلَّا صَلَّى أَرْبَعَ رَكَعَاتٍ أَوْ سِتَّ رَكَعَاتٍ.

(رواه ابو داؤد)

(663/191) It is related by Sayyidah Ayshah رضي الله عنها "It never happened that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ came to my house (to rests) after offering Isha prayer and he did not offered four or six raka'at." (Abu Dawood)

Commentary: Two rak'at after Isha are *Sunnat Muwakkadah* as shown in the previously mentioned narratives of Umm-i-Habiba, Abdullah bin Umar رضي الله عنه and Sayyidah Ayshah رضي الله عنها but from the above report it appears that the Prophet, also, offered 2, and, sometimes, 4 rak'at in addition to the 2 rak'at of *Sunnat Muwakkadah*.

Witr

(٦٦٤/١٩٢) عَنْ خَارِجَةَ بِنْتِ خَدِاجَةَ قَالَ خَرَجَ عَلَيْنَا رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ وَقَالَ إِنَّ اللَّهَ أَمَدَّكُمْ بِصَلَاةٍ هِيَ خَيْرٌ لَكُمْ مِنْ حُمْرِ النَّعَمِ الْوُتُرُ

جَعَلَهُ اللَّهُ لَكُمْ فِيمَا بَيْنَ صَلَاةِ الْعِشَاءِ إِلَى أَنْ يَطْلُعَ الْفَجْرُ.

(رواه الترمذى و ابوداؤد)

(664/192) Kharijah bin Huzafa رضي الله عنه relates "One day the Messenger of Allah ﷺ came out (of his apartment) and, addressing us, said: 'God has bestowed upon you the gift of another prayer which is better for you than the red camels (on which you place the highest value). It is *Witr*. God has placed it for you after the *Isha*, till day-break (i.e., it can be offered at any time during it).'" (Tirmizi and Abu Dawood)

(٦٦٥/١٩٣) عَنْ بُرَيْدَةَ قَالَ سَمِعْتُ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَقُولُ

الْوِتْرُ حَقٌّ فَمَنْ لَمْ يُؤْتِرْ فَلَيْسَ مِنَّا الْوِتْرُ حَقٌّ فَمَنْ لَمْ يُؤْتِرْ فَلَيْسَ مِنَّا الْوِتْرُ حَقٌّ

فَمَنْ لَمْ يُؤْتِرْ فَلَيْسَ مِنَّا (رواه ابوداؤد)

(665/193) It is related by Buraidah رضي الله عنه "I myself heard the Messenger of Allah ﷺ say, '*Witr* is truth: whoever does not offer *witr* is not one of us. *Witr* is truth; whoever does not offer *witr* is not one of us. *Witr* is truth; whoever does not offer *witr* is not one of us'. (He said it thrice)." (Abu Dawood)

Commentary: These, obviously, are the last words by way of warning and exhortation as regards *Witr*. It is from Traditions like it that Imam Abu Hanifah has concluded that *Witr* is not merely a *Sunnah* but *Wajib* and its place is between an obligatory prayer and *Sunnat Muakkadah*.

(٦٦٦/١٩٤) عَنْ أَبِي سَعِيدٍ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَنْ نَامَ

عَنِ الْوِتْرِ أَوْ نَسِيَهِ فَلْيُصَلِّ إِذَا ذَكَرَ أَوْ اسْتَيْقَظَ. (رواه الترمذى و ابوداؤد و ابن ماجه)

(666/194) It is related by Abu Sa'eed Khudri رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Whoever remains asleep at the time of *Witr* or forgets it should offer it when he wakes up or remembers." (Tirmizi, Abu Dawood and Ibn Majah)

(٦٦٧/١٩٥) عَنْ ابْنِ عُمَرَ عَنِ النَّبِيِّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ قَالَ اجْعَلُوا آخِرَ

صَلَاتِكُمْ بِاللَّيْلِ وَتَرَا. (رواه مسلم)

(667/195) It is related by Ibn Umar رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Make *witr* your last prayer of the night (i.e.,

among the prayers of the night it should be the last to be offered)." (Muslim)

(٦٦٨/١٩٦) عَنْ جَابِرٍ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَنْ خَافَ أَنْ لَا يَقُومَ مِنْ آخِرِ اللَّيْلِ فَلْيُؤْتِرْ أَوَّلَهُ وَمَنْ طَمَعَ أَنْ يَقُومَ آخِرَهُ فَلْيُؤْتِرْ آخِرَ اللَّيْلِ فَإِنَّ صَلَاةَ آخِرِ اللَّيْلِ مَشْهُودَةٌ وَذَلِكَ أَفْضَلُ . (رواه مسلم)

(668/196) It is related by Jabir رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Whoever is unsure that he would wake up during the last part of the night should offer *witr* at the beginning of it (i.e., with *Isha*), and whoever is confident that he will get up (for *Tahajjud*) during the last part of the night should offer *witr* then (i.e., after *Tahajjud*) for the Angels of Mercy are present at that time and it is a time of great superiority." (Muslim)

Commentary: The general command about *witr* is what is contained in the two aforementioned Traditions, i.e., it ought to be offered after and at the end of all the nightly prayers including *Tahajjud*, and, further, that whoever may be sure of waking up in the last hours of the night, should offer it not at the beginning of the night but towards the end of it, with *Tahajjud*, and whoever is not so sure, should do so after *Isha*. The Prophet ﷺ, however, had advised some Companions رضي الله عنهم to offer *witr* at the beginning of the night owing to their special circumstances. Sayyidina Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه being one of them. It is related, on his authority, in *Sahih Bukhari* and *Sahih Muslim* "among the few exceptional exhortations of the Prophet ﷺ to me one was that I offer *witr* at the beginning of the night."

(٦٦٩/١٩٧) عَنْ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ أَبِي قُبَيْسٍ قَالَ سَأَلْتُ عَائِشَةَ بِكُمْ كَانَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يُؤْتِرُ؟ قَالَتْ كَانَ يُؤْتِرُ بِأَرْبَعٍ وَثَلَاثٍ وَسِتٍّ وَثَلَاثٍ وَثَمَانٍ وَثَلَاثٍ وَعَشْرٍ وَثَلَاثٍ وَلَمْ يَكُنْ يُؤْتِرُ بِأَنْقَصَ مِنْ سَبْعٍ وَلَا بِأَكْثَرَ مِنْ ثَلَاثٍ عَشْرَةَ . (رواه ابوداؤد)

(669/197) Abdullah bin Abi Qubays narrates "I enquired from Sayyidah Ayshah رضي الله عنها how many rak'at did the Messenger of Allah ﷺ offer in *witr*, and she replied: "Four and three, and six and three, and eight and three, and ten and three, but never

less than seven or more than thirteen rak'at in *witr*." (Abu Dawood)

Commentary: Some Companions رضي الله عنهم used to describe the joint prayers of Tahajjud and *Witr*, as *Witr*, and such was, also, the case with Sayyidah Ayshah رضي الله عنها. In the above Tradition she has given the reply to Abdullah bin Abu Qays enquiry on the same principle. What she, actually, means is that before the three *rak'at* of *Witr* the sacred Prophet ﷺ sometimes offered only four rak'at of Tahajjud, sometimes six, sometimes eight, and sometimes ten. But he never offered less than four nor more than ten rak'at in *Tahajjud* and, after these rak'at of *Tahajjud*, he offered the three *rak'at* of *witr*.

Recital of Qur'an in *Witr*

(٦٧٠/١٩٨) عَنْ عَبْدِ الْعَزِيزِ بْنِ جُرَيْجٍ قَالَ سَأَلْنَا عَائِشَةَ بَايَ شَيْءٍ كَانَ يُؤْتِرُ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ؟ قَالَتْ كَانَ يَقْرَأُ فِي الْأُولَى بِسَبِّحِ اسْمَ رَبِّكَ الْأَعْلَى وَفِي الثَّانِيَةِ بِقُلْ يَا أَيُّهَا الْكَافِرُونَ وَفِي الثَّالِثَةِ بِقُلْ هُوَ اللَّهُ أَحَدٌ وَالْمُعَوِّذَتَيْنِ .
(رواه الترمذی و ابو داؤد)

(670/198) Abul Aziz bin Jurayj (Taba'ee) has narrated that (once) they asked Sayyidah Ayshah رضي الله عنها what surahs the Messenger of Allah ﷺ recited in *Witr*. She replied: 'He recited *Sabbihisma rabbikal a'alaa* in the first *Rak'at*, *Qul-yaa aiyyuhal kafiroom* in the second and *Qul huwallaahu ahad* and *Mu'awwazateyn* (i.e., *Qul a'oozu birabbil falaq*, and *Qul a'oozu birabbin-naas*) in the third." (Tirmizi and Abu Dawood)

Commentary: Ubayy bin Ka'b and Abdullah bin Abbas رضي الله عنهم have, also, related that the Prophet ﷺ used to recite *Sabbihisma rabbikal a'alaa* in the first, *Qul ya aiyyuhal kafiroom* in the second, and *Qul huwallaahu ahad* in the third *rak'ats* of *witr*, but they have not mentioned the recital of *Mu'awwazateyn* in the third rak'at. It appears from the above narrative that, occasionally, he, also, recited *Mu'awwazateyn*, along with *surah Ikhals*¹, in the third *rak'at*.

①. Meaning *Qul huwallaahu ahad*

Qunoot of Witr

(٦٧١/١٩٩) عَنْ الْحَسَنِ بْنِ عَلِيٍّ قَالَ عَلَّمَنِي رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ كَلِمَاتٍ أَقُولُهُنَّ فِي قُنُوتِ الْوَيْتْرِ اللَّهُمَّ اهْدِنِي فِي مَنْ هَدَيْتَ وَعَافِنِي فِي مَنْ عَافَيْتَ وَتَوَلَّنِي فِي مَنْ تَوَلَّيْتَ وَبَارِكْ لِي فِي مَا أَعْطَيْتَ وَقِنِي شَرَّ مَا قَضَيْتَ فَإِنَّكَ تَقْضِي وَلَا يُقْضَى عَلَيْكَ إِنَّهُ لَا يَذِلُّ مَنْ وَالَيْتَ تَبَارَكْتَ رَبَّنَا وَتَعَالَيْتَ

(رواه الترمذى و ابو داؤد و النسائى وابن ماجه والدارمى)

(671/199) It is related by Hasan bin Ali رضي الله عنه "The Messenger of Allah ﷺ taught me a few supplications which I make in the *Qunoot* of *witr*, (these are):

اللَّهُمَّ اهْدِنِي فِي مَنْ هَدَيْتَ وَعَافِنِي فِي مَنْ عَافَيْتَ وَتَوَلَّنِي فِي مَنْ تَوَلَّيْتَ وَبَارِكْ لِي فِي مَا أَعْطَيْتَ وَقِنِي شَرَّ مَا قَضَيْتَ فَإِنَّكَ تَقْضِي وَلَا يُقْضَى عَلَيْكَ إِنَّهُ لَا يَذِلُّ مَنْ وَالَيْتَ تَبَارَكْتَ رَبَّنَا وَتَعَالَيْتَ

Allaahum-mahdini feeman hadaita, wa 'aafini feeman 'aafaita, wa tawal-lani feeman tawal-laita, wa baarik li feemaa a'taita, wa qini shar-ruma qadaita, fa-in-naka taqdhee walaa yuqdhaa 'alaika, in-nahoo laa yazil-luman waalaita, tabarakta rabbana wa ta'aalait

(O Allah! Guide us to the right path from among those whom You have guided, and accord us security from among those whom You have accorded security, and be our Patron from among those whom You have been Patron, and give us plentitude in what You have bestowed upon us of the good, and protect us from the evil which You have decreed, since it is You who decides and nothing can be decided against You. Our Lord! Blessed and Exalted are you)."

(Tirmizi, Abu Dawood, Nasai, Ibn Majah and Daarami)

Commentary: In some report *Walaa Ya'izzu man 'aadaait* (And no honour can be had by whom you are an enemy) is, also, mentioned after *In-nahoo 'la yazil-ul-man waalait*, and in others *Nastaghfiruka wa natoobu ilaik* (We ask pardon of You and repent before You) has been added after *Tabarakta rabbana wa ta'aalait*, and yet in others the *Durood*, *Wa sal-lal-laahu 'alan-nabeeyi* (And may Allah bless the Prophet) too, occurs after these words of

repentance. Many legists and theologians have adopted this *Qunoot* for recital in *witr*. The *Qunoot* which is current among the Hanafis, i.e., *Allaahumma inna nast'eenuka wa nastaghfurika*..... has been related by Imam Ibn Abu Shaybah and Imam Tahawi, on the authority of Sayyidina Umar ؓ and Abdullah bin Mas'ud ؓ while Allama Shami holds, on the authority of some leading Hanafi authorities, that with the *Qunoot*, *Allaahumma inna nasta'eenuka wa nastaghfurika* — should be also recite along with *Allaahumma-mahdinaa feeman hadait*.....

(٦٧٢/٢٠٠) عَنْ عَلِيٍّ أَنَّ النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ كَانَ يَقُولُ فِي آخِرِ وَتْرِهِ . اللَّهُمَّ إِنِّي أَعُوذُ بِرِضَاكَ مِنْ سَخَطِكَ وَبِمَعْفَاتِكَ مِنْ عِقَابِكَ وَأَعُوذُ بِكَ مِنْكَ لَا أُحْصِي ثَنَاءً عَلَيْكَ أَنْتَ كَمَا أَثْنَيْتَ عَلَى نَفْسِكَ .

(رواه ابو داؤد و الترمذى و النسائى و ابن ماجه)

(672/200) It is related by Sayyidina Ali ؓ that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ used to make this supplication after *witr*: *Allaahumma in-ni a'oozu bi-ridhaaka min Sakhatika wa bi-ma'afatina min 'uqubatika wa a'oodhubika minka laa uhsee thana-an alaika an-ta kamaa athnaita 'alaa nafsika* (O Allah! I seek refuge in Your good pleasure from Your displeasure, and in Your forgiveness from Your retribution; and I seek refuge in You from You. Unable am I to reckon Your Praise which is Your. You are, indeed, as you have described Yourself)."

(Abu Dawood, Tirmizi, Nasai and Ibn Majah)

Commentary: What the above supplication means is that there is no refuge from the reprimand, punishment or anger of Allah. One can find shelter only in His mercy and benevolence. In Sayyidina Ali's ؓ narrative it is simply stated that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ used to make it at the conclusion of *witr* which can mean that he made it as *Qunoot* in the third rak'at, as some authorities have suggested, or before or after *Salaam* in the last *q'adah* of *witr* or in the last *sajdah* of it. It is quoted in *Sahih Muslim*, on the authority of Sayyidah Ayshah رضى الله عنها that once she heard the Prophet ﷺ making this supplication in the *sajdah* of the prayer of the night. Any of the three courses may, however, be followed.

(٦٧٣/٢٠١) عَنْ أَبِي بِنِ كَعْبٍ قَالَ كَانَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا سَلَّمَ فِي الْوُتْرِ قَالَ سُبْحَانَ الْمَلِكِ الْقُدُّوسِ .

(رواه ابو داؤد و التسانى وزاد "لث مرات يطيل")

(673/201) Ubayy bin Ka'b رضي الله عنه has related that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ used to say *Subhaan-al malikul quddoos* (Glory to the King, the Blessed) after the Salaam of *Witr*.

(Abu Dawood and Nasai)

Commentary: In the report quoted in *Nasai* it is added that the Prophet ﷺ used to recite the formula thrice in a long-drawn-out tone. Some other narratives have it that at the third time he pronounced it in a loud voice.

Two Rak'at Nafl After Witr

(٦٧٤/٢٠٢) عَنْ أُمِّ سَلَمَةَ أَنَّ النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ كَانَ يُصَلِّي

بَعْدَ الْوُتْرِ رَكْعَتَيْنِ . (رواه الترمذى وزاد ابن ماجه "خفيفتين وهو جالس")

(674/202) Umm Salmah رضي الله عنها narrated that the Prophet ﷺ offered another two *Rak'at* after *Witr*. (Tirmizi)

This Tradition has, also, been quoted by *Ibn Majah* with the addition that the Prophet ﷺ used to make the two post-*Witr* rak'at brief and offer them in the sitting posture.

Commentary: Apart from Sayyidah Umm Salmah رضي الله عنها, Sayyidah Ayshah رضي الله عنها and Abu Umama رضي الله عنه, too, have narrated that the Prophet ﷺ used to offer the two *Rak'at* after *Witr* in the sitting posture, and some theologians have, therefore, concluded that it is better to offer them while sitting. But others hold that it would not be proper, in this regard, to draw conclusions about the general body of Muslims from what the Prophet ﷺ did. In *Sahih Muslim* it is mentioned, on the authority of Abdullah bin Umar رضي الله عنه, that once on seeing the Prophet offering prayer in the sitting posture he remarked that he had heard from someone that he i.e., the Prophet, said that whoever offers it sitting gets half the reward accruing to him who does it in the standing position. The Prophet ﷺ, thereupon, replied, "Yes. It is the rule, but in this matter, I am not like you. My case is exceptional with God, i.e., I get the full reward even on offering it in the sitting posture." On

the strength of it, a majority of the authorities have expressed the view that there is no special rule for the two *ruk'at* after *Witr* and the general rule that the reward on offering prayer in the sitting posture is half of that on offering it standing applies to them as well.

We have seen that *Witr* should be the last prayer of the night. To offer two *ra'kat* after it will not be at variance with the command for these, in fact, are a part of *Witr* and not a separate prayer in themselves.

Qiyam al-Layl or Tahajjud

There is no obligatory prayer between *Isha* and *Fajr*. If *Isha* is offered at the beginning of the stipulated time, plenty of time is left vacant though it is extremely precious in the sense that inner peace and tranquillity which is felt in the silent hours of the night is not, generally, experienced at any other time and in case a man goes to sleep for sometime after *Isha*, and gets up after midnight, which is the real time for *Tahajjud*, the atmosphere of serenity and devotion in which he offers it does not fall to his lot in any other prayer. Moreover, to leave the bed at that time and offer prayer is, also, highly efficacious for disciplining of the self. Says the Qur'an:

”إِنَّ نَاشِئَةَ اللَّيْلِ هِيَ أَشَدُّ وَطْأً وَأَقْوَمُ قِيْلًا (المزمل ٦:٧٣)

"Truly, the rising by night is most potent for governing (the should), and most suitable for framing the word (of Prayer and Praise). (Al-Muzammil 73:6)

At another place, the bondsmen have been praised:

”تَتَجَاوَى جُنُوبُهُمْ عَنِ الْمَضَاجِعِ يَدْعُونَ رَبَّهُمْ خَوْفًا وَطَمَعًا“ (السجده ١٦:٣٢)

"Who forsake their beds to cry unto their Lord in fear and hope (at the time when people sleep comfortably). (Al-Sajdah 32:16)

The Qur'an, further tells that the reward these bondsmen are going to receive in the Hereafter, which will be utterly pleasing, is known only to God.

"No soul knoweth what is kept hid for them of joy, as a reward for what they used to do). (Al-Sajdah 32:17)

The Prophet ﷺ is commanded one occasion in the Qur'an to observe the *Tahajjud* and promised the praiseworthy station:

”وَمِنَ اللَّيْلِ فَسَاجِدْ بِهِ نَافِلَةً لَّكَ عَلَىٰ أَنْ يَبْعَثَكَ رَبُّكَ مَقَامًا مَّخْمُودًا“

(الاسراء: ١٧: ٧٩)

We learn from authentic Traditions that, during the last part of the night, Allah turns toward His bondsmen with full mercy and benevolence, and those of us who have been blessed, in some measure, with the capability to know or feel such things, also, perceive the heavenly felicity that is associated with that hour.

(٦٧٥/٢٠٣) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَنْزِلُ

رَبُّنَا تَبَارَكَ وَتَعَالَى كُلَّ لَيْلَةٍ إِلَى السَّمَاءِ الدُّنْيَا حِينَ يَبْقَى ثُلُثُ اللَّيْلِ الْآخِرِ يَقُولُ مَنْ يَدْعُونِي فَأَسْتَجِيبَ لَهُ مَنْ يَسْأَلُنِي فَأُعْطِيَهُ مَنْ يَسْتَغْفِرُنِي فَأَغْفِرَ لَهُ .

(رواه البخاري ومسلم)

(675/203) It is related by Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "When the last one-third of the night remains, our Lord, the Glorious One, descends towards the heavens of the world, and proclaims: "Who is there who supplicates Me, and I grant his supplication? Who is there who begs Me for (anything), and I grant it to him? Who is there who seeks My forgiveness, and I forgive him?" (Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: The "descent" of Allah towards the "heavens of the world" spoken of in the above Tradition, is an Attribute and Function of the Lord which is beyond our comprehension in the same way as the reality and significance of expression like the "Hand of Allah", "the Face of Allah" and "He sat on the Throne" is not known to us. In fact, the acknowledgement of the ignorance of and inability to understand the truth, nature and state of the Attributes and Functions of God is the height of knowledge. The pious precursors have constantly upheld the view that ignorance and helplessness in respect of these things should be openly admitted and their knowledge, like that of all other metaphorical and allegorical expressions, be left to Allah and it ought to be believed that whatever they may signify is correct. But this much is clear from this saying that during the last one-third of the night Allah turns towards His bondsmen with special grace and benevolence and calls them personally to prayer, supplication and repentance. Those who believe in it find it harder to keep on

sleeping than to rise from the bed at that time.

(٦٧٦/٢٠٤) عَنْ عَمْرِو بْنِ عَبَسَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ أَقْرَبُ مَا يَكُونُ الرَّبُّ مِنَ الْعَبْدِ فِي جَوْفِ اللَّيْلِ الْآخِرِ فَإِنْ اسْتَطَعْتَ أَنْ تَكُونَ مِمَّنْ يَذْكُرُ اللَّهَ فِي تِلْكَ السَّاعَةِ فَكُنْ . (رواه الترمذی)

(676/204) It is related by 'Amr bin 'Abasa that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "God is nearest to the bondsmen in the later half of the night. So, if it is possible for you to be of the bondsmen who mention Allah at that hour then be of them." (Tirmizi)

Commentary: In this Tradition we are exhorted to occupy ourselves with *Zikr* (God-remembrance) during the later part of the night and though God-remembrance has been mentioned in general terms, prayer undoubtedly, is the highest form of it for it combines the *Zikr* of the heart, the tongue and the limbs.

(٦٧٧/٢٠٥) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ أَفْضَلُ الصَّلَاةِ بَعْدَ الصَّلَاةِ الْمَكْتُوبَةِ الصَّلَاةُ فِي جَوْفِ اللَّيْلِ . (رواه مسلم)

(677/205) It is related by Abu Hurayrah ؓ that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "After the obligatory prayers the most superior prayar is that of the middle of the night (i.e., *Tahajjud*)."(Muslim)

(٦٧٨/٢٠٦) عَنْ أَبِي أُمَامَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ عَلَيْكُمْ بِقِيَامِ اللَّيْلِ فَإِنَّهُ ذَابُ الصَّالِحِينَ قَبْلَكُمْ وَهُوَ قُرْبَةٌ لَكُمْ إِلَى رَبِّكُمْ وَمَكْفَرَةٌ لِلْسَّيِّئَاتِ وَمَنْهَاةٌ عَنِ الْإِثْمِ . (رواه الترمذی)

(678/206) It is related on the authority of Abu Umamah ؓ that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "You should offer *Tahajjud* for it has been the way of the pious souls before you and it is a special means of seeking the countenance of Allah and it removes the evil effects of sins and protects from the transgression of divine laws." (Tirmizi)

Commentary: In this Tradition four characteristics of *Tahajjud* have been described: (i) it has been the practice of virtuous bondsmen of Allah from the days of old; (ii) it is a special source of seeking the propinquity of the Lord; (iii) it possesses the quality of obliterating the harmful effects of sinful deeds by acting as an

atonement for them; and (iv) it restrains a man from evil-doing.

Doubtlessly, prayer of *Tahajjud* is a great boon. It is said about Junayd Bahgdadi that, after his death, some people saw him in their dreams and asked him how it turned out for him up there, the high-souled man replied, "The discourses on higher truths I used to give availed nothing. If anything served me it were the *rak'at* I used to offer in the night.

(٦٧٩/٢٠٧) عَنْ الْمُغِيرَةِ بْنِ شُعْبَةَ قَالَ قَامَ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ حَتَّى تَوَرَّمَتْ قَدْ مَاءَ فَقِيلَ لَهُ لِمَ تَصْنَعُ هَذَا وَقَدْ غُفِرَ لَكَ مَا تَقْدَمُ مِنْ ذَنْبِكَ وَمَا تَأْخُرُ قَالَ أَفَلَا أَكُونُ عَبْدًا شَكُورًا .
(رواه البخارى ومسلم)

(679/207) Mughirah bin Shu'bah رضي الله عنه narrated that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ remained standing for such a long time in the prayer of *Tahajjud* that his feet swelled. It was said to him: "Why do you exert yourself so excessively in prayer when all your sins, of the past as well as of the future, have been forgiven (and Allah has allayed your fears in that regard by making a proclamation of it in the Qur'an)?" "Should I, then, not be His most grateful bondsman (on this extraordinary favour)?" replied the Prophet ﷺ. (Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: Notwithstanding the fact that the Prophet ﷺ needed not to pray much and to make other spiritual exertions like us and that every act of his, even walking and sleeping, was a virtuous act deserving of Divine reward, he offered such long prayers during the night that his feet become swollen.

There is a significant lesson in it for those who merely profess belief for instance; people like us.

Note: In this Tradition the forgiving of the *zunub* of the Prophet has been mentioned, and *zunub*, in common parlance, denotes a sin. It may, therefore, be asked when the guiltlessness of the Divine Prophets عليهم السلام and their freedom from evil influences was an article of faith with the Muslims, what could the forgiving of the sins of the Prophet mean? Of all the explanations that have been furnished, the most satisfying, in our view, is that freedom of the Prophet ﷺ from sins signifies that he is protected against evils which belong to the category of wrong doing or

iniquity and are regarded as sinful for the whole of the *Ummah* as well. But every Prophet, including the Prophet Muhammad ﷺ, can do things which, though not sinful, may not be in keeping with the highest ideal or his lofty position, as for instance, the incident of the Prophet ﷺ forbidding the use of honey to himself or of his being impolite to Abdullah bin Umm maktoom ؓ upon which he was affectionately upbraided by Allah in the surah *al-Tahrim* and *Ahasa* respectively.

Anyhow, even the Prophet ﷺ may do such things over which they feel grieved to such an extent that we do grieve over a major transgression. Thus, when the forgiving of the *zunub* of the holy Prophet ﷺ is mentioned in the Qur'an and the Traditions it simply means the forgiving of such things as mentioned above.

(٦٨٠/٢٠٨) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ رَحِمَ اللَّهُ رَجُلًا قَامَ مِنَ اللَّيْلِ فَصَلَّى وَآيَقَظَ امْرَأَتَهُ فَصَلَّتْ فَإِنْ أَبَتْ نَضَحَ فِي وَجْهِهَا الْمَاءَ رَحِمَ اللَّهُ امْرَأَةً قَامَتْ مِنَ اللَّيْلِ فَصَلَّتْ وَآيَقَظَتْ زَوْجَهَا فَصَلَّى فَإِنْ أَبَى نَضَحَتْ فِي وَجْهِهِ الْمَاءَ .
(رواه ابو داود و النسائي)

(680/208) It is related by Abu Hurayrah ؓ that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Blessings of Allah be on the bondsmen who got up in the night and offered *Tahajjud* prayers, and, also woke up his wife, and she, too, prayed, and if she did not wake up (owing to the overpowering influence of sleep), he administered a mild dash of water on her face. In the same way, blessings of God be on the bondswoman who got up in the night for *Tahajjud* prayers and prayed, and, also, woke up her husband, and he, too, got up and prayed, and, if he did not wake up, she awakened him by administering a mild dash of water on his face."

Commentary: It needs be remembered that the holy Companions ؓ to whom these words were spoken had become sure in their minds, by listening to the exhortations of the Prophet ﷺ and observing his own conduct in respect of *Tahajjud*, about what the bondsmen stood to gain by offering it up and how painful was the loss in neglecting it. Generally speaking, the same was the state of all the Companions ؓ, both male and female. Everyone of them

was eager to partake of this marvellous gift of the Prophet ﷺ to the Ummah. In spite of it, it could and did happen, occasionally, that the husband woke up on time but the wife remained asleep or the wife woke up in time and the husband remained asleep, and, then, the one who had got up wanted to awaken the other who was sleeping and if the latter did not feel inclined to get up due to the preponderance of sleep, he or she woke him or her up by gently sprinkling water over the face of the other out of love and thoughtful attention. In such a case, an act like that was not likely to lead to bitterness or an angry dispute. On the other hand, their fondness and tender affection for each other became stronger. The above Tradition, anyhow, appertains to circumstances like it and the Prophet's exhortation is for the couples who are worthy of it and appreciative of the unique value and significance of prayers of *Tahajjud*.

In The Event of Missing *Tahajjud*

(٦٨١/٢٠٩) عَنْ عُمَرَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَنْ نَامَ عَنْ حِزْبِهِ أَوْ عَنْ شَيْءٍ مِنْهُ فَقَرَأَهُ فِيمَا بَيْنَ صَلَاةِ الْفَجْرِ وَصَلَاةِ الظُّهْرِ كُتِبَ لَهُ كَأَنَّمَا قَرَأَهُ مِنَ اللَّيْلِ .
(رواه مسلم)

(681/209) It is related by Sayyidina Umar رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Whoever remained asleep in the night and (missed) his appointed *Wird*¹ or a part thereof, and, then, made it up between *Fajr* and *Zuhr*, for him it will be written down as having been offered in the night." (Muslim)

Commentary: It shows that if a person has fixed some daily task of worship for himself for the night, as for instance, resolved that he will offer so many *rak'at* or recite so much of the Qur'an, and, on some night, he oversleeps and fails to carry out the whole or part of it, and, then, makes amends for it the same day before the time of *Zuhr*, God will requite him in the same measure as on performing it at appointed time.

(٦٨٢/٢١٠) عَنْ عَائِشَةَ أَنَّ النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ كَانَ إِذَا فَاتَتْهُ الصَّلَاةُ

①. Meaning a daily task of devotion or worship.

مِنَ اللَّيْلِ مِنْ وَجَعٍ أَوْ غَيْرِهِ صَلَّى مِنَ النَّهَارِ ثِنْتَيْ عَشْرَةَ رَكْعَةً. (رواه مسلم)
 (682/210) It is related on the authority of Sayyidah Ayshah رضى الله عنها that when due to illness or some other reason the Prophet ﷺ missed the *Tahajjud* prayer, he offered 12 *rak'at* during the day in the place of that." (Muslim)

Rak'at of *Tahajjud*

(٦٨٣/٢١١) عَنْ عَائِشَةَ قَالَتْ كَانَ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يُصَلِّي مِنَ اللَّيْلِ ثَلَاثَ عَشْرَةَ رَكْعَةً مِنْهَا الْوُتْرُ وَرَكْعَتَا الْفَجْرِ. (رواه مسلم)
 (683/211) It is related on the authority of Sayyidah Ayshah رضى الله عنها that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ offered 13 *rak'at* at night which, also, included *witr* and the 2 *rak'at Sunnah* of Fajr. (Muslim)

Commentary: What Sayyidah Ayshah رضى الله عنها has stated in it about the practice of the holy Prophet ﷺ concerning the rak'at of *Tahajjud* denotes what he did so usually otherwise from her own other narratives we find that, occasionally, he offered up fewer *Rak'at* as well.

(٦٨٤/٢١٢) عَنْ مَسْرُوقٍ قَالَ سَأَلْتُ عَائِشَةَ عَنْ صَلَاةِ رَسُولِ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ بِاللَّيْلِ فَقَالَتْ سَبْعٌ وَتِسْعٌ وَإِحْدَى عَشْرَةَ رَكْعَةً سِوَى رَكْعَتَيْ الْفَجْرِ. (رواه البخارى)
 (684/212) It is related by Masrooq that he enquired from Sayyidah Ayshah رضى الله عنها about the *Tahajjud* of the Prophet ﷺ (i.e., how many *rak'at* he offered in it) and she replied: "Seven and nine and eleven besides the two *rak'at* (Sunnat) of *Fajr*." (Bukhari)

Commentary: It shows that, sometimes, the Prophet ﷺ offered only 7 *rak'at* in *Tahajjud* (4 *rak'at* of *Tahajjud* and 3 of *witr*), and sometimes, 11 (8 *rak'at* of *Tahajjud* and 3 of *witr*).

Some Other Details

(٦٨٥/٢١٣) عَنْ عَائِشَةَ قَالَتْ كَانَ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا قَامَ مِنَ اللَّيْلِ لِيُصَلِّيَ افْتَتَحَ صَلَاتَهُ بِرَكْعَتَيْنِ خَفِيفَتَيْنِ. (رواه مسلم)

(685/213) It is related by Sayyidah Ayshah رضى الله عنها that when the Prophet ﷺ stood up in the night for *Tahajjud*, he first offered two light *rak'at*. (Muslim)

Commentary: Some commentators say that the Prophet ﷺ did so, probably, because he wanted to produce the feeling of alacrity and cheerfulness within himself before offering the longer *rak'at*.

In *Sahih Muslim*, again, it is reported on the authority of Abu Hurayrah رضى الله عنه that the Prophet ﷺ said:

"When anyone of you stands up for prayer in the night, he should begin it with two light *rak'at*.

”إِذَا قَامَ أَحَدُكُمْ مِنَ اللَّيْلِ فَلْيَفْتَحِ
الصَّلَاةَ بِرَكْعَتَيْنِ خَفِيفَتَيْنِ“

(٦٨٦/٢١٤) عَنْ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ عَبَّاسٍ أَنَّهُ رَقَدَ عِنْدَ رَسُولِ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ فَاسْتَيْقَظَ فَتَسَوَّكَ وَتَوَضَّأَ وَهُوَ يَقُولُ إِنَّ فِي خَلْقِ السَّمَوَاتِ وَالْأَرْضِ وَاجْتِلَافِ اللَّيْلِ وَالنَّهَارِ آيَاتٍ لِيَأُولَى الْأَلْبَابِ فَقَرَأَ هُوَ لَا إِلَهَ إِلَّا اللَّهُ حَتَّى خَتَمَ السُّورَةَ ثُمَّ قَامَ فَصَلَّى رَكْعَتَيْنِ فَأَطَالَ فِيهِمَا الْقِيَامَ وَالرُّكُوعَ وَالسُّجُودَ ثُمَّ انْصَرَفَ فَنَامَ حَتَّى نَفَخَ ثُمَّ فَعَلَ ذَلِكَ ثَلَاثَ مَرَّاتٍ سِتَّ رَكْعَاتٍ كُلُّ ذَلِكَ يَسْتَاكُ وَيَتَوَضَّأُ وَيَقْرَأُ هَؤُلَاءِ الْآيَاتِ ثُمَّ أَوْتَرَبَ ثَلَاثَ فَاذَّنَ الْمُؤَذِّنُ فَخَرَجَ إِلَى الصَّلَاةِ وَهُوَ يَقُولُ اللَّهُمَّ اجْعَلْ فِي قَلْبِي نُورًا وَفِي لِسَانِي نُورًا وَاجْعَلْ فِي سَمْعِي نُورًا وَاجْعَلْ فِي بَصَرِي نُورًا وَاجْعَلْ مِنْ خَلْفِي نُورًا وَمِنْ أَمَامِي نُورًا وَاجْعَلْ مِنْ فَوْقِي نُورًا وَمِنْ تَحْتِي نُورًا اللَّهُمَّ اعْطِنِي نُورًا. (رواه مسلم)

(686/214) Abdullah bin Abbas رضى الله عنه narrated that one night he stayed with the Messenger of Allah ﷺ. So, when the time for *Tahajjud* came, he got up and cleansed his teeth with *miswak* and performed *wudu*, and, during that time, he was reciting these invocatory verses from the surah of *Aal Imran*: Lo! In the creation of the heavens and the earth and (in) the difference of night and day are tokens (of His sovereignty) for men of understanding..... (up to the end of *surah*). Then he stood for prayer and offered two *rak'at* in which he carried out very long *qiyam*, *ruku* and *sajdah*. After that, he returned to bed and slept (for a little while) so much so that he began to breathe loudly. He did so thrice after that, (i.e., three times the Prophet ﷺ got

up after a short sleep, cleansed his teeth and performed *wudu* and offered two *rak'at* with extended *qiyam*, *ruku* and *sajdah*). He, thus, offered 6 *rak'ats* (in addition to the two he had said at first), and each time he would cleanse his teeth with *miswak*, perform *wudu* and recite those verses of *Aal Imran*. Later, he offered 3 *Rak'ats* of *witr*. Then, as the *Muazzin* gave the *Azun*, he went out for the *Fajr* prayer, and, at that time, he was reciting the prayers:

اللَّهُمَّ اجْعَلْ فِي قَلْبِي نُورًا وَفِي لِسَانِي نُورًا وَاجْعَلْ فِي سَمْعِي نُورًا وَاجْعَلْ فِي
بَصَرِي نُورًا وَاجْعَلْ مِنْ خَلْفِي نُورًا وَمِنْ أَمَامِي نُورًا وَاجْعَلْ مِنْ فَوْقِي نُورًا وَمِنْ
تَحْتِي نُورًا اللَّهُمَّ اَعْطِنِي نُورًا .

Allahummaj'al fi qalbi noorun wa fi lisani noorun

(O Allah! Produce Light in my heart, and produce light in my tongue, and produce light in my hearing and sight, and produce Light in front of me and behind me and produce Light above me and beneath me. O God! Grant me Light.)" (Muslim)

Commentary: Different versions of this Tradition have been quoted in *Bukhari* and *Muslim* and a few other compilations and some of them are a little more detailed.

The offering of two brief *rak'at* is not mentioned in the above report. The narrator seems to have forgotten to relate it because in all other versions it is distinctly stated that the Prophet ﷺ offer 13 *rak'at* while, in it, only 11 are mentioned which leads one to conclude that the present narrator did not mention the first two *Rak'at* presumably because he felt that those were not a part of *Tahajjud* but *Tahiyyat-ul-wudu*.

The "Prayer of Light" stated in it contains nine phrases but, in some other versions, some more phrases are found. It is a most luminous prayer, indeed. It is a supplication to Allah to grant light in body and spirit and around oneself. The verse of the Qur'an is recalled:

اللَّهُ نُورُ السَّمَوَاتِ وَالْأَرْضِ (النور ٢٤: ٣٥)

Also the verse:

صِبْغَةَ اللَّهِ وَمَنْ أَحْسَنُ مِنَ اللَّهِ صِبْغَةً (البقرة ٢: ١٢٨)

(٦٨٧/٢١٥) عَنْ حُذَيْفَةَ أَنَّهُ رَأَى النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يُصَلِّي مِنَ اللَّيْلِ فَكَانَ يَقُولُ اللَّهُ أَكْبَرُ ثَلَاثًا ذُو الْمَلَكُوتِ وَالْجَبْرُوتِ وَالْكَبْرِيَاءِ وَالْعَظَمَةِ ثُمَّ اسْتَفْتَحَ فَقَرَأَ الْبَقْرَةَ ثُمَّ رَكَعَ فَكَانَ رُكُوعُهُ نَحْوًا مِنْ قِيَامِهِ فَكَانَ يَقُولُ فِي رُكُوعِهِ سُبْحَانَ رَبِّيَ الْعَظِيمِ ثُمَّ رَفَعَ رَأْسَهُ مِنَ الرُّكُوعِ فَكَانَ قِيَامُهُ نَحْوًا مِنْ رُكُوعِهِ يَقُولُ لِرَبِّي الْحَمْدُ ثُمَّ سَجَدَ فَكَانَ سُجُودُهُ نَحْوًا مِنْ قِيَامِهِ فَكَانَ يَقُولُ فِي سُجُودِهِ سُبْحَانَ رَبِّيَ الْأَعْلَى ثُمَّ رَفَعَ رَأْسَهُ مِنَ السُّجُودِ وَكَانَ يَقْعُدُ فِيمَا بَيْنَ السَّجْدَةِ تَيْنِ نَحْوًا مِنْ سُجُودِهِ وَكَانَ يَقُولُ رَبِّ اغْفِرْ لِي رَبِّ اغْفِرْ لِي فَصَلَّى أَرْبَعَ رَكَعَاتٍ قَرَأَ فِيهِنَّ الْبَقْرَةَ وَالْإِسَاءَ وَالْمَائِدَةَ أَوِ الْآلْعَامَ شَكَّ شُعْبَةً . (رواه ابو داود)

(687/215) It is related by Huzayfah رضي الله عنه that, one night, he saw the Prophet ﷺ offer the *Tahajjud* prayer. Commencing it, the Prophet said: "Allahu Akbar, Allahu Akbar, Allahu Akbar, Zul-malakoot wal-jabroot wal-kibriyai wal-'azmati (God is Most Great, God is Most Great, God is Most Great, Lord of Sovereignty and Power, Splendour and Greatness). After it, he began the prayer. Then (after *surah Al-Fateha*), the Prophet recited *surah Al-Baqarah*, and then, performed *ruku* and his *ruku* was like *qiyam* (i.e., as he had made a very long *qiyam* and recited the whole of *surah Al-Baqarah* in one *rak'at* so, also, did he carry out a prolonged *ruku*), and during it, he went on saying, again and again: *Subhana rabi-biyal azeem* (Glory to Allah, the Most Great). He, then, raised his head from *ruku*, and stood for longtime as he had done in *ruku*, and, during *quama*, the formula *Li-rabbial hamd* (All praise to Allah) was on his lips. After it, as he performed the *sajdah*, his *sajdah*, too, was very long like his *ruku*, and, during it, he said: *Subhaana rab-biyal-a'laa* (Glory to Allah, the Most High). Then, he raised his head from *sajdah* and between the two *sajdas* he sat for as much time as in the *sajdah*, and, during the intervening *Jalsa*, he prayed: *Rabbighfirli, Rabbighfirli* (Forgive me, my Lord! Forgive me, my Lord)! He offered 4 *rak'at* at that time in which he recited *surah Al-Aal Imran*, *surah An-Nisaa* and *surah Al-Maidah* or *surah Al-An'aam*. (Shu'ba the teacher of the teacher of Imam Abu Dawood, is not sure whether his teacher,

'Amr bin Murrah, had spoken of the recital of *surah Al-Maidah* or *surah al-An'aam* in the fourth *Rak'at*. (Abu Dawood)

Commentary: Many other Companions, besides Sayyidina Huzayfah رضي الله عنه, have, also, narrated events regarding the offering of *Tahajjud* by the Prophet ﷺ with a prolonged recital and greatly extended *ruku* and *sajdah*. Thus, Awf bin Maalik Ashj'ae has described the Prophet's ﷺ *Tahajjud* prayer of a night in which he recited *surah Al-Baqarah* and *surah Al-Imran* in the first two *Rak'at*, and even longer *surahs*, perhaps *surah An-Nisaa* and *surah Al-Maida*, in the next two *rak'at*, and in such a way that when a verse of Mercy occurred, he halted and prayed for Mercy during the recital and when a verse of punishment occurred, he sought protection from it in the same manner.

It should be kept in the mind that the authorities are unanimously of the view that it is altogether legitimate to halt and pray during recital in *Tahajjud*, as in all over *Nafil* prayers.

(٦٨٨/٢١٦) عَنْ أَبِي ذَرٍّ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ حَتَّى أَصْبَحَ بِآيَةٍ وَالْآيَةُ إِنْ تَعَذَّبْتَهُمْ فَإِنَّهُمْ عِبَادُكَ وَإِنْ تَغْفِرْلَهُمْ فَإِنَّكَ أَنْتَ الْعَزِيزُ الْحَكِيمُ.
(رواه النسائي وابن ماجه)

(688/216) It is related by Abu Zarr Ghifari رضي الله عنه that (once) in a nightly prayer (i.e., *Tahajjud*) the Prophet ﷺ went on reciting a single verse till it was morning and the verse (of *Al-Ma'dah*) was: *In to'azzibhum fa-inna-hum 'ibduka wa in taghfirlahum fa-innaka antal 'azeezul hakeem* (If You do punish them, they are Your slaves, and if You do forgive them, You are the Exalted, the Wise) (V: 121) (Nasai and Ibn Majah)

Commentary: The aforementioned verse is a part of the statement of regret and humble petition made by Sayyidina Isa عليه السلام in reply to a question put to him by Allah. It is stated in the last section of *surah Maidah* that, on the Day of Judgement, God will ask him if he had told his followers to deify him and his mother aside of Allah. Prophet Isa عليه السلام will, then, plead his innocence and say:

"O Lord! Nothing is concealed from You. You are the Knower of what is hidden and it is Your Knowledge that I had preached to them nothing but Divine Unity and invited them, solely, to it. They

took to polytheism after I had departed from the world.

”إِنْ تَعَذَّبْتَهُمْ فَإِنَّهُمْ عِبَادُكَ وَإِنْ تَغْفِرْ لَهُمْ فَإِنَّكَ أَنْتَ الْعَزِيزُ الْحَكِيمُ“

(مائدة ١١٨:٥)

Now, if You do punish them for it, they are Your servants and You have the right to chastise them as it pleases You, and if You do forgive them, that is easy for You. You are the All-Powerful, the All-wise, and Your decision shall not be out of compulsion or constraint but sapience and good judgement."

As for the act of reciting the verse, again and again, till daybreak, some commentators have remarked that, perhaps, on arriving at it, the Prophet ﷺ was reminded of his followers about whom it had been revealed to him that like the earlier communities, they, too, would fall a prey, in quite a large way, to the polytheistic beliefs and practices, and, out of the resulting anxiety, he went on repeating the humble request and entreaty of Prophet Isa (عليه السلام).

(٦٨٩/٢١٧) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ كَانَتْ قِرَاءَةُ النَّبِيِّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ

بِاللَّيْلِ يَرْفَعُ طَوْرًا وَيُخْفِضُ طَوْرًا. (رواه ابو داود)

(689/217) Abu Hurayrah ؓ narrates that in the prayer of the night the Prophet ﷺ, sometimes, did the recitation in a loud voice, and, sometimes in a low voice. (Abu Dawood)

(٦٩٠/٢١٨) عَنْ أَبِي قَتَادَةَ أَنَّ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ خَرَجَ لَيْلَةً

فَإِذَا هُوَ بِأَبِي بَكْرٍ يُصَلِّيُ يَخْفِضُ مِنْ صَوْتِهِ وَمَرَّ بِعُمَرَ وَهُوَ يُصَلِّيُ رَافِعًا صَوْتَهُ قَالَ فَلَمَّا اجْتَمَعَا عِنْدَ النَّبِيِّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ قَالَ يَا أَبَا بَكْرٍ مَرَرْتُ بِكَ وَأَنْتَ تُصَلِّيُ تَخْفِضُ صَوْتَكَ قَالَ قَدْ أَسْمَعْتُ مَنْ تَأْجِثُ يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ وَقَالَ لِعُمَرَ مَرَرْتُ بِكَ وَأَنْتَ تُصَلِّيُ رَافِعًا صَوْتَكَ فَقَالَ يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ أَوْفِظِ الْوَسْطَانِ وَأَطْرُدِ الشَّيْطَانَ فَقَالَ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَا أَبَا بَكْرٍ ارْفَعْ مِنْ صَوْتِكَ شَيْئًا وَقَالَ لِعُمَرَ اخْفِضْ مِنْ صَوْتِكَ شَيْئًا. (رواه ابو داود)

(690/218) It is related by Abu Qatadah ؓ that one night, the Messenger of Allah ﷺ went out and saw that Abu Bakr ؓ was offering prayer in a very subdued voice, and as he passed by Umar ؓ, he found him offering prayer in a very loud voice. When (at some other time) both of them came to the Prophet ﷺ

together, he said to Abu Bakr, "I passed by you and saw that you were praying in a very low voice." Abu Bakr ؓ replied, "I made myself heard to Whom I was addressing, and He heard me." Then, in the same way, the Prophet ﷺ said to Umar ؓ, "I passed by you in the night and saw that you were praying in a very loud voice." "O messenger of Allah," replied Umar ؓ, "I wanted to wake up the sleepy ones and to drive away the Satan by reciting loudly." The Prophet ﷺ, observed, "Abu Bakr ؓ, you should pray a little more loudly, and, Umar ؓ, you should pray a little more quietly." (Abu Dawood)

Commentary: Generally, it is better to offer *Tahajjud* in a moderate voice. It should neither be too loud nor too subdued. But, if at anytime, it was preferable to pray it quietly, it should be done that way, and, similarly, in case it was more appropriate, at a particular time, to offer it in a loud voice, one should do so.

Chasht and Ishraq

As no obligatory prayer has been prescribed between *Isha* and *Fajr*, and one is exhorted to only offer a few *rak'ats* of *Tahajjud* during that time, in the same way no obligatory prayer has been enjoined for the long interwal between *Fajr* and *Zuhr*, but we are advised to offer at aleast two and as many as posible rak'at of *Nafl* as *Salat-ud-Duha* during it. If these *rak'at* are offered a short while after sunrise, they are called *Ishraq* and if when the day has advanced considerably, *Chasht*.

Here we shall give the substance of what Shah Waliullah has to say about these *Nafl rak'at*.

"The day (which among the Arabs begins with *Fajr* and is divided into four parts called *Pahr* or divisions), it was decided by Allah, in His Infinite Wisdom, that none of the four divisions of it should be withour prayer. Thus, *Fajr* was made obligatory at the beginnig of the first division and *Zuhr* and *Asr* for the third and foruth divisions respectively, and, in the second division, which had been left free from an obligatory service as a concession to the economic activities of the people, as a whole, *Salat-ud-Duha* was enjoined as a *Nafl* prayer and by narrating its virtues, it was suggested, by way of an inducement, that the bondsmen who could find time from their engagements to offer a few *rak'at* during it

should avail themselves of the blessing. *Salat-ud-duha*, is, at least, 2 rak'at, but 4 rak'at are more beneficial, and 8, even better."¹

Let us now read some ahadith on the subject.

(٦٩١/٢١٩) عَنْ أَبِي ذَرٍّ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يُضِيحُ عَلَى كُلِّ سُلَامَى مِنْ أَحَدِكُمْ صَدَقَةٌ فَكُلُّ تَسْبِيحَةٍ صَدَقَةٌ وَكُلُّ تَحْمِيدَةٍ صَدَقَةٌ وَكُلُّ تَهْلِيلَةٍ صَدَقَةٌ وَكُلُّ تَكْبِيرَةٍ صَدَقَةٌ وَأَمْرٌ بِالْمَعْرُوفِ صَدَقَةٌ وَنَهْيٌ عَنِ الْمُنْكَرِ صَدَقَةٌ وَيُجْزَى مِنْ ذَلِكَ رَكْعَتَانِ يَرْكَعُهُمَا مِنَ الصُّحَى

(رواه مسلم)

(691/219) It is related by Abu Zarr Ghifari رضي الله عنه that the Prophet ﷺ said: 'There is charity on each joint of everyone of you in the morning (i.e., when anyone rises in sound, he should express his gratitude to Allah by offering charity that is, performing a good and virtuous deed, in the name of every joint, and the list of such deeds is very long). Thus, to say *Subhana Allah* (Glory to God) once is charity, and to say *Al-hamdu lillaah* (Praise to be God), also, is charity, and to say *laa ilaaha illal-Allah* (there is no god save One God), also, is charity, and to sanction what is allowed and forbid what is prohibited, also, is charity, and, for this thanksgiving, two rak'at are enough which one should offer at the time of *Chasht*.' (Muslim)

Commentary: It shows that the propitiatory offering a man should make every morning on behalf of his joints get fulfilled with the offering of two rak'at of *Chasht*, one of the reasons of which, probably, is that prayer is a form of worship in which each and every limb and joint of a person, and his inner and outward selves, participates.

(٦٩٢/٢٢٠) عَنْ أَبِي الدَّرْدَاءِ وَأَبِي ذَرٍّ قَالَا قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ عَنِ اللَّهِ تَبَارَكَ وَتَعَالَى إِنَّهُ قَالَ يَا بَنَ آدَمَ إِرْكَعْ لِي أَرْبَعَ رَكْعَاتٍ مِنْ أَوَّلِ النَّهَارِ أَكْفِكَ آخِرَهُ.

(رواه الترمذی)

(692/220) It is related by Abu Darda and Abu Zarr Ghifari رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ narrated that Allah has said, "O son of Adam, you take upon yourself only this much of

responsibility that you will offer 4 *rak'at* for My sake during the early part of the day, and I, in return, shall suffice you till the rest of the day." (Tirmizi)

Commentary: The bondsman who offers 4 *rak'at* at the time of *Ishraq* or *Chasht*, with absolute reliance upon the promise of Allah, will *Insha Allah* see how his whole day's needs are supplied by Him.

(٦٩٣/٢٢١) عَنْ مُعَاذَةَ قَالَتْ سَأَلْتُ عَائِشَةَ كَمْ كَانَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يُصَلِّي صَلَاةَ الضُّحَى؟ قَالَتْ أَرْبَعٌ رَكَعَاتٍ وَيَزِيدُ مَا شَاءَ اللَّهُ.

(رواه مسلم)

(693/221) Mu'azah Adawiyah narrated to us that (once) she asked Sayyidah Ayshah رضى الله عنها how many *rak'at* did the Prophet ﷺ offer in the prayer of *Chasht*. She replied: "Four *rak'at* and as many more as Allah willed." (Muslim)

Commentary: It shows that the Prophet ﷺ usually offered 4 *rak'at* at the time of *Chasht*, and, occasionally, a few more. Sayyidah Ayshah's رضى الله عنها own practice was to offer four *rak'at* and so intense was her fondness for them that she would say, "Even if my parents were sent back to the world I will not miss these *rak'at* in the excitement of meeting them."

(٦٩٤/٢٢٢) عَنْ أُمِّ هَانِي قَالَتْ إِنَّ النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ دَخَلَ بَيْتَهَا يَوْمَ فَتْحِ مَكَّةَ فَاغْتَسَلَ وَصَلَّى ثَمَانِي رَكَعَاتٍ فَلَمْ أَرِ صَلَاةَ قَطُّ أَحَفَّ مِنْهَا غَيْرَ أَنَّهُ يُتِمُّ الرُّكُوعَ وَالسُّجُودَ وَقَالَتْ فِي رِوَايَةٍ أُخْرَى وَذَلِكَ ضَحَى.

(رواه البخارى و مسلم)

(694/222) It is related on the authority of Umm Haani bint Abu Talib رضى الله عنها that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ came to her house on the day of the Victory of Makkah where he had a bath, and, then, offered 8 *rak'at* (which were so brief that) she had not seen a prayer as brief as that, but he was carrying out ruku and *sajda* fully." (In another version of the same Tradition it is stated that it was the time of *Chasht*).

(٦٩٥/٢٢٣) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَنْ

حَافِظٌ عَلَى شُفْعَةِ الصُّحَى غُفِرَتْ لَهُ ذُنُوبُهُ وَإِنْ كَانَتْ مِثْلَ زَبَدِ الْبَحْرِ .

(رواه احمد و الترمذى و ابن ماجه)

(695/223) It is related by Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Whoever took care to offer 2 *rak'at* at *Chasht*, all his sins will be forgiven even though they are as profuse as the foam of the sea."

(Tirmizi, Musnad Ahmad and Ibn Majah)

Commentary: We have explained earlier the meaning of forgiveness of sins against worship and righteousness. That must be remembered here.

(٦٩٦/٢٢٤) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ أَوْصَانِي خَلِيلِي بِثَلَاثِ بِصِيَامٍ ثَلَاثَةِ أَيَّامٍ مِنْ

كُلِّ شَهْرٍ وَرَكْعَتَيِ الصُّحَى وَأَنْ أُوتِرَ قَبْلَ أَنْ أَرْقُدَ . (رواه مسلم)

(696/224) It is related by Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه "My beloved, the Prophet ﷺ, exhorted me specially three things: three days of fasting every month; two *rak'at* of *Chasht* and offering of *Witr* before retiring to bed. "

(Muslim)

(٦٩٧/٢٢٥) عَنْ أَبِي سَعِيدٍ قَالَ كَانَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يُصَلِّي

الصُّحَى حَتَّى نَقُولَ لَا يَدْعُهَا وَيَدْعُهَا حَتَّى نَقُولَ لَا يُصَلِّيَهَا . (رواه الترمذى)

(697/225) It is related by Abu Saeed Khudri رضي الله عنه "(Sometimes) the Prophet ﷺ offered the *Chasht* with (such) heedfulness and constancy that we used to say that he would, now, never omit it (and go on saying it forever), and, (sometimes), he gave it up (in such a manner) that we used to say that he would, now, (perhaps), never offer it."

(Tirmizi)

Commentary: Explaining why the Prophet did not offer *Chasht* (regularly), Sayyidah Ayshah رضي الله عنها once remarked "sometimes he even abstained from acts which were very dear to his heart for fear that the common Muslims would observe them in emulation of his example, and these would be (ultimately) prescribed to them as a duty."

Anyhow, the holy Prophet ﷺ, occasionally, used to omit *Nafil* prayers like those of *Chasht* and *Ishraq* for the reason indicated above by her, and it is an accepted principal that anyone who desists from performing a virtuous deed with such an aim and

intention continues to earn the reward that is on it even during the period of abstention. Evidently, a consideration like that was exclusive to the Prophet ﷺ. No one else enjoys that position.

Nafl Prayers on Special Occasions

The *Nafl* prayers which are to be offered before or after *Fard rak'at*, as also *Tahajjud*, *Chasht* and *Ishraq*, have a fixed time at which alone these can be offered. But there are some other prayers like *Tahiyat ul-wudu* (two *rak'at* of ablution), *Tahhiyya-tul Masjid* (two *rak'at* of mosque), *Salatul Haajah* (the prayer of need), *Salah-i-Tawba* (prayer of repentance), *Salah Istikhara* (Prayer of angury). They are related not to a particular hour but to a particular occasion or circumstances. These prayers are not offered at a specified time but whenever the need is felt or the conditions that call for them arise. We have already examined the Traditions regarding *Tahiyyatul Wudu* and *Tahiyyatul Masjid*. Now, we propose to take up the sayings that appertain to the other *Nafl* prayers of this category.

Salat Istighfar

(٦٩٨/٢٢٦) عَنْ عَلِيٍّ قَالَ حَدَّثَنِي أَبُو بَكْرٍ وَصَدَقَ أَبُو بَكْرٍ قَالَ سَمِعْتُ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَقُولُ مَا مِنْ رَجُلٍ يُذِيبُ ذَنْبًا ثُمَّ يَقُومُ فَيَتَطَهَّرُ ثُمَّ يُصَلِّي ثُمَّ يَسْتَغْفِرُ اللَّهَ إِلَّا غَفَرَ اللَّهُ لَهُ ثُمَّ قَرَأَ وَالَّذِينَ إِذَا فَعَلُوا فَاحِشَةً أَوْ ظَلَمُوا أَنْفُسَهُمْ ذَكَرُوا اللَّهَ فَاسْتَغْفَرُوا الذُّنُوبَ بِهِمْ . (رواه الترمذی)

(698/226) Sayyidina Ali ؑ narrated that Abu Bakr ؑ (who, certainly is truthful and sincere of speech) said to him that he heard the Prophet ﷺ say: "If anyone commits a sin, and, then, gets up, and performs *wudu*, and offers prayer, and seeks the forgiveness of Allah, He, in any-case, forgives him." After it, the Prophet recited the verse of the Qur'an:

”وَالَّذِينَ إِذَا فَعَلُوا فَاحِشَةً أَوْ ظَلَمُوا أَنْفُسَهُمْ ذَكَرُوا اللَّهَ فَاسْتَغْفَرُوا الذُّنُوبَ بِهِمْ وَمَنْ يَغْفِرِ اللَّهُ لَهُ فَلَا إِلَهَ إِلَّا اللَّهُ وَلَمْ يُصِرُّوا عَلَى مَا فَعَلُوا وَهُمْ يَعْلَمُونَ أُولَٰئِكَ جَزَاءُهُمْ مَغْفِرَةٌ مِنْ رَبِّهِمْ وَجَنَّاتُ تَجْرِي مِنْ تَحْتِهَا الْأَنْهَارُ خَالِدِينَ فِيهَا وَنِعْمَ أَجْرُ الْعَامِلِينَ . (آل عمران. ٣: ١٣٥-١٣٦)

"And those who, when they do an evil thing or wrong themselves, remember Allah and implore forgiveness for their sins — who forgiveth sins save Allah only?— and will not, knowingly, repeat the wrong they did.(Aal-e-Imran:135,136)(Tirmizi)

Commentary: The verse mentioned above is from surah *Aal Imran*. At first, the pious bondsmen of Allah are spoken of for whom Heaven has, specially, been prepared. It is, then, added that:

The reward of such will be forgiveness from their Lord, and Gardens underneath which rivers flow, wherein they will abide forever bountiful reward for those who act.

In it, glad tidings of forgiveness and Paradise are given the sinning bondsmen who are not habitual sinners but their state is that they feel sincere regret when they go astray and are guilty of a major or minor transgression and turn to the Lord in earnest repentance.

In this Tradition the Prophet ﷺ has said that the best way to beseech pardon of Allah is to offer two rak'at, after performing ablution, and, then, pray for the remission of one's sins. The sin will, in that case, be forgiven.

Salatul Hajat

(٦٩٩/٢٢٧) عَنْ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ أَبِي أَوْفَى قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَنْ كَانَتْ لَهُ حَاجَةٌ إِلَى اللَّهِ أَوْ إِلَى أَحَدٍ مِنْ بَنِي آدَمَ فَلْيَتَوَضَّأْ فَلْيُحْسِنِ الْوُضُوءَ ثُمَّ لِيُصَلِّ رَكَعَتَيْنِ ثُمَّ لِيُثْنِ عَلَى اللَّهِ تَعَالَى وَلِيُصَلِّ عَلَى النَّبِيِّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ ثُمَّ لِيَقُلْ لَا إِلَهَ إِلَّا اللَّهُ الْحَلِيمُ الْكَرِيمُ. سُبْحَانَ اللَّهِ رَبِّ الْعَرْشِ الْعَظِيمِ وَالْحَمْدُ لِلَّهِ رَبِّ الْعَالَمِينَ أَسْأَلُكَ مُوجِبَاتِ رَحْمَتِكَ وَغَرَائِمَ مَغْفِرَتِكَ وَالْغَنِيمَةَ مِنْ كُلِّ بَرٍّ وَالسَّلَامَةَ مِنْ كُلِّ إِثْمٍ لَأَتَدَّعِيَ لِي ذَنْبًا إِلَّا غَفَرْتَهُ وَلَا هَمًّا إِلَّا فَرَّجْتَهُ وَلَا حَاجَةً مِنِّي لَكَ إِلَّا قَضَيْتَهَا يَا أَرْحَمَ الرَّاحِمِينَ

(رواه الترمذی و ابن ماجه)

(699/227) It is related on the authority of Abdullah bin Abu Awfa ؓ that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Whoever has a need, in relation to Allah or man (i.e., no matter whether it is connected directly with Allah and no bondsman comes into the picture or apparently, with a bondsman), he should first perform

Wudu, and perform it well, and, then, offer 2 *rak'at* prayer, and, then, recite praises in honour of Allah, and, then, send blessings on the Prophet ﷺ, and, then, beseech the Lord in these words:

لَا إِلَهَ إِلَّا اللَّهُ الْحَلِيمُ الْكَرِيمُ . سُبْحَانَ اللَّهِ رَبِّ الْعَرْشِ الْعَظِيمِ وَالْحَمْدُ لِلَّهِ
رَبِّ الْعَالَمِينَ أَسْأَلُكَ مُوجِبَاتِ رَحْمَتِكَ وَغَزَائِمَ مَغْفِرَتِكَ وَالْغَنِيمَةَ مِنْ
كُلِّ بَرٍّ وَسَلَامَةٍ مِنْ كُلِّ إِثْمٍ لَا تَدْعُ لِي ذَنْبًا إِلَّا غَفَرْتَهُ وَلَا هَمًّا إِلَّا فَرَّجْتَهُ
وَلَا حَاجَةَ هِيَ لَكَ رِضًا إِلَّا قَضَيْتَهَا يَا أَرْحَمَ الرَّاحِمِينَ

Laa ilaaha il- lallaahu alhaleemul kareem. subhan allahi rabbil 'arshil azeem. wal-hamdu lillaahi rabbil 'aalameen, as-'aluka moajibaat-i-rahmatika wa 'aza'ima maghfaratika wal-ghaneemata min kulli bir-rivas-salaamata min kulli ithmin laa tadu'a li zanban illa ghafartahu wa laa hamman illa farrajtahu wa laa hajjatan hiya laka rizan illa qazaitaha yaa ar-ham-urrahimeen.

(There is no deity but Allah, the Most Benevolent, the Most Gracious. Sublime is He who is the Owner of the Great throne. All praise is for Allah who is the Lord of the Worlds. O Allah! I beg of You deeds and virtues and states that are a source of Your Mercy and a sure means to Your Forgiveness, and I beg You a share in all good things, and I seek Your protection from all evils. O Allah! Forgive me all my sins and remove from me every anxiety and distress and fulfil my every need that may be pleasing to You. You are the Most Merciful of those who show mercy.)
(Tirmizi and Ibn Majah)

Commentary: It is a matter of faith with all truthful Believers that everything lies in the hands of Allah and what may seem to be done through the agency of man, actually, gets accomplished by His command. *Salatul Hajah*, indicated by the sacred Prophet ﷺ in the above Tradition, is the most effective means of getting one's needs granted by Him. It is the everyday experience of the bondsmen who are fortunate enough to place reliance on these spiritual realities. They, indeed, have come to regard *Salatul Hajah* as the key to the treasures of the Lord.

In this Tradition the Prophet ﷺ has advised us to take recourse to *Salatul Hajah* for the fulfilment of such wants also that, apparently, are connected with this or that bondsman. One of its

exceptional advantages is that when we will pray to Allah in this manner, after offering the two rak'at of *Salatul Hajat*, for our needs of a similar kind, our belief that it is not the bondsman but Allah who is the disperser of wants will grow stronger and we will begin to look upon the bondsman only as a tool of Divine will and purpose. After it, when we will see a need of ours being fulfilled, it will not have the effect of weakening or undermining our faith in the Unity of Allah.

(٧٠٠/٢٢٨) عَنْ حُذَيْفَةَ قَالَ كَانَ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا حَزَبَهُ أَمْرٌ صَلَّى .
(رواه ابو داؤد)

(700/228) Huzaifah رضي الله عنه related to us that it was custom of the Prophet ﷺ that whenever he was confronted with a perplexing situation he engaged himself in prayer. (Abu Dawood)

Commentary: In the Qur'an, too, the bondsmen are exhorted:

اسْتَعِينُوا بِالصَّبْرِ وَالصَّلَاةِ (البقرة ١٥٣:٢)

Seek help in steadfastness and prayer (Al-Baqarah 2:153)

The Prophet ﷺ, accordingly, used to occupy himself in prayer of seeking the help of Allah in every difficulty and the detailed manner of it that he taught to his followers is contained in Abdullah bin Abi Awfa's narrative given earlier.

Salat Istikhara

The knowledge of man is limited. It is, also, imperfect. Often it happens that he want to do a thing the outcome of which is not good for him. The Prophet ﷺ has advised us to offer *Salatul Istakhara*¹ when we have an important decision to take but cannot make up our mind, and, through it, beseech Allah for guidance and good fortune.

(٧٠١/٢٢٩) عَنْ جَابِرٍ قَالَ كَانَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يُعَلِّمُنَا الْإِسْتِخَارَةَ فِي الْأُمُورِ كَمَا يُعَلِّمُنَا السُّورَةَ مِنَ الْقُرْآنِ يَقُولُ إِذَا هُمْ أَحَدُكُمْ بِالْأَمْرِ فَلْيَرْكَعْ رَكَعَتَيْنِ مِنْ غَيْرِ الْقَرِيطَةِ ثُمَّ لِيَقُلْ . اللَّهُمَّ إِنِّي أَسْتَخِيرُكَ

●. Istikhara denotes the act of imploring Allah to guide one to the right course concerning an endeavour.

بِعِلْمِكَ وَاسْتَقْدِرُكَ بِقُدْرَتِكَ وَأَسْأَلُكَ مِنْ فَضْلِكَ الْعَظِيمِ فَإِنَّكَ
تَقْدِرُونَ لَا أَقْدِرُونَ وَتَعْلَمُونَ وَلَا أَعْلَمُ وَأَنْتَ عَلَّامُ الْغُيُوبِ. اللَّهُمَّ إِنْ كُنْتَ تَعْلَمُ أَنَّ
هَذَا الْأَمْرَ خَيْرٌ لِي فِي دِينِي وَمَعَاشِي وَعَاقِبَةِ أَمْرِي (أَوْ قَالَ فِي عَاجِلِ أَمْرِي
وَاجِلِهِ) فَأَقْدِرْهُ لِي وَيَسِّرْهُ لِي ثُمَّ بَارِكْ لِي فِيهِ وَإِنْ كُنْتَ تَعْلَمُ أَنَّ هَذَا
مَرَشَرٌ لِي فِي دِينِي وَمَعَاشِي وَعَاقِبَةِ أَمْرِي (أَوْ قَالَ فِي عَاجِلِ أَمْرِي وَاجِلِهِ)
فَاصْرِفْهُ عَنِّي وَاصْرِفْنِي عَنْهُ وَاقْدِرْ لِي الْخَيْرَ حَيْثُ كَانَ ثُمَّ أَرْضِنِي بِهِ قَالَ
وَيُسَمَّى حَاجَتَهُ.

(رواه البخاري)

(701/229) It is related by Jabir رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ taught us the method of doing *Istikhara* in our affairs with the same care and solicitude with which he taught us the verses of the Qur'an. He said: "When anyone of you decides to do a thing (and is worried about the outcome, he should do *Istikhara* like this). (He should) first offer 2 *rak'ats* of *Nafil*, and, then, entreat the Lord in these words:

اللَّهُمَّ إِنِّي أَسْتَخِيرُكَ بِعِلْمِكَ وَاسْتَقْدِرُكَ بِقُدْرَتِكَ وَأَسْأَلُكَ مِنْ
فَضْلِكَ الْعَظِيمِ فَإِنَّكَ تَقْدِرُونَ لَا أَقْدِرُونَ وَتَعْلَمُونَ وَلَا أَعْلَمُ وَأَنْتَ عَلَّامُ الْغُيُوبِ.
اللَّهُمَّ إِنْ كُنْتَ تَعْلَمُ أَنَّ هَذَا الْأَمْرَ خَيْرٌ لِي فِي دِينِي وَمَعَاشِي وَعَاقِبَةِ أَمْرِي
(أَوْ قَالَ فِي عَاجِلِ أَمْرِي وَاجِلِهِ) فَأَقْدِرْهُ لِي وَيَسِّرْهُ لِي ثُمَّ بَارِكْ لِي فِيهِ وَإِنْ
كُنْتَ تَعْلَمُ أَنَّ هَذَا الْأَمْرَ شَرٌّ لِي فِي دِينِي وَمَعَاشِي وَعَاقِبَةِ أَمْرِي (أَوْ قَالَ فِي
عَاجِلِ أَمْرِي وَاجِلِهِ) فَاصْرِفْهُ عَنِّي وَاصْرِفْنِي عَنْهُ وَاقْدِرْ لِي الْخَيْرَ حَيْثُ كَانَ
ثُمَّ أَرْضِنِي بِهِ

*Allahumma in-ni astakhiruka bi' ilmika wa astaqdiruka
bi-qudratika wa as'aluka min fadlikal 'azeem, fa-in-naka
taqdiru wa laa aqdiru wa t'alamu wa laa aalamu wa anta
'allamul ghuyoob. Allahumma in kunta t'alamu in-na hazzal
amra khairun-li fi deeni wa ma'ashi wa 'aaqibati amri
(Awqaala fi 'aajiliamri wa jilihi) faa aqdir-hu li wa yassir-hu li
thumma baarika li feehi wa in kunta t'alamu an-na haazal amra
sharrun-li fi deeni wa ma'ashi wa 'aaqibati amri (Awqaala fi
'aajiliamri wa ajilihi) faasrifhu 'an-ni wasrifni 'an-hu waqdir
liya-al-khairu haithu kaana thum-ma ardhini bihi*

(O Allah! I seek good guidance from You through Your Attribute of Knowledge, and I seek strength from You through Your Attribute of Power, and I beg You for Your Great Favour. You are All-Powerful, and I am helpless; You are All-Knowing and I am ignorant. And You know the Unseen. If in Your knowledge this thing is good for me, for my Faith, and my world, and the Hereafter, ordain it for me, and make it easy for me, and bless me in it. And if in Your Knowledge it is harmful for me, for my Faith, and my world, and the Hereafter, keep me away from it and prevent me from doing it, and ordain for me what is and, then, make me contented with it)."

The narrator added that the Prophet ﷺ, also, said: "The thing for which *Istikhara* is done should be specifically mentioned while making the supplication." (Bukhari)

Commentary: As it is clear from the above supplication, the essence of *Istikhara* lies in the fact that the bondsman, while acknowledging his own ignorance and helplessness, seeks help and guidance from the Omniscient and Omnipotent Lord and master entrusts his affair to His charge and leaves it to Him to do about it what He thinks best. He surrenders aim and interest to the Divine Will and when this supplication is made as it ought to be, with all sincerity and conviction, it can not be that Allah did not help and guide him. It is not revealed in this Tradition how the guidance of Allah will be made available to the bondsmen, but experience tells that, generally, it is through a dream or some other indirect suggestion from the Unknown. Sometimes, it, also, happens that, without an apparent reason, the inclination to do the particular thing grows or the heart turns away from it altogether. Both of these states should be believed in as from Allah and the outcome of the supplication. If the feeling of uncertainty persists after *Istikhara*, it should be done again and no steps taken until a distinct inclination is produced, one way or the other.

Salatul Tasbih

(٧٠٢/٢٣٠) عَنْ ابْنِ عَبَّاسٍ أَنَّ النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ قَالَ لِلْعَبَّاسِ بْنِ عَبْدِ الْمُطَّلِبِ يَا عَبَّاسُ يَا عَمَّاهُ لَا أُعْطِيكَ إِلَّا أَمْنَحُكَ إِلَّا أُخْبِرُكَ إِلَّا أَفْعَلُ

بِكَ عَشْرَ خِصَالٍ إِذَا أَنْتَ فَعَلْتَ ذَلِكَ غَفَرَ اللَّهُ لَكَ ذَنْبَكَ أَوَّلَهُ وَآخِرَهُ قَدِيمَهُ وَحَدِيثَهُ خَطَاةَ وَعَمْدَهُ صَغِيرَهُ وَكَبِيرَهُ سِرَّهُ وَعَلَانِيَتَهُ أَنْ تُصَلِّيَ أَرْبَعَ رَكَعَاتٍ تَقْرَأُ فِي كُلِّ رَكَعَةٍ فَاتِحَةَ الْكِتَابِ وَسُورَةً فَإِذَا فَرَغْتَ مِنَ الْقِرَاءَةِ فِي أَوَّلِ رَكَعَةٍ وَأَنْتَ قَائِمٌ قُلْتَ سُبْحَانَ اللَّهِ وَالْحَمْدُ لِلَّهِ وَلَا إِلَهَ إِلَّا اللَّهُ وَاللَّهُ أَكْبَرُ خَمْسَ عَشْرَةَ مَرَّةً ثُمَّ تَرَكَّعَ فَقَوْلُهَا وَأَنْتَ رَاكِعٌ عَشْرًا ثُمَّ تَرَفَّعَ رَاسَكَ مِنَ الرُّكُوعِ فَقَوْلُهَا عَشْرًا ثُمَّ تَهَوَّى سَاجِدًا فَقَوْلُهَا وَأَنْتَ سَاجِدٌ عَشْرًا ثُمَّ تَرَفَّعَ رَاسَكَ مِنَ السُّجُودِ فَقَوْلُهَا عَشْرًا ثُمَّ تَسْجُدُ فَقَوْلُهَا عَشْرًا ثُمَّ تَرَفَّعَ

رَاسَكَ فَقَوْلُهَا عَشْرًا فَذَلِكَ خَمْسٌ وَسَبْعُونَ فِي كُلِّ رَكَعَةٍ تَفْعَلُ ذَلِكَ فِي أَرْبَعَ رَكَعَاتٍ إِنْ اسْتَطَعْتَ أَنْ تُصَلِّيَهَا فِي كُلِّ يَوْمٍ مَرَّةً فافْعَلْ فَإِنْ لَمْ تَفْعَلْ فَفِي كُلِّ جُمُعَةٍ مَرَّةً فَإِنْ لَمْ تَفْعَلْ فَفِي كُلِّ سَنَةٍ مَرَّةً فَإِنْ لَمْ تَفْعَلْ فَفِي عُمْرِكَ مَرَّةً.

(رواه ابو داؤد و ابن ماجه والبيهقي في الدعوات الكبير . وروى الترمذى عن ابى رافع نحوه)
(702/230) It is related by Abdullah bin Abbas رضي الله عنه that, and day, the Prophet ﷺ said to his uncle, Abbas bin Abdul Muttalib رضي الله عنه: "O Abbas! O my respected uncle! May I offer you a precious gift and a valuable present? May I tell you something special? May I do ten jobs for you and render you ten services (i.e., tell you about an act from which ten benefits may accrue)? (It is such an act that if you perform it) Allah will forgive you all your sins, of the past as well as the future, older as well as new, intentional as well as unintentional, major as well as minor, hidden as well as manifest. (It is *Salatut-Tasbeeh*, and the method of offering it is) that you say 4 *rak'at* of *Nafil* and recite *surah Al-Fateha* and some other *surah* in every *rak'at*. When you have finished the recital in the first *rak'at* say, *Subhaan Allah wa al-hamdu lil-laah wa laa ilaaha il-lallah wa Allahu Akbar* 15 times while still standing, and, then, perform *ruku* and say it 10 times, and, then, say it 10 times, again in the state of *qiyam*, as you arise from *ruku*, and, then, perform *sajdah* and say it 10 times during *sajdah* also, and, then, say it 10 times *jalsa*, as you rise up from *sajdah*, and, then, say it 10 times in the second *sajdah*, and, then, 10 times after it (i.e., before getting up from the second

sajdah). Offer all the 4 *rak'at* like that and utter the *Kalima* of *Subhan Allah wa al-hamdu lil-lah wa laa ilaaha il-lallah wa Allahu Akbar* 75 times (in all) in the same order in every *rak'at*. (My uncle), if you can manage it, offer this prayer every day, and if you cannot do so every day then every Friday, and if even that not be possible, once in a year, and in case, too, cannot to be done then once in your life."

(Abu Dawood, Ibn Majah and Baihaqi)

Commentary: The exhortation by the Prophet ﷺ to offer *Salatut Tasbih* has been quoted in standard compilations of the Traditions, on the authority of a number of Companions. Imam Tirmizi, after quoting the narrative of the Prophet's ﷺ attendant and manumitted slave, Abu Rafi', remarks that Abdullah bin Abbas ؓ, Abdullah bin Amr and Fazl bin Abbas, also, have related it. Hafiz Ibn Hajar has discussed at length the reports concerning *Salatut Tasbih* and the documentary evidence of their transmission, in course of the refutation of *Ibn al-Jawzi*¹, and concluded that this Tradition is, at least, authentic in the second degree. Some *Taba'een* and *Tab'a Taba'een*, including the renowned jurist, Abdullah bin Mubarak, too, are known to have described the virtues of *Salatut Tasbih* and urged the people to observe it which clearly shows that, in their view, it had been, definitely, taught by the Prophet ﷺ, and, in the subsequent ages, many men of outstanding virtue and holiness have been offering it regularly. Making an original point, Shah Waliullah رحمه الله عليه observes that the Prophet ﷺ has taught a number of supplications and God remembrance for recitation in prayer, particularly the *Nwafil*. Now, the bondsmen who fail to include them fully in their prayer, and, thus, remain deprived of the good fortune to offer a most perfect prayer, inclusive of these formulas, for them *Salatut Tasbih* becomes a substitute since it gives a fullest expression to the glorification and exaltation of Allah. Moreover, as one and the same formula is to be repeated in it, again and again, even the common people can offer it easily. According to the method and arrangement of *Salatut Tasbih* stated

①. Allama Ibn al-Jawzi is famous for his extremist views on the Traditions. He has declared many reports false and fictitious whose authenticity is beyond doubt according to the other authorities. The Tradition regarding *Salatut Tasbih*, too, has been rejected by him as untrue.

by Imam Tirmizi and others, on the authority of Abdullah bin Mubarak. *Subhanak allahumma wa bihamdika wa tabaraksmuka wa ta'ala jadduka wa laa ilaaha ghairuka* is, also, to be said before recitation, and *Subhana rabbiyal azeem* in ruku and *Subhana rabbiyal a'ala* in sajdah, as in any other prayer, and in every *rak'at*, *Subhan Allah wa al-hamdu lil-lah wa laa ilaaha il-lallaah wa Allahu Akbar* is repeated 15 times before and 10 times after the recitation in qiyam. The *Kalima* is thus said 25 times in the *qiyam* of each *rak'at* but it is not recited after the second *sajdah* in any *rak'at*. In all, it will be said 75 times in every *rak'at* and 300 times in the whole prayer. Nonetheless, both the methods of *Salatut Tasbih* are in vogue and one can adopt whichever of the two one likes.

That prayer is a source of remission of sins and purification from the unclean effects is set forth, doctrinally, in the Qur'an as well:

أَقِمِ الصَّلَاةَ طَرَفَيِ النَّهَارِ وَزُلْفًا مِّنَ اللَّيْلِ إِنَّ الْحَسَنَاتِ يُذْهِبُنَ السَّيِّئَاتِ

(سوره هود. ١١: ١١٤)

Establish worship at the two ends of the day and in some watches of the night. Lo! good deeds annual ill deeds

(Hud 11:114)

But the unique place *Salatut Tasbih* occupies in this regard has been distinctly shown in Abdallah bin Abbas's narrative quoted above, and it is, by its blessedness, that all the earlier and subsequent, old and new, intentional and unintentional, major and minor, and manifest and hidden sins are forgiven by Allah.

It is stated in a Tradition quoted in Abu Dawood that the Prophet ﷺ while exhorting one of his Companions رضي الله عنه, Abdullah bin Amr, to offer *Salatut Tasbih* Said:

“فَإِنَّكَ لَوْ كُنْتَ أَكْثَرُ أَهْلِ الْأَرْضِ ذَنْبًا غُفِرَ لَكَ بِذَلِكَ”

"Even if you happen to be the greatest sinner in the world, Allah will forgive you owing to its propitiousness."

May Allah save us from depriving ourselves of this blessing and may He join us with those who benefit from it.

A Special Advantage of *Nafil* Prayers

Our discussion on *Nafil* prayers has concluded. Let us read the following *hadith*:

(٧٠٣/٢٣١) عَنْ حُرَيْثِ بْنِ قَبِيصَةَ قَالَ قَدِمْتُ الْمَدِينَةَ فَقُلْتُ اللَّهُمَّ يَسِّرْ لِي جَلِيسًا صَالِحًا فَجَلَسْتُ إِلَى أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ فَقُلْتُ إِنِّي سَأَلْتُ اللَّهَ أَنْ يَرْزُقَنِي جَلِيسًا صَالِحًا فَحَدَّثَنِي بِحَدِيثٍ سَمِعْتَهُ مِنْ رَسُولِ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ لَعَلَّ اللَّهَ أَنْ يُنْفَعَنِي بِهِ فَقَالَ سَمِعْتُ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَقُولُ إِنَّ أَوَّلَ مَا يُحَاسَبُ بِهِ الْعَبْدُ يَوْمَ الْقِيَمَةِ مِنْ عَمَلِهِ صَلَاتُهُ فَإِنْ صَلَحَتْ فَقَدْ أَفْلَحَ وَانْجَحَ وَإِنْ فَسَدَتْ فَقَدْ خَابَ وَ خَسِرَ فَإِنْ انْتَقَصَ مِنْ فَرِيضَتِهِ شَيْئًا قَالَ الرَّبُّ تَعَالَى أَنْظِرُوا هَذَا لِعَبْدِي مِنْ تَطَوُّعٍ؟ لِيَكْمَلَ بِهِ مَا انْتَقَصَ مِنَ الْفَرِيضَةِ ثُمَّ يَكُونُ سَائِرُ أَعْمَالِهِ عَلَى ذَلِكَ . (رواه الترمذی والنسائی)

(703/231) Harith bin Qabisah narrated that on coming to Madinah, he prayed to God: O Allah! Grant me the company of a virtuous bondsman of Thine. Later, as he went to see Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه, he said to him: 'I had prayed to God to grant me the company of a virtuous bondsman (and now I have come to you). Relate a Tradition to me which you may have, personally heard from the Prophet ﷺ. I hope God will make it beneficial for me.' Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه, thereupon, related this Tradition. He said: "I heard the Prophet say: On the Day of Reckoning the first thing to be brought to account from among the deeds of the bondsman will be prayers, and his prayers will be examined. So, if his prayers turns to be good, the bondsman will be successful, and if it turn out to be bad, the bondsman will be lost. If there is deficiency in his prayers, Allah will, say: Look, if there are any other virtuous acts (i.e., *Sunnat* and *Nawafil*), apart from duties, in My bondsman's stock of deeds so that the deficiency in (the fulfilment of) obligatory tasks can be made up with them. The Reckoning of all other deeds, besides prayers, will, then, be done in the same way." (Tirmizi)

Commentary: This one *hadith* is by itself sufficient to highlight the significance of *Sunnah* and *Nawafil*.

SPECIAL CONGREGATIONAL PRAYERS FRIDAY AND THE TWO *EIDS*

In addition to the five obligatory prayers which ought to be offered congregationally and the *Sunnah* and *Nafil* prayers that are offered individually, there are a few prayers which are offered only in congregation and can justly be described as the grand peculiarity of the Muslim Community. One of these is the weekly Friday prayer and the others are the prayers of *Eidul Fitr* and *Eid-ul-Adha* that are held once each in a year.

The advantages of offering the five obligatory prayers congregationally are obtained on a larger scale from the prayer, of a Friday and the two *Eids*, but there are some other gains, too, that are related to them exclusively.

We will, first, make some brief observation about the Friday prayers which will, perhaps, be helpful in understanding the aim and purpose of the Traditions appertaining to them.

As only the Muslims of a limited area or part of a town popularly called locality can gather together for the five daily prayers, a day has been set apart in the week on which the Muslims of the whole town can collect in a large mosque for a special prayer.¹

①. From the extraordinary significance attached to the Friday prayer in the Shari'ah as well as the general conduct of the Ummah during the time of the Prophet ﷺ, the Companions and the Taba'een and even later on, it would appear that it should be held, as far as possible, only at one place in a town or settlement. If, however, there is no such mosque in which all the worshippers can assemble, some other suitable mosques can be marked out for it according to the need. But even then care should be taken that the Friday prayer is offered in one mosque alone in a quarter or part of a town. The practice of holding the prayer in all mosques of a locality is against the spirit and intention of *Shari'ah*.

The most appropriate time for such a prayer would, obviously, be that of *Zuhr*, and, out of the 4 *rak'at* of *Zuhr*, only two have been described for the Friday prayer. In order to make the congregation more effective and beneficial from the educational and instructional point of view, the *Khutba*, i.e., sermon has been enjoined in the place of the two omitted *rak'at*, and Friday has been fixed for it because it is the greatest and most auspicious day of the week. Just as, on all days the Divine Grace and Benevolence is directed, in the greatest degree, towards the bondsmen during the last hours of the night, and one night, i.e., *Laylatul Qadr* — the Night of Power — is most blessed of all the nights of the year, in the same way among the seven days of the week, Friday is the day of special favour of Allah, and, as will be seen from the Traditions given below, it is for this reason that events of utmost importance to mankind have taken place and are going to take place, from the side of Allah, on it.

On account of these peculiarities, Friday was selected for a magnificent weekly congregational prayer and the Muslims were required strictly to participate in it. They are exhorted, or, in a sense, it is demanded of them, to take a bath, put on a good, clean dress and apply perfume, if available, before going for the prayers so that, apart from inner and spiritual blessings, the solemn congregation may, also, present a neat and delightful spectacle and bear the closest possible resemblance to the sacred assembly of the angels.

Superiority of Friday

(٧٠٤/٢٣٢) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ خَيْرُ يَوْمٍ طَلَعَتْ عَلَيْهِ الشَّمْسُ يَوْمَ الْجُمُعَةِ فِيهِ خُلِقَ آدَمُ وَ فِيهِ أُدْخِلَ الْجَنَّةَ وَ فِيهِ أُخْرِجَ مِنْهَا وَلَا تَقُومُ السَّاعَةُ إِلَّا فِي يَوْمِ الْجُمُعَةِ. (رواه مسلم)

(704/232) It is related by Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Of all the seven days on which the sun rises (i.e., of all the days of week), the best and most superior is Friday. It was on a Friday that Allah created Adam, and a Friday on which he was admitted to Heaven and a Friday on which he was taken out of Heaven sent down to world (where the human

race originated from him), and the Hour (of Doom) will, also, be on a Friday". (Muslim)

***Durood Sharif* is The Special Prayer Formula of Friday**

(٧٠٥/٢٣٣) عَنْ أَوْسِ بْنِ أَوْسٍ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِنَّ مِنْ أَفْضَلِ أَيَّامِكُمْ يَوْمَ الْجُمُعَةِ فِيهِ خُلِقَ آدَمُ وَفِيهِ قُبِضَ وَفِيهِ النَّفْخَةُ وَفِيهِ الصُّعْقَةُ فَكَثِّرُوا عَلَيَّ مِنَ الصَّلَاةِ فِيهِ فَإِنَّ صَلَاتَكُمْ مَعْرُوضَةٌ عَلَيَّ قَالُوا يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ وَكَيْفَ تُعْرَضُ صَلَاتُنَا عَلَيْكَ وَقَدْ أَرِمْتَ؟ قَالَ يَقُولُونَ بَلَيِّتُ قَالَ إِنَّ اللَّهَ حَرَّمَ عَلَى الْأَرْضِ أَجْسَادَ الْأَنْبِيَاءِ .

(رواه أبو داود و النسائي و ابن ماجة والدارمي و البيهقي في الدعوات الكبير)

(705/233) It is related by Aws bin Aus Thaqafi رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Friday is among the most superior days. It was on it that Adam was created, and it was on it that he died, and it will be on it that the Trumpet of Doom will be sounded, and it will be on it that the slumber of death will descend upon all created beings. You should, therefore, invoke blessings (send *Durood*) much and often on me on a Friday for *Durood* is communicated and will continue to be communicated to me." The Companions, thereupon, asked: "O Messenger of Allah! (after your death) how will our *Durood* be carried to You? Your body will have been reduced to dust in the grave." The Prophet ﷺ replied: "Allah has forbidden the dead bodies of the Prophets to the earth (i.e., their dead bodies remain untouched in the grave and the earth can bring about no change in them)." (Abu Dawood, Nasai, Ibn Majah, Daarami and Baihaqi)

Commentary: It shows that just as the special prayer of the month of *Ramzan* is the recital of the Qur'an and of the Haj, the slogan of *Labbaik allahumma labbaik*, the sepcial prayer of Friday is *Durood*. It should, therefore, be offered profusely on it.

In it, the Prophet ﷺ has also revealed that it has been so arranged by Allah that *Durood* of the *Ummah* is presented before him and it shall continue to be so even after his death. (In some other Traditions it is also stated that the angels cary *Durood* to the Prophet ﷺ). Upon it, some Companions رضي الله عنهم thought that the

coming of the angels to the Prophet ﷺ and the carrying of *Durood* to him was quite understandable and also known to them, but when after his death the Prophet ﷺ will be buried in the grave, and, according to the law of nature, his earthly frame will be reduced to dust, how will *Durood* be communicated to him. They, therefore, enquired about it from the Prophet ﷺ who explained to them that by the command of Allah the dead bodies of the Prophets عليهم السلام remain intact in the graves and the earth does not carry out its natural action upon them, i.e., as in the world corpses can be preserved from decay by impregnating them with certain chemicals or some other means. so has the Almighty made the dead bodies of His Messengers safe in the graves and an unusual existence is conferred on them which is quite in keeping with laws of the world that lies on the other side of death. The process of the communication and presentation of *Durood* will, thus, go on without an interruption after death as well.

Hour of Exceptional Propitiousness On a Friday

(٧٠٦/٢٣٤) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِنَّ فِي الْجُمُعَةِ لَسَاعَةً لَا يُوَافِقُهَا عَبْدٌ مُسْلِمٌ يَسْأَلُ اللَّهَ فِيهَا خَيْرًا إِلَّا أَعْطَاهُ إِيَّاهُ .

(رواه البخارى و مسلم)

(706/234) It is related by Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "There comes a time on a Friday when if a Muslim bondsman is fortunate enough to supplicate to God for something worth having, God grants it (to him)."

(Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: It shows that in the way a special night of mercy and acceptance (*Laylatu Qadr*) has been set apart in a whole year in which it is most opportune to supplicate to Allah and offer sincere repentance and there is a distinct possibility of its acceptance, there is, also, in the week, a time exceptional propitiousness on Friday in which if anyone beseeches Allah for a good and lawful thing, there is the confident expectation of its being granted to him. Abu Hurayrah has stated, on the authority of Abdullah bin Salaam and K'ab Ahbaar, that the occurrence of the "hour of acceptance" on a Friday has, also, been mentioned in

Torah and both of these Companions were among the foremost scholars of Torah and other ancient scriptures.

Commentators have alluded to various sources in their attempts to determine precisely the Friday's "hour of acceptance." Two portions of time, however, have been indicated in the Traditions as well:

(i) From the time the Imam ascends the pulpit for delivering the sermon till the end of the prayer. In other words, the time of the sermon and of the prayer is most propitious for supplication to the Lord.

(ii) From the time of the conclusion of the *'Asr* prayer till the setting of the sun.

Commenting on the two specifications, Shah Waliullah رحمه الله عليه remarks: "The aim of both of these observations is not to demarcate the hour precisely but only to show that since the time of the sermon and the prayer is, particularly, the time of God-remembrance and supplication, it can be hoped that the 'hour of acceptance' lies in it, and, similarly, as the time for the descent of Fate or the end or termination of the day, it can be hoped that the 'hour of acceptance' was contained in it."¹

Some authorities have, further, suggested that the special moment of time on a Friday has been kept vague for the same reason for which *Laylatu Qadr* has been left undefined. As some indirect suggestions have been given in the Traditions about *Laylatu Qadr* that it lies in the odd nights of the last ten days of the month of *Ramadan*, particularly on the night of the 27th of that month, so also, have some hints been given in the Traditions to the effect that the 'hour of acceptance' on a Friday occurs at the time of the sermon and the prayer and during the period intervening between *Asr* and *Maghrib* so that the bondsmen may, at least, devote themselves, with earnest care and solicitude, to God-remembrance and supplication during those hours.

We have seen about some of our elders that they do not like to meet or talk to anyone during that part of a Friday and keep themselves occupied with meditation, prayer and supplication.

Special Significance of Friday Prayer

(٧٠٧/٢٣٥) عَنْ طَارِقِ بْنِ شِهَابٍ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ الْجُمُعَةُ حَقٌّ وَاجِبٌ عَلَى كُلِّ مُسْلِمٍ فِي جَمَاعَةٍ إِلَّا عَلَى أَرْبَعَةٍ عَبْدٍ مَمْلُوكٍ أَوْ امْرَأَةٍ أَوْ صَبِيٍّ أَوْ مَرِيضٍ. (رواه ابو داود)

(707/235) It is related by Tariq bin Shahab that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "To offer the Friday prayers in congregation is obligatory for a Muslim. Four kinds of men are exempted from it: (i) the slave who is legally owned by someone; (ii) the women; (iii) the boy who has not attained majority and (iv) the sick." (Abu Dawood)

(٧٠٨/٢٣٦) عَنْ ابْنِ عُمَرَ وَ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ أَنَّهُمَا قَالَ سَمِعْنَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ عَلَى أَغْوَادٍ مِنْبَرِهِ لِيَنْتَهِيَنَّ أَقْوَامٌ عَنْ وَدْعِهِمُ الْجُمُعَاتِ أَوْ لِيَخْتِمَنَّ اللَّهُ عَلَى قُلُوبِهِمْ ثُمَّ لِيَكُونُنَّ مِنَ الْغَافِلِينَ. (رواه مسلم)

(708/236) Abdullah bin Umar رضي الله عنه and Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه, both of them, related to us that they heard it from the Prophet ﷺ; he was saying it from the pulpit that those who omit the Friday prayer should either desist from it or it will so happen that God will set a seal on their hearts in punishment of the sin, and they will, then, be among the heedless (and will not get an opportunity to reform themselves). (Muslim)

(٧٠٩/٢٣٧) عَنْ أَبِي الْجَعْدِ الضَّمَرِيِّ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَنْ تَرَكَ تِلْكَ جُمُعٍ تَهَاوَنَّا بِهَا طَبَعَ اللَّهُ عَلَى قَلْبِهِ. (رواه ابو داود و الترمذی و النسائی و ابن ماجه و الدارمی و رواه مالک عن صفوان بن سليم و احمد عن ابی قتاده)

(709/237) It is related by Abu Al-Ja'd Ad Damri that the Prophet ﷺ said: "Whoever will omit three Fridays (i.e., the congregational Fridays prayers three times) without a valid reason become of eariness, Allah shall set a seal on his heart (and, then, he will be deprived of the good fortune to reform himself)." (Abu Dawood, Tirmizi, Nasai and Ibn Majah)

(٧١٠/٢٣٨) عَنْ ابْنِ عَبَّاسٍ أَنَّ النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ قَالَ مَنْ تَرَكَ الْجُمُعَةَ مِنْ غَيْرِ ضَرُورَةٍ كُتِبَ مُنَافِقًا فِي كِتَابٍ لَا يُمْحَى وَلَا يُبَدَّلُ وَفِي بَعْضِ

الرَّوَايَاتِ ثَلَاثًا. (رواه الشافعي)

(710/238) Sayyidina Ibn Abbas رضي الله عنه has said that the Prophet ﷺ said, "If anyone neglects the Friday prayers without valid reason then he is recorded as a hypocrite in the Record Book which is never amended or changed." In some versions it is stated that if he neglects three Fridays.

Commentary: The significance attached to Friday in the ahadith and the warning on neglecting it is very clear and needs on explanation.

May Allah keep us away from all sorts of disobedience because of which one deprives oneself of His mercy and has a seal affixed to his heart. O Allah preserve us!

Proprieties

(٧١١/٢٣٩) عَنْ سَلْمَانَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ لَا يَغْتَسِلُ رَجُلٌ يَوْمَ الْجُمُعَةِ وَيَتَطَهَّرُ مَا اسْتَطَاعَ مِنْ طَهْرٍ وَيُدْهِنُ مِنْ دُهْنِهِ أَوْ يَمْسُ مِنْ طِيبٍ بَيْتِهِ ثُمَّ يَخْرُجُ فَلَا يَفْرُقُ بَيْنَ اثْنَيْنِ ثُمَّ يُصَلِّي مَا كَتَبَ لَهُ ثُمَّ يُنْصِتُ إِذَا تَكَلَّمَ الْإِمَامُ إِلَّا غُفِرَ لَهُ مَا بَيْنَهُ وَبَيْنَ الْجُمُعَةِ الْأُخْرَى. (رواه البخاري)

(711/239) It is related by Salman Farsi رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Whoever takes a bath on a Friday and pays attention to cleanliness, as far as possible, and applies whatever oil and perfume there is in his house, and, then, goes out for the prayer, and, on reaching the mosque, takes care not to sit between two persons which may, already, be sitting next to each other, and, then, offers the prayers, i.e., *Sunnah* and *Nafil* that may be decreed for him, and then, listens attentively when the Imam delivers the sermon, all his sins between that Friday and the next will be forgiven by Allah." (Bukhari)

(٧١٢/٢٤٠) عَنْ أَبِي سَعِيدٍ وَ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَنْ اغْتَسَلَ يَوْمَ الْجُمُعَةِ وَلَبَسَ مِنْ أَحْسَنِ ثِيَابِهِ وَمَسَّ مِنْ طِيبٍ إِنْ كَانَ عِنْدَهُ ثُمَّ أَتَى الْجُمُعَةَ فَلَمْ يَتَخَطَّ أَعْنَاقَ النَّاسِ ثُمَّ صَلَّى مَا كَتَبَ اللَّهُ لَهُ ثُمَّ انْصَتَّ إِذَا خَرَجَ إِمَامُهُ حَتَّى يَفْرَغَ مِنْ صَلَاتِهِ كَانَتْ كَفَّارَةً لِمَا بَيْنَهَا وَبَيْنَ

الْجُمُعَةِ الَّتِي قَبْلَهَا. (رواه ابو داؤد)

(712/240) Abu Sa'eed and Abu Hurayrah رضى الله عنهما reported the Messenger of Allah ﷺ as saying, "If anyone bathes on a Friday, puts on his best clothes, applies a touch of perfume if he has any, then goes to the congregational prayer and takes care not to step over people then prays what Allah has prescribed for him, then keeps silent from the time the Imam comes to deliver the *Khutba* till he finishes the prayer, it will atone for his sins during the previous week." (Abu Dawood)

Commentary: We have already discussed the importance attached by *Shari'ah* to bath on Friday in the chapter on *Ghusl*. These two ahadith also mention some other procedures on Friday: attention to cleanliness, best clothes, perfume, care not to disturb other worshippers in the mosque like squeezing two people already seated, jumping over other people already seated, to offer *sunnah* or optional prayer, listen to the sermon attentively. The hadith tell us that when the Friday prayer is observed carefully then it atones for the sins of the week and becomes a tool of forgiveness for the worshipper. It is common sense that if anyone is attentive to these things then he gets a spiritual awakening and finds the results in his life and invites the mercy and forgiveness of Allah.

(٧١٣/٢٤١) عَنْ عَبْدِ بْنِ السَّبَّاقِ مُرْسَلًا قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ فِي جُمُعَةٍ مِنَ الْجُمُعِ يَا مَعْشَرَ الْمُسْلِمِينَ إِنَّ هَذَا يَوْمٌ جَعَلَهُ اللَّهُ عِيدًا فَاغْتَسِلُوا وَمَنْ كَانَ عِنْدَهُ طِيبٌ فَلَا يَضُرُّهُ أَنْ يَمَسَّ مِنْهُ وَعَلَيْكُمْ بِالسِّوَاكِ. (رواه مالك ورواه ابن ماجه وهو عن ابن عباس متصلا)

(713/241) It is related by way of *Mursal*¹, by Ubayd bin As-Sabbaq Tabaa'ee that the Prophet ﷺ, while delivering the sermon on a Friday said: "O Muslims! Allah has made this day of Friday an *Eid*; so take a bath on it, and whoever has perfume, there is no harm if he applies, it and use the *Miswak*, positively, on that day." (Ibn Majah)

①. Sometimes a *Tah'ee* relates a Tradition but does not mention the name of the Companion through whom it had reached him. Such a Tradition is called *Mursal*.

Clipping The Moustaches And Paring Off The Nails

(٧١٤/٢٤٢) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ أَنَّ النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ كَانَ يَقْلِمُ أَظْفَارَهُ وَيَقْصُ شَارِبَهُ يَوْمَ الْجُمُعَةِ قَبْلَ أَنْ يَخْرُجَ إِلَى الصَّلَاةِ.

(رواه البزار والطبرانی فی الاوسط)

(714/242) Abu Hurayrah رضی اللہ عنہ narrated that the Prophet ﷺ used to pare off his nails and clip moustaches before going out for the Friday prayer.¹

Wearing Good Clothes

(٧١٥/٢٤٣) عَنْ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ السَّلَامِ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَا عَلَى أَحَدِكُمْ أَنْ وَجَدَانِ يَتَّخِذَ ثَوْبَيْنِ لِيَوْمِ الْجُمُعَةِ سِوَى ثَوْبِي مَهْنَتِهِ.

(رواه ابن ماجه و رواه مالك عن يحيى بن سعيد)

(715/243) It is related by Abdulah bin Salaam رضی اللہ عنہ that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "There is no harm for anyone of you who can afford it to keep a special dress for a Friday in addition to the clothes he wears everyday during working hours."

(Ibn Majah)

Commentary: It could be imagined that to have a special dress, apart from everyday clothes, was opposed to the spirit of asceticism. The above Tradition is intended to remove the misunderstanding. It shows that since to wear a decent dress, according to one's means, for a religious congregation like that of a Friday, which is the weekly *Eid* of the Muslims, is pleasing to Allah, there is no harm in having a separate set of clothes for it. It has been mentioned by Tabarani in *Mu'ojim Sagheer* and *Ausat*, on the authority of Sayyidah Ayshah رضی اللہ عنہا "The Messenger of Allah ﷺ had a special dress which he used to wear on a Friday, and when he returned home after prayers, I folded it and kept it away and it was taken out again only on the next Friday." The evidence of the reliability of this report, however, does not come up to the standard laid down by the authorities.

①. It should be noted that doubt has been expressed about the veracity of this report but from the manner in which the Prophet has stressed the need of cleanliness on a Friday in Salman Farsi's narrative we have just quoted from *Sahih Bukhari* it would seem that it includes these things as well.

Going Early For Prayers

(٧١٦/٢٤٤) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا كَانَ يَوْمُ الْجُمُعَةِ وَقَفَتِ الْمَلَائِكَةُ عَلَى بَابِ الْمَسْجِدِ يَكْتُبُونَ الْأَوَّلَ فَأَلَّوْلَ وَمِثْلُ الْمُهَجِرِ كَمِثْلِ الَّذِي يُهْدَى بُذْنَةً ثُمَّ كَالَّذِي يُهْدَى بِقَرَةٍ ثُمَّ كَبِشًا ثُمَّ دَجَاجَةً ثُمَّ بَيْضَةً فَإِذَا خَرَجَ الْإِمَامُ طَوَّأَ صُحُفَهُمْ وَيَسْتَمِعُونَ الذِّكْرَ

(رواه البخارى و مسلم)

(716/244) It is related by Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "When a Friday comes, angels stand at the door of the mosque and note down, in order of arrival, the names of those who come early. The parable of he who comes at the beginning of the specified time, at noon, is that of a man who offers the sacrifice of a camel to Allah, and of he who is the second to come, of a man who offers the sacrifice of a cow, and of he who is the third to come, of a man who offers the sacrifice of a chicken, and of he who is the fifth to come, of a man who offers the sacrifice of an egg. After it, as the Imam proceeds towards the pulpit for delivering the sermon, the angels roll up their papers and join (the congregation) for listening to the sermon." (Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: The real aim of it is to induce men to go early for the Friday congregation and the Prophet ﷺ has sought to explain the difference in the grades and recompense of those who come at different times by using the examples.

Practice of The Prophet ﷺ

(٧١٧/٢٤٥) عَنْ أَنَسٍ قَالَ كَانَ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا اشْتَدَّ الْبُرْدُ يُكَبِّرُ بِالصَّلَاةِ وَإِذَا اشْتَدَّ الْحَرُّ أَبْرَدَ بِالصَّلَاةِ يَعْنِي الْجُمُعَةَ. (رواه البخارى)

(717/245) Anas رضي الله عنه relates that the general practice of the Prophet ﷺ was that he offered the Friday prayers earlier when it was very cold, and, if it was very hot, he delayed the prayers. (Bukhari)

(٧١٨/٢٤٦) عَنْ جَابِرِ بْنِ سَمُرَةَ قَالَ كَانَتْ لِلنَّبِيِّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ خُطْبَتَانِ يَجْلِسُ بَيْنَهُمَا يَقْرَأُ الْقُرْآنَ وَيَذْكُرُ النَّاسَ فَكَانَتْ صَلَاتُهُ قَصْدًا

وَحُطْبَتُهُ قَصْدًا (رواه مسلم)

(718/246) Jabir bin Samura رضي الله عنه narrates that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ used to deliver two sermons, and, between them, he used to sit down (for a while). In these sermons he recited the verses of the Qur'an and gave good counsel to the people. Like his prayer, his sermons, too, were moderate. (Muslim)

Commentary: It shows that both the prayers and the sermons of the Prophet ﷺ were neither too long nor too brief, but of a reasonable length. As for the recital of the Qur'an during the sermons, we have already seen the verses he normally recited in the Friday service.

(٧١٩/٢٤٧) عَنْ جَابِرٍ قَالَ كَانَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا خَطَبَ احْمَرَّتْ عَيْنَاهُ وَغَلَا صَوْتُهُ وَاشْتَدَّ غَضَبُهُ حَتَّى كَأَنَّهُ مُنْذِرُ جَيْشٍ يَقُولُ صَبِّحَكُمْ وَمَسَاءَكُمْ وَيَقُولُ بُعِثْتُ أَنَا وَالسَّاعَةُ كَهَاتَيْنِ وَيَقْرُنُ بَيْنَ إِصْبَعَيْهِ السَّبَابَةِ وَالْوُسْطَى.

(719/247) Jabir رضي الله عنه related to us that when the Prophet ﷺ delivered a sermon, his eyes became red and voice got raised and a state of intense anger and excitement was produced so much so that his condition became that of a person who had (just) returned after seeing the enemy's forces with his own eyes and was urging his community to get ready to defend itself by telling it that the enemy was near and the attack was imminent. The Prophet ﷺ, also, used to say "My raising up and the coming of the Last Day are (close to one another) like these two fingers." and, in order to illustrate the point, he would join together his index and middle fingers. (Muslim)

Commentary: What it shows that the sermons of the Prophet ﷺ were forceful and stirring and his outward condition used to reflect his thoughts and feelings. He dwelt, particularly upon the nearness of the Day of Resurrection and its dreadful happenings and tried to bring home the point by joining together the index and middle fingers and saying that his raising up and the Day of Final Judgement were as close to one another as the two fingers, and no other Prophet ﷺ was going to be sent down in the intervening period. The Hour was going to be during his era of mission. So, let

no one be caught unprepared.

Sunnat Before And After Friday Service

(٧٢٠/٢٤٨) عَنْ ابْنِ عَبَّاسٍ قَالَ كَانَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَرْكَعُ قَبْلَ الْجُمُعَةِ أَرْبَعًا وَبَعْدَهَا أَرْبَعًا .
(رواه الطبرانی فی الکبیر)

(720/248) It is related by Abdllah bin Abbas ؓ that the Prophet ﷺ used to offer 4 *rak'at* before the Friday service and 4 after it.¹ (Tabarani)

(٧٢١/٢٤٩) عَنْ جَابِرِ بْنِ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ قَالَ جَاءَ سُلَيْكُ الْغَطَفَانِيُّ يَوْمَ الْجُمُعَةِ وَرَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ قَاعِدٌ عَلَى الْمِنْبَرِ فَقَعَدَ سُلَيْكُ قَبْلَ أَنْ يُصَلِّيَ فَقَالَ لَهُ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ أَرَكَعْتَ رَكْعَتَيْنِ قَالَ لَا قَالَ قُمْ فَأَرْكَعْهُمَا .
(رواه مسلم)

(721/249) It is related on the authority of Jabir bin Abdullah ؓ that (once), on a Friday, Sulayk Ghatofani came to the mosque at a time when the Prophet ﷺ had sat on the pulpit (i.e., he had occupied the pulpit for delivering the sermon but had not yet begun). So, Sulaik came in and sat down in the same state before offering prayer (i.e., he did not offer prayer on entering the mosque but sat down n seeing that the Prophet ﷺ had gone to the pulpit for delivering the sermon). The Prophet ﷺ, thereupon, asked him: "Have you offered the two rak'at?" Sulaik replied that he had not. The Prophet ﷺ, then, said: "Get up and say the two rak'at first." (Muslim)

Commentary: On the basis of this Tradition, Imam Shaf'ee, Imam Ahmad and some other legists have held that two rak'at of *Tahayyatul Masjid* are obligatory on that day for anyone who comes to the mosque for the Friday prayer and he should offer them even if the Imam has begun the sermon. But Imam Abu Hanifa, Imam Maalik and Sufiyan Suri and many other legists do

①. The above narrative of Abdullah bin Abbas has been quoted in *Jama-ul-Fawayid* from Tabarani, and, with it, it has, also, been indicated that the claim of its narrators is weak and below the standard. But in *A'izaabul Muwarid* it appears in another form and on the authority of Sayyidina Ali رضي الله عنه and its chain of narrators is free from any doubt. On the other hand, Iraqi has held the evidence of its authenticity to be of the highest order.

not permit prayer to be said at the time of the sermon on the strength of the Traditions in which it is urged that the worshippers should keep quiet during it and listen attentively and is consistent in behaviour of a number of Companions رضي الله عنهم and *Taba'een*. They offer various interpretations of the above incident concerning Sulaik Ghatfani. The arguments of both the sides being equally weighty, prudence demands that on Firdays one should take care to reach the mosque early enough to offer, at least, the two rak'at before the commencement of the sermon.

(٧٢٢/٢٥٠) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا صَلَّى أَحَدُكُمْ الْجُمُعَةَ فَلْيَصِلْ بَعْدَهَا أَرْبَعًا . (رواه مسلم)

(722/250) It is related by Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "When anyone of you offers the Friday prayers, he should offer another 4 *rak'at* after it." (Muslim)

(٧٢٣/٢٥١) عَنْ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ عُمَرَ قَالَ كَانَ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ لَا يُصَلِّي بَعْدَ الْجُمُعَةِ حَتَّى يَنْصَرِفَ فَيُصَلِّي رَكْعَتَيْنِ فِي بَيْتِهِ (رواه البخاري ومسلم)

(723/25) Abdullah bin Umar رضي الله عنه relates that the Prophet ﷺ did not offer any prayer after the Friday service till he returned home from the mosque, and, (then), he offered two *rak'at* at home. (Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: In the Tradition regarding the *Sunnat* after the Friday prayer two as well as four and even six *rak'at* are mentioned.

It is related by Imam Tirmizi about Abdullah bin Umar رضي الله عنه himself that he used to offer two, and, then, four *rak'at* after Friday prayer (making 6 in all).

The views of the legist-doctors, too, are divergent on it. Some of them prefer 2 while others 4 and even 6 *rak'at*.

EIDUL FITR AND EIDUL AZHA

Every community observes some festivals. On such occasions, people, according to their circumstances, put on good clothes, eat nice dishes and express their joy in various other ways. The festivals fulfil a fundamental human need, and, hence, a few days are set aside for rejoicing and entertainment in every nation and country.

In Islam, also, two such days have been fixed, those of *Eidul Fitr* and *Eidul Adha*. These, alone, are the real religious and communal festivals of Muslims. Whatever festivals they celebrate, aside of them, have no religious basis. From the Islamic point of view, most of them are pure nonsense.

As everyone knows, *Eidul Fitr* is celebrated on the 1st of Shawwal, after the month of *Ramadan*, and *Eidul Adha* on the 10th of *Zul Hajjah*. Religiously and spiritually, *Ramadan* is the most blessed month of the year. It was, in it, that the Qur'an was revealed, fasting for the whole of the month was prescribed, an additional congregational prayer was enjoined for its nights, and an increase in every kind of good-doing was earnestly demanded. In short, the whole *Ramadhan* was declared to be a month of rigorous self-discipline, of the sacrifice of carnal desires, and of profusion in worship and other acts of fealty and obedience to Allah. Evidently, the day that falls on the close of the month is most deserving, from the viewpoint of religious and spiritual excellence to be made a special day of celebration for the whole of *Ummah*. This very day has, as such, been named *Eidul fitr*.

In the same way, the 10th of *Zul Hajjah* is the historic day on which the founder and progenitor of *Ummat-i-Muslima*¹, Sayyidina Ibrahim عليه السلام, had given a glorious proof of submission and self-abnegation by placing the knife on the thorax of his son, Ismail

❶. Signifying the Community of the Faithful.

عليه السلام, and offering him as a sacrifice to Allah on receiving the inspiration, according to his lights, from the Lord. Allah declared Ibrahim عليه السلام successful in the supreme test of love and sacrifice, and keeping Ismail عليه السلام safe and unharmed, accepted the offering of an animal in his place. He had placed the crown of the religious and spiritual leadership of the entire mankind on Sayyidina Ibrahim's عليه السلام head and proclaimed the simulation of this act of his to be the "ritual of love" till the end of time. Thus, if a special day was to be appointed for celebration for the Muslim community, which was the rightful successor to the community of Ibrahim عليه السلام and representative of the way of the Friend of Allah, to honour the memory of the wonderful episode, it could only be the 10th of *Zul Hajjah*. This day was, thus, fixed as the second Eid. The annual congregation of the *Hajj* of the whole of the Muslim World with its rituals like the sacrifice of animals in the barren land (*Wadi-i-Ghair zi zar'a'*) in which the heroic event of Ibrahim's عليه السلام sacrifice had taken place marks the true and foremost commemoration of it while the ceremonies of *Eidul Adha* like prayer and *Qurbani*² that are observed in all the places where the Muslims live constitute its re-enactment and commemoration in the second grade. Anyhow, both the 1st of *Shawwal* and the 10th of *Zul Hajjah* have been appointed as the *Eids* or festivals of the Muslims owing to these reasons.

Origin

(٧٢٤/٢٥٢) عَنْ أَنَسٍ قَالَ قَدِمَ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ الْمَدِينَةَ وَلَهُمْ يَوْمَانِ يَلْعَبُونَ فِيهِمَا فَقَالَ مَا هَذَانِ الْيَوْمَانِ؟ قَالُوا كُنَّا نَلْعَبُ فِيهِمَا فِي الْجَاهِلِيَّةِ فَقَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ قَدْ أَبَدَ لَكُمْ اللَّهُ بِهِمَا خَيْرًا مِنْهُمَا يَوْمَ الْأَضْحَى وَيَوْمَ الْفِطْرِ .
(رواه ابو داود)

(724/252) It is related by Anas رضي الله عنه that when the Prophet ﷺ arrived in Madinah, two special days were observed there for feasting and celebration. On enquiry about these festivals, he was told that the people of Madinah had been celebrating them as occasions of social entertainment since the days of Ignorance. The Prophet ﷺ, thereupon, remarked, "God has provided you

①. Literally meaning a valley which is devoid of vegetation.

②. Ritualistic sacrifice of animals.

with better festivals in their place, *Eidul Fitr* and *Eidul Adha*."

(Abu Dawood)

Commentary: Festivals are typically representative of the beliefs, ideals and traditions of the people who celebrate them and reflect their collective character and temperament in an unmistakable manner. The two festivals the people of Madinah observed before the advent of Islam and during the period of Ignorance would, naturally, have been based upon and illustrative of their paganish creeds and customs. The Prophet, or as the above Tradition candidly denotes, the Almighty, put an end to these ancient festivals, and, in their place, appointed the two special days of *Eidul Fitr* and *Eidul Adha* for celebration which are richly indicative of the Monotheistic temperament and way of life of the Muslims and in keeping with their beliefs and practices.

Prayer And Sermon of The Two Eids

(٧٢٥/٢٥٣) عَنْ أَبِي سَعِيدٍ الْخُدْرِيِّ قَالَ كَانَ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَخْرُجُ يَوْمَ الْفِطْرِ وَالْأَضْحَى إِلَى الْمُصَلَّى فَأَوَّلُ شَيْئٍ يَفْعَلُهُ بِهِ الصَّلَاةُ ثُمَّ يَنْصَرِفُ مُقَابِلَ النَّاسِ وَالنَّاسِ جُلُوسٌ عَلَى صُفُوفِهِمْ فَيُعْظِمُهُمْ وَيُوصِيهِمْ وَيَأْمُرُهُمْ وَإِنْ كَانَ يُرِيدُ أَنْ يَقْطَعَ بَعْثًا قَطَعَهُ أَوْ يَأْمُرَ بِشَيْءٍ أَمَرَ بِهِ ثُمَّ يَنْصَرِفُ.

(رواه البخاري ومسلم)

(725/253) Abu Sa'eed Khudri رضي الله عنه narrated that the Prophet ﷺ used to go to the *Eid-gah*¹ on the days of *Eidul Fitr* and *Eidul Adha*. First of all, he led the service, and, after that, stood up facing the people for the sermon while the people kept sitting in their rows. Then he preached to them, advised them and gave orders to them, and if he wished to send out an army or an expedition somewhere, he did so (after the prayers and the sermon), and if he wanted to give an order concerning a particular affair, he, also, did that, and, then he departed.

(Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: It shows that the Prophet ﷺ used to offer the *Eid* prayers in an open ground he had selected for Eid prayers outside the populated area of Madinah. At that time, no boundary wall had

①. Meaning an open ground where the Muslims assemble for prayers of Eid day (or mosque).

been built around it. It was just a piece of vacant land lying about a thousand feet away from the Prophet's Mosque. Once the Prophet ﷺ is, also reported to have offered the prayer in the Mosque when it was raining.

We, further, learn that bands of cursaders were, also, organised in the *Eid-gah*, on the *Eid* day, after the sermon and the prayer, and sent out from there for the glory of the World of Allah.

Without Azan And Iqamat

(٧٢٦/٢٥٤) عَنْ جَابِرِ بْنِ سَمُرَةَ قَالَ صَلَّيْتُ مَعَ رَسُولِ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ

وَسَلَّمَ الْعِيدَيْنِ غَيْرَ مَرَّةٍ وَلَا مَرَّتَيْنِ بِغَيْرِ أَذَانٍ وَلَا إِقَامَةٍ. (رواه مسلم)

(726/254) Jabir bin Samura related that "he offered the prayers of the two *Eids*, not once or twice but several times, with Prophet ﷺ, (and) always without *Azan* and *Iqamat*. (Muslim)

(٧٢٧/٢٥٥) عَنْ جَابِرِ ابْنِ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ قَالَ شَهِدْتُ الصَّلَاةَ مَعَ النَّبِيِّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ

عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ فِي يَوْمٍ عِيدٍ فَبَدَأَ بِالصَّلَاةِ قَبْلَ الْخُطْبَةِ بِغَيْرِ أَذَانٍ وَلَا إِقَامَةٍ فَلَمَّا

قَضَى الصَّلَاةَ قَامَ مُتَكِنًا عَلَى بِلَالٍ فَحَمِدَ اللَّهَ وَاتَّبَعْنِي عَلَيْهِ وَوَعِظَ النَّاسَ

وَذَكَرَهُمْ وَحَثَّهُمْ عَلَى طَاعَتِهِ وَمَضَى إِلَى النِّسَاءِ وَمَعَهُ بِلَالٌ فَأَمَرَ هُنَّ بِتَقْوَى

اللَّهِ وَوَعِظَهُنَّ وَذَكَرَهُنَّ. (رواه النسائي)

(727/255) Jabir bin Abdullah ﷺ related that on the day of *Eid* he went to the *Eid-gah* with the Prophet ﷺ for the prayer; he observed prayers before (delivering) the sermon and without *Azan* and *Iqamat*. After that, he got up for the sermon, with the support of Bilal ﷺ. At first, he hymned praises of Allah and gave good counsel to the people and exhorted them to be faithful to Allah. Then, he went towards the assembly of women and Bilal, too, was with him. On reaching there, the Prophet ﷺ urged them to lead a life of piety and God-fearing and gave them good advice. (Nasai)

Commentary: It tells that the Prophet ﷺ addressed the women separately after he had delivered the *Eid* sermon to men. In another Tradition, quoted in *Sahih Muslim*, on the authority of Abdullah bin Abbas ﷺ, it is mentioned that the Prophet ﷺ did so because

the ladies had not been able to hear the sermon.

Note: During the days of the Prophet, women, generally, were urged to take part in the Eid prayers. The Prophet ﷺ, in fact had commanded them to do so. But, later on, as corruption spread in the Muslim society, the legists felt that women should no longer go to *Eid-gah*, for the *Eid* prayers' in the same way as they did not like them to go to the mosques for the Friday and the five daily prayers.

No *Nafl Rak'at* Before or After, *Eid* Prayers.

(٧٢٨/٢٥٦) عَنْ ابْنِ عَبَّاسٍ أَنَّ النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ صَلَّى يَوْمَ الْفِطْرِ رَكْعَتَيْنِ لَمْ يُصَلِّ قَبْلَهُمَا وَلَا بَعْدَهُمَا .
(رواه البخارى ومسلم)

(728/256) It is related on the authority of Ibn Abbas ؓ that the Prophet ﷺ offered two Rakats on the day of *Eidul Fitr* and he did no offer any *Nafl* before or after it. (Bukhari and Muslim)

Time

(٧٢٩/٢٥٧) عَنْ يَزِيدَ بْنِ خُمَيْرٍ الرَّحْبِيِّ قَالَ خَرَجَ عَبْدُ اللَّهِ بْنُ بُسْرِ صَاحِبُ رَسُولِ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَعَ النَّاسِ فِي يَوْمِ عِيدِ فِطْرِ أَوْ أَضْحَى فَإِنْكَرَ ابْطَاءَ الْإِمَامِ فَقَالَ إِنَّا كُنَّا قَدْ فَرَعْنَا سَاعَتَنَا هَذِهِ وَذَلِكَ حِينَ التَّسْبِيحِ .
(رواه ابو داود)

(729/257) Yazid bin Khumair Ar-Rahbi, a *Taba'ee*, said that the Prophet's Companion, Abdullah bin Busr ؓ (once) came to *Eid-gah*, with (other) people, to offer the Eid prayers on the day of *Eidul Fitr* or *Eidul Adha*. (When the Imam did no turn up at the excepted time), he declared the delay of the Imam to be annoying (i.e., condemned it, and said) that "We used to get done with the prayer by this time." (The narrator adds that) it was the time of *Nafl* prayers. (*Nafl* prayers, here, probably, mean the *nafl rak'at* of Chasht).

Commentary: Abdullah bin Busr ؓ had migrated to Syria where he died at Hams in 88 A.H. The incident narrated above, perhaps, took place there.

The most explicit Tradition concerning the time at which the Prophet ﷺ offered the prayer of *Eidul Fitr* and *Eidul Adha* is the one reproduced by Hafiz bin Hajr in *Talkhees-ul-Hubayr* from

Ahmad bin Hasan-al-Banna's Kitabul-Adahi and on the authority the Prophet's ﷺ Companion, Jundub ﷺ. It reads:

"The Prophet used to offer the prayer of *Eidul Fitr* at such a time that the sun had moved upwards by two lances and the prayer of *Eidul Adha* at such a time that the sun had moved upwards by one lance."

”كَانَ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ
يُصَلِّي بِنَا يَوْمَ الْفِطْرِ وَالشَّمْسُ
عَلَى قَيْدِ رُمْحَيْنِ وَالْأَضْحَى عَلَى
قَيْدِ رُمْحٍ“

The *Eid* prayers, these days, are, generally, held very late which is contrary to the confirmed practice of the sacred Prophet ﷺ.

(٧٣٠/٢٥٨) عَنْ أَبِي عُمَيْرٍ بْنِ أَنَسٍ عَنْ عُمُومَةٍ لَهُ مِنْ أَصْحَابِ النَّبِيِّ صَلَّى
اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ أَنَّ رَكْبًا جَاءُوا إِلَى النَّبِيِّ ، صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَشْهَدُونَ
أَنَّهُمْ رَأَوْا الْهَلَالَ بِالْأَمْسِ فَأَمَرَهُمْ أَنْ يُفْطِرُوا وَإِذَا أَصْبَحُوا أَنْ يَغْدُوا إِلَى مُصَلَا
هُمْ.

(رواه ابو داود والنسائي)
(730/258) Abu Umayr bin Anas related to us on the authority of
severals of his uncles who were the Companions ﷺ of the
Prophet ﷺ that once a company of travellers came (from
somewhere) to the Prophet ﷺ and testified to having sighted
the moon on the previous day (while travelling). The Prophet
ﷺ, thereupon, ordered the people to break the fast and come to
the *Eid-gah* to offer the *Eid* prayers the next morning.

(Abu Dawood and Nasai)

Commentary: It shows that as once, during the days of the Prophet ﷺ, the moon was not sighted on the 29th of *Ramdan*, and everyone kept fast on the next day, according to the rule, but at some time of the day a caravan arrived in Madinah from some place whose members testified that they had seen the moon last evening. Accepting their evidence, the Prophet ﷺ ordered people to break the fast, but about *Eid* prayer he said that it would be held the next day.

Apparently, the caravan had reached Madinah late in the day when the time for the *Eid* prayer had passed. The legal position, also, is that if the news of sighting the moon is recieved when *Eid* prayers cannot be held at the right time, it should be offered the

next morning.

Recital of the Qur'an

(٧٣١/٢٥٩) عَنْ عُبَيْدِ اللَّهِ أَنَّ عُمَرَ بْنَ الْخَطَّابِ سَأَلَ أَبَا وَاقِدٍ اللَّيْثِيَّ مَا كَانَ يَقْرَأُ بِهِ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ فِي الْأَضْحَى وَالْفِطْرِ فَقَالَ يَقْرَأُ فِيهِمَا بِقِ وَالْقُرْآنِ الْمَجِيدِ وَاقْتَرَبَتِ السَّاعَةُ . (رواه مسلم)

(731/259) Ubaidullah bin Abdullah bin Utbah bin Masud, a Taba'ee related that (once) Umar bin al-khattab ؓ enquired from Abu Waqid al-Laythi which surah of the Qur'an the Prophet ﷺ recited in the prayer of *Eidul Fitr* and *Eidul Adha*. Abu Waqid Al-Laythi replied: "*Qaaf wal Quran-ul-Majeed* and *Iqtarabutis Sa'atah*." (Muslim)

Commentary: It does not stand reason that sayyidina Umar ؓ had forgotten what surah the Prophet ﷺ used to recite on two Eids. and, therefore, he enquired from Abu Waqid Al-Laith. What is more plausible is that he wanted to test the knowledge of Abu Waqid Al-Laithi or had put the question for further satisfaction.

(٧٣٢/٢٦٠) عَنِ النُّعْمَانِ بْنِ بَشِيرٍ قَالَ كَانَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَقْرَأُ فِي الْعِيدَيْنِ وَفِي الْجُمُعَةِ "بِسْمِ اللَّهِ الرَّبِّكَ الْأَعْلَى" وَ "هَلْ أَتَاكَ حَدِيثُ الْغَاشِيَةِ" قَالَ وَإِذَا اجْتَمَعَ الْعِيدُ وَالْجُمُعَةُ فِي يَوْمٍ وَاحِدٍ قَرَأَ بِهِمَا فِي الصَّلَوَتَيْنِ. (رواه مسلم)

(732/260) It is related by Numan bin Basheer ؓ that in the prayers of the two Eids and Friday the Prophet ﷺ used to recite *Sabbih-isma rabbikal a'ala* and *Hal ataaka hadeethul Ghashiya*, and when, by chance a Friday and Eid coincided even then he recited the two surah in both the prayers. (Muslim)

Commentary: There is no contradiction between the statements of Abu Waqid Al-Laithi and Numan bin Bahseer. Sometimes the sacred Prophet ﷺ recited the surah *Qaaf* and *Al-Qamar* on the two Eids, and, sometimes, the surah *Al-A'la* and *Al-Ghashiya*.

Eid Prayer in The Mosque Due to Rain

(٧٣٣/٢٦١) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ أَنَّهُ أَصَابَهُمْ مَطَرٌ فِي يَوْمِ عِيدٍ فَصَلَّى بِهِمُ النَّبِيُّ

صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ صَلَاةَ الْعِيدِ فِي الْمَسْجِدِ . (رواه أبو داود وابن ماجه)

(733/261) It is related by Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that once it rained on the *Eid* day upon which the Prophet ﷺ led the Eid prayer in Masjid-i-Nabawi (the Mosque of the Prophet).

(Abu Dawood and Ibn Majah)

Commentary: The Eids being the festivals and religious celebrations of the Muslims, it is in the fitness of the things that the *Eid* congregational prayer is held in an open ground and such also, was, the practice of the sacred Prophet ﷺ. Hence, it is the *Sunnah* in normal circumstances, but as the above Tradition shows, the *Eid* prayer can be held in the mosque as well if it is raining or there is any other cogent reason.

Eating Before or After The Service?

(٧٣٤/٢٦٢) عَنْ بُرَيْدَةَ قَالَ كَانَ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ لَا يَخْرُجُ يَوْمَ

الْفِطْرِ حَتَّى يَطْعَمَ وَلَا يَطْعَمَ يَوْمَ الْأَضْحَى حَتَّى يُصَلِّيَ .

(رواه العرمذى و ابن ماجه والدارمى)

(734/262) Buraydah رضي الله عنه narrated that the Prophet ﷺ used to eat something before proceeding for prayer on the day of *Eidul Fitr* but on the day of *Eidul Adha* he refrained from eating anything until he had offered the prayers. (Tirmizi, Ibn Majah and Daarami)

Commentary: It is stated, further, in *Sahih Bukhari*, on the authority of Sayyidina Anas رضي الله عنه, that the Prophet ﷺ ate a few dates before going out for the prayer of *Eidul Fitr*, and the dates used to be in odd numbers.

The reason for eating nothing on the day *Eidul Adha* before the prayers, perhaps, was the consideration that the meat of the sacrificed animals should be the first thing to be eaten that day which, in a way, was the feast of Allah, and something was eaten on the morning of *Eidul Fitr* before the prayer probably, because on that day it was allowed to eat and drink during the day by the same Allah by whose command eating and drinking in the day time had remained forbidden throughout the month of *Ramdan*, and His

good pleasure. at that time, lay in it. The Prophet ﷺ, like a needy and ardent bondsman, started partaking of these blessings at the dawn of the day.

Changing of The Route

(٧٣٥/٢٦٣) عَنْ جَابِرٍ قَالَ كَانَ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا كَانَ يَوْمُ

عِيدٍ خَالَفَ الطَّرِيقَ . (رواه البخارى)

(735/263) It is related by Jaber رضي الله عنه that the Prophet ﷺ used to change the route on the day of Eid. (Bukhari)

Commentary: What it denotes is that on the day of *Eid* the Prophet ﷺ used to return, after offering the *Eid* prayers, through a way different from that by which he went. Of the different explanations furnished by the authorities, the most appealing, in our view, is that the display of the religious practices and solidarity of the Muslims took place on the largest scale. The aspect of celebration and entertainment, also, required that people passed through different routes or parts of the town on the day of Eid.

Sadaqat ul-Fitr

(٧٣٦/٢٦٤) عَنْ ابْنِ عُمَرَ قَالَ فَرَضَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ

وَسَلَّمَ زَكَاةَ الْفِطْرِ صَاعًا مِنْ تَمْرٍ أَوْ صَاعًا مِنْ شَعِيرٍ عَلَى الْعَبْدِ وَالْحُرِّ

وَالذَّكَرِ وَالْأُنْثَى وَالصَّغِيرِ وَالْكَبِيرِ مِنَ الْمُسْلِمِينَ وَأَمَرَبَهَا أَنْ تُؤَدَّى قَبْلَ

خُرُوجِ النَّاسِ إِلَى الصَّلَاةِ . (رواه البخارى ومسلم)

(736/264) Abdullah bin Umar رضي الله عنه related that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ had enjoined the payment of *Sadaqat ul-Fitr* a *sa'a* of dates or a *sa'a* of barley — on every Muslim slave and freeman, male and female, and old and young, and (ordered) that *Sadaqat ul-Fitr* was to be given away before proceeding for the Eid prayer. (Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: Like *Zakat*, *Sadaqat ul-fitr*, also, is enjoined upon the well-to-do members of the community but it has not been clarified in the above Tradition because those for whom it was meant could, themselves, appreciate it very well. As for who are well-to-do and what is the standard of prosperity in Islam, we will

take it up later, in course of our discussion on *Zakat*.

In it, the payment of a sa'a of dates or barley, on behalf of every individual, has been prescribed. In those days, dates and barley were, generally, used for food in Madinah and its suburbs, and, hence, only these have been mentioned in this saying. According to some commentators, a sa'a of dates or barley was considered sufficient for a day's needs of an average family at that time. Thus, it was made compulsory for every member of a well off family to give as much in charity on *Eidul Fitr* as could be adequate for the food requirements of an ordinary home. A *Sa'a* is roughly equal to 1-1/3 kilos. or 3 1/2 Seers.

(٧٣٧/٢٦٥) عَنْ ابْنِ عَبَّاسٍ قَالَ فَرَضَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ

زَكَاةَ الْفِطْرِ طَهْرًا لِلصِّيَامِ مِنَ الْغُرِّ وَالرَّفَثِ وَطُعْمَةً لِلْمَسَاكِينِ. (رواه ابو داود)

(737/265) Abdullah bin Abbas رضي الله عنه related that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ enjoined *Sadaqatul Fitr* to purify the fasts from the effects of foolish, vain and lustful conversation and to provide for the food of the needy and the indigent. (Abu Dawood)

Commentary: In it, two special benefits of *Sadaqatul Fitr* have been mentioned. Firstly, through it the poor and the needy will be able to eat to their satisfaction on the day of celebration, and, secondly, it will serve as an atonement for the indiscretions of the tongue during the fasts of Ramdan.

Qurbani

(٧٣٨/٢٦٦) عَنْ عَائِشَةَ قَالَتْ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ

مَا عَمِلَ ابْنُ آدَمَ مِنْ عَمَلٍ يَوْمَ النُّحْرِ أَحَبَّ إِلَى اللَّهِ مِنْ إِهْرَاقِ الدَّمِ وَإِنَّهُ لَيَأْتِي

يَوْمَ الْقِيَمَةِ بِقُرُونِهَا وَأَشْعَارِهَا وَأَظْلَافِهَا وَإِنَّ الدَّمَ لَيَقَعُ مِنَ اللَّهِ بِمَكَانٍ قَبْلَ أَنْ

يَقَعَ بِالْأَرْضِ فَطَيَّبُوهَا نَفْسًا. (رواه الترمذی و ابن ماجه)

(738/266) It is related by Sayyidah Ayshah رضي الله عنها that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "On the 10th of *Zul Hujjah*, i.e., the day of *Eidul Adha*, no act of son of Adam is more pleasing to the Allah than *qurbani*¹. On the Day of Judgement, the animal of *qurbani*, will come with its horns and hooves. And before the blood of *qurbani* touches the ground it gains the propitiation

and good pleasure of Allah. So, O bondsmen of God! perform qurbani with full willingness of the heart." (Tirmizi and Ibn Majah)

(٧٣٩/٢٦٧) عَنْ زَيْدِ بْنِ أَرْقَمَ قَالَ قَالَ أَصْحَابُ رَسُولِ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَا هَذِهِ الْأَصَاحِي يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ؟ قَالَ سُنَّةُ أَبِيكُمْ إِبْرَاهِيمَ عَلَيْهِ السَّلَامُ قَالُوا فَمَا لَنَا فِيهَا يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ؟ قَالَ بِكُلِّ شَعْرَةٍ حَسَنَةً ، قَالُوا فَالْصُّوفُ يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ قَالَ بِكُلِّ شَعْرَةٍ مِنَ الصُّوفِ حَسَنَةً. (رواه احمد وابن ماجه)

(739/267) It is related on the authority of Zayd bin Arqam رضي الله عنه that some Companions asked the Prophet ﷺ what was the history and significance of qurbani? Upon it, he replied: "It is the Sunnah of your (spiritual and racial) progenitor, Ibrahim, (i.e., first of all, it was enjoined upon him by Allah and he used to perform it. It has been commanded to me and my followers, also, to emulate the example and act of qurbani of Sayyidina Ibrahim). " The Companions رضي الله عنهم, then, said: "O Messenger of Allah ! What is the recompense for us on these offerings?" "A virtue in return for every hair of the slaughtered animal", replied Prophet ﷺ. The Companions رضي الله عنهم, again asked: "Does it apply to wool also (meaning will the sacrificial offering of animals like sheep and camel which have wool instead of hair fetch the reward in the same proportion)?" "Yes" replied the Prophet ﷺ. "In the same proportion. A virtue in return for every hair."

(Masnad Ahmad and Ibn Majah)

(٧٤٠/٢٦٨) عَنْ ابْنِ عُمَرَ قَالَ أَقَامَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ بِالْمَدِينَةِ عَشْرَ سِنِينَ يُضَحِّي.

(740/268) Abdullah bin Umar رضي الله عنه related to us that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ stayed in Madinah for ten years (after migration), and performed qurbani regularly (i.e., every year)."

(Tirmizi)

(٧٤١/٢٦٩) عَنْ حَنْشٍ قَالَ رَأَيْتُ عَلِيًّا يُضَحِّي بِكَبْشَيْنِ فَقُلْتُ لَهُ مَا هَذَا؟ فَقَالَ إِنَّ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ أَوْصَانِي أَنْ أُضَحِّيَ عَنْهُ فَأَنَا أُضَحِّي عَنْهُ. (رواه ابو داود، روى الترمذى نحوه)

(741/269) Hanash bin Abdullah narrated "I saw Sayyidina Ali عليه السلام performing the *qurbani* of two rams (upon which) I asked him about it (i.e., why he was performing the *qurbani* of two rams instead of one). He replied: 'The Prophet ﷺ had exhorted me to make an offering on his behalf, also, and, so, I perform one *qurbani* in his name'." (Abu Dawood and Tirmizi)

Commentary: We learnt from Sayyidina Abdullah's narrative, quoted earlier, that the Prophet ﷺ used to perform *qurbani* regularly, year after year, since the time he migrated to Madinah and from the above report we find that the Prophet ﷺ had told Sayyidina Ali عليه السلام to make the sacrificial offering on his behalf, after his death. Sayyidina Ali عليه السلام, thus, used to perform it regularly in the name of the Prophet ﷺ.

Method

(٧٤٢/٢٧٠) عَنْ أَنَسٍ قَالَ صَحَّى رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ بَكْبَشَيْنِ أَمْلَحَيْنِ أَقْرَنَيْنِ ذَبَحَهُمَا بِيَدِهِ وَسَمَّى وَكَبَّرَ قَالَ رَأَيْتُهُ وَاضِعًا قَدَمَهُ عَلَى صِفَاحِهَا وَيَقُولُ بِسْمِ اللَّهِ وَاللَّهُ أَكْبَرُ . (رواه البخارى ومسلم)

(742/270) It is related by Anas رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ sacrificed two grey, horned rams. He slaughtered them with his own hand, and, at the time of slaughter, recited *Bismillaah wa Allahu Akbar*. I saw that, at that time, he was placing his right foot on their flanks and saying *Bismillaah wa Allahu Akbar*." (Bukhari and Muslim)

(٧٤٣/٢٧١) عَنْ جَابِرٍ قَالَ ذَبَحَ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَوْمَ الذَّبْحِ كَبْشَيْنِ أَقْرَنَيْنِ أَمْلَحَيْنِ مَوْجُوَّتَيْنِ فَلَمَّا وَجَّهَهُمَا قَالَ " إِنِّي وَجَّهْتُ وَجْهِي لِلَّذِي فَطَرَ السَّمَوَاتِ وَالْأَرْضَ عَلَى مِلَّةِ إِبْرَاهِيمَ حَنِيفًا وَمَا أَنَا مِنَ الْمُشْرِكِينَ إِنَّ صَلَاتِي وَنُسُكِي وَمَحْيَايَ وَمَمَاتِي لِلَّهِ رَبِّ الْعَالَمِينَ لَا شَرِيكَ لَهُ وَبِذَلِكَ أُمِرْتُ وَأَنَا مِنَ الْمُسْلِمِينَ اللَّهُمَّ مِنْكَ وَلَكَ عَنْ مُحَمَّدٍ وَأُمِّهِ بِسْمِ اللَّهِ وَاللَّهُ أَكْبَرُ ثُمَّ ذَبَحَ (رواه احمد وابوداؤد وابن ماجه والدارمي)

(743/271) It is related by Jabir رضي الله عنه that on the day of *qurbani* (i.e., *Eidul Adha*) the Prophet ﷺ sacrificed two grey, horned (and) castrated rams. When he had set their faces in the right

direction (i.e., towards the *qiblah*), he recited the prayer: I have set my face toward Him Who has created the heavens and the earth (and) in the manner of Ibrahim the upright and I am not of those who believe in many gods. My prayer and my worship and my sacrifice and my living and my dying are for Allah alone, the Lord of the Worlds. He is without a partner and to it have I been commanded and I am of those who obey. O Allah! This *qurbani* is from You and by Your favour and for Your sake (and) on behalf of Your servant, Muhammad ﷺ and his followers ﷺ. *Bismillaah wa Allahu Akbar*. After reciting the prayer the Prophet ﷺ set agoing the knife (on the thorax of) the ram and slaughtered it. (In the last part of another report referring to the same incident it is told that after saying for Your sake, he slaughtered the ram with his own hand and recited:

وفي رواية لا حمد و ابي داود و الترمذی ذَبَحَ بِيَدِهِ وَقَالَ بِسْمِ اللَّهِ وَاللَّهُ
اَكْبَرُ اللَّهُمَّ هَذَا عَنِّي وَعَمَّنْ لَمْ يُضَحَّ مِنْ أُمَّتِي

Bismillaah wa Allahu Akbar! O Allah! It is on my behalf and on behalf of my followers who may not have performed the qurbani. (Musnad Ahmad, Abu Dawood, Ibn Majah and Daarimi)

Commentary: That, at the time of *Qurbani*, the Prophet ﷺ said that it was on his own behalf and on behalf of his followers, or such of them, as had not performed it was indicative of his deep affection for the Ummah. But it does not mean that the Prophet ﷺ had carried out the *qurbani* for the whole of the *Ummah* and the duty had been fulfilled from the side of all of his followers. It, simply, shows that the Prophet ﷺ prayed to Allah to include, with him, his followers, also, in the reward on the observance. Inclusion in the reward in one thing, fulfilment of the duty of *qurbani* is another.

Instructions Regarding Animals of *Qurbani*

(٧٤٤/٢٧٢) عَنْ الْبَرَاءِ بْنِ عَازِبٍ أَنَّ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ سِئِلَ
مَاذَا يَتَّقِي مِنَ الضُّحَا يَا فَاشَارِبِيْدِهِ فَقَالَ أَرْبَعًا الْعَرَجَاءُ الْبَيِّنُ ظِلْعُهَا وَالْعَوْرَاءُ
الْبَيِّنُ عَوْرُهَا وَالْمَرِيضَةُ الْبَيِّنُ مَرَضُهَا وَالْعَجْفَاءُ الَّتِي لَا تُنْقَى .

(رواه مالك و احمد و الترمذی و ابوداؤد و النسائی و ابن ماجه و الدارمی)

(744/272) It is related by Bara' bin 'Aazib ؓ that (once) it was

enquired from the Messenger of Allah ﷺ what kind of animals should be avoided in *Qurbani* (i.e., what are the defects which render an animal unfit for it). The Prophet ﷺ gestured with his hand and said: "Four (i.e., there are four defects, the presence of anyone of which in an animal, makes it unsuitable for *qurbani*). (i) A lame animal whose lameness is very much apparent (i.e., which may be finding it difficult to move about owing to the infirmity); (ii) An animal with a defective eye and the defect is plainly visible; (iii) An animal which is very sick; and (iv) An animal which is so weak and thin that no marrow is left in his bones." (Muwatta Imam Malik, Musnad Ahmad, Tirmizi, Abu Dawood, Nasai, Ibn Majah and Daarami)

(٧٤٥/٢٧٣) عَنْ عَلِيٍّ قَالَ نَهَى رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ أَنْ نُضَحِيَ
بِأَعْضَابِ الْقُرُونِ وَالْأُذُنِ . (رواه ابن ماجه)

(745/273) It is related on the authority of Sayyidina Ali ؑ that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ forbade us against (performing) the *Qurbani* of an animal whose horn is broken or ear cropped."

(Ibn Majah)

Commentary: In truth, *qurbani* is an offering to Allah on behalf of the bondsman. It is, therefore, necessary that a good animal is selected for the purpose, within one's means. Sick, weak and crippled animals should not be offered in worship to Him. In the Qur'an the guiding principle is set forth that:

"You will not attain unto piety until you spend of that which you love." (Aal-e-Imran 3:92) لَنْ تَنَالُوا الْبِرَّ حَتَّى تُنْفِقُوا مِمَّا تُحِبُّونَ . (ال عمران ٩٢:٣)

This indeed is the spirit behind the instruction of the Prophet ﷺ for *qurbani*.

Shares

(٧٤٦/٢٧٤) عَنْ جَابِرٍ أَنَّ النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ قَالَ الْبَقَرَةُ عَنْ سَبْعَةٍ
وَالْجَزُورُ عَنْ سَبْعَةٍ . (رواه مسلم و ابو داود و اللفظ له)

(746/274) It is related by Jaber ؓ that the Prophet ﷺ said: "The sacrificial offering of a bullock or cow be made on behalf of seven persons, and, in the same way of a camel on behalf of

seven persons."

(Muslim and Abu Dawood)

Commentary: The buffalo is not found in Arabia, and, so, it has not been mentioned in this saying. But, like a cow, its *Qurbani* can also be performed on behalf of seven persons.

Qurbani After Prayers

(٤٧٤/٢٧٥) عَنْ الْبَرَاءِ قَالَ خَطَبَنَا النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَوْمَ النَّحْرِ فَقَالَ إِنَّ أَوَّلَ مَا بُدِئَ بِهِ فِي يَوْمِنَا هَذَا أَنْ نُصَلِّيَ ثُمَّ نَرْجِعَ فَنَنْحَرَ فَمَنْ فَعَلَ ذَلِكَ فَقَدْ أَصَابَ مُنْتَنَا وَمَنْ ذَبَحَ قَبْلَ أَنْ يُصَلِّيَ فَإِنَّمَا هُوَ شَاةٌ لَحْمٌ عَجَلَةٌ لَا أَهْلَ لَهُ لَيْسَ مِنَ النُّسُكِ فِي شَيْءٍ. (رواه البخاري ومسلم)

(747/275) It is related by Bara' bin 'Aazib رضي الله عنه that the Prophet ﷺ delivered a sermon in the day of *Eidul Adha*, and, in it, he said: "The first act among the acts of today is that we offer the Eid prayer, and, then, on returning from it, perform the *Qurbani*. Whoever act like that will be acting correctly, according to our way, (and the *Qurbani* will be carried out in a fitting manner), and whoever will perform *Qurbani* before the prayer, his *Qurbani* will remain unfulfilled (and it will amount to no more than this that) he killed a goat so that his family may eat the meat." (Bukhari and Muslim)

(٧٤٨/٢٧٦) عَنْ جُنْدُبِ بْنِ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ قَالَ شَهِدْتُ الْأَضْحَى يَوْمَ النَّحْرِ مَعَ رَسُولِ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ فَلَمْ يَعُدْ أَنْ يُصَلِّيَ وَفَرَّغَ مِنْ صَلَاتِهِ وَسَلَّمَ فَإِذَا هُوَ يَرَى لَحْمَ أَضَاحِي قَدْ ذُبِحَتْ قَبْلَ أَنْ يُفْرَغَ مِنْ صَلَاتِهِ فَقَالَ مَنْ كَانَ ذَبَحَ قَبْلَ أَنْ يُصَلِّيَ أَوْ نُصَلِّيَ فَلْيَذْبَحْ مَكَانَهَا أُخْرَى. (رواه البخاري ومسلم)

(748/276) Judub bin Abdullah رضي الله عنه related that (once) on the day of *Eidul Adha*, he was in the company of the Prophet ﷺ. As soon as he had finished the prayer, he noticed the meat of the sacrificed animals. These animals had been slaughtered before the conclusion of the *Eid* Prayer. The Prophet ﷺ remarked: "Those who have performed the *Qurbani* before offering prayer should do it again (since it has not been correct, being before-time)." (Bukhari and Muslim)

Superiority of the 'Ashra of Zul Hjjah

As Allah has endowed Friday among the seven days of the week, the month of *Ramdan* among the twelve months of the year and the last 'Ashra' among the three 'Ashras of *Ramdan* with superiority, so, aslo, He hes declared the frist 'Ashra of the month of *Zul Hjjah* to be a period of exceptional benevolence. It is for this reason that the *Hajj* (Pilgrimage) has been enjoined during those days. Anyway, it is a speial period of Allah's grace. A virtuous deed performed in it is outstanding value and most pleasing to Allah.

(٧٤٩/٢٧٧) عَنْ ابْنِ عَبَّاسٍ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَا مِنْ

أَيَّامٍ الْعَمَلُ الصَّالِحُ فِيهِنَّ أَحَبُّ إِلَى اللَّهِ مِنْ هَذِهِ الْأَيَّامِ الْعَشْرَةِ. (رواه البخارى)

(749/277) It is related by Ibn Abbas رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "A virtuous act performed during these ten days is more pleasing to Allah than one any other day." (Bukhari)

(٧٥٠/٢٧٨) عَنْ أُمِّ سَلَمَةَ قَالَتْ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا

دَخَلَ الْعَشْرُ وَارَادَ بَعْضُكُمْ أَنْ يَصْغِيَ فَلَا يَأْخُذَنَّ شَعْرًا وَلَا يَقْلِمَنَّ ظَفْرًا.

(رواه مسلم)

(750/278) It is related by Umm-e-Salmah رضي الله عنها that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "When the first 'Ashra of *Zul Hjjah* begins (i.e., the moon of *Zul Hjjah* is sighted) and anyone of you intends to perform *Qurban*, he should not cut his hair or nails till the *Qurbani* is done. (Muslim)

Commentary: The first 'Ashra of *Zul Hjjah* is the *Ahsra* of the *Hajj* which is the most remarkable event of this period. But the *Hajj* can be performed only by going to Makkah and it has been enjoined only once in a lifetime, and, that too, upon those who can afford the journey. The bondsmen who go to Makkah and perform the *Hajj* can, alone, partake of its choicest blessings but the Almighty has mercifully made it possible for all the Believers to forge an identity, during the days of the *Hajj*, with the pilgrims and the pilgrimage, even while staying at home, and participate in some of its rites. Herein lies the real significance of the *Qurbani* of *Eidul Adha*.

❶. Meaning a period of ten days.

SALATAL-KUSOOF AND SALATAL-ISTISQA

The prayer of a Friday and the two *Eids* are the congregational prayers that are offered on a particular day or date. Apart from these, there are two other prayers which, also, are observed congregationally, but not on a fixed day. These are *Salat al-Kusoof* which is offered at the time of the eclipse of the sun and *Salat al-Istisqa* which is offered as an invocation for rains during a drought.

Salatal-Kusoof

The eclipse of the sun or the moon is among the signs of the Power and Majesty of Allah which are revealed occasionally and whose claim is that when they occur, the bondsmen should bow down, in all humbleness, before the Absolute, the All Powerful One and beseech Him for mercy and forgiveness. During the lifetime of the Prophet ﷺ the sun was totally eclipsed about 1½ years¹. The Arabs, in olden days, believed that the eclipse was caused by death of some great man when the sun covered itself with a black sheet as a mark of mourning. The chance darkening of the sun on the day of the death of the Prophet's ﷺ son could lend encouragement to the belief. In fact, according to some reports, a few persons, openly said so. The sacred Prophet ﷺ, upon it, offered two *ruk'at* prayer with extraordinary feelings of awe and reverence. It was an unusual prayer in which he made very long recitals. During the recitals he would bow, and, then, stand erect again and resume the recital. Similarly, he carried out

①. The authorities are agreed that the Prophet's son, Ibrahim, died in 10 AH. Some, also, say that his death occurred in the month of Rabi-ul-Awwal, but the great astronomer of the 19th Century, Mahmood Pasha, has calculated that the eclipse had taken place about 8.30 a.m. on Monday, the 29th of Shawwal, 10, AH.

prolonged ruku and sajdah and supplicated Allah most humbly and earnestly. After the prayer he delivered a sermon refuting the idea that the sun or moon was eclipsed because of the death of a great man. He said that it was mere superstition and had no basis in truth. The sun and the moon were the two signs of Allah which did not suffer an eclipse on account of the birth or death of anyone. When such a thing occurred, one should turn to Allah and beseech Him with fear and deep devotion.

(٧٥١/٢٧٩) عَنْ الْمُغِيرَةِ بْنِ شُعْبَةَ قَالَ كَسَفَتِ الشَّمْسُ عَلَى عَهْدِ رَسُولِ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَوْمَ مَاتَ إِبْرَاهِيمُ فَقَالَ النَّاسُ كَسَفَتِ الشَّمْسُ لِمَوْتِ إِبْرَاهِيمَ فَقَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِنَّ الشَّمْسَ وَالْقَمَرَ لَا يَنْكَسِفَانِ لِمَوْتِ أَحَدٍ وَلَا لِحَيَاتِهِ فَإِذَا رَأَيْتُمْ فَصَلُّوا وَادْعُوا اللَّهَ .

(رواه البخارى ومسلم)

(751/279) It is related on the authority of Mughirah bin Shu'bah رضي الله عنه that in the lifetime of the Messenger of Allah the sun eclipsed on the day on which (his son) Ibrahim died. So people said that the eclipse had occurred because of the death of Ibrahim. The Prophet ﷺ, observed "The solar or lunar eclipse did not take place because of the death or life (i.e., birth) of anyone (but it was the sign of the Power and splendour of Allah). Thus, when you see the eclipse, pray and remember Allah much." (Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: The above Tradition is very brief and it does not mention even the offering of prayer by the Prophet ﷺ. In other Traditions, however, the prayer of the Prophet ﷺ and the exceptional manner of offering it have been described in detail.

(٧٥٢/٢٨٠) عَنْ أَبِي مُوسَى قَالَ خَسَفَتِ الشَّمْسُ فَقَامَ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ فَرَعَا يَخْشَى أَنْ تَكُونَ السَّاعَةُ فَاتَى الْمَسْجِدَ فَصَلَّى بِأَطْوَلِ قِيَامٍ وَرُكُوعٍ وَسُجُودٍ مَا رَأَيْتُهُ قَطُّ يَفْعَلُهُ وَقَالَ هَذِهِ الْآيَاتُ الَّتِي يُرْسِلُ اللَّهُ لَا تَكُونُ لِمَوْتِ أَحَدٍ وَلَا لِحَيَاتِهِ وَلَكِنْ يُخَوِّفُ اللَّهُ بِهَا عِبَادَهُ فَإِذَا رَأَيْتُمْ شَيْئًا مِنْ ذَلِكَ فَأَفْرَعُوا إِلَى ذِكْرِهِ وَدُعَائِهِ وَاسْتَغْفَارِهِ .

(رواه البخارى ومسلم)

(752/280) It is related by Abi Moosa Al-Ash'ari رضي الله عنه "(One day),

as the sun was eclipsed, the Prophet ﷺ rose with such anxiety as if he feared that the Hour (of Doom) was about to strike. He, then, came to the mosque and offered prayer with the longest qiyam, ruku and sajdah I have ever seen him perform. After it, the Prophet ﷺ said: 'These signs (of the Might and Majesty of Allah) which Allah reveals do not occur owing the death or life (i.e., birth) of anyone but are revealed in order to instil His fear into the hearts of bondsmen. (So), when you see a thing like it, turn to Him with awe and anxiety and remember Him and seek His forgiveness.' (Bukhari and Muslim)

(٧٥٣/٢٨١) عَنْ قَبِيصَةَ الْهَلَالِيِّ قَالَ كَسَفَتِ الشَّمْسُ عَلَى عَهْدِ رَسُولِ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ فَخَرَجَ فِرْعَا يُجْرُ ثَوْبَهُ وَأَنَا مَعَهُ يَوْمَئِذٍ بِالْمَدِينَةِ فَصَلَّى رَكْعَتَيْنِ فَأَطَالَ فِيهِمَا الْقِيَامَ ثُمَّ انْصَرَفَ وَاتَّجَلَّتْ فَقَالَ إِنَّمَا هَذِهِ الْآيَاتُ يُخَوِّفُ اللَّهُ عَزَّوَجَلَّ بِهَا فَإِذَا رَأَيْتُمُوهَا فَصَلُّوا كَمَا حَدَّثَ صَلَّيْتُمُوهَا مِنَ الْمَكْتُوبَةِ. (رواه أبو داود والنسائي)

(753/281) It is narrated by Qabisah al-Hilali ؓ that there was a solar eclipse in th days of the Messenger of Allah ﷺ. He came out deeply worried. (He was so worried that he had not placed his mantle over him properly so) his mantle was being dragged as he walked. (Qabisah said that he was with the Prophet ﷺ in Madinah and his qiyam was very long. Then he finished his prayer and, meanwhile, the sun was (out of the eclipse and) shining brightly in the normal way. He (addressed the people and) said, "These signs are meant to create fear of Allah in the hearts of people (and they keep away from disobedience). So, when you see such signs, then pray as you prayed the Fard a while go (that is, two, raka'at like the *Fajr* prayer at the time of eclipse). (Abu Dawood, Nasa'i)

(٧٥٤/٢٨٢) عَنْ عَبْدِ الرَّحْمَنِ بْنِ سَمُرَةَ قَالَتْ كُنْتُ ارْتَمِي بِأَسْهُمٍ لِي بِالْمَدِينَةِ فِي حَيَاةِ رَسُولِ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذْ كَسَفَتِ الشَّمْسُ فَنَبَذْتُهَا فَقُلْتُ وَاللَّهِ لَا نَظَرَنَ إِلَى مَا حَدَّثَ لِرَسُولِ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ فِي كُسُوفِ الشَّمْسِ قَالَ فَاتَيْتُهُ وَهُوَ قَائِمٌ فِي الصَّلَاةِ رَفَعَ يَدَيْهِ فَجَعَلَ يُسَبِّحُ

وَيَهْلِلُ وَيُكَبِّرُ وَيُحَمِّدُ وَيَدْعُو حَتَّى خُسِرَ عَنْهَا فَلَمَّا خُسِرَ عَنْهَا قَرَأَ سُورَتَيْنِ
وَصَلَّى رَكْعَتَيْنِ (رواه مسلم)

(754/282) Abdur Rahman bin Samurah رضي الله عنه narrated that one day, during the lifetime of the Prophet ﷺ, I was practising archery with my (bow and) arrows that, suddenly, the sun eclipsed. I left my arrows where I was and decided to go and see what new thing had happened to the Prophet ﷺ at the time of the eclipse and what new act he had done. When he came to the Prophet ﷺ, he was standing and offering prayer. In the same condition, he raised his hands (as one does in supplication) and entreated Allah for a long time with *Tasbeeh*¹, *Tahleel*², *Hamd*³ and *Takbeer*⁴ till the sun came out of the eclipse (i.e., the Prophet kept himself engaged in prayer and supplication as long as the eclipse lasted). In this prayer, the Prophet ﷺ recited two *surah* and offered two *rak'at*. (Muslim)

(٧٥٥/٢٨٣) عَنْ عَائِشَةَ قَالَتْ حَسَفَتِ الشَّمْسُ فِي عَهْدِ رَسُولِ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ فَصَلَّى رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ بِالنَّاسِ فَقَامَ فَأَطَالَ الْقِيَامَ ثُمَّ رَكَعَ فَأَطَالَ الرُّكُوعَ ثُمَّ قَامَ فَأَطَالَ الْقِيَامَ وَهُوَ دُونَ الْقِيَامِ الْأَوَّلِ ثُمَّ رَكَعَ فَأَطَالَ الرُّكُوعَ وَهُوَ دُونَ الرُّكُوعِ الْأَوَّلِ ثُمَّ سَجَدَ فَأَطَالَ السُّجُودَ ثُمَّ فَعَلَ فِي الرُّكْعَةِ الْأُخْرَى مِثْلَ مَا فَعَلَ فِي الرُّكْعَةِ الْأُولَى ثُمَّ انْصَرَفَ وَقَدْ تَجَلَّتِ الشَّمْسُ فَخَطَبَ النَّاسَ فَحَمِدَ اللَّهَ وَأَثْنَى عَلَيْهِ ثُمَّ قَالَ إِنَّ الشَّمْسَ وَالْقَمَرَ آيَتَانِ مِنْ آيَاتِ اللَّهِ لَا يَنْخَسِفَانِ لِمَوْتِ أَحَدٍ وَلَا لِحَيَاتِهِ فَإِذَا رَأَيْتُمُ ذَلِكَ فَادْعُوا اللَّهَ وَكَبِّرُوا وَصَلُّوا وَتَصَدَّقُوا ثُمَّ قَالَ يَا أُمَّةَ مُحَمَّدٍ إِنْ مِنْ أَحَدٍ آخِرٍ مِنَ اللَّهِ أَنْ يَزْنِيَ عَبْدُهُ أَوْ تَزْنِي أَمَتُهُ يَا أُمَّةَ مُحَمَّدٍ وَاللَّهِ لَوْ تَعْلَمُونَ مَا عَْلِمَ لَضَحِكْتُمْ قَلِيلًا وَلَبَكَيْتُمْ كَثِيرًا أَلَا هَلْ بَلَغْتُ . (رواه البخارى ومسلم)

(755/283) It is related by Sayyidah Ayshah رضي الله عنها that (when) in the lifetime of the Messenger of Allah ﷺ the sun

-
- ①. The act of praising Allah by repeating the formula of Subhaan Allah.
 - ②. Acknowledging the true God by repeating the formula of Laa ilaha illallaa Muhammadur rasoo-lullaah.
 - ③. Praise of God
 - ④. The act of repeating the formula of *Allah-u-Akbar*.

eclipsed, he offered prayer with the people, (i.e., led the congregation) in which he made a very long *qiyam*, and, then, bowed low and performed a very long *ruku*. He, then, stood up, and again, made a very long *qiyam* but it was a little shorter than the earlier one, and, then, he bowed low and performed a very long *ruku* but it was a little shorter than the previous *ruku*, and, then, he prostrated himself and performed a very long *sajdah*. The Prophet ﷺ did in the second *rak'at* what he had done in the first *rak'at*, and, then, brought the prayer to an end (after the prescribed *q'adah* and *salaam*), and, by then, the eclipse was over and the sun had become (as) bright (as ever). The Prophet ﷺ, then, delivered a sermon in which, after praising Allah, he said: "The sun and the moon are two signs among the signs of the Power and Majesty of Allah. They do not suffer an eclipse because of the death or life (i.e., birth) of anyone (but like all other created things in the world), the sun and the moon, also, carry out the command of Allah and their light and darkness are in His control. So, when you see the elipse, glorify Allah and offer prayes and give alms (to the poor)." After that, the Prophet ﷺ said: "O followers of Muhammad! No one is more displeased at fornication committed by his male or female slave than God is displeased at fornication committed by His bondsman or bondswoman. (So, fear His Might and Anger and keep away from every kind of sin. O followers of Muhammad! By Allah, if you knew what I know (bout the Might and Anger of Allah), you would laugh less and cry more." After that, he remarked: "Beware! I have conveyed the whole thing to you (and done my duty)."

(Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: The event of *Salat al-Kusoof* was an unusual one and the Prophet ﷺ had offered the prayers in a remarkable manner. It has, therefore, been related by a number of Companions رضي الله عنهم. Here, we have quoted only five Traditions appertaining to it, but in the standard compilations more than twenty reports are found. In *Sahih Bukhari* the narratives of nine Companions رضي الله عنهم are mentioned from which full details of the incident can be known.

One thing that is common to these Traditions is that the *Salat Al-Kusoof* was a rare event for the Companions رضي الله عنهم and none of them had offered it before. It is, further, clear from all the reports

that the eclipse had occurred on the day on which the Prophet's ﷺ infant son, Ibrahim ﷺ, had died, and the authorities are almost unanimous that his death took place in 10 A.H., i.e., just a few months before the passing away of the Prophet ﷺ himself. It is, thus, apparent that the Prophet ﷺ had offered the *Salat Al-Kusoof* only on the occasion mentioned in the Traditions. The command to offer prayer at the time of the lunar eclipse is, also, distinctly given in these sayings but none of the authentic Traditions shows that the Prophet ﷺ ever offered it, probably, for the reasons that the order was communicated to him by Allah on the afore-mentioned occasion and since he lived merely for a few months after that. The opportunity to offer prayers at the time of the eclipse of the moon did not arise.

The Prophet ﷺ offered this prayer with a unique state of feeling and was seen doing some extraordinary things during it. Firstly, he offered a very long prayer while his usual practice was not to offer long prayers in congregation and has, actually, forbidden the Muslims against it. It is related by Sayyidah Ayshah رضي الله عنها that "As far as I remember, he recited *surah al-Baqarah* in the first *rak'at* and *surah Aal Imran* in the second". And Sayyidina Jabir رضي الله عنه, said "Some persons could not remain standing in this prayer and they dropped on the ground." In a few other reports, it is stated that some of the participants fainted and water had to be poured over their heads. Secondly, during *qiyam* the Prophet ﷺ praised Allah for a long time with *Tasbeeh*, *Tahleel*, *Tahmeed* and *Takbeer*. Thirdly, he bowed low during *qiyam* and stood erect again, after remaining in that posture for a considering length of time, and did the recital, and, then, performed *ruku* and *sajdah*. Some Traditions have it that he did it not once but several times during *qiyam*. According to some other narratives, in this prayer he, once, moved backwards, and, then, forward, and, also stretched out his hand as one does for taking or grasping something. Later, in the sermon he said that several truths appertaining to the "world of absence" were revealed to him at that time and he saw Hell in front of him and some other things, also, which he had never seen earlier. The unusual behaviour of the Prophet ﷺ was, perhaps, due to it.

Observation: The solar eclipse coincided with the death of the Prophet's ﷺ son. However, he made it clear that it was not linked to the sad event in his family. This speaks highly of his truthfulness and should convince the greatest denier and infidel unless he is lost completely at heart.

Salat al-Istisqa

Rain is an essential need of all living things. It can correctly be said that life is dependent of it. Drought and dryness anywhere is a calamity of the first order and a sort of punishment from Above. For the removal of this great misfortune, which is not limited to any class or section of the population, the Prophet ﷺ has taught a collective *namaz* and prayer, and *Salat-i-Istisqa* is their systemized form, in the same way as he has prescribed *Salat-i-Haajat* for an individual need. Literally, *Istisqa* means asking for water or moisture.

(٧٥٦/٢٨٤) عَنْ عَائِشَةَ قَالَتْ شَكََا النَّاسُ إِلَى رَسُولِ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ فُحِوْطَ الْمَطَرِ فَأَمَرَ بِمِنْبَرٍ قَوَّضَعَ لَهُ فِي الْمُصَلَّى وَوَعَدَ النَّاسَ يَوْمًا يَخْرُجُونَ فِيهِ ، قَالَتْ عَائِشَةُ فَخَرَجَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ حِينَ بَدَا حَاجِبُ الشَّمْسِ فَقَعَدَ عَلَى الْمِنْبَرِ فَكَبَّرَ وَحَمِدَ اللَّهَ ثُمَّ قَالَ إِنَّكُمْ شَكَوْتُمْ جَدَبَ دِيَارِكُمْ وَاسْتَحَارَ الْمَطَرُ عَنْ إِبَانِ زَمَانِهِ عَنْكُمْ وَقَدْ أَمَرَ اللَّهُ أَنْ تَدْعُوهُ وَوَعَدَكُمْ أَنْ يَسْتَجِيبَ لَكُمْ ثُمَّ قَالَ الْحَمْدُ لِلَّهِ رَبِّ الْعَالَمِينَ الرَّحْمَنِ الرَّحِيمِ. مَا لِكَ يَوْمَ الدِّينِ. لَا إِلَهَ إِلَّا اللَّهُ يَفْعَلُ مَا يَرِيدُ اللَّهُمَّ أَنْتَ اللَّهُ لَا إِلَهَ إِلَّا أَنْتَ الْغَنِيُّ وَنَحْنُ الْفُقَرَاءُ أَنْزِلْ عَلَيْنَا الْغَيْثَ وَاجْعَلْ مَا أَنْزَلْتَ لَنَا قُوَّةً وَبَلَاغًا إِلَى حِينٍ ، ثُمَّ رَفَعَ يَدَيْهِ فَلَمْ يَتْرُكْ الرُّفْعَ حَتَّى بَدَا بَيَاضُ إِبْطِيهِ ثُمَّ حَوَّلَ إِلَى النَّاسِ ظَهْرَهُ وَقَلَّبَ أَوْحَوْلَ رِدَاءَهُ وَهُوَ رَافِعٌ يَدَيْهِ ثُمَّ أَقْبَلَ عَلَى النَّاسِ وَنَزَلَ فَصَلَّى رَكْعَتَيْنِ فَأَنْشَأَ اللَّهُ سَحَابَةً فَرَعَدَتْ وَبَرَقَتْ ثُمَّ أَمْطَرَتْ بِإِذْنِ اللَّهِ فَلَمْ يَأْتِ مَسْجِدَهُ حَتَّى سَأَلَتِ السُّبُورُ فَلَمَّا رَأَى سُرْعَتَهُمْ إِلَى الْكِنِّ ضَحِكَ حَتَّى بَدَتْ نَوَاجِدُهُ فَقَالَ أَشْهَدُ أَنَّ اللَّهَ عَلَى كُلِّ شَيْءٍ قَدِيرٌ وَأَنِّي عَبْدُ اللَّهِ وَرَسُولُهُ .

(رواه ابوداؤد)

(756/284) It is narrated by Sayyidah Ayshah رضى الله عنها that (once) people came to the Prophet ﷺ and described to him the acute suffering caused by drought. The Prophet ﷺ decided to offer up *Salat Al-Istisqa* at the place where the prayer of *Eid* was held (outside the inhabited area of Madinah), and, told the people to go with him on a certain day and offer *Salat Al-Istisqa*, and (also) ordered that his pulpit be taken and placed there (for the occasion). The pulpit, accordingly, was carried to that place. When the day arrived, the Prophet ﷺ went to the appointed place soon after sunrise. He sat on the pulpit and praised Allah, and, then, said: "You have complained about lack of rain and drought in your region and it is the command of Allah that you pray to Him in your need and He has promised to answer your supplications. Then, the Prophet ﷺ beseeched Allah in these words:

اَلْحَمْدُ لِلّٰهِ رَبِّ الْعَالَمِيْنَ. الرَّحْمٰنِ الرَّحِيْمِ . مَا لِك يَوْمَ الدِّيْنِ . لَا اِلٰهَ اِلَّا اللّٰهُ
يَفْعَلْ مَا يُرِيْدُ اَللّٰهُمَّ اَنْتَ اللّٰهُ لَا اِلٰهَ اِلَّا اَنْتَ الْغَنِيُّ وَنَحْنُ الْفُقَرَاءُ اَنْزِلْ عَلَيْنَا
الْمَيْتَ وَاجْعَلْ مَا اَنْزَلْتَ لَنَا قُوَّةً وَبَلَاغًا اِلَى حِيْنٍ

Alahumdu lillaahi rabbil 'aalameen, ar-rahmaan-ir-raheem, maaliki yaum-id-deen, laa ilaaha il-Allahu yaf'alu maa yureed, Allahumma antAllahu laa illaha illa ant-al-ghaneeyu wa nahnul fuqarau-ianzila 'alainal ghaitha waj'al mau anzalal lana quowatan wa balaaghan ila heen.

All praise blongs to Allah, the Lord of the Worlds, the Bneficent, the Merciful, the Owner of the Day of Judgement. There is no deity save (one) Allah. His power is that He can do whatever He likes. O God! You are the Lord Sovereign; there is no god aside of You. You are the Wealthy and we are Your poor slaves. Send rain upon us and make the rain that You send a source of strength for us and a means of sustenance for a (long) time (to come)."

The Prophet ﷺ, then, raised his hands (meaning, perhaps, that he raised them higher than they were at the time of supplication) and prayed for a long time with the hands raised in the same way, and raised them so high that (though he was wearing the mantle) the whiteness of the armpits could be seen. Afterwards, he turned his face towards the *Qiblah* and back

towards the people, and altered the mantle he was wearing, and his hands were still raised in prayer. He, again, turned his face towards the people, and getting down from the pulpit, offered two *rak'at* prayer. At that very time, a cloud appeared by the command of Allah in which there, also, was thunder and lightning, and, then, by the command of Allah, it rained heavily (and such was the downpour) that before the Prophet ﷺ could return to his mosque, the paths were filled with water and the drains and rivulets were overflowing. After it, when he saw that the people (who were complaining of drought) were rushing to sheds and thatched roofs for shelter from rain, he broke into a smile so much so that his teeth became visible, and, he said: "I affirm that Allah has power over all things and I am His slave and Messenger." (Abu dawood)

(٧٥٧/٢٨٥) عَنْ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ زَيْدٍ قَالَ خَرَجَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ بِالنَّاسِ إِلَى الْمُصَلَّى يَسْتَسْقِي فَصَلَّى بِهِمْ رَكْعَتَيْنِ جَهَرَ فِيهِمَا بِالْقِرَاءَةِ وَاسْتَقْبَلَ الْقِبْلَةَ يَدْعُو وَرَفَعَ يَدَيْهِ وَحَوْلَ رِدَاءِهِ حِينَ اسْتَقْبَلَ الْقِبْلَةَ .

(رواه البخارى و مسلم)

(757/285) Abdullah bin Zayd رضي الله عنه related that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ went to *Eid-gah* with the people for *Salat Al-Istisqa*. He offered two *rak'at* in this prayer and recited the Qur'an with a loud voice and invoked Allah with his face towards *Qiblah* and his hands raised, and he wore his mantle inside out while he faced the *Qiblah*. (Bukhari and Muslim)

(٧٥٨/٢٨٦) عَنْ ابْنِ عَبَّاسٍ قَالَ خَرَجَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَخْرُجُ فِي الْإِسْتِسْقَاءِ مُتَبَدِّلًا لَا مُتَوَاضِعًا مُتَخَشِّعًا مُتَضَرِّعًا .

(رواه الترمذى و ابو داؤد و النسائى و ابن ماجه)

(758/286) Abdullah bin Abbas رضي الله عنه related to us that when the Messenger of Allah ﷺ went out for *Salat Al-Istisqa*, he was wearing a very ordinary dress and his demeanour was that of meekness and humility. (Tirmizi, Abu Dawood, Nasai and Ibn Majah)

Commentary: As we have seen, *salat Al-Istisqa* is a collective prayer for the dispersal of the general calamity of drought. From the aforementioned Traditions we learn the following details.

(i) It should be observed at a desolate and uncultivated place outside the populated area of the town or village and directly on the ground, i.e., without a mat or carpet.

(ii) One should not take a bath and change into a clean dress for this prayer as is done for the prayers of a Friday or the two *Eids*. Very ordinary clothes should be worn and appearance made before Allah like a beggar.

(iii) The supplication should be made with deep earnestness and humbleness of spirit, and, for it, the hands should be raised unusually higher towards the heavens.

It is, also, stated in the first two narratives that, on facing the *qiblah*, the Prophet ﷺ wore his cloak inside out. It was intended to express the idea "Oh Allah! As I have altered the cloak, in the same way You, too, alter the situation by sending down the rain." Like the raising of the hands, it, too, was a part of the supplication.

In Sayyidah Ayshah's رضى الله عنها report it is stated that a cloud appeared as soon as *salat Al Istisqa* was offered by the Prophet and it rain heavily. The same has been stated in the Traditions related by some other Companions رضي الله عنهم as well.

By the grace of Allah, similar is the experience of the general body of Muslims. The present writer has had the occasion to offer *Salat Al-Istisqa* thrice, once in his childhood at his home-town of Sambhal (District Muradabad, U.P.), then, some fifteen years ago, at Lucknow, and, lastly, in Madinah, probably in 1945, and everytime, God mercifully sent down the rain as soon as the prayer was held.

Sayyidah Ayshah's رضى الله عنها narrative, finally, tells that when the rain fell heavily as a result of *Salat Al-Istisqa*, the holy Prophet ﷺ said:

أَشْهَدُ أَنَّ اللَّهَ عَلَى كُلِّ شَيْءٍ قَدِيرٌ وَإِنِّي عَبْدُ اللَّهِ وَرَسُولُهُ

"I affirm that Allah has power over all things and I am His slave and Messenger."

It is indeed the peak of devotion and worship and self-denial that although the rain fell in response to the prayers and supplication of the Prophet ﷺ he thought it necessary to acknowledge publicly that it was all due to the Power and Mercy of

Allah and He, alone, was worthy of praise and gratitude while the Prophet ﷺ, himself, was no more than an humble bondsman and Messenger ﷺ.

NAMAZ-I-JANAZA AND OTHER RELATED MATTERS

It is a common practice with the scholars of the Traditions that, at the end of *Kitab as-Salah* i.e., the Book of prayer, they mention sayings regarding death, the last illness, or illness in general, and all the other calamities and misfortunes, and the way one should behave and conduct oneself when confronted with them, as well as in relation to the bathing and shrouding of the dead body and burial, condolence and visiting of the graves, under the title of *Kitab-ul-Janai* (the Book of Funerals). Adhering to this practice, we, too, will discuss, here, reports of the sayings and doings of the sacred Prophet ﷺ concerning them. The sum and substance of these Traditions is that since death is certain and no one knows when it will strike, a Muslim should never be heedless of it. He must always keep himself in a state of pre-paredness for the last journey, and, specially, when he is ill, he should take greater care to put right his religious and spiritual condition and mend his affair with Allah. His friends and relatives, on their part, should try to bring good cheer to him through service and sympathy. They should pray for his recovery, and, talk hopefully, in his presence, of Divine reward, mercy and benevolence. In particular, when it appears that the chances of the patient's recovery are remote and his time is near, every thing possible should be done to turn his heart towards Allah and put him in mind of the cardinal principle of Islam, i.e., the *kalimah*. Finally, when death occurs, the kinsmen should show patience and forbearance and believing death to be the Will of Allah, yield themselves to it like dutiful bondsmen and hope and pray for reward on their loss. The dead body should, then, be bathed and wrapped in a good, clean shroud and perfume should be applied, and, after it, the funeral prayer should be held consisting of the praise and glorification of

Allah, the affirmation of His Might and Magnificence and the invocation of blessings on the Prophet Muhammad ﷺ through whom Guidance had reached the dead person as well as the participants in the prayer and a fervent supplication for mercy and forgiveness for the deceased brother. The dead body should, thereafter, be buried with due reverence and people should try to relieve the distress of the bereaved family by sharing its sorrow and bringing succour to it by word and deed.

The aim and wisdom of these precepts is self-evident, and, as we all know, much peace and comfort is derived by acting upon them in sickness and in death and in all other forms of sorrow and suffering. Every teaching of the Prophet ﷺ, in that regard, serves as a balm for the heart. And death, as a necessary prelude to meeting Allah, begins to look like an ageeable event.

These are the ready gains and worldly advantages of these instructions. What has been promised in the Traditions, given below, will Insha Allah be seen and experienced in the fullest measure, in the Hereafter.

Remembrance of Death

(٧٥٩/٢٨٧) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ

أَكْثِرُوا ذِكْرَهَا ذِمَّ اللَّذَاتِ الْمَوْتِ . (رواه الترمذى والنسائى وابن ماجه)

(759/287) It is related by Abu Hurayrah ؓ that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Remember death much and often. It is the terminator of worldly pleasures." (Tirmizi, Nasai and Ibn Majah)

(٧٦٠/٢٨٨) عَنْ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ عُمَرَ قَالَ أَخَذَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ

بِمَنْكِبَيْ فَقَالَ كُنْ فِي الدُّنْيَا كَأَنَّكَ غَرِيبٌ أَوْ عَا بَرُ سَبِيلٍ وَكَانَ ابْنُ عُمَرَ يَقُولُ إِذَا أَمْسَيْتَ فَلَا تَنْتَظِرِ الصُّبَّاحَ وَإِذَا أَصْبَحْتَ فَلَا تَنْتَظِرِ الْمَسَاءَ وَخُذْ مِنْ صِحَّتِكَ لِمَرَضِكَ وَمِنْ حَيَاتِكَ لِمَوْتِكَ . (رواه البخارى)

(760/288) Sayyidina Abdullah bin Umar ؓ has said that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ took him by the shoulders and said, "Be in the world as though you are a stranger or one who is passing through." Ibn Umar ؓ used to say, "In the evening do not expect to see the morning and in the morning do not expect to

see the evening, but take something when in health to serve you in time of illness and something in your life to serve you in your death."

(Bukhari)

(٧٦١/٢٨٩) عَنْ عَبَادَةَ بْنِ الصَّامِتِ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَنْ أَحَبَّ لِقَاءَ اللَّهِ أَحَبَّ اللَّهُ لِقَاءَهُ وَمَنْ كَرِهَ لِقَاءَ اللَّهِ كَرِهَ اللَّهُ لِقَاءَهُ .

(رواه البخارى و مسلم)

(761/289) Ubadah bin as-Samit رضي الله عنه quoted the Messenger of Allah ﷺ as saying, "If anyone wishes to meet Allah, Allah wishes to meet him; but if anyone does not wish to meet Allah, Allah does not wish to meet him."

(Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: This very Tradition narrated by Ubadah bin as-Samit رضي الله عنه continues that when the Prophet ﷺ said that, the Mother of the believers, Sayyidah Ayshah رضي الله عنها or one of the other of his noble wives submitted to him, "Messenger of Allah ﷺ, our state is that we (fear death and) إِنَّا نَكْرَهُ الْمَوْتَ do not like to die." He said, "That is not what I mean (that one should love death). Disliking death is a natural thing. What I meant that when death comes to a believer, he is given glad tidings of Allah's pleasure and nothing is dearer to him than what lies before him. When a slave's position is like that, Allah loves him and it is dear to Him to meet him. But when a disbeliever approaches death, he is given tidings of Allah's punishment so nothing is more unpleasant to him than meeting Allah and Allah also does not like to meet him and dislikes him. This explanation of the Prophet ﷺ elucidates that the meeting referred to here is not death in itself but the consequences after death. In a hadith of the same import narrated by Sayyidah Ayshah رضي الله عنها, the Prophet ﷺ is quoted in the concluding words as والموت قبل لقاء الله (death before meeting Allah).

Shah Waliullah رحمة الله عليه has explained this hadith. When death is very near the ugly covering of beastly and material character come to be raised. The soul seems to see the angelic world and the unseen world and the hereafter come before the eyes about which the Prophets عليهم السلام have told us. At that time the believer who had always curbed his animals instincts and tried to raise his angelic characteristics sees the blessings of Allah and

craves for them. He wishes to get to them as quickly as he can. On the contrary, the soul of an unbeliever and the one who has been neglecting Allah sees what is in store for him when he is about to die. Therefore, he does not wish to go away from this world. These are the two states represented by wishing to meet Allah and disliking to meet Allah. The words Allah likes to meet him and Allah dislikes meeting him represent the pleasure and displeasure of Allah.

(٧٦٧/٢٩٠) عَنْ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ عَمْرٍو قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ

وَسَلَّمَ تُحْفَةُ الْمُؤْمِنِ الْمَوْتُ. (رواه البيهقي في شعب الإيمان)

(767/290) It is related by Abdullah bin 'Amr ؓ that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "The gift of the Believer is death."

(Baihaqi)

Commentary: Death is not pleasant to anyone but the bondsmen who are blessed with Faith remain mentally eager for it owing to the Divine rewards, the special propinquity to Allah and the ecstatic joy of seeing Him that await them in the After-life. It is like this that though no one, by natural inclination, finds it pleasing to have an eye-operation, rationally he prefers it for himself in the hope that vision will be restored by it. The difference, however, is that while the restoration of eyesight is not certain after the operation and, sometimes, it proves unsuccessful, the choicest favours of the Lord, His closeness and the delightful experience of seeing Him are bound to be the lot of a truthful Believer in the Hereafter. Hence, death is a priceless gift for the bondsman with faith and sincerity. Another example of it is that marriage and the resultant separation from parents, brothers and sisters is most painful for a girl in the sense that she has to leave the loving, parental home and spend the rest of her life in new surroundings but the peculiar expectations that are associated with marriage produce, in her, a fondness for it. The same is the case with earnest and believing bondsmen of the Lord. Death appears attractive to them owing to the heavenly boons and blessings they confidently look forward to in the life to come.

It is Prohibited to Desire or Pray For Death

Sometimes people get disgusted with life and begin to pray for death. But it is the height of foolishness and cowardice and a sign of weakness of Faith. The Prophet ﷺ has forbidden it.

(٧٦٣/٢٩١) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ لَا يَتَمَنَّى أَحَدُكُمْ الْمَوْتَ أَمَّا مُحِبًّا فَلَعَلَّهُ أَنْ يَزْدَادَ خَيْرًا وَأَمَّا مُبْغِضًا فَلَعَلَّهُ أَنْ يَسْتَعْتَبَ
(رواه البخارى)

(763/291) It is related by Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "No one of you should wish for death. If he is virtuous, it is hoped that the stock of his good deeds will go on multiplying as long as he lives, and if his deeds are not good, it is possible that he earns the good pleasure of Allah through sincere repentance etc., in later life." (Bukhari)

Commentary: The version in *Muslim* has a slight difference in wording. With wishing for death it also says one must not pray for death.

(٧٦٤/٢٩٢) عَنْ أَنَسٍ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ لَا يَتَمَنَّى أَحَدُكُمْ الْمَوْتَ مِنْ ضَرِّ آصَابَةٍ فَإِنْ كَانَ لَا بُدَّ فَاعِلًا فَلْيَقُلْ اللَّهُمَّ أَحْيِنِي مَا كَانَتِ الْحَيَاةُ خَيْرًا لِي وَتَوَفَّنِي إِذَا كَانَتِ الْوَفَاةُ خَيْرًا لِي.

(رواه البخارى و مسلم)

(764/292) It is related by Anas رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "No one of you should desire (or pray for) death owing to a distress or suffering. Should he feel utterly helpless, he might pray: "O Allah! Keep me alive as long as life may be better for me and let me be dead when death may be better for me." (Bukhari and Muslim)

Illness is A Blessing And An Atonement For Sins

Just as the Prophet ﷺ has taught about death that it is not an extinction and utter annihilation but the beginning of a new existence which will be supremely happy and blissful for the faithful bondsmen, and, thus, is a wonderful gift for him, in the same way he has, also, informed us that illness is not out and out

misery and suffering but a blessing as well and a means of purgation from sins, and taking sickness and other forms of loss, pain or grief to be a warning from Above, the truthful bondsmen should devote themselves to correcting and reforming their ways when they are stricken with disease or any other misfortune.

(٧٦٥/٢٩٣) عَنْ أَبِي سَعِيدٍ عَنِ النَّبِيِّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ قَالَ مَا يُصِيبُ الْمُسْلِمَ مِنْ نَصَبٍ وَلَا وَصَبٍ وَلَا هَمٍّ وَلَا حُزْنٍ وَلَا أَذًى وَلَا غَمٍّ حَتَّى الشُّوْكَةِ يُشَاكُهَا إِلَّا كَفَّرَ اللَّهُ بِهَا مِنْ خَطَايَاهُ. (رواه البخارى ومسلم)

(765/293) It is related by Abu Sa'eed Khudri رضي الله عنه that the Prophet ﷺ said: "Whatever pain, sickness, loss or suffering afflicts a Muslim, so much so that a thorn pricks him, God expiates his sins through it." (Bukhari and Muslim)

(٧٦٦/٢٩٤) عَنْ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ ابْنِ مَسْعُودٍ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَا مِنْ مُسْلِمٍ يُصِيبُهُ أَذًى مِنْ مَرَضٍ فَمَا سِوَاهُ إِلَّا حَطَّ اللَّهُ تَعَالَى بِهِ مَنَآئِبَهُ كَمَا تَحْطُ الشَّجَرَةُ وَرَقَهَا. (رواه البخارى ومسلم)

(766/294) It is related by Abdullah bin Mas'ud رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Whatever suffering reaches a Believer, in the form of a disease or any other thing, Allah lets fall his sins from him through it in the same way as a tree sheds its leaves in the autumn." (Bukhari and Muslim)

(٧٦٧/٢٩٥) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ لَا يَزَالُ الْبَلَاءُ بِالْمُؤْمِنِ أَوْ الْمُؤْمِنَةِ فِي نَفْسِهِ وَمَا لَيْهِ وَوَلَدِهِ حَتَّى يَلْقَى اللَّهَ تَعَالَى وَمَا عَلَيْهِ مِنْ خَطِيئَةٍ. (رواه الترمذى)

(767/295) It is related by Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Misfortunes and afflictions come down to some believing men or women from God, sometimes, on their bodies, sometimes, on their goods, and, sometimes, on their progeny, (and, as a result of it), their sins fall away to the extent that, after death, they make their appearance before Allah in such a state that not a single sin is left." (Tirmizi)

(٧٦٨/٢٩٦) عَنْ مُحَمَّدِ بْنِ خَالِدٍ السُّلَمِيِّ عَنْ أَبِيهِ عَنْ جَدِّهِ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِنَّ الْعَبْدَ إِذَا سَبَقَتْ لَهُ مِنَ اللَّهِ مَنَزَلَةٌ لَمْ يَبْلُغْهَا بِعَمَلِهِ إِبْتِلَاءُ اللَّهِ فِي جَسَدِهِ أَوْ فِي مَالِهِ أَوْ فِي وَلَدِهِ ثُمَّ صَبَرَهُ عَلَى ذَلِكَ حَتَّى يَبْلُغَهُ الْمَنَزَلَةُ الَّتِي سَبَقَتْ لَهُ مِنَ اللَّهِ .
(رواه احمد و ابو داود)

(768/296) It is related by Muhammad Ibn Khalid Sulami on the authority of his father, and he on the authority of Muhammad Ibn Khalid's grandfather, that the Prophet ﷺ said: "For some Believers Allah ordains a high station which he does not attain by his own efforts, so Allah afflicts him with a physical or material distress or grief from the side of his children, and then, grants him the good fortune to be patient till (in return for these troubles and calamities and his patience and forbearance), He makes him attain the high station decreed for him beforehand."

(Musnad Ahmad and Abu Dawood)

Commentary: Allah is lord Sovereign. If He likes. He can grant the highest place to anyone without anything to show. But His Wisdom and Attribute of Justice demand that bondsmen should be kept at grades and stations they deserve by their deeds and states. Thus, the practice of Allah is that when, on being pleased with an act or manner of a bondsman or in acceptance of prayer of his own or some other person for his sake, He decides to elevate him to a rank or position he does not merit by his conduct. He causes the deficiency to be removed by means of pain and suffering and by granting him the good fortune to be patiently persevering in adversity.

(٧٦٩/٢٩٧) عَنْ جَابِرٍ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَوْمَ أَهْلِ الْعَاقِبَةِ يَوْمَ الْقِيَمَةِ حِينَ يُعْطَى أَهْلُ الْبَلَاءِ الثَّوَابَ لَوْ أَنَّ جُلُودَهُمْ كَانَتْ قُرْصَتْ فِي الدُّنْيَا بِالْمَقَارِضِ .
(رواه الترمذی)

(769/297) Sayyidina Jabir ؓ has said that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "On the Day of Resurrection, when people who have suffered affliction are given their reward, those who are healthy will wish their skins had been cut to pieces with scissors when they were in the world."
(Tirmizi)

(٧٧٠/٢٩٨) عَنْ عَامِرِ الرَّامِ قَالَ ذَكَرَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ الْأَسْقَامَ فَقَالَ إِنَّ الْمُؤْمِنَ إِذَا أَصَابَهُ السَّقَمُ ثُمَّ عَافَاهُ اللَّهُ عَزَّوَجَلَّ مِنْهُ كَانَ كَفَّارَةً لِمَا مَضَى مِنْ ذُنُوبِهِ وَمَوْعِظَةً لَهُ فِيمَا يَسْتَقْبِلُ وَإِنَّ الْمُنَافِقَ إِذَا مَرِضَ ثُمَّ أَغْفِيَ كَانَ كَالْبَعِيرِ عَقَلَهُ أَهْلُهُ ثُمَّ أُرْسِلُوهُ فَلَمْ يَذَرِ لِمَ عَقَلُوهُ وَلِمَا أُرْسِلُوهُ.

(رواه ابو داؤد)

(770/298) It is related on the authority of 'Aamir ar-Rami that once the Messenger of Allah ﷺ spoke on diseases (i.e., he described their philosophy and the aspect of goodness in them). In the course of it, he said: "When a truthful Believer falls ill, and, after it, Allah grants him recovery, the illness becomes an atonement for his sins of the past and a warning for the future, and when (heedless) Hypocrite falls ill, and, then, gets well, (he learns nothing from it, and) his similitude is of the camel whose owner tied it up, and, then, untied it, and it had no idea why it was tied or untied."

(Abu Dawood)

Commentary: The chief moral teaching these Traditions contain is that illness or any other loss or calamity, which, anyhow, is apart of living, should not be wholly looked upon as a misfortune or manifestation of the displeasure of Allah. There is, in them, a great deal of virtue and cause for gratitude for the devout bondsmen. Through them, sins are expiated, worthiness for the special graces of Allah increases, the shortage of good deeds is made up and the inner diciplining of fortunate and dutiful bondsmen takes place.

Those of Allah's slaves who know the truth of these sayings endure the severest of trials and illnesses and feel stronger for that.

Reward of Deeds of The Days of Good Health During Illness

(٧٧١/٢٩٩) عَنْ أَبِي مُوسَى قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا

مَرِضَ الْعَبْدُ أَوْ سَافَرَ كُتِبَ لَهُ بِمِثْلِ مَا كَانَ يَعْمَلُ مُقِيمًا صَحِيحًا. (رواه البخارى)

(771/299) It is related by Abu Musa Al-Ash'ari ؓ that the Prophet ﷺ said: "When a bondsman is sick or in a journey (and cannot carry out the daliy routine of worship etc.,) his deeds are recorded in the sake way with Allah as when he was healthy or staying at home."

(Bukhari)

Commentary: It, again, is a great favour of the Lord that if a person cannot perform his duties of *Zikr* and worship owing to the constraints of illness or travel, he, by His command, causes the duties to be recorded in his balance-sheet of deeds which he used to observe during the days of good-health or staying at home.

Visiting of The Sick

The Prophet ﷺ has declared the visiting of the sick and tending to their needs to be a virtue of the highest order and an act of worship. He used to visit the sick himself and talk to them in a comforting manner. He, also, blew on them after reciting the Names or words of Allah and exhorted others to do the same.

(٧٧٢/٣٠٠) عَنْ أَبِي مُوسَى قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ

أَطْعِمُوا الْجَائِعَ وَغُودُوا الْمَرِيضَ وَفُكُّوا الْعَانِيَ . (رواه البخاري)

(772/300) It is related by Abu Musa Al-Ash'ari ؓ that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Feed the hungry, visit the sick, and seek the release of those who have been made captives unjustly." (Bukhrai)

(٧٧٣/٣٠١) عَنْ ثَوْبَانَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِنَّ الْمُسْلِمَ

إِذَا عَادَ أَخَاهُ الْمُسْلِمَ لَمْ يَزَلْ فِي خُرْقَةِ الْجَنَّةِ حَتَّى يَرْجِعَ . (رواه مسلم)

(773/301) It is related by Thauban ؓ that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "When a truthful Believer visits a (sick) believing bondsman, he is, sort to speak, in the Garden of Paradise until he returns." (Muslim)

(٧٧٤/٣٠٢) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَنْ

عَادَى مَرِيضًا نَادَى مُنَادٍ مِنَ السَّمَاءِ طِبْتُ وَطَابَ مَمْسَاكَ وَتَبَوَّاتُكَ مِنَ الْجَنَّةِ مَنْزِلًا (رواه ابن ماجه)

(774/302) Sayyidina Abu Hurayrah ؓ has quoted the Prophet ﷺ as saying, "If anyone visits a sick person, some one cries out from heaven, "May you be good, may your walk be good, and may you come to an abode in Paradise!" (Ibn Majah)

(٧٧٥/٣٠٣) عَنْ أَبِي سَعِيدٍ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا دَخَلْتُمْ عَلَى الْمَرِيضِ فَنَفْسُوا لَهُ فِي أَجَلِهِ فَإِنَّ ذَلِكَ لَا يَرُدُّ شَيْئًا وَيُطَيِّبُ بِنَفْسِهِ. (رواه الترمذی و ابن ماجه)

(775/303) It is related by Abu Sa'eed Khudri رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "When you visit a sick person make him happy about his age (i.e., talk to him in a reassuring manner about his life, as for instance, say to him that he was looking better, and, God willing, would soon be well). Such a thing will not prevent what is decreed (i.e., it will happen in any case) but make him cheerful (and this is the main object of visiting the sick.)." (Tirmizi and Ibn Majah)

(٧٧٦/٣٠٤) عَنْ أَنَسٍ قَالَ كَانَ غُلَامٌ يَهُودِيٌّ يَخْدُمُ النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ فَمَرَضَ فَأَتَاهُ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَعُودُهُ فَقَعَدَ عِنْدَ رَأْسِهِ فَقَالَ لَهُ أَسْلِمُ فَنَظَرَ إِلَى أَبِيهِ وَهُوَ عِنْدَهُ فَقَالَ أَطِيعْ أَبَا الْقَاسِمِ فَأَسْلَمَ فَخَرَجَ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ وَهُوَ يَقُولُ الْحَمْدُ لِلَّهِ الَّذِي أَنْقَذَهُ مِنَ النَّارِ. (رواه البخارى)

(776/304) Anas رضي الله عنه narrated that a Jewish boy use to attend to the Prophet ﷺ. When he feel ill, the Prophet ﷺ went to him and sat at the head of his bed and said: "Accept the Divine faith." The boy looked at his father who, (also), was present. "Do so Abul Qasim (i.e., the Prophet) says," his father told him. The boy, thereupon, embraced Islam. As the Prophet ﷺ came out, he said: "All praise to God who took the boy out of Hell." (Bukhari)

Commentary: It shows, firstly, that some non-Muslims, too, used to serve the Prophet ﷺ; secondly, that he visited the sick among the non-Muslims as well; and, thirdly, that the non-Muslims who had the opportunity of coming close to the Prophet ﷺ, were so greatly impressed by him that they preferred Islam as the religion of their children.

Blowing on The Sick Person and Praying For His Recovery

(٧٧٧/٣٠٥) عَنْ عَائِشَةَ رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهَا قَالَتْ كَانَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ

عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا اشْتَكَى مِنْهُ إِنْسَانٌ مَسَحَهُ بِيَمِينِهِ ثُمَّ قَالَ أَذْهَبِ الْبَاسَ رَبِّ النَّاسِ وَأَشْفِ أَنْتَ الشَّافِي لَا شِفَاءَ إِلَّا بِشِفَائِكَ شِفَاءً لَا يُغَادِرُ سَقَمًا.

(رواه البخارى ومسلم)

"When anyone of us fell ill, the Prophet ﷺ used to move his right hand on his body and recite the prayer: Az-hibil baasa rabban-naasi washfi antash-shaafi laa shifa-a illa shifaa-uka shifaa-an laa yughaadiru saqma. [O Lord of mankind! Remove his suffering and grant him recovery. You are the Healer. Your healing is the healing. Grant him a complete healing that may leave not (a trace of illness)]." (Bukhari and Muslim)

(٧٧٨/٣٠٦) عَنْ عُثْمَانَ ابْنِ أَبِي الْعَاصِ أَنَّهُ شَكَى إِلَى رَسُولِ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ وَجَعًا يَجِدُهُ فِي جَسَدِهِ فَقَالَ لَهُ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ ضَعْ يَدَكَ عَلَى الَّذِي يَأْلَمُ مِنْ جَسَدِكَ وَقُلْ بِسْمِ اللَّهِ ثَلَاثًا وَقُلْ سَبْعَ مَرَّاتٍ أَعُوذُ بِعِزَّةِ اللَّهِ وَقُدْرَتِهِ مِنْ شَرِّ مَا أَجِدُ وَأُحَازِرُ قَالَ فَفَعَلْتُ فَأَذْهَبَ اللَّهُ مَا كَانَ بِي.

(778/306) Sayyidina Uthman bin Abul Aas ؓ said that he complained to the Messenger of Allah ﷺ of a pain he had in his body. He said to him to put his hand on the part of his body which was sore and say three times "بِسْمِ اللَّهِ" In the name of Allah," and seven times:

أَعُوذُ بِعِزَّةِ اللَّهِ وَقُدْرَتِهِ مِنْ شَرِّ مَا أَجِدُ وَأُحَازِرُ

"I seek refuge in Allah's might and power from the evil of what I am experiencing and trying to avert."

He said that he did so and Allah removed his trouble. (Muslim)

(٧٧٩/٣٠٧) عَنْ ابْنِ عَبَّاسٍ قَالَ كَانَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يُعَوِّذُ الْحَسَنَ وَالْحُسَيْنَ أَعِيذُ كَمَا بِكَلِمَاتِ اللَّهِ التَّامَّةِ مِنْ كُلِّ شَيْطَانٍ وَهَامَةٍ وَمِنْ كُلِّ غِيْبٍ لَآمَةٍ وَيَقُولُ إِنَّ أَبَاكُمَا كَانَ يُعَوِّذُ بِهَا إِسْمَاعِيلَ وَإِسْحَاقَ.

(779/307) Sayyidina Ibn Abbas ؓ said that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ used to command Hasan ؓ and Husain ؓ to Allah's protection saying:

أَعِزُّدُكُمْ بِكَلِمَاتِ اللَّهِ التَّامَّةِ مِنْ كُلِّ شَيْطَانٍ وَهَامَّةٍ وَمِنْ كُلِّ غَيِّبٍ لَآمَةٍ

"With the perfect Words of Allah, I command you to Allah's protection from every evil and poisonous creature and from every evil eye."

And he used to say: Your ancestor (Ibrahim) used to commend Isma'il and Ishaq عليهم السلام with these words to Allah's protection. (Bukhari)

Commentary: The perfect words of Allah could be His commands or His Book. He used to suplicate Hasan and Husain in this manner and blow on them or gave them an amulet.

(٧٨٠/٣٠٨) عَنْ عَائِشَةَ رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهَا قَالَتْ كَانَ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا شَتَكَى نَفَثَ عَلَى نَفْسِهِ بِالْمُعَوِّذَاتِ وَمَسَحَ عَنْهُ بِيَدِهِ فَلَمَّا اشْتَكَى وَجَعَهُ الَّذِي تُوَفِّي فِيهِ كُنْتُ أَنْفَثُ عَلَيْهِ بِالْمُعَوِّذَاتِ الَّتِي كَانَ يَنْفُثُ وَأَمْسَحُ بِبِيدِ النَّبِيِّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ. (رواه البخاري ومسلم)

(780/308) Sayyidah Ayshah رضي الله عنها said that when the Prophet ﷺ had a complaint he would blow on himself reciting the *mu'awwizat*¹, and wiped himself with his hand. She said, "When he suffered from the pain of which he died, I would blow on him and recite the *mu'awwizat* as he did and would take his hand to wipe him." (Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: The *mu'awwizat* are the last two surah of the Qur'an. It could also mean the supplications in such refuge is sought with Allah. We have already seen some of them and will see more in the *Kitab Ad-Da'wat*.

When Signs of Death Appear

(٧٨١/٣٠٩) عَنْ أَبِي سَعِيدٍ وَأَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَا قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ لِقَوْلِ مَوْتَاكُمْ لَا إِلَهَ إِلَّا اللَّهُ. (رواه مسلم)

(781/309) It is related on the authority of Abu Sa'eed Khudri رضي الله عنه and Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Instruct the Kalima of *Laa ilaaha il-lallaah* to the dying men." (Muslim)

Commentary: Here the "dying men" denotes those who are at the point of death and the word Talqeen (i.e., to teach, to instruct, to

inform), occurring in the original, means that the *Kalimah* of *Laa ilaaha il-lallaah* should be recited before them so that at the dying moment the doctrine of the Oneness of God might be upper-most in their minds, and if the tongue was in a position to respond, they could refresh their Faith by uttering the Confessional Formula, and depart from the world in that state.

(٧٨٢/٣١٠) عَنْ مَعَاذِ ابْنِ جَبَلٍ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَنْ كَانَ آخِرَ كَلَامِهِ لَا إِلَهَ إِلَّا اللَّهُ دَخَلَ الْجَنَّةَ .
(رواه أبو داود)

(782/310) It is related by Mu'az bin Jabal رضي الله عنه that the Prophet ﷺ said: "He shall go to Heaven whose last words are: *Laa ilaaha il-lallaah*."
(Abu Dawood)

(٧٨٣/٣١١) عَنْ مَعْقِلِ بْنِ يَسَارٍ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ اقْرَءُوا سُورَةَ يَسٍ عَلَى مَوْتَاكُمْ .
(رواه أحمد و أبو داود و ابن ماجه)

(783/311) It is related by Ma'qil bin Yasar that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Recite surah Yaseen to those of you who are dying."
(Musnad Ahmad, Abu Dawood and Ibn Majah)

Commentary: Here, too, the dying men denotes those in whom the signs of death may have appeared. Allah alone knows what is the aim and significance of this command but this much is evident that this Chapter of the Qur'an contains some remarkable truths concerning Faith, and what is to follow after death has been described in it most vividly. The last verse of it:

فَسُبْحَنَ الَّذِي يَدِيهِ مَلَكُوتُ كُلِّ شَيْءٍ وَإِلَيْهِ تُرْجَعُونَ (يس ٨٣:٣٦)

Therefore glory be unto Him in Whose hand is the dominion over all things: Unto him you will be brought back. (Yasin 36:83)

is, particularly, appropriate for recitation when the end is near.

(٧٨٤/٣١٢) عَنْ جَابِرٍ قَالَ سَمِعْتُ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ قَبْلَ مَوْتِهِ بِثَلَاثَةِ أَيَّامٍ يَقُولُ لَا يَمُوتَنَّ أَحَدُكُمْ إِلَّا وَهُوَ يُحْسِنُ الظَّنَّ بِاللَّهِ (رواه مسلم)

(784/312) It is related by Jabir رضي الله عنه "I heard the Prophet ﷺ say only three days before his death that 'Everyone of you should die in the condition that he has a good assumption about God.'"

(Muslim)

Commentary: It shows that faith in Allah and the awareness of Him require that while the bondsman feared Him, and, at the same time, was hopeful of His Mercy during the last moments of life, the pleasureable expectation of Divine benevolence and forgiveness should predominate. The sick person should strive to produce this state within himself and his attendants and visitors, too, should talk to him, or within his hearing, at that time in a way that was conducive to it and made him hopefully expectant of Divine mercy.

Things To Be Done After Death

(٧٨٥/٣١٣) عَنْ أُمِّ سَلَمَةَ قَالَتْ دَخَلَ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ عَلَى أَبِي سَلَمَةَ وَقَدْ شَقَّ بَصَرُهُ فَأَغْمَضَهُ ثُمَّ قَالَ إِنَّ الرُّوحَ إِذَا قُبِضَ تَبِعَهُ الْبَصَرُ فَضَجَ نَاسٌ مِنْ أَهْلِهِ فَقَالَ لَا تَدْعُوا عَلَى أَنْفُسِكُمْ إِلَّا بِخَيْرٍ فَإِنَّ الْمَلَائِكَةَ يُؤْمِنُونَ عَلَى مَا تَقُولُونَ ثُمَّ قَالَ اللَّهُمَّ اغْفِرْ لِأَبِي سَلَمَةَ وَارْفَعْ دَرَجَتَهُ فِي الْمَهْدِيِّينَ وَاخْلُقْهُ فِي عَقِبِهِ فِي الْغَابِرِينَ وَاغْفِرْ لَنَا وَلَهُ يَا رَبَّ الْعَالَمِينَ وَافْسَحْ لَهُ فِي قَبْرِهِ وَنَوِّرْ لَهُ فِيهِ (رواه مسلم)

(785/313) Umm Salmah رضى الله عنها related that the Prophet ﷺ came (to her house at the time of the death of her husband, Abu Salmah). His (i.e., Abu Salmah's) eyes had remained open; the Prophet ﷺ closed them and said: "When life departs, vision, also, departs with it. (The eyes should therefore, be closed after death)." One hearing it, the members of Abu Salmah's family began to cry very loudly (and in their grief they uttered words that could have the effect of calling down God's Anger on themselves). The Prophet ﷺ, thereupon, said: "O people! Pray for what is good for you because the Angels say *Aameen* on what you are saying. "He, then himself prayed: "O Allah! Forgive Abu Salmah and raise his rank among Your rightly guided bondsmen and protect and support his survivors in his place, and O Lord of the Worlds, forgive him and us and illuminate his grave, and make it spacious." (Muslim)

(٧٨٦/٣١٤) عَنْ أُمِّ سَلَمَةَ قَالَتْ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَا مِنْ مُسْلِمٍ تُصِيبُهُ مُصِيبَةٌ فَيَقُولُ مَا أَمَرَهُ اللَّهُ بِهِ إِنَّا لِلَّهِ وَإِنَّا إِلَيْهِ رَاجِعُونَ اللَّهُمَّ

أَجْرُنِي فِي مُصِيبَتِي وَاخْلُفْ لِي خَيْرًا مِنْهَا إِلَّا أَخْلَفَ اللَّهُ لَهُ خَيْرًا مِنْهَا فَلَمَّا مَاتَ أَبُو سَلَمَةَ قُلْتُ أَيُّ الْمُسْلِمِينَ خَيْرٌ مِنْ أَبِي سَلَمَةَ أَوَّلُ بَيْتٍ هَاجَرَ إِلَى رَسُولِ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ ثُمَّ إِنِّي قُلْتُهَا فَأَخْلَفَ اللَّهُ لِي رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ.

(رواه مسلم)

(786/314) It is related on the authority of Umm Salmah رضي الله عنها that the Prophet ﷺ said: "When a misfortune befalls a believing bondsman (and he suffers a loss), he should say what he is commanded to say: *In-na lillaahi wa in-na ilaihi raji'oon. Allahumma ajirni fi musibati wakhluf li khairam minha* (To God we belong and to Him do we return. O God! Recompense me in this misfortune and bestow on me a better thing in place of what has been taken away). God will, then, surely grant him a better thing." (Umm Salmah went on to relate "When my first husband, Abu Salmah died I thought who could be better than him. He was the first Muslim to migrate towards the Prophet ﷺ with his family and belongings. But I prayed as taught by the Prophet ﷺ and Allah gave him to me in place of Abu Salmah (i.e., the Prophet married me)."

(Muslim)

(٧٨٧/٣١٥) عَنْ حَصِينِ ابْنِ وَحْوَاحٍ أَنَّ طَلْحَةَ ابْنَ الْبَرَاءِ مَرِضٌ فَأَتَاهُ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَعُودُهُ فَقَالَ إِنِّي لَا أُرَى طَلْحَةَ إِلَّا قَدْ حَدَثَ بِهِ الْمَوْتُ فَأَذْنُونِي بِهِ وَعَجِّلُوا فَإِنَّهُ لَا يَنْبَغِي لِجِيفَةِ مُسْلِمٍ أَنْ تُحْبَسَ بَيْنَ ظَهْرَانِي أَهْلِهِ.

(رواه أبو داود)

(787/315) Husayn bin Wahwah narrated that when Talha bin Bara' fell ill, he said to others: "I feel the time of his death is near. (If he dies), I should be informed and (the bathing and shrouding of his dead body) should be done quickly because it is not proper for the dead body of a Muslim to remain for long in the midst of the family members."

(Abu Dawood)

Commentary: It shows that after death has taken place shrouding and burial etc. should be done quickly.

Bewailing And Breast-Beating

It is natural to feel grief at the death of a dear one, to shed tears and to show other spontaneous manifestations of mourning. It

shows that one has not ceased to be human. The *Shari'ah*, as such, has imposed no restriction on it. It commends and appreciates it. But loud lamentation and breast-beating and deliberate bewailing and crying are strictly prohibited. First, these practices are opposed to the spirit of submission to the Divine Will. Secondly, ceremonious mourning amounts to ingratitude and unthankfulness at the priceless gift of thinking and reasoning Allah has conferred upon man. Thirdly, it adds to one's own mental suffering as well as that of others and paralyses, at least for the time being, the faculties of thought and action. Crying and breast-beating, further, is hurtful to the dead body.

(٧٨٨/٣١٦) عَنْ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ عُمَرَ قَالَ اشْتَكَى سَعْدُ بْنُ عُبَادَةَ شَكْوَى لَهُ فَأَتَاهُ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَعُودُهُ مَعَ عَبْدِ الرَّحْمَنِ بْنِ عَوْفٍ وَسَعْدِ بْنِ أَبِي وَقَّاصٍ وَعَبْدُ اللَّهِ بْنُ مَسْعُودٍ فَلَمَّا دَخَلَ عَلَيْهِ وَجَدَهُ فِي غَاشِيَةٍ فَقَالَ قَدْ قَضَى؟ قَالُوا لَا يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ فَبَكَى النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ فَلَمَّا رَأَى الْقَوْمُ بُكَاءَ النَّبِيِّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ بَكَوْا فَقَالَ لَا تَسْمَعُونَ إِنَّ اللَّهَ لَا يُعَذِّبُ بِدَمْعِ الْعَيْنِ وَلَا بِحُزْنِ الْقَلْبِ وَلَكِنْ يُعَذِّبُ بِهَذَا وَأَشَارَ إِلَى لِسَانِهِ أَوْ يَرْحَمُ وَإِنَّ الْمَيِّتَ لَيُعَذِّبُ بِبُكَاءِ أَهْلِهِ عَلَيْهِ . (رواه البخارى و مسلم)

(788/316) Abdullah bin Umar رضي الله عنه narrated that when Sa'd bin Ubadah رضي الله عنه fell ill, the Prophet ﷺ came to see him with Abdur Rahman bin A'waf رضي الله عنه, Sa'd bin Abu Waqqas رضي الله عنه and Abdullah bin Mas'ud رضي الله عنه. When the Prophet ﷺ came in, he found him in a very critical condition (or in such a condition that many people were surrounding him). The Prophet ﷺ, on seeing it, said: "(He has) passed away." (He might have guessed it from his condition or wanted to enquire from the people who were around Sa'd bin Ubadah رضي الله عنه whether he had died). "No, Messenger of Allah ﷺ, replied the people. "He is not dead." The Prophet ﷺ, (then), burst into tears and when people saw it, they also, began to cry. He, thereupon, said: "O people! Listen carefully. Allah does not punish upon the tears of the eyes and the grief of the heart (because one has no control over them, and, then, pointing towards the tongue, he added), but He does punish upon the (misconduct) of this tongue (i.e., upon

lamenting and mourning with it) and blesses (those who say *In-na lillaah* and beg His forgiveness), and it, too, is a fact that chastisement is inflicted upon the dead body for the bewailment of the family members." (Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: The main purport of the above Tradition is that bewailment and loud lamentation should be avoided on the death of anyone. It is a source of the anger and punishment. On the other hand, *In-na lillaah* and other *Kalimah* of prayer and repentance ought to be uttered which are the means of earning His good pleasure. It, also, tells that the dead body is punished for the crying and breast-beating of relatives.

Besides Abdullah bin Umar رضي الله عنه, his father, Umar bin al-Khattab رضي الله عنه, and some other Companions, also, have related that the Prophet ﷺ said so. But Sayyidah Ayshah رضي الله عنها and, with her, Abdullah bin Abbas رضي الله عنه reject it. In the source-books of this very Tradition -- *Sahih Bukhari* and *Sahih Muslim* -- it is stated that when the narrative of Sayyidina Umar رضي الله عنه and his son, Abdullah bin Umar رضي الله عنه, was mentioned to Sayyidah Ayshah رضي الله عنها in this connection she remarked, "Both of these gentlemen, indeed, are truthful, but in this case, either their memory did not serve them well or they failed to hear or understand correctly what the Prophet ﷺ said. The Prophet ﷺ did never say that." Sayyidah Ayshah رضي الله عنها also referred in her support, to the Qur'anic verse:

لَا تَزِرُ وَازِرَةٌ وِزْرَ أُخْرَىٰ (النجم ٥٣:٢٨)

That no laden one shall bear another's load. (Al-Najm 53:38)

And observed "in this verse the rule has been laid down that no one will be punished for the sin of any other person. How, then, can it be that wailing is done by the members of the family and punishment is meted out to the deceased?"

But the manner in which Sayyidina Umar رضي الله عنه and Abdullah bin Umar رضي الله عنه have related the incident leaves no room for believing that they erred or mistook the meaning of the Prophet's words. At the same time, the argument of Sayyidah Ayshah رضي الله عنها, too, cannot be ignored. Commentators in their attempt to reconcile the two viewpoints have advanced various explanations, the most appealing of which is that the narratives of Sayyidina Umar رضي الله عنه and

Abdullah bin Umar رضي الله عنه appertain to the situation in which the fault or negligence of the deceased, too, had something to do with the wailing of his relatives, as for instance, he might have exhorted them to do so, as the custom was among the Arabs in olden days, or, at least, failed to advise them against it. The same view was been taken by Imam Bukhari as well.

It has, again, been suggested that when people wail over the death of a near kinsman and extol his virtues to the skies, the Angels ask him. "Why, were you really like that?" The same thing has been mentioned in some Traditions also.

Those who want to know more should see Lath al-Mulhn. It must be known that Sa'd bin Ubadah رضي الله عنه recovered from the illness. He died after the Prophet ﷺ had died in hands of Sayyidina Abu Bakr رضي الله عنه or Sayyidina Umar رضي الله عنه.

(٧٨٩/٣١٧) عَنْ أَبِي بُرْدَةَ قَالَ أُغْمِيَ عَلَى أَبِي مُوسَى فَأَقْبَلَتْ امْرَأَتُهُ أُمُّ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ تَصِيحُ بِرَنَةٍ ثُمَّ أَفَاقَ فَقَالَ أَلَمْ تَعْلَمِي وَكَانَ يُحَدِّثُهَا أَنَّ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ قَالَ أَنَا بَرِيءٌ مِمَّنْ خَلَقَ وَصَلَقَ وَخَرَقَ .

(رواه البخاري و مسلم و اللفظ المسلم)

(789/317) It is related on the authority of Abu Burda, son of Abu Musa Al-Ash'ari رضي الله عنه, that once Abu Musa (fell ill and became) unconscious upon which his wife, Umm Abdullah, began to cry loudly. Later, as Abu Musa's رضي الله عنه condition improved and he regained consciousness, he said to her: "Do you not know that the Prophet ﷺ has declared that He will have nothing to do with anyone who shaves his head, raises long, sorrowing cries, tears his clothes and follows ways of the Days of ignorance on the occasion of death or any other misfortune?" (Abu Burdah went on to add that Abu Musa Ash'ari رضي الله عنه used, often to relate this saying to his wife). (Bukhari and Muslim)

(٧٩٠/٣١٨) عَنْ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ مَسْعُودٍ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ لَيْسَ مِنَّا مَنْ ضَرَبَ الْخُلْدُودَ وَشَقَّ الْجُيُوبَ وَدَعَى بِدَعْوَى الْجَاهِلِيَّةِ .

(رواه البخاري)

(790/318) It is related by Abdullah bin Mas'ud رضي الله عنه that the Prophet ﷺ said: "Whoever slaps his cheeks, beats his face and

tears his clothes and bewails in the manner of the (polytheists of old, in moments of loss or grief), is not one of us." (Bukhari and Muslim)

Tears of Eyes And Grief And Heart

(٧٩١/٣١٩) عَنْ أَنَسٍ قَالَ دَخَلْنَا مَعَ رَسُولِ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ عَلَى أَبِي سَيْفِ الْقَيْنِ وَكَانَ ظَنَرًا لِإِبْرَاهِيمَ فَأَخَذَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ فَقَبَّلَهُ وَشَمَّهُ ثُمَّ دَخَلْنَا عَلَيْهِ بَعْدَ ذَلِكَ وَإِبْرَاهِيمُ بِجُودٍ بِنَفْسِهِ فَجَعَلَتْ عَيْنَا رَسُولِ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ تَذُرُ فَإِنْ فَقَالَ لَهُ عَبْدُ الرَّحْمَنِ ابْنُ عَوْفٍ وَأَنْتَ يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ؟ فَقَالَ يَا بَنَ عَوْفٍ إِنَّهَا رَحْمَةٌ ثُمَّ اتَّبَعَهَا بِأُخْرَى فَقَالَ إِنَّ الْعَيْنَ تَدْمَعُ وَالْقَلْبُ يَحْزَنُ وَلَا نَقُولُ إِلَّا مَا يَرْضَى رَبُّنَا وَإِنَّا بِفِرَاقِكَ يَا إِبْرَاهِيمَ لَمَحْزُونُونَ . (رواه البخارى و مسلم)

(791/319) Anas رضي الله عنه narrated "I went with the Messenger of Allah ﷺ to the house of Abu Saif, the ironmonger. Abu Saif was the husband of the wet-nurse of the Prophet's ﷺ son, Ibrahim رضي الله عنه. (and, according to the custom of those days, Ibrahim used to live with her). The Prophet ﷺ lifted Ibrahim (in his arm) and kissed him and placed his nose (on his cheeks as people do when showing affection to a child). Afterwards, we went there once (during the last illness of Ibrahim). At that time, Ibrahim رضي الله عنه was on the point of death. Seeing his condition, tears began to flow from the eyes of the Prophet ﷺ. Abdul Rahman bin A'waf رضي الله عنه (who believed, owing to ignorance, that the Prophet ﷺ could not be affected by such things) exclaimed: 'You, too, O Messenger of Allah?' The Prophet ﷺ replied: '(There is no harm in it. On the contrary), it is love and sympathy.' Then, as the tears rolled down his cheek, once again, he said: 'The eyes shed tears, and the heart is stricken with grief, but by the tongue I will say only what is pleasing to Allah (i.e., *In-na lillaahi wa in-na laaihi raji'oon*). And O Ibrahim! I am sad at your parting.'" (Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: It shows that the Prophet ﷺ was duly moved by situations of sorrow and suffering, and, he, also, shed tears in such circumstances. To feel happy at things of joy and sad at events that cause grief and distress is a fundamental characteristic of human beings. If any one behaves differently, it is a failing, not a virtue.

Sheikh Ahmad Farooqi Mujaddid Alf-Thani رحمه الله عليه writes in one of his letters "One the condition of my heart was such that I neither felt happy at things that caused joy nor sad at things that caused grief. During those days I forced myself to look happy or dejected (as the case was) with the intention of complying with the practice of the sacred Prophet ﷺ. Later, the state of indifference disappeared and, now, my condition is that I react in the natural way to sad or joyful events."

Condolence

To grieve in sympathy with any one who is in distress and to try to lessen his grief is a noble quality of the mind. The Prophet ﷺ did so himself, and, also, advised the Companions to share the sorrow of others and express sympathy for them.

(٧٩٢/٣٢٠) عَنْ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ مَسْعُودٍ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ

وَسَلَّمَ مَنْ عَزَّى مُصَابًا فَلَهُ مِثْلُ أَجْرِهِ . (رواه الترمذی و ابن ماجه)

(792/320) It is related by Abdullah bin Mas'ud ؓ that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "whenever consoled or comforted a person in distress, for him is the same reward as for the distressed one." (Tirmizi and Ibn Majah)

Sending Food to The Family of The Deceased

On the day of their bereavement, members of the house-hold of the deceased are not in a fit condition to arrange for their meals. Companionship and fellow-feeling, therefore, require that their friends or relatives send them food.

(٧٩٣/٣٢١) عَنْ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ جَعْفَرٍ قَالَ لَمَّا جَاءَ نَعْيُ جَعْفَرٍ قَالَ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى

اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ اصْنَعُوا لِآلِ جَعْفَرٍ طَعَامًا فَقَدْ آتَاهُمْ مَا يَشْغَلُهُمْ .

(رواه الترمذی و ابو داؤد و ابن ماجه)

(793/321) It is related on the authority of Abdullah bin J'afar ؓ that when news was received of the martyrdom of his father, J'afar bin Abu Talib, the Prophet ﷺ said: "Food should be prepared for J'afar's family. On the receipt of the news they will not be in such a state as to attend to needs like that."

(Tirmizi, Abu Dawood, and Ibn Majah)

Showing Patience at Death

(٧٩٤/٣٢٢) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَقُولُ
اللَّهُ مَالِعِبْدِي الْمُؤْمِنِ جَزَاءً إِذَا قَبِضْتُ صَفِيَّةً مِنْ أَهْلِ الدُّنْيَا ثُمَّ اخْتَسَبَهُ إِلَّا
الْجَنَّةَ . (رواه البخارى)

(794/322) It is related by Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Allah says "When I take away (i.e., send down death upon the dear one of a faithful bondsman (or bondswoman) and he (or she) shows patience (on it) in the hope of recompense, I have no reward for him (or her) save Paradise." (Bukhari)

(٧٩٥/٣٢٣) عَنْ أَبِي مُوسَى الْأَشْعَرِيِّ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ
وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا مَاتَ وَلَدُ الْعَبْدِ قَالَ اللَّهُ تَعَالَى لِمَلَائِكَتِهِ قَبِضْتُمْ وَلَدَ عَبْدِي فَيَقُولُونَ
نَعَمْ فَيَقُولُ قَبِضْتُمْ ثَمَرَةً فَوَادِهِ فَيَقُولُونَ نَعَمْ فَيَقُولُ مَاذَا قَالَ عَبْدِي فَيَقُولُونَ
حَمْدَكَ وَاسْتَرْجَعَ فَيَقُولُ اللَّهُ ابْنُوا لِعَبْدِي بَيْتًا فِي الْجَنَّةِ وَاسْمُوهُ بَيْتَ
الْحَمْدِ (رواه احمد والترمذى)

(795/323) It is reported by Sayyidina Abu Musa Al-Ash'ari رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "When a child of a slave of Allah dies, He says to His angels, 'Have you taken the soul of the child of My slave?' They say, 'Yes!', so, He says, 'You have taken away the fruit of his heart.' They say, 'Yes'. Then He says, 'What did My slave say?' They reply, 'He praised You and said

إِنَّا لِلَّهِ وَإِنَّا إِلَيْهِ رَاجِعُونَ (البقرة ١٥٦)

"We belong to Allah and to Him will we return." (al-Baqarah 2:156)

Then Allah says, 'Build for My slave a house in Paradise and call it *Bayt Al-Hamd* (the House of Praise)." (Ahmad, Tirmizi)

A Letter of Condolence by The Prophet ﷺ

(٧٩٦/٣٢٤) عَنْ مُعَاذِ أَنَّهُ مَاتَ لَهُ ابْنٌ فَكَتَبَ إِلَيْهِ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ
التَّعْزِيَةَ بِسْمِ اللَّهِ الرَّحْمَنِ الرَّحِيمِ

مِنْ مُحَمَّدٍ رَسُولِ اللَّهِ إِلَى مُعَاذِ بْنِ جَبَلٍ سَلَامٌ عَلَيْكَ فَإِنِّي أَحْمَدُ إِلَيْكَ اللَّهُ

الَّذِي لَا إِلَهَ إِلَّا هُوَ أَمَّا بَعْدُ فَأَعْظَمَ اللَّهُ لَكَ الْأَجَرَ وَالْهَمَّكَ الصَّبْرَ وَرَزَقَنَا
وَأَيَّاكَ الشُّكْرَ فَإِنَّ أَنْفُسَنَا وَأَمْوَالَنَا وَأَهْلَنَا مِنْ مَوَاهِبِ اللَّهِ الْهَيْئَةِ وَعَوَارِيهِ
الْمُسْتَوْدَعَةِ مَتَّعَكَ اللَّهُ بِهِ فِي غِبْطَةٍ وَسُرُورٍ وَقَبْضَةٍ مِنْكَ بِأَجْرِ كَبِيرِ الصَّلَاةِ
وَالرَّحْمَةِ وَالْهُدَى إِنْ احْتَسَبْتَهُ فَاصْبِرْ وَلَا يُحِيطُ جَزْعُكَ أَجْرَكَ فَتَنْدَمَ
وَأَعْلَمُ أَنَّ الْجَزْعَ لَا يَرُدُّ مَيِّتًا وَلَا يَدْفَعُ حُزْنًا وَمَا هُوَ نَازِلٌ فَكَانَ قَدْ وَالسَّلَامُ .

(رواه الطبرانی في الكبير والوسط)

(796/324) It is related by Mu'az bin Jabal رضي الله عنه that when his son died, the Prophet ﷺ sent him a letter of condolence:

"In the name of Allah the Most Kind, the Most Merciful!

"From Muhammad, the Messenger of Allah ﷺ, to Mu'az bin Jabal

"Salaamun 'Alaika,

"First of all, I relate to you the Praises of Allah save Whom there is no deity. (After it), I pray that Allah may recompense you most bounteously on the loss and endue your heart with patience and grant you and me the good fortune to be thankful (to Him) for His favours. Our lives and our possessions and our wives and our children are the gifts of Allah and the trusts He has placed in our charge. (Your son, also, was a trust fo Allah, given in your keeping). as long as He wished, He gave you the opportunity to profit from him with joy and to make yourself happy, and when He willed, He took back the charge from you. He is going to recompense you with a plentiful reward. (There are glad tidings of) the special favour of Allah and benevolence and guidance from Him if you show patience in the confident expectation of reward and with the intention of willing surrender to His Will. So, O Mu'az, be patient and let not bewailing and loud lamentation ruin th recompense, lest, you feel sorrow (over suffering the loss, and yet, remain deprived of the reward). And, believe it, no dead person returnst (to the earth) by mourning and lamentation, nor does it lessen the grief. And the Command that comes down from Allah shall be fulfilled. In truth, it has been fulfilled (already). Was-Salaam."

Commentary: In the Qur'an good tidings of three things have been given to those who show patience:

أُولَئِكَ عَلَيْهِمْ صَلَوَاتٌ مِنْ رَبِّهِمْ وَرَحْمَةٌ وَأُولَئِكَ هُمُ الْمُهْتَدُونَ

(البقرة ٢: ١٥٧)

Such are they on whom are blessings from their Lord, and mercy. Such are the rightly-guided. (al-Baqarah 2:157)

Alluding to the afore-mentioned verse, the Prophet ﷺ has observed in his letter to Sayyidina Mu'az ؓ that if he remained patient in his bereavement with the propitiation of Allah and Divine recompense as the objective, there were for him the glad tidings of the special favour of Allah and mercy and guidance.

Bathing And Shrouding of The Dead Body

The *Shari'ah* has prescribed a precise method of sending off, with proper solemnity and honour, a person who leaves this world for the ultimate abode of the Hereafter through the pathway of death. It is a most cleanly, noble and glady way of doing so. First, the dead body should be washed throughly as a living person takes a bath for making himself clean. Apart from cleansing and purification, due regard ought to be paid to the proprieties of a bath. The cleansers that are, generally, used in a bath for removing the grime and filthiness should be added to the water used in it. Odorous substances like camphor should, also, be finally mixed with the water so that the dead body becomes fragrant. It should, then, be shrouded in a neat and clean cloth, but wasteful expenditure to be avoided. Afterwards, the funeral prayer has to be offered in which an earnest prayer is made for Divine mercy and forgiveness for the departed soul. People, then, should accompany the corpse to the graveyard to bid it farewell. Lastly, it should aparently, be consigned to the grave reverentially, and, in reality, entrusted to the mercy of Allah.

(٧٩٧/٣٢٥) عَنْ أُمِّ عَطِيَّةَ قَالَتْ دَخَلَ عَلَيْنَا رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ

وَنَحْنُ نَغْسِلُ ابْنَتَهُ فَقَالَ اغْسِلْنَهَا ثَلَاثًا أَوْ خَمْسًا أَوْ أَكْثَرَ مِنْ ذَلِكَ إِنْ رَأَيْتُنَّ

ذَلِكَ بِمَاءٍ وَسِدْرٍ وَاجْعَلْنِي فِي الْأَخِرَةِ كَأَفْوَراً أَوْ شَيْئاً مِنْ كَأَفُورٍ فَإِذَا فَرَّغْتُنَّ

فَإِذْنِي فَلَمَّا فَرَّغْنَا أَذْنَاهُ فَأَلْقَى إِلَيْنَا حِقْوَهُ فَقَالَ اشْعُرْ نَهَا إِيَّاهُ وَفِي رَوَايَةٍ

أَغْسَلْنَهَا وَتَرَا ثَلَاثًا أَوْ خَمْسًا أَوْ سَبْعًا وَأَبْدَانُ بِمَيَامِنِهَا وَمَوَاضِعُ الْوُضُوءِ مِنْهَا

(رواه البخارى ومسلم)

(797/325) It is related by Um 'Atiya "When we were bathing the Prophet's ﷺ daughter who had died, the Prophet ﷺ came and said to us: 'Bathe her three or five times or even more if you think it proper with water boiled with jujube leaves, and, also, add caphor to it when you bathe the body for the last time, and let me know when you finish.' So, when the bathing was completed, we informed the Prophet ﷺ, then, he threw his *tahbund*¹ towards us and said: 'First of all, dress her in it.'" In another version of the same incident, it is stated that the Prophet ﷺ said: "Bathe her odd numbers of times, three, five or seven, and begin with the right side and with parts that are washed in ablution."

(Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: From the report quoted in *Sahih Muslim*, it appears that it was the Prophet's ﷺ eldest daughter, Sayyidah Zaynab رضى الله عنها, who was married to Abul 'Aas bin Rabi', the bathing and shrouding of whose dead body is described in the above Tradition. She had died in the beginning of 8 A.H., and Umm Atiya Ansariya, who is the narrator of this Tradition and was among those who had given the bath, was a prominent Companion. She always offered herself for such a service and was specially skilled in it. A renowned legist-doctor like Ibn Sireen says that he had learnt the correct way of bathing the dead bodies from her.

The above narrative speaks of bathing the dead body with water boiled with jujube leaves. These have a marked cleansing effect on the body and were used, in olden days, for the same purpose for which we use soap now. What it under lines is that fullest care should be taken to remove dirt from the dead body. For the same reason, it has, also, been stressed that the body should be washed thrice and even more than that, and since odd numbers are more pleasing to Allah, the bathing should be done three or five or even seven times if necessary, and camphor should be added when the body is washed for the last time for it has a very strong, agreeable and long-lasting smell.

The giving by the Prophet ﷺ of his own *Tahbund* for

①. A cloth worn round the waist. It is not passed between the legs nor fastened behind.

shrouding the dead body of his daughter --- in some reports it is distinctly stated that when the Prophet ﷺ was informed that the bathing had been completed he removed the Tahbund from his body and gave it for shrouding —, with the instruction that it was to be used as an under-garment has induced some authorities to conclude that it is propitious to use the dress etc., of virtuous bondsmen of Allah for such purpose. But to attach an exaggerated importance to these things and grow negligent of one's duties because of a belief like that is, of course erroneous.

It does not show how many pieces of cloth were used for shrouding the Prophet's ﷺ daughter but in *Fath-Bu'ari*, Imam Ibn Hajar has quoted Jauzqi, as an addition to Umm Atiya's رضى الله عنها narrative.

فَكَفَّنَاهَا فِي خَمْسَةِ أَثْرَابٍ وَخَمَرْنَاَهَا كَمَا يُخْمَرُ الْحَيُّ

"We shrouded her in five clothes and, also, covered her with *Khamar*¹ as is worn by living women."

It is on the basis of it that five pieces of cloth are accepted as Musnoon for shrouding the dead body of a woman.

Shrouding

(٧٩٨/٣٢٦) عَنْ عَائِشَةَ أَنَّ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ كُفِّنَ فِي ثَلَاثَةِ

أَثْرَابٍ يَمَانِيَّةٍ بَيْضٍ سَحُولِيَّةٍ لَيْسَ فِيهَا قِمِصٌّ وَلَا عِمَامَةٌ. (رواه البخارى و مسلم)

(798/326) It is related by Sayyidah Ayshah رضى الله عنها that (when the Prophet ﷺ died) he was shrouded in three (pieces of) white Yemenite cloth that were Saholi. In these was included neither the shirt nor the head-gear." (Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: According to some commentators, Saholi was the name of a place in Yemen which was famous for cloth-weaving. The Prophet ﷺ used to wear Yemenite sheets and when he died, he was, also, shrouded in them. His shroud did not include the shirt or the turban. For the shrouds of men only three peices are required according to the *Shari'ah*.

(٧٩٩/٣٢٧) عَنْ جَابِرٍ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا كُفِّنَ

①. A cloth worn by Muslim ladies to cover their head and the upper part of the body.

أَحَدُكُمْ أَخَاهُ فَلْيُحْسِنْ كَفَنَهُ. (رواه مسلم)

(799/327) It is related by Jabir رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "When anyone of you gives the shroud to his deceased brother, he should give a good one." (Muslim)

Commentary: It tells that no one possessing the means should shroud a dead person in old and rotten clothes thinking that now he will, after all, be buried in the grave and turn to dust. He should cover him with a good shroud. Reverence for the dead body requires it.

(٨٠٠/٣٢٨) عَنْ ابْنِ عَبَّاسٍ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ ابْسُوا مِنْ ثِيَابِكُمُ الْبَيَاضَ فَإِنَّهَا مِنْ خَيْرِ ثِيَابِكُمْ وَكَفِنُوا فِيهَا مَوْتَكُمْ.

(رواه ابو داود و الترمذى و ابن ماجه)

(800/328) It is related on the authority of Abdullah bin Abbas رضي الله عنه that the Prophet ﷺ said: "Wear white clothes; these are good clothes for you; and, also, shroud your dead in them."

(Abu Dawood, Tirmizi and Ibn Majah)

(٨٠١/٣٢٩) عَنْ عَلِيٍّ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ لَا تُغَالُوا فِي الْكَفَنِ فَإِنَّهُ يُسَلَبُ سَرِيعًا.

(رواه ابو داود)

(801/329) It is related by Sayyidina Ali رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Do not use a very costly shroud for it is going to perish." (Abu Dawood)

Commentary: It shows that just as it is improper to shroud the body in the cloth of a poor quality, while one can afford a better one, it is, also, unjustifiable to use a very expensive cloth.

It is worth remembering that to shroud men in three and women in five pieces of a good, white cloth is applicable only when the family of the deceased can spare the money for it without difficulty or else an old cloth and only one piece of it can, also, suffice and there is nothing to be ashamed of in it.

The Prophet's ﷺ own uncle, Sayyidina Hamza رضي الله عنه, who had been killed in the Battle of Badr was shrouded in a single piece of cloth which was so small that it could not cover the whole body. If the head was covered, the feet became bare, and if the feet were covered, the head became bare. At last, at the command of the

Prophet ﷺ, the head was covered with it and the feet with the grass of Izkhar and he was buried in that condition.

Following The Funeral Procession And Offering The Funeral Prayer

(٨٠٢/٣٣٠) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَنْ اتَّبَعَ جَنَازَةَ مُسْلِمٍ إِيْمَانًا وَ اٰحْتِسَابًا وَ كَانَ مَعَهُ حَتَّى يُصَلِّيَ عَلَيْهَا وَيُفْرَغَ مِنْ دَفْنِهَا فَإِنَّهُ يَرْجِعُ مِنَ الْاَجْرِ بِقِيرَاتَيْنِ كُلُّ قِيرَاطٍ مِثْلُ اَحَدٍ وَمَنْ صَلَّى عَلَيْهَا ثُمَّ رَجَعَ قَبْلَ اَنْ تُدْفَنَ فَإِنَّهُ يَرْجِعُ بِقِيرَاطٍ . (رواه البخارى و مسلم)

(802/330) It is related by Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Whoever, with the attribute of Faith and the intent to earn the Divine reward, follows the funeral procession of a Muslim and remains with the dead body till the funeral prayer is observed and the burial is completed, he will return home with two Qirats of reward, each of which, so to say, will be equal to the Mount of Uhud, and whoever departs after offering the funeral prayers (and does not stay on for the burial), he will return with only one (such-like) Qirat of reward."

(Bukahri and Muslim)

Commentary: Evidently, the object of this Tradition is to induce people to accompany the bier and take part in the funeral prayer and burial.

Qirat was an Arab coin worth one-twelfth of a dirham or two pice in Indian money. Since, in those days, the labourers were paid in *Qirat*, the Prophet ﷺ has used the same expression. At the same time, he has made it clear that it should not be taken for the *Qirat* of this world. It was the *Qirat* of the reward of the Hereafter which, as compared to it, will be as big as the Mount of Uhud.

The Prophet ﷺ has, further, emphasised that the reward will be obtained only when the whole thing is carried out as a religious duty and for the sake of earning Divine recompense, that it is prompted mainly by a firm belief in the word of Allah and what the Prophet ﷺ has said or revealed and confident expectation of the reward of the Hereafter. Thus, if anyone follows the funeral procession and participates in the funeral prayer and the burial simply out of the considerations of relationship or affection or with

the object of pleasing the family of the deceased and is not mindful of the command of Allah and the Prophet ﷺ and the reward on the Day of Final Judgement, he will not be worthy of it.

Walking at a Brisk Pace With The Bier And Need For Dispatch

(٨٠٣/٣٣١) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ
إِسْرَعُوا بِالْجَنَازَةِ فَإِنْ تَكَ صَالِحَةٌ فَخَيْرٌ تُقَدِّمُونَهَا إِلَيْهِ وَإِنْ تَكَ سَوِيٌّ
ذَلِكَ فَشَرٌّ تَضَعُونَهُ عَنْ رِقَابِكُمْ .
(رواه البخارى ومسلم)

(803/331) It is related by Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Take the dead body (for burial) at a brisk pace. If he is virtuous, (the grave for him) is (a) good (destination), and you will make him attain it in a short time (by walking briskly), and if he is otherwise (i.e., not a virtuous person) then there is an evil (load on your shoulders). You will remove it (quickly) from your shoulders (by moving with greater speed)." (Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: It shows that the burial should be expedited as quick as possible and unnecessary delay avoided in bathing and shrouding the dead body. When the bier is taken to the graveyard, those carrying it should not, needlessly, move slowly but at a reasonably brisk pace.

Funeral Prayer And Solemn Entreaty For The Deceased

(٨٠٤/٣٣٢) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا
صَلَّيْتُمْ عَلَى الْمَيِّتِ فَأَخْلِصُوا لَهُ الدُّعَاءَ .
(رواه ابو داود و ابن ماجه)

(804/332) It is related by Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Whenever you offer funeral prayer of anyone, pray earnestly for him." (Abu Dawood and Ibn Majah)

Commentary: The chief purpose of a funeral prayer is the making of supplication for the departed soul. The glorification of Allah after the first *Takbir* and *Durood* after the second, in fact, are a prelude to supplication. The supplications the Prophet ﷺ made in

the funeral prayer, which are given in the following Traditions, are most suitable for the occasion.

(٨٠٥/٣٣٣) عَنْ عَوْفِ بْنِ مَالِكٍ قَالَ صَلَّى رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ عَلَى جَنَازَةٍ فَحَفِظْتُ مِنْ دُعَائِهِ وَهُوَ يَقُولُ اللَّهُمَّ اغْفِرْ لَهُ وَارْحَمْهُ وَعَافِهِ وَاعْفُ عَنْهُ وَإِكْرِمْ نُزْلَهُ وَوَسِّعْ مُدْخَلَهُ وَاغْسِلْهُ بِالْمَاءِ وَالتَّلْجِ وَالْبَرْدِ وَنَقِّهِ مِنَ الْخَطَايَا كَمَا نَقَّيْتَ الثَّوْبَ الْأَبْيَضَ مِنَ الدَّنَسِ وَأَبْدِلْهُ دَارًا خَيْرًا مِنْ دَارِهِ وَأَهْلًا خَيْرًا مِنْ أَهْلِهِ وَزَوْجًا خَيْرًا مِنْ زَوْجِهِ وَأَدْخِلْهُ الْجَنَّةَ وَأَعِذْهُ مِنْ عَذَابِ الْقَبْرِ وَمِنْ عَذَابِ النَّارِ قَالَ حَتَّى تَمْنَيْتُ أَنْ أَكُونَ أَنَا ذَالِكَ الْمَيِّتِ. (رواه مسلم)

(805/333) A'waf bin Maalik رضي الله عنه narrated that "the Messenger of Allah ﷺ offered the funeral prayer of a person who had died and he remembered the words of the supplication (he made in it for the deceased). He beseeched Allah (in these words):

اللَّهُمَّ اغْفِرْ لَهُ وَارْحَمْهُ وَعَافِهِ وَاعْفُ عَنْهُ وَإِكْرِمْ نُزْلَهُ وَوَسِّعْ مُدْخَلَهُ وَاغْسِلْهُ بِالْمَاءِ وَالتَّلْجِ وَالْبَرْدِ وَنَقِّهِ مِنَ الْخَطَايَا كَمَا نَقَّيْتَ الثَّوْبَ الْأَبْيَضَ مِنَ الدَّنَسِ وَأَبْدِلْهُ دَارًا خَيْرًا مِنْ دَارِهِ وَأَهْلًا خَيْرًا مِنْ أَهْلِهِ وَزَوْجًا خَيْرًا مِنْ زَوْجِهِ وَأَدْخِلْهُ الْجَنَّةَ وَأَعِذْهُ مِنْ عَذَابِ الْقَبْرِ وَمِنْ عَذَابِ النَّارِ

Allaahummaghfirlahu wa arhamhu wa 'aafih wa' afu 'anhu wa ikrim muzulahu wa was-si'a mud-khlalahu waghsilhu bil-ma-i wath-thalji wal-bardi wa naqqihi minal khataya kama naqaitath thaubal-abyadhu minad-danasi wa abdilhu daaran Khairan min daarihi wa ahlan khairan min ahlihi wa zaujan khairan min zaujihi wa adkhil-hul-jan-ata wa 'a-izhu min 'azaabil qabri wa min -azaabin-nar

(O Allah! Forgive this, bondsman, bestow Your blessings on him; favour him with safety; pardon him; extend respectful hospitality to him; widen the grave for him; (instead of the Fire of Hell and its scorching heat) give him a bath of water, ice and hail (and make him cool), and purify him from the filthiness of sin as You have made white cloth clean of dirt; and grant him and good above of the Hereafter in place of the above of this world, and a good household in place of his own household, and a good spouse in place of his own spouse; and save him from the chastisement of Hell and firm the chastisement of the grave).

(The narrator, 'Awf bin Maalik, adds that on hearing this supplication,) he wished that it was his dead body)." (Muslim)

(٨٠٦/٣٣٤) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ كَانَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا صَلَّى عَلَى الْجَنَازَةِ قَالَ اللَّهُمَّ اغْفِرْ لِحَيِّنَا وَمَيِّتِنَا وَشَاهِدِنَا وَغَائِبِنَا وَصَغِيرِنَا وَكَبِيرِنَا وَذَكَرِنَا وَنُنَا اللَّهُمَّ مَنْ أَحْيَيْتَهُ مِنَّا فَأَحْيِهِ عَلَى الْإِسْلَامِ وَمَنْ تَوَفَّيْتَهُ مِنَّا فَتَوَفَّهُ عَلَى الْإِيمَانِ اللَّهُمَّ لَا تُحْرِمْنَا أَجْرَهُ وَلَا تَفْتِنَّا بَعْدَهُ.

(رواه احمد و ابو داود و الترمذى و ابن ماجه)

(806/334) It is related by Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that when the Messenger of Allah ﷺ offered prayer on a dead body he used to supplicate, in these words: *Allahummaghfir lihiyyina wa maiyyitina wa shaahidina wa gha-ibina wa sagheerina wa kabeeri-na wa zakarina wa onthaana. Allahumma ahyaitahu min-na fa-ahyeehi 'alal-islami wa man tawaffaitahu min-na fatawaffahu alal-imaan. Allahumma laa tuhrimna ajrahu wa laa taf-tinna b'adahu* (O Allah! Forgive our dead and living, present and absent, old and young, men and women--all and everyone. O Allah! Whoever of us You may keep alive, keep him alive in the state of Islam, and whoever of us You may take away from this world, take him away in the state of Faith. O Allah! Deprive us not of recompense on his death in hereafter nor plunge us in trial and mischief in the world after him).

(Musnad Ahmad Abu Dawood, Tirmizi and Ibn Majah)

(٨٠٧/٣٣٥) عَنْ وَائِلَةَ بِنِ الْأَسْقَعِ قَالَ صَلَّى بِنَا رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ عَلَى رَجُلٍ مِنَ الْمُسْلِمِينَ فَسَمِعْتُهُ يَقُولُ اللَّهُمَّ إِنَّ قُلَانِ بْنِ قُلَانٍ فِي ذِمَّتِكَ وَحَبْلٍ جَوَارِكَ فَفِيهِ مِنْ فِتْنَةِ الْقَبْرِ وَعَذَابِ النَّارِ وَأَنْتَ أَهْلُ الْوَفَاءِ وَالْحَقِّ اللَّهُمَّ اغْفِرْ لَهُ وَارْحَمْهُ إِنَّكَ أَنْتَ الْغَفُورُ الرَّحِيمُ. (رواه ابو داود و ابن ماجه)

(807/335) It is related by Wathilah bin al-Asqa' "The Messenger of Allah ﷺ led the funeral prayer of a Muslim. I heard that, he supplicated: *Allahumma in-na falaanab na falaanin fi zimmatika wa habli jaarika faqihi min fitnatul qabri wa 'azaabin-naari wa anta ahlul wafa-i-walhaqqi. Allahummaghfirlihu wa arhamhu in-naka antalghafoorur raheem* (O Allah! This bondsman of Yours, so-and-so, son of so-and-so, is in Your refuge and protection. Keep him safe from the mischief of the grave and

the punishment of Hell. You are the One Who Keeps His promise in Truth. You are Oft-forgiving, Merciful)."

(Abu Dawood and Ibn Majah)

Commentary: Other supplication, also, are reported to have been made by the Prophet ﷺ during the funeral prayer but the three mentioned above are more popular. One, however, is free to recite any one or several of them.

The narrative of Wathilah bin Asqa' shows that the prophet ﷺ used to make these supplications so loudly that the Companions heard them and preserved them for posterity. The Prophet ﷺ often, said some supplication in prayers with a loud voice so that others could hear and learn them by heart. The saying aloud of these supplication in the funeral prayer, probably, was for the same reason, otherwise, as a general principle, it is better to make entreaties to Allah quiet. In the Qur'an, too, it is stated:

أَدْعُوا رَبَّكُمْ تَضَرُّعًا وَخُفْيَةً (الاعراف ٢٠٥:٧)

And do thou remember thy Lord within thyself humbly and with awe, below thy breath. (Al-Araf 7:205)

Propitiousness of A Large Number of Men Participating in Funeral Prayer

(٨٠٨/٣٣٦) عَنْ عَائِشَةَ عَنِ النَّبِيِّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ قَالَ مَا مِنْ مَيِّتٍ تُصَلِّيَ عَلَيْهِ أُمَّةٌ مِنَ الْمُسْلِمِينَ يُلْفُونَ مِائَةً كُلُّهُمْ يَشْفَعُونَ لَهُ إِلَّا شَفَعُوا فِيهِ .

(رواه مسلم)

(808/336) It is related by Sayyidah Ayshah رضى الله عنها that the Prophet ﷺ said: "The dead body on which a large number of Muslims as many as a hundred — offer prayer and plead solemnly with Allah on behalf of the deceased (i.e., pray for mercy and forgiveness for him), their prayer and intercession will, positively, be granted." (Muslim)

(٨٠٩/٣٣٧) عَنْ كُرَيْبٍ مَوْلَى ابْنِ عَبَّاسٍ عَنْ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ ابْنِ عَبَّاسٍ أَنَّهُ مَاتَ لَهُ ابْنٌ بِقُدَيْدٍ أَوْ بِعُسْفَانَ فَقَالَ يَا كُرَيْبُ انْظُرْ مَا اجْتَمَعَ لَهُ مِنَ النَّاسِ قَالَ خَرَجْتُ فَإِذَا نَاسٌ قَدْ اجْتَمَعُوا لَهُ فَأَخْبَرْتُهُ فَقَالَ تَقُولُ هُمْ أَرْبَعُونَ قَالَ نَعَمْ قَالَ أَخْرِجُوهُ

فَإِنِّي سَمِعْتُ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَقُولُ مَا مِنْ رَجُلٍ مُسْلِمٍ يَمُوتُ
فَيَقُومُ عَلَى جَنَازَتِهِ أَرْبَعُونَ رَجُلًا لَا يُشْرِكُونَ بِاللَّهِ شَيْئًا إِلَّا شَفَعَهُمُ اللَّهُ فِيهِ .

(رواه مسلم)

(809/337) The freed slave of Abdullah bin Abbas رضي الله عنه, Khrayb, a Taba'ee, narrated "A son of Abdullah bin Abbas died at Qudayd or Usfa. (When some people had assembled), Abdullah bin Abbas told me to go and have a look at them. So, I went out and saw that a good number of men had collected. When I informed him about it, he asked; 'Do you think there are forty of them?' 'Yes (I am sure they are forty)', I replied. Abdullah bin Abbas رضي الله عنه said: Now take out the dead body. I have heard the Prophet ﷺ say that if a Muslim dies and forty persons whose lives are wholly free from polytheism offer his funeral prayer (and, they ask for forgiveness for him), Allah, surely, grants their prayer and intercession on behalf of the deceased." (Muslim)

Commentary: Qudaid was a town lying on the road between Makkah and Madinah, near Rabigh, and Usfan was the name of a settlement between Makkah and Rabigh, some 30 miles from Makkah. The narrator is not sure at which of the two places Abdullah bin Abbas's رضي الله عنه son had died.

(٨١٠/٢٣٨) عَنْ مَالِكِ بْنِ هُبَيْرَةَ قَالَ سَمِعْتُ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَا مِنْ مُسْلِمٍ يَمُوتُ فَيُصَلِّي عَلَيْهِ ثَلَاثَةُ صُفُوفٍ مِنَ الْمُسْلِمِينَ إِلَّا أَوْحَبَ فَكَانَ مَالِكٌ إِذَا اسْتَقَلَّ أَهْلَ الْجَنَازَةِ جَزَأَهُمْ ثَلَاثَةَ صُفُوفٍ لِهَذَا الْحَدِيثِ .

(رواه ابو داود)

(810/338) It is related on the authority of Maalik bin Hubayrah رضي الله عنه that he heard the Prophet ﷺ say: "If a Muslim bondsman dies and three rows of Muslims offer his funeral prayer (and beseech Allah, to forgive his sins and grant him Paradise), Allah, surely, makes forgiveness and Paradise his due." Merthad Yazni who related this Tradition on the authority of Maalik bin Hubayrah, adds that) it was the practice of Maalik bin Hubayrah when he felt that the number of participants in a funeral prayer was not much he divided them into three rows in light of this saying.

(Abu Dawood)

Commentary: Confident expectation of the acceptance of the

supplication for forgiveness and Paradise has been expressed. in the first saying, on the participation of a hundred Muslims in the funeral prayer, in the second, of forty Muslims, and, in the third, of three rows of them. Apparently, it was inspired to the Prophet by Allah on three different occasions. At first, he was told that if a hundred Muslims offered up the funeral prayer of a Believer, and, supplicated, on his behalf, forgiveness and mercy, Allah will, certainly, grant it, then the number was reduced to forty, and, then again, to three rows.

Nevertheless, the above narrative distinctly shows that it is good and a means of felicity and propitiousness that a large number of Muslims participate in the funeral prayer. Endeavour should, therefore be made, to a reasonable extent, to arrange for it.

Burial

(٨١١/٣٣٩) عَنْ عَامِرِ بْنِ سَعْدِ بْنِ أَبِي وَقَّاصٍ أَنَّ سَعْدَ بْنَ أَبِي وَقَّاصٍ قَالَ
فِي مَرَضِهِ الَّذِي هَلَكَ فِيهِ أَلْحَدُونِي لِحَدٍّ وَأَنْصِبُوا عَلَيَّ اللَّبْنَ نَصْبًا كَمَا صَنَعَ
رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ. (رواه مسلم)

(811/339) 'Aamir bin Sa'd bin Abu Waqqas رضي الله عنه, narrated "My father, (Sa'd bin Abu Waqqas رضي الله عنه) had willed, during his last illness, that a grave with a niche in the side should be prepared for him and unbaked bricks placed in an upright position to seal it, as had been done for the Prophet ﷺ." (Muslim)

Commentary: It shows that the better and more proper way of preparing the grave was that a niche was dug in its side (in which the dead body was deposited), and it was closed with unbroken bricks. The grave of the Prophet ﷺ was made in the same way. But should the soil be so soft that a grave of this kind cannot be dug, the other type of grave (i.e., the straight one) should be made which is called, Shiqq. From various accounts it appears that both kinds of graves were dug, as the circumstances required, during the days of the Prophet ﷺ. But a grave with a small recess on one of its side is preferable.

(٨١٢/٣٤٠) عَنْ هِشَامِ بْنِ عَامِرٍ أَنَّ النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ قَالَ يَوْمَ أُحُدٍ

إَحْفَرُوا وَأَوْسَعُوا وَأَعْمِقُوا وَأَحْسِنُوا وَادْفَنُوا الْإِثْنَيْنِ وَالثَّلَاثَةَ فِي قَبْرِ وَاحِدٍ
وَقَدِّمُوا أَكْثَرَهُمْ قُرْآنًا .
(رواه احمد و الترمذی و ابوداؤد و النسائی)

(812/340) It is related on the authority of Hisham bin 'Aamir ؓ that, on the day of Uhud, the Prophet ﷺ said: "Dig graves (for the martyrs) and make them wide and deep and prepare them well and bury two or three in one grave, and, among them, give preference to him who has more of the Qur'an."

(Musnad Ahmad, Tirmizi, Abu Dawood and Nasai)

Commentary: In the Battle of Uhud about 70 Companions were killed and it was not easy to dig a grave for everyone of them. Besides, the Prophet ﷺ, also, had to set a precedent for such a situation. He, therefore, ordered two or three martyrs to be buried together in one grave which was to be deep as well wide. It was further, indicated by him that when more than one martyr was buried in a single grave, he should be the first to be deposited in it and placed in the direction of the qibla who knew more of the Qur'an. On the strength of this Tradition, the principle has been enunciated that several corpses can be buried in one grave in a war or other extra-ordinary circumstances.

(٨١٣/٣٤١) عَنْ ابْنِ عُمَرَ أَنَّ النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ كَانَ إِذَا أَدْخَلَ
الْمَيِّتَ الْقَبْرَ وَقَالَ بِسْمِ اللَّهِ وَبِاللَّهِ وَعَلَى مِلَّةِ رَسُولِ اللَّهِ . وَفِي رَوَايَةٍ وَعَلَى
سُنَّةِ رَسُولِ اللَّهِ .
(رواه احمد و الترمذی و ابن ماجه و ابوداؤد)

(813/341) Abdullah bin Umar ؓ related to us that when the Prophet ﷺ lowered a dead body in the grave (or a dead body was lowered into it), he used to say: "Bismillahi wa billaahi 'ala millati rasulillah (We bury him in the name of Allah and with His help and in accordance with the way of the followers of His Messenger". (In some other versions of the same Tradition 'Ala Sunnati rasulillah has been mentioned in place of 'Ala millati rasulillah). (Musnad Ahmad, Tirmizi, Ibn Majah and Abu Dawood)

(٨١٤/٣٤٢) عَنْ جَعْفَرِ بْنِ مُحَمَّدٍ عَنْ أَبِيهِ مُرْسَلًا عَنِ النَّبِيِّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ
وَسَلَّمَ حَتَّى عَلَى الْمَيِّتِ ثَلَاثَ خِثَايَ بِيَدَيْهِ جَمِيعًا وَأَنَّهُ رَمَى عَلَى قَبْرَائِهِ
إِبْرَاهِيمَ وَوَضَعَ عَلَيْهِ خَصْبَاءً .
(رواه البغوى فى شرح السنه)

(814/342) It is related, by way of Irsal, by J'afar Sadiq رحمة الله عليه, on the authority of his father, Muhammad Baqar رحمة الله عليه, that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ took dust thrice in both of his hands joined together and threw it on a dead body (i.e., on its grave at the time of burial), and he poured water (or had it poured) on the grave of his son, Ibrahim, and caused gravel to be laid on it." (Sharh-us-Sunnah)

(٨١٥/٣٤٣) عَنْ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ عُمَرَ قَالَ سَمِعْتُ النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَقُولُ إِذَا مَاتَ أَحَدُكُمْ فَلَا تَحْبِسُوهُ وَأَسْرِعُوا بِهِ إِلَى قَبْرِهِ وَيَقْرَأُ عِنْدَ رَأْسِهِ فَاتِحَةَ الْبَقَرَةِ وَعِنْدَ رِجْلَيْهِ بِخَاتِمَةِ الْبَقَرَةِ.

(رواه البيهقي في شعب الإيمان وقال هو الصحيح أنه موقوف عليه)

(815/343) Abdullah bin Umar رضي الله عنه related "I heard the Prophet ﷺ say: 'When anyone of you dies, do not retain his corpse in the house for a long time, but make haste in taking it to the grave and burying it, and (after the burial) recite the opening verse of surah *Al-Baqarah* (up to Muflihoon) on the side of the head and concluding verses of it (from Aamanar rasul up to the end) on the side of the feet.'" (This Tradition has been quoted by Baihaqi in *Sh'ab-el-Imam* with the remark that, in fact, these are the words of Abdullah bin Umar رضي الله عنه and there is no documentary evidence on the basis of which they can be attributed to the sacred Prophet ﷺ).

Commentary: The instruction not to delay the burial unnecessarily is contained in a number of Traditions of the Prophet ﷺ. As for the recitation of the opening and concluding verses of *Sura Al-Baqarah* at the grave, Ibn Umar رضي الله عنه could, not have prescribed it on his own. He must have learnt it from the Prophet ﷺ. Thus, though the documentary evidence of the transmission of this Tradition may not be available, it falls in the category of *Marfroof*¹ according to the criteria laid down by the scholars of the Traditions and the jurists.

①. Meaning a Tradition whose authenticity is established by an unbroken chain of transmission right up to the Prophet ﷺ.

Graves

(٨١٦/٣٤٤) عَنْ جَابِرٍ قَالَ نَهَى رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ أَنْ

يُجَصَّصَ الْقَبْرُ وَأَنْ يُبْنَى عَلَيْهِ وَأَنْ يُقْعَدَ عَلَيْهِ . (رواه مسلم)

(816/344) It is related by Jaber رضي الله عنه that "The Messenger of Allah ﷺ has ordered against making a solid grave by plastering it with lime or erecting a building over it or sitting on it." (Muslim)

Commentary: Concerning the grave, the doctrinal point of the *Shari'ah*, on the one hand, is that it should be regarded with respect because of its association with the dead and everything that is desecratory to it is prohibited — that is why, it has been forbidden in the above saying to sit on it — and, on the other, that it should be plain and simple, arousing in the heart of the viewer the realisation of the transitoriness of the world and an earnest anxiety for the Hereafter. It is for this latter reason that it has been disallowed to build it at a solid, permanent or imposing structure or to erect a monument or any other building over it. Another wisdom of it is that when a grave will be plain, clay-built and unornamented, people with a polytheistic disposition will not be tempted to turn it into a place of worship. We, thus, find that absurd and un-Islamic practices are not carried out where the graves of the Companions رضي الله عنهم, spiritual mentors رحمة الله عليهم and other high-souled men have, in compliance with this command, been built of clay and kept strictly unadorned while most undesirable things are witnessed where mausoleums have been erected over the graves of holy men.

(٨١٧/٢٤٥) عَنْ أَبِي مَرْثَدٍ الْغَنَوِيِّ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ

لَا تَجْلِسُوا عَلَى الْقُبُورِ وَلَا تَصَلُّوا إِلَيْهَا (رواه البخاري)

(817/345) It is related by Abi Marthad Ghanawi that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Neither sit on the graves nor offer prayer with your face turned towards them." (Muslim)

Commentary: It is not only an act of irreverence to sit on a grave, but as we shall see in the next Tradition, also hurtful to the occupier. The object of restraining people from offering prayer facing the grave was to guard them even against the semblance of

polytheism.

(٨١٨/٣٤٦) عَنْ عَمْرِو بْنِ حَزْمٍ قَالَ رَأَى النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مُتَكِنًا عَلَى قَبْرِ فَقَالَ لَا تُؤْذِ صَاحِبَ هَذَا الْقَبْرِ وَلَا تُؤْذِهِ. (رواه احمد)

(818/346) Amr bin Hazim related "Once on seeing me reclining on a grave, the Prophet ﷺ remarked: 'Do not hurt its occupier.'"
(Musnad Ahmad)

Visiting The Graves

(٨١٩/٣٤٧) عَنْ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ مَسْعُودٍ أَنَّ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ قَالَ كُنْتُ نَهَيْتُكُمْ عَنْ زِيَارَةِ الْقُبُورِ فَزُورُوهَا فَإِنَّهَا تُزْهِدُ فِي الدُّنْيَا وَتُذَكِّرُ الْآخِرَةَ. (رواه ابن ماجه)

(819/347) It is related by Abdullah bin Mas'ud ؓ that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "I had forbidden you from visiting the graves. Now, I allow you to visit them for it promotes disinterestedness in the material world and solicitude for the Hereafter."
(Ibn Majah)

Commentary: In the beginning when the Muslims had only recently come out of the fold of paganism and the creed of Divine Unity as not firmly entrenched in their hearts, the Prophet ﷺ had prohibited the visiting of the graves to them because there lay the risk of their slipping back into the folly of polytheism and tomb-worship. But as they grew into staunch believers in Monotheism and revulsion to all forms of polytheism became a part of their nature and it was feared no more that by visiting the graves they would lapse back into polytheistic beliefs and observances, it was permitted to them. It was, however, made clear that permission was given because visiting of the graves was helpful in making a man think less of worldly desires and interests and more of afterlife.

The above Tradition, also, underlines a fundamental principle of the Islamic Canonic law that if there is an aspect of goodness in anything but it, also, possesses the possibility of a grave harm, the element of virtue will be ignored and it will be prohibited. But it, at any time the circumstances alter and the fear of injuriousness

disappears, it will be permitted.

Salutation To Occupiers of Graves

(٨٢٠/٣٤٨) عَنْ بُرَيْدَةَ قَالَ كَانَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يُعَلِّمُهُمْ إِذَا خَرَجُوا إِلَى الْمَقَابِرِ "السَّلَامُ عَلَيْكُمْ أَهْلَ الدِّيَارِ مِنَ الْمُؤْمِنِينَ وَالْمُسْلِمِينَ وَإِنَّا إِنشَاءُ اللَّهِ بِكُمْ لِلْآحِقُونَ نَسْأَلُ اللَّهَ لَنَا وَلَكُمْ الْعَافِيَةَ." (رواه مسلم)

(820/348) It is related on the authority of Buraydah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ used to instruct the Companions رضي الله عنهم that when they visited the graves, they should greet their occupiers and pray for them in these words: *As-salaamu alaikum ahl-ad-dayari minal momineena wa muslimina wa in-na insha Allahu bikum lalaahiyoona nas-alullaahu lama wa lakumul 'aafiyati* (Peace be on you, the dwellers of these abodes, among truthful Believers and Muslims! Allah willing we are going to join you. We pray to Him and beseech Him for peace and safety for ourselves and for you.) (Muslim)

(٨٢١/٣٤٩) عَنْ ابْنِ عَبَّاسٍ قَالَ مَرَّ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ بِقُبُورٍ بِالْمَدِينَةِ فَأَقْبَلَ عَلَيْهِمْ بِوَجْهِهِ فَقَالَ السَّلَامُ عَلَيْكُمْ يَا أَهْلَ الْقُبُورِ يَغْفِرُ اللَّهُ لَنَا وَلَكُمْ أَنْتُمْ سَلَفُنَا وَنَحْنُ بِالْآخِرِ.

(رواه الترمذی)
(821/349) It is related by Abdullah bin Abbas رضي الله عنه that the Prophet ﷺ happened to pass by some graves in Madinah. He turned his face towards them and said: *"As-salaamu alaikum yaa ahlal quboori. yaghfirullaahu lanaa wa lakum antum salafuna wa nahnu bil asari* (Peace be on you, O occupiers of the graves! May Allah forgive us and you. You have preceded us; we are coming after you). (Tirmizi)

Commentary: There is a slight difference in the phraseology of the formulas of prayer and supplication for the occupiers of graves indicated in the two Traditions. But their substance is the same. They simply contain salutation and supplication of mercy for them and the remembrance of one's own death. These two considerations should be the main object of paying a visit to anyone's grave.

Consigning Reward to The dead (*Isaal Sawab*)

A way of doing service to the dead is to pray to Allah to forgive them their sins and to show them mercy. It is, also, the chief aim and purpose of the funeral prayer, and, as we have seen, in the Traditions appertaining to the visiting of the graves, too, the supplication for forgiveness has been made for those buried in them along with salutation. Apart from it, another method taught by the prophet ﷺ is to do an act of charity or any other noble deed on behalf of the dead and make a gift of the Divine recompense thereon to them. This is what is, commonly, meant by consigning reward.

(٨٢٢/٣٥٠) عَنْ ابْنِ عَبَّاسٍ أَنَّ سَعْدَ بْنَ عُبَادَةَ تُوْفِّيَتْ أُمُّهُ وَهِيَ غَائِبَةٌ عَنْهَا فَقَالَ يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ إِنَّ أُمِّي تُوْفِّيَتْ وَأَنَا غَائِبٌ عَنْهَا أَيَنْفَعُهَا شَيْءٌ إِنْ تَصَدَّقْتُ بِهَا عَنْهَا قَالَ نَعَمْ قَالَ فَإِنِّي أَشْهَدُكَ أَنَّ حَائِطِي الْمِخْرَافَ صَدَقَةٌ عَلَيْهَا.

(رواه البخارى)

(822/350) It is related on the authority of Abdullah bin Abbas ؓ that the death of Sa'd bin Ubadah's mother took place at a time when he was not present. (He had gone on a military expedition with the Prophet ﷺ). (On his return), Sa'd bin Ubadah said to the Prophet ﷺ: "O Messenger of Allah ﷺ My mother had died during my absence. Now, if I give away something in charity, will it be of service to her (i.e., will the Divine reward on it reach her)?" "Yes", replied the Prophet ﷺ. "It will reach her". Then, Sa'd bin Ubadah said, "I make you a witness that I have given away my orchard (called, *Mikhzaaf*) in charity on behalf of my mother. (Bukhari)

Commentary: The above Tradition, positively, settles the issue of *Isaal¹ Sawaab*. Another Tradition conveying almost the same meaning is quoted in *Bukhari* and *Muslim*, on the authority of Sayyidah Ayshah رضى الله عنها in which though the name of Sa'd bin Ubadah does not appear, the authorities believe that it is related to the aforementioned incident.

①. *Isaal*, literally, means to convey; to pass forward; to send; to transfer; to make over to another. In Islamic usage, *Isaal Sawaab* denotes conveying or making over the Divine reward on a good deed to the dead.

(٨٢٣/٣٥١) عَنْ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ عَمْرٍو بْنِ الْعَاصِ أَنَّ الْعَاصَ بْنَ وَائِلٍ أَوْصَى أَنْ يُعْتَقَ عَنْهُ مِائَةُ رَقَبَةٍ فَأَعْتَقَ ابْنُهُ هِشَامٌ خَمْسِينَ رَقَبَةً فَأَرَادَ ابْنُهُ عَمْرُو أَنْ يُعْتَقَ عَنْهُ الْخَمْسِينَ الْبَاقِيَةَ فَقَالَ حَتَّى أَسْأَلَ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ فَأَتَى النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ فَقَالَ يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ إِنَّ أَبِي أَوْصَى بِعِتْقِ مِائَةِ رَقَبَةٍ وَإِنَّ هِشَامًا أَعْتَقَ عَنْهُ خَمْسِينَ وَبَقِيَتْ عَلَيْهِ خَمْسُونَ رَقَبَةً أَفَأَعْتِقُ عَنْهُ فَقَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِنَّهُ لَوْ كَانَ مُسْلِمًا فَأَعْتَقْتُمْ عَنْهُ أَوْ تَصَدَّقْتُمْ عَنْهُ أَوْ حَجَّجْتُمْ عَنْهُ بَلَغَهُ ذَلِكَ . (رواه ابو داود)

(823/351) It is related by Abdullah bin 'Amr bin al-'Aas that his grandfather, 'Aas bin Wail (who had not embraced Islam) had told his sons to set one hundred slaves at liberty on his behalf (after his death). (So), one of his sons, Hishaam bin al-'Aas, freed fifty slaves (as his share of the obligation), and (the other son), 'Amr bin al-'Aas, also, decided to release the remaining fifty slaves, but he thought that he would, first, seek the Prophet's ﷺ advice. He went to the Prophet ﷺ and said: "Our father had advised (us) to set one hundred slaves free (after his death), and my brother, Hishaam, has freed (his share of) fifty slaves on his own behalf. Now, fifty remain, and I want to know whether I should (also) set them at liberty in the name of my father." The Prophet ﷺ replied: "Had your father died in the state of Faith and Islam then if you freed the slaves or did charity or performed the *Hajj* (on his behalf) the Divine reward on these acts would have reached him." (Bukhari)

Commentary: This Tradition is very clear regarding *Isaal Sawaab* (Consiging reward). In it, besides charity, the *Hajj* is, also, mentioned as a means to convey or make over the Divine reward to the dead and, in another version of the same Tradition related in *Musnad Ahmad*, fasting is stated in place of the *Hajj*.

Anyway, it lays it down as a general principle that Divine recompense can be conveyed or passed forward to the dead through all these virtuous deeds but it is subject to the essential condition of Faith and Islam.

FOREWORD

In the Name of Allah, the Most Gracious, the Dispenser of Grace

The authentic stock of the Traditions is the record of the Apostolic life of the Prophet Muhammad ﷺ which serves as a substitute for his presence. The Believers who did not have the good fortune to see him in the life of this world can, to a large extent, know him by means of it, and comply with his orders, and follow his 'good example' almost with the same degree of confidence as those who were blessed enough to know him with faith in his lifetime.

The main object of the writing of '*Ma'ariful Hadith*', simply is to enable the brothers who cannot read the original collections of the Traditions to obtain the knowledge of the teachings and the 'good example' of the sacred Prophet ﷺ and gain an access to his august presence which is now possible only through the study of the books dealing with the reports of his sayings and doings.

It is hoped that the faithful bondsmen who will read the present series after awakening the sentiments of love and reverence for the Prophet ﷺ in their hearts and with earnest attention will, *Insha Allah*, gain these objectives and it will be possible for them to partake of the effulgence and blessings of the Traditions and experience a peculiar feeling of nearness and association with him in the innermost recesses of their existence.

Two volumes of the English translation of *Ma'ariful Hadith* have appeared already. In the first volume are included the Traditions relating to Faith, the Hereafter, and Softheartedness, while in the second volume the plan was to present the Traditions belonging to the Books of Cleanliness and the Four fundamental Duties i.e. *Salah* or *Namaz* (Regular Worship), *Zakah* (Poor-due), *Saum* (Fasting), and *Hajj* (the Pilgrimage to Makkah), but as it was felt that it would grow too large, it was decided to bring it to a close with *Kitabus Salah* (The Book of Regular Worship). The reminder, i.e., *Kitabuz Zakah* (the Book of the Poor-due), *Kitabus Saum* (the Book of Fasting), and *Kitabul Hajj* (the Book of the Pilgrimage) is now being published in this, the third volume.

The Prophets are raised up, chiefly, to unite the bondsmen with their Lord and Creator and make them His devoted worshippers.

I created the jinn and humankind only that they might worship me. (LI:56)

Hence, after giving the call of faith in God and Divine Unity, the Apostles invited mankind to worship Him, before everything else. Among the human deeds it is the peculiarity of worship alone that, through it, the bondsman expresses his humbleness before God and his life gets dyed in the hue of servility and self-surrender. Moreover, the propinquity of the Lord is attained through worship and continuous advancement takes place in it. Thus, in all the Canonic Laws the greatest stress, after Faith, has been laid on worship, and the holy Prophet, too, has declared *Salah*, *Zakah*, *Saum* and *Hajj* to be the principal tenets of Islam, next only to the Oneness of God and Apostleship. The four fundamental duties of worship, in fact, constitute the substance of Faith and the felicity or otherwise of humanity is dependent, largely, on them.

Out of these, the Traditions appertaining to the teachings, instructions and regular practice of the holy Prophet ﷺ with regard to *Salah* have been discussed in the 2nd volume, and those relating to the other three duties i.e. *Zakah*, *Saum* and *Hajj* are now being taken up in the present volume.

As in the two earlier volumes, most of the Traditions included in the present one, too, have been taken from *Mishkaatul Masabeeh* or *Jami'-ul-Fuwayid* and reliance has been placed on it in the matter of references. Further, in conformity with the pattern followed in *Mishkaat* no other reference is given if *Sahih Bukhari* and *Sahih Muslim* or any of them are mentioned as the source of a Tradition for it would have been unnecessary to quote any other authority after stating that it was found in either of the two compilations.

A few reports have, also, been adopted from *Kanzul 'Ummal* and some have been reproduced directly from the books of *Sihah*, such as, *Sahih Bukhari*, *Sahih Muslim*, *Jami'-i-Tirmizi* and *Sunan-i-Abi Dawood*. These are the narratives that do not occur in the same words in *Mishkaat* or *Jami-ul-Fuwayid*.

May the Almighty bestow His acceptance upon this volume as well and make it beneficial to His bondsmen, and a source of Forgiveness both of the writer and the translator!

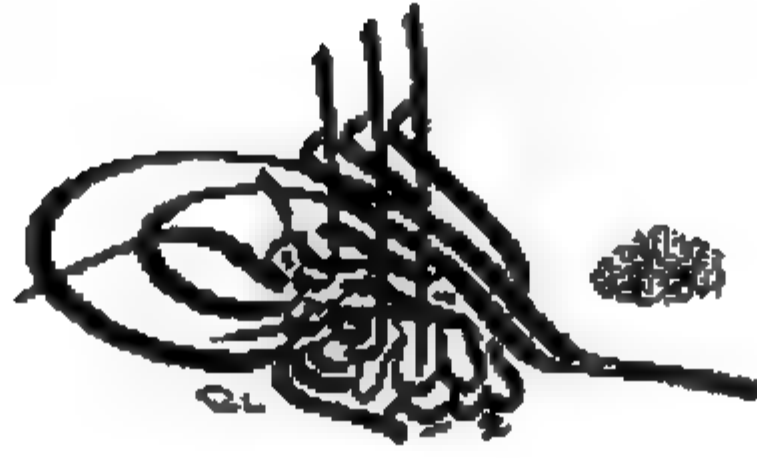
Muhammad Manzoor Nau'mani

Lucknow

August 29, 1978

قال الله تعالى

يَا أَيُّهَا الَّذِينَ آمَنُوا اتَّقُوا اللَّهَ مِمَّا رَزَقْنَاكُمْ مِنْ قَبْلِ
أَنْ يَأْتِيَكُمْ يَوْمٌ لَا يَبِيعُ فِيهِ وَلَا خَلَّةٌ وَلَا شَفَاعَةٌ
وَالْكَافِرُونَ هُمُ الظَّالِمُونَ O (البقرة ٢: ٢٥٣)



IMPORTANCE OF ZAKAH

After the affirmation of the Oneness of God and Messengership and the establishment of Worship, *Zakah* is the most important tenet of Islam. At over seventy places in the Qur'an, the establishment of Worship and the observance of regular charity have been spoken, of side by side, in such a way as to show that their place and position is almost identical. Thus, when, after the death of the sacred Prophet ﷺ, the inhabitants of some regions who, apparently, had accepted Islam and acknowledged Divine Unity and Messengership refused to pay *Zakah*, Sayyidina Abu Bakr ؓ decided to wage war against them on the ground that they differentiated between the injunctions of prayer (*salah*) and *Zakah* which amounted to apostasy. It is stated in *Bukhari* and *Muslim*, that in reply to Sayyidina Umar ؓ, he said,

وَاللّٰهِ لَا قَاتِلَنَ مَنْ فَرَّقَ بَيْنَ الصَّلَاةِ وَالزَّكَاةِ

"By God! I shall wage war against them who will differentiate between prayer (*salah*) and *Zakah*."

All the Companions agreed and consensus was reached among them on Sayyidina Abu Bakr's ؓ viewpoint.

We have, already, seen the Traditions in previous headings in which the Prophet ﷺ has, while indicating the basic essential doctrines and requirements of Islam, described the establishment of *Salah*, and payment of *Zakah* as next in importance only to the testimony of Divine Oneness and Messengership.

Three Aspects:

There are three aspects of goodness in *Zakah*.

One, the way the bondsman makes known by his tongue, body and soul, in *Qiyam*, *Ruku* and *Sujood* during *salah*, his servility and humbleness before the Lord so that he earned His good pleasure and propinquity, by paying *Zakah* he offers his monetary tribute to the Almighty with the same object and gives a practical demonstration of the fact that he does not consider his worldly possessions his own, but the Lord's. For this very reason, *Zakah* is regarded an act of worship. In the special terminology of Faith and the Shari'ah, 'worship' denotes, as we have seen earlier, deeds and actions that are intended solely for giving expression to the bond of loyalty and submission before God and seeking His countenance and nearness.

Two, Help and service is rendered to the needy and indigent bondsmen of Allah by means of *Zakah*. It, at once, makes *Zakah* a most important branch of ethics.

Three, *Zakah* is a highly efficacious remedy against the excessive fondness for wealth which is a grievous sin. It purifies the soul from the filthy effects of greed. Says the Qur'an:

خُذْ مِنْ أَمْوَالِهِمْ صَدَقَةً تُطَهِّرُهُمْ وَتُزَكِّيهِمْ بِهَا. (سورة توبة: ١٠٣)

(O Muhammad), take alms (*Zakah*) of their wealth, wherewith you may purify them and may make them grow. (Al-Tawbah 9:103)

وَسَيُجَنَّبُهَا الْأَتْقَى الَّذِي يُؤْتِي مَالَهُ يَتَزَكَّى. (سورة الليل ٩٢: ١٨)

Far removed from it (the flaming Fire of Hell) will be the righteous who gives his wealth that he may grow (in goodness).

(Al-Layl 92:17-18)

Literally, *Zakah* means 'cleanliness', and it is, perhaps owing to it that this fundamental duty has been called by that name.

EARLIER CANONIC LAWS:

On account of the extraordinary importance and worth and usefulness of *Zakah* the command for it has, uniformly, been given in the Canonic laws of their earlier Prophets together with that for worship. For instance, in *surah Al-Anbia*, it is stated, in relation to Sayyidina Ibrahim عليه السلام, and his son, Sayyidina Ishaq عليه السلام, and,

then, Sayyidiha Ishaq's عليه السلام son, Sayyidina Ya'qub عليه السلام that:

وَأَوْحَيْنَا إِلَيْهِمْ فِعْلَ الْخَيْرَاتِ وَإِقَامَ الصَّلَاةِ وَإِيتَاءَ الزَّكَاةِ وَكَانُوا لَنَا عَابِدِينَ.

(الانباء ٢١:٧٣)

We inspired in them the doing of good deeds, (particularly), the establishment of worship and the giving of charity, and they were the worshippers of Us (alone). (Al-Anbiyaa 21:73)

And, in *surah Maryam*, it is said about Sayyidina Ismail عليه السلام:

وَكَانَ يَأْمُرُ أَهْلَهُ بِالصَّلَاةِ وَالزَّكَاةِ (مريم ١٩:٥٥)

He enjoined upon his people worship and regular charity.

(Al-Maryam 19:55)

Concerning Sayyidina Isa عليه السلام it is stated that to his community he declared:

إِنِّي عَبْدُ اللَّهِ إِنِّي آتَانِي الْكِتَابَ وَجَعَلَنِي نَبِيًّا، وَجَعَلَنِي مُبَارَكًا أَيْنَمَا كُنْتُ وَ أَوْصَانِي

بِالصَّلَاةِ وَالزَّكَاةِ مَا دُمْتُ حَيًّا . (مريم ١٩:٣٠-٣١)

I am the slave of Allah. He has given me the Scripture and appointed me a Prophet, and has made me blessed wheresoever I may be, and has enjoined upon me worship and *Zakah* as long as I remain alive. (Al-Maryam 19:30-31)

Moreover, in *surah Al-Baqarah* where the covenant of the Israelities and the basic injunctions they had undertaken to fulfil are mentioned, the following commandment is included among them:

وَأَقِيمُوا الصَّلَاةَ وَآتُوا الزَّكَاةَ . (البقره ٨٣:٢)

And establish worship and pay *Zakah*. (Al-Baqarah 2:83)

Likewise, it is set forth in *surah Al-Maidah*, in connection with the covenant of the Children of Israel, that:

وَقَالَ اللَّهُ إِنِّي مَعَكُمْ ط لَئِنْ أَقَمْتُمُ الصَّلَاةَ وَآتَيْتُمُ الزَّكَاةَ وَآمَنْتُمْ بِرُسُلِي.

(المائدة ١٢:٥)

Allah said: Lo! I am with you if you establish worship and pay *Zakah*, and believe in My Messengers عليهم السلام (Al-Ma'idah 5:12)

The above verses of the Qur'an clearly show that prayer and *Zakah* have always been the main commands of the Canonic Laws. Differences of detail and scope, of course, were there but such differences were, also, found between the initial and ultimate

stages of our own Shari'ah. For instance, formerly, prayer (*salah*) was to be offered three times a day which, afterwards, was raised to five; or, in the beginning, every obligatory prayer consisted of only two rak'at but later the number of rak'at was increased in all the prayers except Fajr; or, in the earlier days, it was permitted to greet or talk to one another in prayer but, at a later time, it was forbidden. In the same way, *Zakah* was prescribed before Migration, when the Prophet ﷺ used to live in Makkah the establishment of *salah* and the payment of *Zakah* are mentioned as the distinguishing qualities of the Believers in the surah of *Al-Moominoon*, *An-Naml* and *Luqman*, though these were revealed during the Makkan phase but, at that time, *Zakah* merely signified the spending of one's wealth on the poor and needy bondsmen of Allah and on other items of good-doing. Detailed rules and regulations had not been prescribed till then. Hence, what the authorities mean when they say that the commandment of *Zakah* was revealed a year or two after Migration, or even later, probably is that its complete rules and principles of guidance were laid down at that time otherwise the actual order concerning *Zakah* had been given much earlier at Makkah. This view is supported not only by the aforementioned Qur'anic verses but also by Sayyidah Umm Salmah's رضى الله عنها narrative in which she has referred to the short speech delivered by Sayyidina Jabar Tayyar ؓ in the Court of Negus when a small group of Muslims had migrated from Makkah to Abyssinia during the early days of Islam. According to her report, Jafar Tayyar ؓ had told Negus about the call of the sacred Prophet ﷺ

وَيَأْمُرُنَا بِالصَّلَاةِ وَالزَّكَاةِ .. الخ

"He also made it incumbent on us to offer prayer and to pay *Zakah*."

It is, further, stated in *Sahih Bukhari* and other standard compilations that, on being questioned by the Roman Emperor about the Prophet ﷺ, Abu Sufiyan who, at that time, was among his inveterate enemies, he said:

يَأْمُرُنَا بِالصَّلَاةِ وَالزَّكَاةِ وَالصِّلَةِ وَالْعَفَافِ الخ

"He gives the command of prayer and *Zakah* and exhorts us to show kindness to kinsmen and observe piety."

It settles beyond doubt that the Prophet ﷺ used to give the call of prayer and *Zakah* during his stay in Makkah, before Migration. The detailed rules, indeed, were sent down after the Migration to Madinah and the central organisation for the realisation of *Zakah* was set up in 8. A.H.

The Call of *Zakah* After Faith and *Salah*

(٨٢٤/١) عَنْ ابْنِ عَبَّاسٍ أَنَّ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ بَعَثَ مَعَاذًا إِلَى الْيَمَنِ فَقَالَ إِنَّكَ تَأْتِي قَوْمًا أَهْلَ كِتَابٍ فَادْعُهُمْ إِلَى شَهَادَةِ أَنْ لَا إِلَهَ إِلَّا اللَّهُ وَأَنَّ مُحَمَّدًا رَسُولُ اللَّهِ فَإِنْ هُمْ أَطَاعُوا لِذَلِكَ فَأَعْلِمُهُمْ أَنَّ اللَّهَ قَدْ فَرَضَ عَلَيْهِمْ خَمْسَ صَلَوَاتٍ فِي الْيَوْمِ وَاللَّيْلَةِ فَإِنْ هُمْ أَطَاعُوا لِذَلِكَ فَأَعْلِمُهُمْ أَنَّ اللَّهَ قَدْ فَرَضَ عَلَيْهِمْ صَدَقَةً تُؤْخَذُ مِنْ أَغْنِيَائِهِمْ فترد على فقرائهم فَإِنْ هُمْ أَطَاعُوا لِذَلِكَ فَايَاكَ وَكَرَائِمَ أَمْوَالِهِمْ وَاتَّقِ دَعْوَةَ الْمَظْلُومِ فَإِنَّهُ لَيْسَ بَيْنَهَا وَبَيْنَ اللَّهِ حِجَابٌ.....

(824/1) It is related by Abdullah bin Abbas ؓ "When the Messenger of Allah ﷺ sent Mu'az bin Jabal ؓ to Yemen as the Governor, he told him (at the time of farewell): 'You are going to a people who are *Ahl al-Kitab* (i.e., profess a religion revealed and contained in the Scripture). So when you reach there invite them to the truth and no one is worthy of worship save Allah and Muhammad is His Messenger ﷺ. If they accept and affirm it, tell them Allah has enjoined five prayers upon them during the day and night. If they accept it, also, tell them that, in addition to it, Allah has enjoined *Zakah* upon them which will be taken from the well-to-do of the community (of Muslims) and distributed to those that are poor. If they agree to it as well, desist from laying hands upon the best of their goods (while realising *Zakah*), and fear the cry of the oppressed for there is no curtain between them and the Lord."

(Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: Though this Tradition has been reproduced in the earlier volume where we had the occasion to comment upon it in sufficient detail, it seemed appropriate to open the Book of Charity, too, with it in emulation of the example of Imam Bukhari and other renowned compilers of the Traditions.

The incident of the appointment of Sayyidina Mu'az bin Jabal ؓ as the Governor of Yemen, alluded to in the above narrative, took place, according to most authorities, in 9 A.H., but Imam Bukhari and some other scholars believe that it occurred in 10 A.H. In Yemen, apart from the People of the Scripture, there, also, lived the idolatrous Polytheists but owing to their special importance, the Prophet ﷺ specified only the People of Scripture and enunciated the very wise principle of preaching and propagation of Faith that all the tenets, commands and obligations should not be placed before the people at once for, in that case, they would feel discouraged and Islam would appear to them to be an unbearable burden. As a first step, therefore, the doctrinal bedrock of Faith i.e., the testimony of Divine Oneness and Messengership ought to be presented to them which a right-minded person can easily be persuaded to accept. For the people of the Scripture, particularly, there is nothing odd or strange in it. When the heart and mind of the listener have opened to it and he has acknowledged this fundamental reality, he should be made acquainted with the duty of prayer which is the most perfect design and arrangement of worship with the tongue, the body and the soul, and when he accepts it as well, he should be told about the duty of *Zakah*, and, with it, it must, also be made clear that the preacher and the giver of the Call of Islam did not want it for himself but it would be spent, according to a fixed law and rate, on the poor and indigent people of the community or the region from whose well-to-do persons it was realised. The Prophet ﷺ, further, stressed upon Sayyidina Mu'az ؓ that the collection of *Zakah* should be carried out with a full sense of justice and fairplay and it should not be that the best part of the assessee's produce or his most valuable cattle were taken from him.

In the end, the Prophet ﷺ advised Sayyidina Mu'az ؓ who was going as the Governor of a Province to refrain from being cruel and unjust to the people for when an oppressed person calls down God's anger upon a tyrant and usurper, his imprecation reaches the ninth heaven directly.

Only the affirmation of Divine Unity and Messengership and the duties of *Salah* and *Zakah* have been mentioned in this

Tradition, to the exclusion of the other fundamental tenets like Fasting and the Hajj, though both of them had been prescribed before Sayyidina Mu'az رضي الله عنه was sent to Yemen. It is so because the object of this Tradition was simply to indicate the elementary principle of the preaching of Islam and not to teach its fundamental duties. Sayyidina Mu'az رضي الله عنه did not stand in need of such an instruction. He belonged to the class of Companions رضي الله عنهم who were distinguished for knowledge of Faith.

Punishment on Non-Payment of Zakah

(٨٢٥/٢) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَنْ آتَاهُ اللَّهُ مَالًا فَلَمْ يُؤَدِّ زَكَوَتَهُ مِثْلَ لَهُ يَوْمَ الْقِيَمَةِ شَجَاعًا أَقْرَعَ لَهُ رَبِيتَانِ يُطَوَّقُهُ يَوْمَ الْقِيَمَةِ ثُمَّ يَأْخُذُ بِلَهْزَمَتَيْهِ (يَعْنِي شِدْقَيْهِ) ثُمَّ يَقُولُ أَنَا مَالِكَ أَنَا كُنُزُكَ ثُمَّ تَلَا وَلَا يَخْسِبَنَّ الَّذِينَ يَتَّخِلُونَ الْآيَةَ..... (رواه البخاري)

(825/2) It is related by Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Whoever was granted wealth by Allah but did not pay *Zakah* on it, on the Day of Resurrection his wealth will be brought before him in the shape of a hooded snake which will be so poisonous that hair will have fallen from its head and there will be two white spots over its eyes (which are, generally, supposed to be the marks of an extremely venomous snake). The snake will, then, be made the band of his neck (i.e., it will entwine itself round the neck of the defaulting miser), and it will seize both the corners of his lips between its fangs, (and bite him), and say: 'I am your wealth. I am your treasure.' After saying it, the Prophet ﷺ recited the following verse of the Qur'an:

And let not those who hoard up that which Allah has bestowed upon them of His bounty (and do not pay *Zakah* on it) think that it is better for them. Nay, it is worse for them. That which they hoard will be their collar on the Day of Resurrection."

(Al-e-Imran 3:180)

وَلَا يَخْسِبَنَّ الَّذِينَ يَتَّخِلُونَ بِمَا آتَاهُمُ اللَّهُ مِنْ فَضْلِهِ هُوَ خَيْرٌ لَّهُمْ بَلْ هُوَ شَرٌّ لَّهُمْ سَيُطَوَّقُونَ مَا بَخِلُوا بِهِ يَوْمَ الْقِيَمَةِ
(آل عمران ٣: ١٨٠)

(Bukhari)

Commentary: There is always a special likeness between deeds and the reward or punishment indicated on them in the Qur'an and the Traditions. Sometimes, it is so obvious that even common people like us have little difficulty in knowing it, and, sometimes, it is so subtle that only the sages and savants of the community can appreciate it.

The punishment mentioned in the above saying on the evasion of *Zakah* bears the same similarity to the misdeed on account of which the miser who clings to his wealth and does not spend it is, often, compared to the serpent guarding the treasure. A stingy and avaricious person, also, sometimes sees the dream of a like nature because of this affinity.

The words 'Day of Resurrection' used in this Tradition as well as in the aforementioned verse of surah *Aal-Imran* show that the punishment will be inflicted on the last Day before the pronouncement of the Lord's Judgement. In another Tradition, related by Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه and quoted in *Sahih Muslim*, it is stated, after indicating the same kind of punishment for the evaders of *Zakah*:

"The punishment will continue till God's Judgement is pronounced after the Final Reckoning. Subsequent to the Judgement the man will go to Heaven or Hell (depending on the verdict)."

حَتَّى يُقْضَى بَيْنَ الْعِبَادِ فَيُرَى
سَبِيلُهُ إِمَّا إِلَى الْجَنَّةِ وَإِمَّا إِلَى
النَّارِ

Or, in other words, if the chastisement the defaulting bondsman had borne before the Final Requital was enough, in the sight of God, for his guilt, he would be freed from it and sent to Heaven, and if his account would not be cleared with that punishment, he would be thrown into Hell to undergo further chastisement.

(٨٢٦/٣) عَنْ عَائِشَةَ قَالَتْ سَمِعْتُ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَقُولُ
مَا خَالَطْتُ الصَّدَقَةَ مَالًا قَطُّ إِلَّا أَهْلَكْتُهُ

(رواه الشافعي والبخاري في تاريخه والحميدي في مسنده)

(826/3) Sayyidah Ayshah رضي الله عنها related "I heard from Messenger of Allah ﷺ 'when the goods of *Zakah* will get

mixed with other goods, they will, surely, destroy them."

(Musnad Shaf'ee, Tarikh Kabir Bukhari and Musnad Humaydi)

Commentary: According to Imam Bukhari's mentor, Imam Humaydi, what it shows is that if anyone on whom *Zakah* is due does not pay it, the curse of it will fall on all of his worldly possessions and he will, ultimately, be ruined.¹

Imam Baihaqi, on the other hand, observes in *Sha'ab-il-Iman*, on the authority of Imam Ahmad bin Hanbal, that if a fully well-to-do person who does not deserve to receive *Zakah* wrongfully accepts it, it will destroy the rest of his goods on getting mixed up with them.

We, however, believe that both the interpretations of Sayyidah Ayshah's رضى الله عنها narrative are possible and there is no contradiction in them.

Purification of Wealth

(٨٢٧/٤) عَنْ ابْنِ عَبَّاسٍ قَالَ لَمَّا نَزَلَتْ هَذِهِ الْآيَةُ وَالَّذِينَ يَكْنِزُونَ الذَّهَبَ وَالْفِضَّةَ الْآيَةَ كَبُرَ ذَالِكُ عَلَى الْمُسْلِمِينَ فَقَالَ عُمَرُ أَنَا أَفْرَجُ عَنْكُمْ فَاَنْطَلَقَ فَقَالَ يَا نَبِيَّ اللَّهِ إِنَّهُ كَبُرَ عَلَيَّ أَصْحَابِكَ هَذِهِ الْآيَةُ فَقَالَ إِنَّ اللَّهَ لَمْ يَقْرِضِ الزَّكَاةَ إِلَّا لِيُعْطِيَ مَا بَقِيَ مِنْ أَمْوَالِكُمْ وَإِنَّمَا فَرَضَ الْمَوَارِيثَ..... وَذَكَرَ كَلِمَةً..... لَتَكُونَنَّ لِمَنْ بَعْدَكُمْ فَقَالَ فَكَبُرَ عُمَرُ..... ثُمَّ قَالَ إِلَّا أُخْبِرُكَ بِخَيْرِ مَا يَكْنِزُ الْمَرْءُ الْمَرْأَةُ الصَّالِحَةُ إِذَا نَظَرَ إِلَيْهَا سَرَّتُهُ وَإِذَا أَمَرَهَا أَطَاعَتْهُ وَإِذَا غَابَ عَنْهَا حَفَظَتْهُ (رواه ابو داود)

(827/4) Abdullah bin Abbas ؓ narrated that when the verses (of surah *At-Tauba*) were revealed:

"They who hoard up gold and silver and spend it not in the way of Allah, unto them give tidings (O Muhammad ﷺ) of a painful doom; on the day when it will (all) be heated in the fire of Hell and their forehead and their flanks and their backs will

وَالَّذِينَ يَكْنِزُونَ الذَّهَبَ وَالْفِضَّةَ وَلَا يُنْفِقُونَهَا فِي سَبِيلِ اللَّهِ فَبَشِّرْهُمْ بِعَذَابٍ أَلِيمٍ، يَوْمَ يُحْمَى عَلَيْهَا فِي نَارِ جَهَنَّمَ فَتُكْوَى بِهَا جِبَاهُهُمْ وَجُنُوبُهُمْ وَظُهُورُهُمْ ط

be branded therewith (and it will be said to them): Now taste of what ye used to hoard,

(Al-Tawbah 9:34-35)

هَذَا مَا كُنْتُمْ لَا تُفْسِكُمْ فَذُوقُوا

الْعَذَابَ بِمَا كُنْتُمْ تَكْتُمُونَ

(التوبة. ٩: ٣٤، ٣٥)

The Companions رضي الله عنهم felt very much burdened by it (and were greatly worried). Sayyidina Umar رضي الله عنه said: 'I will try to remove your distress.' He, thus, went to the Prophet ﷺ and said: Messenger of Allah ﷺ! Your Companions feel weighed down by these verses.' God has prescribed *Zakah*, replied the Prophet ﷺ, 'for the reason that whatever goods are left after paying it may become purified, and, (in the same way), the law of inheritance has been provided (Ibn Abbas رضي الله عنه tells that here the Prophet ﷺ said something which he had forgotten but about the law of inheritance he was sure that the Prophet ﷺ had said that it had been sent down so that) it might be a support to your dependents'. (On hearing it), Umar رضي الله عنه (joyously) exclaimed: '*Allah-u-Akbar!*' The Prophet ﷺ, then, said to Umar رضي الله عنه: 'May I tell you of the best of wealth which is worth acquiring and keeping with care and affection? It is a good-natured, chaste and virtuous spouse who may bring joy to the man's heart when he sees her and obeys what she is told and when the husband goes out somewhere, protects his household goods and (guards) his trust during his absence.'

(Abu Dawood)

Commentary: When the verse of surah *At-Tauba*, mentioned in it, was revealed the Companions رضي الله عنهم imagined from its phrasing that it implied that nothing should be saved from one's earnings and wealth was not to be stored up at all; everything must be spent in the way of God. This, naturally, was a very hard proposition. Sayyidina Umar رضي الله عنه, therefore, enquired about it from the Prophet ﷺ. The Prophet ﷺ explained that the verse was for those who hoarded up wealth and did not pay *Zakah* on it. But if *Zakah* was paid, the rest of the goods became pure. It was emphasised by him that God had enjoined *Zakah* so that wealth became purified with its payment. He, also, pointed out that the very purpose of the enactment of the law of inheritance was that it served as an assistance for descendants of a man after his death. Had it been totally prohibited to save wealth, there would have been no command of *Zakah* and no need of the law of inheritance in the

Shari'ah for both of these measures were related to accumulated wealth. The question of *Zakah* or inheritance would not have arisen if it was not allowed to possess worldly riches.

After replying of Sayyidina Umar's ~~enquiry~~ enquiry, the Prophet ~~observed~~ observed for the illumination of the companions that more valuable than worldly possessions and by far the greatest source of mental peace and happiness in this world was a loving, understanding and faithful life-partner.

RULES AND REGULATIONS

In a nutshell, *Zakah* denotes that a part of one's possessions be spent in the way of God and for His propitiation. In it lies its fundamental significance, and, as we have seen earlier, this was what had been briefly enjoined during the first phase of Islam. The detailed rules and regulations, governing, for instance, the categories of goods, the lowest taxable limit, the time of payment and the heads of expenditure followed later.

Minimum Wealth That Attracts *Zakah*

(٨٢٨/٥) عَنْ أَبِي سَعِيدٍ الْخُدْرِيِّ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ
لَيْسَ فِيْمَا دُونَ خُمْسَةِ أَوْسُقٍ مِنَ التَّمْرِ صَدَقَةٌ وَلَيْسَ فِيْمَا دُونَ خُمْسِ أَوَاقٍ
مِنَ الْوَرِقِ صَدَقَةٌ وَلَيْسَ فِيْمَا دُونَ خُمْسِ دَوْدٍ مِنَ الْإِبِلِ صَدَقَةٌ
(رواه البخارى ومسلم)

(828/5) It is related by Abu Saeed Khudri رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "There is no *Zakah* on less than 5 Wasaq of dates, and there is no *Zakah* on less 5 Awaq of silver, and there is no *Zakah* on less than 5 camels." (Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: In the life-time of the Prophet ﷺ, particularly in and around Madinah, wealth, in the main, consisted of three categories: fruit-crops, silver and herds of camel. The Prophet ﷺ has, in this Tradition, laid down the *Nisab*¹ of *Zakah* on all the three categories. He has shown what will be the lowest limit of the three kinds of possessions, i.e., how much of these goods a man must possess to make him legally obliged to pay *Zakah*. About the dates he had indicated that *Zakah* will not be payable on less than 5 Wasaq of them, one Wasaq being equal approximately to 2-½

①. Meaning the lowest limit of worldly possessions on which the payment of *Zakah* becomes obligatory.

quintals; about silver that *Zakah* will not be payable on less than 5 *Awaq* of it, one *Awaq* being of the value of 40 *dirhams*; and about camels that it will not be payable on less than 5 heads of them.

In the above Tradition the *Nisab* of only these three kinds of possessions has been described.

As Shah Waliullah رحمه الله عليه remarks, "Five Wasaq of dates can suffice for the sustenance of a small family; in the same way, a year's expenditure can be met with 200 *dirhams*; and from the point of view of valuation 5 camels are of equal worth."

(٨٢٩/٦) عَنْ عَلِيٍّ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ قَدْ عَفَوْتُ عَنِ الْخَيْلِ وَالرَّقِيقِ فَهَاتُوا صَدَقَةَ الرِّقَةِ مِنْ كُلِّ أَرْبَعِينَ دِرْهَمًا دِرْهَمٌ وَلَيْسَ فِي تِسْعَةٍ وَتِسْعِينَ وَمِائَةٍ شَيْءٌ فَإِذَا بَلَغَتْ مِائَتَيْنِ فَفِيهَا خُمُسَةٌ دَرَاهِمَ

(رواه الترمذی و ابو داؤد)

(828/6) Sayyidina Ali رضي الله عنه reported the Messenger of Allah ﷺ as saying, "There is an exemption on horses and slaves; with regard to coins, however, you must pay a *dirham* for every forty, but nothing is payable on a hundred ninety. When the total reaches two hundred, five *dirhams* are payable." (Tirmizi and Abu Dawood)

Commentary: According to the next hadith narrated by Samurah bin Jundub رضي الله عنه, *Zakah* is payable on horses and slaves if these are merchandise of trade. If they are not for trading but for personal use riding and domestic help, etc, then no matter what their value, *Zakah* is not payable on them and this is what Sayyidina Ali رضي الله عنه refers. He then says that *Zakah* is payable on silver if it is worth two hundred *dirham* at 1/40 rate.

Zakah on Goods of Trade

(٨٣٠/٧) عَنْ سَمُرَةَ بْنِ جُنْدُبٍ أَنَّ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ كَانَ يَأْمُرُنَا أَنْ نُخْرِجَ الصَّدَقَةَ مِنَ الَّذِي نَعْدُ لِلْبَيْعِ.....

(رواه ابو داؤد)

(830/7) Samurah bin Jundub رضي الله عنه related that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ had commanded us to pay *Zakah* on every thing we may have in stock for buying and selling (i.e., for trade and commerce).

(Abu Dawood)

Commentary: It shows that *Zakah* is to be paid on goods of trade

and industry as well.

Payabl at The Expiry of A Year

(۸۳۱/۸) عَنْ ابْنِ عُمَرَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَنْ اسْتَفَادَ مَالًا فَلَا زَكَاةَ فِيهِ حَتَّى يَحُولَ عَلَيْهِ الْحَوْلُ.
(رواه الترمذی)

(831/8) It is related by Abdullah bin Umar رضی اللہ عنہ that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Whoever may earn or obtain wealth from any source, *Zakah* will not be payable on it unless a year expires." (Tirmizi)

Jewellery

(۸۳۲/۹) عَنْ عُمَرَ وَ بْنِ شُعَيْبٍ عَنْ أَبِيهِ عَنْ جَدِّهِ أَنَّ امْرَأَةً آتَتْ النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ بِابْنَةٍ لَهَا فِي يَدِ ابْنَتِهَا مُسَكَّتَانِ غَلِيظَتَانِ مِنْ ذَهَبٍ فَقَالَ اتَّعْطِينَ زَكَاةَ هَذَا؟ قَالَتْ لَا، قَالَ أَيْسُرُكِ أَنْ يُسَوِّرَكَ اللَّهُ بِهِمَا يَوْمَ الْقِيَمَةِ سِوَارَيْنِ مِنَ النَّارِ فَخَلَعَتْهُمَا فَالْقَتْهُمَا إِلَى النَّبِيِّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ وَقَالَتْ هُمَا لِلَّهِ وَلِرَسُولِهِ
(رواه ابرداؤد وغيره من اصحاب السنن)

(832/9) Abdullah bin 'Amr bin al-'Aas رضی اللہ عنہ narrated that (once) a woman took her daughter to the Prophet ﷺ. The girl was wearing heavy gold bracelets on her wrists. The Prophet ﷺ, (on seeing it), enquired, "Do you pay *Zakah* on these bracelets?" "No," she replied, "I do not." The Prophet ﷺ observed: "Will it be a matter of joy for you that, on the Day of Resurrection, God made you wear bracelets of iron for (not paying *Zakah* on) these bracelets?" Upon it, the good lady took off both the bracelets, and, placing them before the Prophet ﷺ said: "These now belong to God and His Messenger ﷺ." (Abu Dawood)

(۸۳۳/۱۰) عَنْ أُمِّ سَلَمَةَ قَالَتْ كُنْتُ أَلْبَسُ أَوْضَاخًا مِنْ ذَهَبٍ فَقُلْتُ يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ أَكُنْزُهُمْ؟ فَقَالَ مَا بَلَغَ أَنْ تُؤَدَّى زَكَاةُ فَرُكَّتِي فَلَيْسَ بِكُنْزٍ
(رواه مالک و ابرداؤد)

(833/10) Ummi Salmah رضی اللہ عنہا related "I used to wear Awzab (a kind of ornament) of gold. (Once) I enquired from Prophet ﷺ if it, was included in the category of *Kanz* (i.e., treasure) about which the warning of Hell had been given in *surah*

At-Tawba. The Prophet ﷺ, replied, 'Whatever of the possessions become so much that *Zakah* is due on it, and, then, *Zakah* is paid according to the *Shari'ah*, it is not *Kanz*.'

(Mowatta Imam Maalik and Abu Dawood)

Commentary: It is on the basis of these Traditions that Imam Abu Hanifah has concluded that *Zakah* is binding on ornaments of gold and silver (provided that their value exceeds the lowest limit) on which *Zakah* is paid. But other exegesis like Imam Maalik, Imam Shafi'ee and Imam Ahmad held that *Zakah* is payable on such ornaments alone that are meant for trade or have been caused to be made with the object of the preservation of wealth. According to them, *Zakah* is not obligatory on ornaments that are intended solely for use and adornment. The holy Companions ﷺ also, have expressed divergent views on the point. But the Traditions, on the whole, appear to be in favour of the stand taken by Imam Abu Hanifah, and, hence, even some theologists of the Shafi'ee school have preferred it. In *Tafsir kabir*, Imam Raazi, for instance, arrives at an identical conclusion.

Zakah Can be Paid in Advance

(٨٣٤/١١) عَنْ عَلِيٍّ أَنَّ الْعَبَّاسَ سَأَلَ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ فِي تَعْجِيلِ صَدَقَتِهِ قَبْلَ أَنْ تَحِلَّ فَرَّغَ لَهُ فِي ذَلِكَ

(رواه ابو داود والترمذى وابن ماجه والدارمى)

(834/11) It is related by Sayyidina Ali ؓ that (when) Abbas ؓ enquired from the Prophet ﷺ about paying *Zakah* in advance, the Prophet ﷺ permitted him to do so.

(Abu Dawood, Tirmizi, Ibn Majah and Daarami)

Beneficiaries

(٨٣٥/١٢) عَنْ زِيَادِ بْنِ الْحَارِثِ الصُّدَائِيِّ قَالَ أَتَيْتُ النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ فَبَايَعْتُهُ فَلَذَكَرَ حَدِيثًا طَوِيلًا. فَأَتَانَا رَجُلٌ فَقَالَ أَعْطِنِي مِنَ الصَّدَقَةِ فَقَالَ لَهُ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِنَّ لِلَّهِ لَمْ يَرْضَ بِحُكْمِ نَبِيِّ وَلَا غَيْرِهِ فِي الصَّدَقَاتِ حَتَّى حَكَمَ هُوَ فَجَزَأَهَا ثَمَانِيَةَ أَجْزَاءٍ فَإِنْ كُنْتَ مِنْ تِلْكَ الْأَجْزَاءِ أَعْطَيْتُكَ.

(رواه ابو داود)

(835/12) Zayd bin Haarith رضي الله عنه narrated "I went to the Prophet ﷺ and took the vow of allegiance to him." Zayd, then, related to us a long Tradition in the course of which he recounted the incident that, at that time, a person came to the Prophet ﷺ and said: "Please give me something out of the goods of *Zakah*." The Prophet ﷺ remarked, "God has left the expenditure of *Zakah* neither to the choice of Prophet nor of any else. He has determined it Himself and divided it into eight parts (i.e., categories of beneficiaries). If you belong to one of them, I shall give you from *Zakah*." (Abu Dawood)

Commentary: The reference made by the Prophet ﷺ to the commandment concerning the expenditure of *Zakah* is contained in the following verse of *surah at-Tawba*:

The *Zakah* is only for the poor and the needy, and those who collect it, and those whose hearts are to be reconciled, and to free the captives and the debtors, and for the ause of Allah, and for the wayfarers.

(Al Tawbah 9:60)

إِنَّمَا الصَّدَقَاتُ لِلْفُقَرَاءِ
وَالْمَسْكِينِ وَالْعَمِلِينَ عَلَيْهَا
وَالْمُؤَلَّفَةِ قُلُوبُهُمْ وَفِي الرِّقَابِ
وَالْغَارِمِينَ وَفِي سَبِيلِ اللَّهِ وَابْنِ
السَّبِيلِ.
(العوبة ٩: ٦٠)

Some remarks, here, may be helpful in understanding the scope, and intent of the verse.

1. *Fuqara*: Meaning the poor. In Arabic the word Faqir (Al-Fuqara) is used as an antonym of Ghani, i.e., the well-to-do. Thus, all the poor people are included in this category who are not rich i.e., do not possess enough wealth to make *Zakah* a legal obligation. We have, already, seen Sayyidina Mu'az's رضي الله عنه narrative in which the Prophet ﷺ has formulated the fundamental principle that *Zakah* should be collected from the Aghniya (plurar of Ghani) and distributed to the *Fuqara* of the community.

2. *Masaakin*: i.e., the needy who are excessively indigent and cannot meet even the daily needs on their own.

3. *'Aamilin*: denotes the functionaries i.e., collectors, accountants, controllers of expenditure, auditors of accounts etc., This category, in fact, comprises the entire administration, civil, military and diplomatic. They can be remunerated for their time and labour, out of *Zakah* even if they are well-to-do. This was the practice

during the time of the Prophet ﷺ.

4. **Muwallafatul Quloob**: The category of those whose hearts are to be reconciled in the interest of Faith and the Muslims. It includes the riches as well.

5. **Riqaab**: or freeing the necks. By this term one has always understood two kinds of expenditure: liberation of slaves and ransoming of the prisoners of war held by the enemy.

6. **Ghaarimin**: It denotes the category of those who are heavily indebted or confronted with any other difficulty or disaster with which they cannot cope on their own.

7. **Fi Sabilil-laah**: Meaning "in the path of God." In the Islamic terminology it signifies every charitable cause, and, according to some legists, the needs relating to defence and protection of Faith and supremacy of the Word of God, also, are covered by it.

8. **Ibnus Sabil**: It signifies the wayfarers who may be in need of help, and also, includes construction of bridges, roads and transport and security of the roads and extension of hospitality without charge to the travellers.

The Holy Prophet ﷺ, as the above Tradition shows, told the person who had begged him for something out of the *Zakah* that God Himself had delineated the eight heads of expenditure concerning goods collected as *Zakah*. The Prophet ﷺ could give him out of *Zakah* if he fitted into any of those categories otherwise he was helpless.

(Only a few remarks have been offered here about the kinds of beneficiaries by way of the elucidation of Zayd's narrative. Detailed rules and principles can be learnt from the standard work of Islamic Jurisprudence or directly from the Muslim jurists and theologians).

(٨٣٦/١٣) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ لَيْسَ الْمُسْكِينُ الَّذِي يَطُوفُ عَلَى النَّاسِ تَرُدُّهُ اللَّقْمَةُ وَاللَّقْمَتَانِ وَالتَّمْرَةُ وَالتَّمْرَتَانِ وَلَكِنَّ الْمُسْكِينَ الَّذِي لَا يَجِدُ غَيْرَ يَغْنِيهِ وَلَا يَفْطِنُ بِهِ فَيَتَصَدَّقُ عَلَيْهِ وَلَا يَقُومُ فَيَسْأَلُ النَّاسَ.
(رواه البخارى ومسلم)

(836/13) It is related by Abu Hurayrah ؓ that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "The needy person (who should be helped with charity) is not the one who goes to the people (to solicit alms)

and comes back (satisfied) with a morsel or two (of food) or a couple of dates (that are placed on his hand), but the needy (in the real sense) is he who has nothing with which to meet his needs (and since he hides his condition from others), no one becomes aware of his distress so that he may be helped with charity, nor does he beg from others." (Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: It shows that professional beggars and shameless solicitors of alms are not deserving of charity. For giving away in the path of Allah one should look for self-respecting men who do not disclose their indigence. Such, indeed, are the needy to help whom is an act of great worthiness in the sight of Allah.

(٨٣٧/١٤) عَنْ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ عَمْرٍو قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ لَا تَحِلُّ الصَّدَقَةُ لِغَنِيِّ وَلَا لِذِي مِرَّةٍ سَوِيٍّ. (رواه الترمذی و ابو داؤد والدارمی)
(837/14) Sayyidina Abdullah bin Amr رضی اللہ عنہ said that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "*Sadaqah* may not be given to a rich man, or to one who has strength and is sound in limb.
(Tirmizi, Abu Dawood, Daarami)

(٨٣٨/١٥) عَنْ عُبَيْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ عَادِيٍّ بْنِ الْخَيَّارِ قَالَ أَخْبَرَنِي رَجُلَانِ أَنَّهُمَا أَتَيَا النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ وَهُوَ فِي حَجَّةِ الْوَدَاعِ وَهُوَ يَقْسِمُ الصَّدَقَةَ فَمَا لَاهُ مِنْهَا فَرَفَعَ فِينَا النَّظَرَ وَخَفَضَهُ فَرَأَانَا جَلْدَيْنِ فَقَالَ إِنَّ شِئْنَمَا أَعْطَيْتُكُمَا وَلَا حَظَّ فِيهَا لِغَنِيِّ وَلَا لِقَوِيٍّ مُكْتَسِبٍ..... (رواه ابو داؤد والنسائي)
(838/15) It is related by "Ubaidullah bin 'Adi bin Al-Khayar, a Taba'ee, "Two persons told me that both of them went to the Prophet ﷺ on the occasion of the Farewell Hajj. At that time, the Prophet ﷺ was distributing the goods of *Zakah* and they, too, requested him to give them something out of those goods. As the Prophet ﷺ looked at them from head to foot, he found them healthy and strong. The Prophet ﷺ, then, said to them: "I can give (it to) you if you want but (know that) there is no share in these goods for the well-to-do and able-bodied persons who can earn their living."
(Abu dawood and Nasai)

Commentary: The word "well-to-do" in it, probably, signifies those who can meet their basic needs, and do not, at the moment, require monetary help. If anyone, belonging to this category, does

not possess the nisab, and *Zakah* is given to him, it will be deemed to have been paid but he should himself desist from accepting it. Similarly, a person who is in good health and is capable of working for his bread should accept *Zakah*. This general principle has been expounded in the above Tradition. But, in exceptional circumstances, such a person can accept *Zakah* and it was for that reason that the Prophet ﷺ told the men referred to in the above narrative that he could give them out of the goods of *Zakah* if they wanted.

***Zakah* And The Family of The Prophet ﷺ**

(٨٣٩/١٦) عَنْ عَبْدِ الْمُطَّلِبِ بْنِ رَبِيعَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِنَّ هَذِهِ الصَّدَقَاتِ إِنَّمَا هِيَ أَوْسَاخُ النَّاسِ وَإِنَّهَا لَا تَجِلُّ لِمُحَمَّدٍ وَلَا لِأَلِ مُحَمَّدٍ.
(رواه مسلم)

(839/16) It is related on the authority of the Abdul Muttalib bin Rabi'ah ؓ that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "The alms are the dirt and scum of the people and are not permitted to Muhammad ﷺ and his descendants." (Muslim)

Commentary: In it *Zakah* and the alms have been described as "dirt and scum" because just as a cloth becomes clean when the dirt is removed from it, in the same way the rest of the wealth becomes pure, in the judgement of God, after *Zakah*, has been paid on it. It, also, shows that, as far as possible, one should refrain from making use of the goods of *Zakah*. On this ground, the Prophet ﷺ has declared *Zakah* as forbidden to himself and his family, i.e., the children of Hashim, till the end of time.

(٨٤٠/١٧) عَنْ أَنَسٍ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ بِتَمْرَةٍ فِي الطَّرِيقِ فَقَالَ لَوْلَا أَنِّي أَخَافُ أَنْ تَكُونَ مِنَ الصَّدَقَةِ لَا كَلْتُهَا
(رواه البخارى ومسلم)

(840/17) Sayyidina Anas ؓ narrated that (once the Prophet ﷺ was going some where when) he saw a date lying in the way. On seeing it, he remarked: "If I did not fear that it might be of *Zakah*, I would have picked it up and eaten it."

(Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: The Prophet's ﷺ remark was, in fact, intended to

impress upon the people that however insignificant God's provision or anything out of His bounty may be, if it is found lying unclaimed or thrown off carelessly anywhere, due reverence should be shown to it and it should be put to the use for which it was meant. The Prophet ﷺ, at the same time, added that he could not eat the date for the fear that it might have fallen down from among the dates of *Zakah*. He, thus, also, imparted the lesson of abstention from the use of doubtful things to men of piety and devoutness.

(٨٤١/١٨) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ أَخَذَ الْحَسَنُ بْنُ عَلِيٍّ تَمْرَةً مِنْ تَمْرِ الصَّدَقَةِ فَجَعَلَهَا فِي فِيهِ فَقَالَ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ كَخْ كَخْ لِيَطْرَحَهَا ثُمَّ قَالَ أَمَا شَعُرْتُ أَنَا لَا نَأْكُلُ الصَّدَقَةَ.....
(رواه البخارى ومسلم)

(841/18) Sayyidina Abu Hurayrah ؓ said that the Hasan bin (Sayyidina) Ali ؓ took one of the dates of the *Sadaqah* and put it in his mouth, whereupon the Prophet ﷺ said: Leave it alone, leave it alone, " in order that he might throw it away. He then said, "Do you not know that we (Banu Hashim) do not eat the *Sadaqah*?"
(Bukhari and Muslim)

(٨٤٢/١٩) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ كَانَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا أُتِيَ بِطَعَامٍ سَأَلَ عَنْهُ أَهْدِيَّةٌ أَمْ صَدَقَةٌ؟ فَإِنْ قِيلَ صَدَقَةٌ قَالَ لِأَصْحَابِهِ كُلُّوا وَلَمْ يَأْكُلْ وَإِنْ قِيلَ هَدِيَّةٌ ضَرَبَ بِيَدِهِ فَأَكَلَ مَعَهُمْ.....
(رواه البخارى ومسلم)

(842/19) It is related by Abu Hurayrah ؓ that the usual practice of the Messenger of Allah ﷺ was that when anyone brought to him something to eat, he used to enquire: "Is it Hadiya (i.e., a gift) or *Sadaqah* (i.e., charity)?" If he was told that it was *Sadaqah*, he would tell his Companions (i.e., such of them for whom there was no harm in eating things of *Sadaqah*, like Ashab us-Suffa) to partake of it and would refrain from eating it himself. If, on the other hand, he was told that it was *Hadiya*, he would stretch his hand towards it and join the Companions ؓ in eating it."
(Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: Whatever is given to a poor and needy person by way of help and with intention of earning the countenance of the

not possess the nisab, and *Zakah* is given to him, it will be deemed to have been paid but he should himself desist from accepting it. Similarly, a person who is in good health and is capable of working for his bread should accept *Zakah*. This general principle has been expounded in the above Tradition. But, in exceptional circumstances, such a person can accept *Zakah* and it was for that reason that the Prophet ﷺ told the men referred to in the above narrative that he could give them out of the goods of *Zakah* if they wanted.

***Zakah* And The Family of The Prophet ﷺ**

(٨٣٩/١٦) عَنْ عَبْدِ الْمُطَّلِبِ بْنِ رَبِيعَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِنَّ هَذِهِ الصَّدَقَاتِ إِنَّمَا هِيَ أَوْسَاخُ النَّاسِ وَإِنَّهَا لَا تَحِلُّ لِمُحَمَّدٍ وَلَا لِأَلِ مُحَمَّدٍ.
(رواه مسلم)

(839/16) It is related on the authority of the Abdul Muttalib bin Rabi'ah ؓ that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "The alms are the dirt and scum of the people and are not permitted to Muhammad ﷺ and his descendants." (Muslim)

Commentary: In it *Zakah* and the alms have been described as "dirt and scum" because just as a cloth becomes clean when the dirt is removed from it, in the same way the rest of the wealth becomes pure, in the judgement of God, after *Zakah*, has been paid on it. It, also, shows that, as far as possible, one should refrain from making use of the goods of *Zakah*. On this ground, the Prophet ﷺ has declared *Zakah* as forbidden to himself and his family, i.e., the children of Hashim, till the end of time.

(٨٤٠/١٧) عَنْ أَنَسٍ قَالَ قَالَ مَرَّ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ بِتَمْرَةٍ فِي الطَّرِيقِ فَقَالَ لَوْلَا أَنِّي أَخَافُ أَنْ تَكُونَ مِنَ الصَّدَقَةِ لَا كَلَّتُهَا
(رواه البخارى ومسلم)
(840/17) Sayyidina Anas ؓ narrated that (once the Prophet ﷺ was going some where when) he saw a date lying in the way. On seeing it, he remarked: "If I did not fear that it might be of *Zakah*, I would have picked it up and eaten it."

(Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: The Prophet's ﷺ remark was, in fact, intended to

impress upon the people that however insignificant God's provision or anything out of His bounty may be, if it is found lying unclaimed or thrown off carelessly anywhere, due reverence should be shown to it and it should be put to the use for which it was meant. The Prophet ﷺ, at the same time, added that he could not eat the date for the fear that it might have fallen down from among the dates of *Zakah*. He, thus, also, imparted the lesson of abstention from the use of doubtful things to men of piety and devoutness.

(٨٤١/١٨) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ أَخَذَ الْحَسَنُ بْنُ عَلِيٍّ تَمْرَةً مِنْ تَمْرِ الصَّدَقَةِ فَجَعَلَهَا فِي فِيهِ فَقَالَ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ كَخْ كَخْ لِيَطْرَحَهَا ثُمَّ قَالَ أَمَا شَعُرْتُ أَنَا لَا نَأْكُلُ الصَّدَقَةَ.....
(رواه البخارى ومسلم)

(841/18) Sayyidina Abu Hurayrah ؓ said that the Hasan bin (Sayyidina) Ali ؓ took one of the dates of the *Sadaqah* and put it in his mouth, whereupon the Prophet ﷺ said: Leave it alone, leave it alone, " in order that he might throw it away. He then said, "Do you not know that we (Banu Hashim) do not eat the *Sadaqah*?"
(Bukhari and Muslim)

(٨٤٢/١٩) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ كَانَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا أُتِيَ بِطَعَامٍ سَأَلَ عَنْهُ أَهْدِيَّةٌ أَمْ صَدَقَةٌ؟ فَإِنْ قِيلَ صَدَقَةٌ قَالَ لِأَصْحَابِهِ كُلُّوا وَلَمْ يَأْكُلْ وَإِنْ قِيلَ هَدِيَّةٌ ضَرَبَ بِيَدِهِ فَأَكَلَ مَعَهُمْ.....
(رواه البخارى ومسلم)

(842/19) It is related by Abu Hurayrah ؓ that the usual practice of the Messenger of Allah ﷺ was that when anyone brought to him something to eat, he used to enquire: "Is it Hadiya (i.e., a gift) or *Sadaqah* (i.e., charity)?" If he was told that it was *Sadaqah*, he would tell his Companions (i.e., such of them for whom there was no harm in eating things of *Sadaqah*, like Ashab us-Suffa) to partake of it and would refrain from eating it himself. If, on the other hand, he was told that it was *Hadiya*, he would stretch his hand towards it and join the Companions ؓ in eating it."
(Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: Whatever is given to a poor and needy person by way of help and with intention of earning the countenance of the

Lord is known, in the special terminology of Islam, as *Sadaqah*, no matter whether it is obligatory, such as, *Zakah* and *Sadaqatul fitr* or supererogatory (which, in the common parlance, is called *Khayrat* or charity), and when something is offered to anyone out of love and devotion it is described as *Hadiya*.

The custom of the Prophet ﷺ was, as we learn from the above Tradition, that if anyone brought to him something to eat with the intention of *Sadaqah*, he gave it to the Companions ﷺ who were poor and could justly partake of it and did not eat it himself, and when anyone brought it by way of *Hadiya*, he, also, ate it along with the Companions ﷺ¹.

(٨٤٣/٢٠) عَنْ أَبِي رَافِعٍ أَنَّ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ بَعَثَ رَجُلًا مِنْ بَنِي مَخْزُومٍ عَلَى الصَّدَقَةِ فَقَالَ لِأَبِي رَافِعٍ اصْحَبْنِي كَيْمَا تُصِيبَ مِنْهَا فَقَالَ لَا حَتَّى آتِي رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ فَاسْأَلَهُ فَأَنْطَلَقَ إِلَى النَّبِيِّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ فَسَأَلَهُ فَقَالَ إِنَّ الصَّدَقَةَ لَا تَحِلُّ لَنَا وَإِنَّ مَوَالِيَ الْقَوْمِ مِنْ أَنْفُسِهِمْ.

(رواه الترمذی و ابوداؤد والنسائی)

(843/20) Sayyidina Abu Rafi' ﷺ has said that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ sent a man of Banu Makhzum to collect *Zakah* and he asked him to accompany him so that he might get some of it, but he refused to do so till he went to the Messenger of Allah ﷺ and asked him. He went to the Prophet ﷺ and asked him and he said, "The *Zakah* is not lawful for us, and the slaves of a people are treated as being of their number. (So it is not lawful for you too)"

(Tirmizi Abu Dawood Nasa'i)

Commentary: The hadith makes it clear that just as *Zakah* is not lawful for the Prophet ﷺ and his family, so too it is not lawful for his and their slaves even after they are freed. We also learn that every collector of *Zakah* is paid out of the *Zakah* collected for his services (even if he is wealthy and liable to pay *Zakah*). The third thing we know is that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ and the Islamic law raised the slaves to the level of family members of their owners and partners to an extent although in that age slaves enjoined on distinction (outside Islam).

①. Bukhari has transmitted a *hadith* from Sayyidah Ayshah رضي الله عنها. "The Messenger of Allah ﷺ accepted a *hadya* and himself gave a return *hadya* to the one who presented it."

When it is Not Permitted to Him to Beg and When it is

The scholars of *Hadith* record in the *Kitab Az-Zakah* itself those Ahadith which tell us when one may not beg and when one is allowed to beg. We follow their procedure and reproduce the *Ahadith* on the subject.

(٨٤٤/٢١) عَنْ حُبْشِيِّ بْنِ جُنَادَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِنَّ الْمَسْئَلَةَ لَا تَحِلُّ لِعَبْدٍ وَلَا لِبَيْتٍ مِرَّةٍ سِوَى إِلَّا لِبَيْتٍ فَقِيرٍ مُدْقِعٍ أَوْ غُرْمٍ مُقْطِعٍ وَمَنْ سَأَلَ النَّاسَ لِيُثْرِيَ بِهِ مَالَهُ كَانَ خُمُوشًا فِي وَجْهِهِ يَوْمَ الْقِيَمَةِ وَرَضْفًا يَأْكُلُهُ مِنْ جَهَنَّمَ فَمَنْ شَاءَ فَلْيَقِلْ وَمَنْ شَاءَ فَلْيُكْثِرْ (رواه الترمذی)

(844/21) Hubshi bin Junadah رضی اللہ عنہ has reported the Messenger of Allah ﷺ as saying: "Begging is not allowable to a rich man, or to one who has strength and is sound in limb, but only to one who is in grinding poverty or is seriously in debt. If anyone begs to increase thereby his property, it will appear as a lacerations on his face on the Day of Resurrection and as heated stones which he will eat from Hell. So let him who wishes ask little, and let him who wishes ask much." (Tirmizi)

Commentary: This Hadith too defines the rich as one who is not needy (even if he is not owner of nisab). Such a man and one who is strong who can earn his livelihood are not allowed to beg. such men should not extend a begging hand before other people. Of course, those who are deep in poverty or compelled because of a demand of ransom or penalty or debt, they are permitted to ask. If anyone, however, begs to augment his wealth then he will be punished on the Day of Resurrection and his face will bear an ugly scar and his earnings through beggary will turn into hot stones that he will have to eat.

(٨٤٥/٢٢) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ مَنْ سَأَلَ النَّاسَ أَمْوَالَهُمْ تَكْثِيرًا فَإِنَّمَا يَسْأَلُ جَمْرًا فَلْيَسْتَقِلْ أَوْ لِيَسْتَكْثِرْ..... (رواه مسلم)

(845/22) Sayyidina Abu Hurayrah رضی اللہ عنہ has said that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "He who begs the property of others to increase his own wealth is asking only for live coals so

let him ask little or much."

(Muslim)

(٨٤٦/٢٣) عَنْ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ مَسْعُودٍ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَنْ سَأَلَ النَّاسَ وَلَهُ مَا يُغْنِيهِ جَاءَ يَوْمَ الْقِيَمَةِ وَمَسْنَلَتُهُ فِي وَجْهِهِ خُمُوشٌ أَوْ خُدُوشٌ أَوْ كُدُوحٌ قِيلَ يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ مَا يُغْنِيهِ؟ قَالَ خُمُسُونَ دِرْهَمًا أَوْ قِيَمَتُهَا مِنَ الذَّهَبِ (رواه أبو داود، والترمذي، والنسائي وابن ماجه، والدارمي)

(846/23) It is related by Abdullah bin Mas'ud رضي الله عنه that Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Whoever begs from others when he has enough for his needs and does not have to look up to anyone for support, he shall come for the Final Judgement on the Day of Resurrection in such a state that his request (for alms) will be visible on his face in the form of wound." It was enquired from him: "O Messenger of Allah ﷺ! What is the quantity of wealth which you have described as adequate for one's needs?" "Fifty dirhams or gold of an equal value," the Prophet ﷺ replied. (Abu Dawood, Tirmizi, Ibn Majah and Daarami)

Commentary: In this Tradition the criterion of *Ghina*, after which it is not legitimate for anyone to beg, has been laid down as 50 *dirhams*. In another, it is said to be one *Augia* of silver, or 40 *dirhams* in cash. There is, evidently not much difference between the two standards. But in a report quoted in *Abu Dawood*, on the authority of salah bin Hanzalah رضي الله عنه, it is stated that once the Prophet ﷺ was asked: "What is the quantity of *Ghina* the possession of which makes it unlawful for a person to beg?" "So much", replied the Prophet ﷺ, "That from it one can eat a meal of the day and a meal of the night". It thus, shows that if anyone has enough to eat for a day, it is not proper for him to beg.

The *Ghina* on which *Zakah* is obligatory is a settled fact and we have, already, examined the Traditions concerning it. But for the *Ghina* which prevents a an from begging, the Prophet ﷺ has set different standards on different occasions. This divergence, in our humble opinion, is in relation to men and circumstances. In case of certain men and in certain circumstance it may be permissible to beg even in the presence of a few assets. But there is no question of doing so if the assets amount to 40 or 50 *dirhams* in vlue.

On the other hand, there scan be some people for whom and some circumstances in which it is not permissible to beg even if there is enough to eat for a day.

It can, again, be attributed to the difference between concession and resoluteness. The Traditions in which the assets worth 40 or 50 dirhams have been declared to be the criterion appertain to the realm of leave and fiat while those which forbid begging even if there is provision for a day signify the station of high-mindedness and piety.

Disgraceful in Any Case

(٨٤٧/٢٤) عَنْ ابْنِ عُمَرَ أَنَّ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ قَالَ وَهُوَ عَلَى الْمِنْبَرِ وَهُوَ يَذْكُرُ الصَّدَقَةَ وَالتَّعَفُّفَ عَنِ الْمَسْئَلَةِ أَيْدِي الْعُلْيَا خَيْرٌ مِنَ أَيْدِي السُّفْلَى وَأَيْدِي الْعُلْيَا هِيَ الْمُنْفِقَةُ وَالسُّفْلَى هِيَ السَّائِلَةُ (رواه البخاري ومسلم)

(847/24) It is related by Abdullah bin Umar رضي الله عنه that the Prophet ﷺ, while exhorting the people from the pulpit to abstain from soliciting for charity, said: "The upper hand is better than the lower hand, and the lower hand is the begging hand."

(Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: It shows that it is much better and nobler to be the giver than the recipient of charity. A faithful bondsman should try his utmost to be the giver and save himself from the ignominy of begging.

If Begging is Unavoidable, One Should Beg From Virtuous Men

(٨٤٨/٢٥) عَنْ ابْنِ الْفَرَّاسِيِّ أَنَّ الْفَرَّاسِيَّ قَالَ قُلْتُ لِرَسُولِ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ أَسْأَلُ يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ؟ فَقَالَ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ لَا وَإِنْ كُنْتَ لَا بُدَّ فَمِنْ الصَّالِحِينَ

(رواه ابو داود والنسائي)

(848/25) It is related by Ibn Al-Firasi رضي الله عنه that his father, al-Firasi said "I enquired from the Prophet ﷺ if I could make a request to others for charity." The Prophet ﷺ replied: "Do not beg (as far as possible), but if you are compelled to do so, let it be from the virtuous bondsmen of Allah." (Abu Dawood and Nasa'i)

Place Your Need Before God, Not Men

(٨٤٩/٢٦) عَنْ ابْنِ مَسْعُودٍ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَنْ أَصَابَتْهُ فَاقَةٌ فَأَنْزَلَهَا بِالنَّاسِ لَمْ تُسَدِّ فَاقَتُهُ وَمَنْ أَنْزَلَهَا بِاللَّهِ أَوْشَكَ اللَّهُ لَهُ

بِالْعِثَاءِ إِمَّا يَمُوتَ عَاجِلًا أَوْ غِنَى أَجَلٍ..... (رواه، ابوداؤد والترمذی)

(849/26) Abdullah bin Mas'ud رضی اللہ عنہ related to us that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Whoever is confronted with a severe need and places it before men (and begs them for help), he will never be relieved of it permanently, and whoever places it before God and beseeches Him (for it), it is confidently hoped that God will put an end to his need either by granting him death before long (if the appointed time of his death has arrived) or by bestowing prosperity upon him after sometime."

(Abu Dawood and Tirmizi)

Assurance of Paradise On Abstention From Begging

(٨٥٠/٢٧) عَنْ ثَوْبَانَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَنْ يَكْفُلُ لِي أَنْ لَا يَسْأَلَ النَّاسَ شَيْئًا فَأَتَكْفُلُ لَهُ بِالْجَنَّةِ فَقَالَ ثَوْبَانُ أَنَا فَكَانَ لَا يَسْأَلُ أَحَدًا شَيْئًا

(رواه ابوداؤد والنسائي)

(850/27) It is related by Thauban رضی اللہ عنہ that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "I give him the assurance of Paradise who promises me not to entreat the bondsmen of Allah for any of his needs." Thauban رضی اللہ عنہ went on to narrate that, he said to the Prophet ﷺ: Messenger of Allah ﷺ! I give you the promise." The narrator added "as a result of it, it was the custom of Thauban رضی اللہ عنہ not to ask anyone for anything." (Abu Dawood, Nasa'i)

If Anything is Given to You Without Solicitation or Greediness, Take it

(٨٥١/٢٨) عَنْ عُمَرَ بْنِ الْخَطَّابِ قَالَ كَانَ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يُعْطِينِي الْعَطَاءَ فَأَقُولُ أَعْطِهِ أَفْقَرُ إِلَيْهِ مِنِّي فَقَالَ خُذْهُ فَتَمَوَّلْهُ وَتَصَدَّقْ بِهِ فَمَا جَاءَكَ مِنْ هَذَا الْمَالِ وَأَنْتَ غَيْرُ مُشْرِفٍ وَلَا سَائِلٍ فَخُذْهُ وَمَا لَا فَلَا تَتَّبِعْهُ

(رواه البخارى ومسلم)

(851/28) Umar bin al-Khattab رضی اللہ عنہ narrated (when) the

Messenger of Allah ﷺ gave me something (as a gift) I used to say to him: 'Please give it to someone else who may be in greater need of it.' The Prophet ﷺ would, then, reply: "Umar رضي الله عنه, take it and make it your property (and, then if you like, you may give it) to a needy person in charity, (and make it a principle that) when you receive anything in such a way that you have neither asked for it nor felt a desire for it in your heart, you will accept it (as a gift from Allah), and will not even look at a thing that does not come to you in that way." (Bukhari and Muslim)

Do Not Beg As Long As You Can Earn By Work or Service

(٨٥٢/٢٩) عَنْ الزُّبَيْرِ بْنِ الْعَوَّامِ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ لَأَنْ يَأْخُذَ أَحَدُكُمْ حَبْلَهُ فَيَأْتِيَ بِحُزْمَةٍ حَطَبٍ عَلَى ظَهْرِهِ فَيَبِيعَهَا فَيَكْفِيَ اللَّهُ بِهَا وَجْهَهُ خَيْرٌ لَهُ مِنْ أَنْ يَسْتَأْذِنَ النَّاسَ أَنْعَظُوهُ أَوْ مَنَعُوهُ (رواه البخاري)

(852/29) It is related on the authority of Zubayr bin Al-Awwam رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "The attitude of a needy person (among you) that he goes to the forest with a rope and returns with a bundle of wood (for fuel) on his back and sells it, and, thus, by the grace of God, saves himself from the disgrace of begging is better than that he stretches his hand before others, and, then, they may give him (something) or not." (Bukhari)

(٨٥٣/٣٠) عَنْ أَنَسٍ أَنَّ رَجُلًا مِنَ الْأَنْصَارِ أَتَى النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَسْأَلُهُ فَقَالَ أَمَا فِي بَيْتِكَ شَيْءٌ فَقَالَ بَلَى جِئْتُ نَلْبِسُ بَعْضَهُ وَنَبْسُطُ بَعْضَهُ وَقَعْتُ نَشْرَبُ فِيهِ مِنَ الْمَاءِ قَالَ إِنِّي بِهِمَا فَاتَاهُ بِهِمَا فَأَخْلَهُمَا رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ بِيَدِهِ وَقَالَ مَنْ يَشْتَرِي هَذَيْنِ؟ قَالَ رَجُلٌ أَنَا أَخْلَهُمَا بِدِرْهَمٍ قَالَ مَنْ يَزِيدُ عَلَى دِرْهَمٍ مَرَّتَيْنِ أَوْ ثَلَاثًا قَالَ رَجُلٌ أَنَا أَخْذُهُمَا بِدِرْهَمَيْنِ فَأَعْطَا هُمَا إِيَّاهُ فَأَخَذَ الدِّرْهَمَيْنِ فَأَعْطَا هُمَا الْأَنْصَارِيُّ وَقَالَ اشْتَرِ بِأَحَدِهِمَا طَعَامًا فَأَنْبِذْهُ إِلَى أَهْلِكَ وَاشْتَرِ بِالْآخَرِ قُدُّومًا فَأَتِنِي بِهِ فَاتَاهُ بِهِ فَشَدَّ فِيهِ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ عُودًا بِيَدِهِ ثُمَّ قَالَ إِذْهَبْ فَاحْتَطِبْ وَبِعْ وَلَا أُرِيكَ خَمْسَةَ عَشَرَ يَوْمًا فَذَهَبَ الرَّجُلُ يَحْتَطِبُ وَيَبِيعُ فَجَاءَهُ وَقَدْ أَصَابَ

عَشْرَةَ دَرَاهِمَ فَاشْتَرَى بِبَعْضِهَا ثَوْبًا وَبِبَعْضِهَا طَعَامًا فَقَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ هَذَا خَيْرٌ لَكَ مِنْ أَنْ تَجِيءَ الْمَسْئَلَةَ نُكْتَةً فِي وَجْهِكَ يَوْمَ الْقِيَمَةِ إِنَّ الْمَسْئَلَةَ لَا تَصْلِحُ إِلَّا لِثَلَاثَةٍ لِيَدِي فَقَرْمُذِقِ أَوْلِيْدِي غَرْمٌ مُقْطِعٌ أَوْلِيْدِي دَمٌ مُوَجِعٌ (رواه ابو داؤد)

(853/30) It is related by Sayyidina Anas رضي الله عنه that (once a poor and needy Ansar came to the Prophet ﷺ and, (after relating his neediness), begged him for something. The Prophet ﷺ asked him: "Is there nothing, at all, in your house?" There is only a blanket," the Ansar replied, "a part of which we use to cover ourselves with and a part from which we spread on the ground (lying), and there is a cup from which we drink water." The Prophet ﷺ, said to him: "Bring both the things to me." The Ansar brought the two things and gave them to the Prophet ﷺ. The Prophet ﷺ took the cup and the blanket in his hand, and, addressing those present, (in the manner of selling at an auction), said: "Who is willing to buy these things?" One of the Companions رضي الله عنه came up with the reply, "Messenger of Allah ﷺ! I can buy them for a *dirham*." The Prophet ﷺ then, enquired, "Who makes a bid of more than one dirham? (He said it two or three times). Messenger of Allah ﷺ! I can buy for two dirhams," said another. The Prophet ﷺ gave the articles to him and took two dirhams and, handing them over to the Ansar, said, "Buy some food stuff with one *dirham* and give it to your family and an axe with the other *dirham* and bring it to me." The Ansar acted accordingly and reported back to the Prophet ﷺ with the axe. The Prophet ﷺ fixed a strong handle to it with his own hands, and said to him, "Go and cut wood from the forest and sell it and do not let me see you for fifteen days." The Ansar, thus, went away and fetched wood from the forest and sold it as the Prophet ﷺ had told. Then, one day he turned up and he had earned ten *dirhams* by his labour with which he had bought some cloth and foodgrains. The Prophet ﷺ, on seeing him observed: "This earning by hard work is much better for you than that you appear, before the people, on the Day of Resurrection, with the mark of begging on your face. Begging is permissible only to three kinds of men: (i) He who has grown so weak owing to poverty and starvation that he can hardly rise

from the ground ; (ii) He who is overburdened with a loan or penalty (to pay which is beyond his means); (iii) He who has to pay blood-money but cannot do it." (Abu Dawood)

Commentary: The moral of the above Tradition is self-evident. But as misfortune would have it, a whole class of professional beggars is thriving among the followers of the Prophet ﷺ. Then there are those who indulge in respectable begging by flaunting themselves as theologians or spiritual mentors. They are guilty of fraud and trading in religion as well.

Monetary Good-Doing Apart From Zakah

(٨٥٤/٣١) عَنْ فَاطِمَةَ بِنْتِ قَيْسٍ قَالَتْ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ
إِنَّ فِي الْمَالِ لَحَقًّا سِوَى الزَّكَاةِ ثُمَّ تَلَا لَيْسَ الْبِرُّ أَنْ تُولُؤُوا وَجُوهَكُمْ قَبْلَ
الْمَشْرِقِ وَالْمَغْرِبِ. الآية.....
(رواه الترمذی وابن ماجه والدرمی)

رضی اللہ عنہا (854/31) It is related by Sayyidah Fatimah bint Qays رضى الله عنها that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "There is the claim (of God) upon wealth besides *Zakah*." He, then, recited the following verse of the Qur'an:

It is not righteousness that you turn your faces to the East and West : but righteous is he who believes in Allah and the Last Day and the angels and the Scripture and the Prophets عليهم السلام; and gives his wealth, for love of Him, to kinsfolk and to orphans and the needy and the wayfarer and to those who ask, and to set slaves free; and observes proper worship and pays the poor due.

(Al-Baqarah 2:177)

لَيْسَ الْبِرُّ أَنْ تُولُؤُوا وَجُوهَكُمْ قَبْلَ
الْمَشْرِقِ وَالْمَغْرِبِ وَلَكِنَّ الْبِرَّ
مَنْ آمَنَ بِاللَّهِ وَالْيَوْمِ
الْآخِرِ وَالْمَلَائِكَةِ وَالْكِتَابِ وَالنَّبِيِّينَ
وَاتَى الْمَالَ عَلَى حُبِّهِ ذَوَى
الْقُرْبَى وَالْيَتَامَى وَالْمَسْكِينِ وَابْنَ
السَّبِيلِ وَالسَّائِلِينَ وَفِي الرِّقَابِ
وَأَقَامَ الصَّلَاةَ وَآتَى الزَّكَاةَ.....

الآية (البقره. ٢: ١٧٧)

(Tirmizi, Ibn Majah and Daarami)

Commentary: The main object of this Tradition is to remove the misunderstanding that the bondsman is absolved of his responsibility to the poor and the indigent and no claim of God is

left upon his wealth once he has paid the prescribed *Zakah* (i.e. 1/40th of the worldly possessions that are in excess of his need). In fact, in special circumstances, the duty of helping the needy servants of Allah remains with the well-to-do people even after the payment of *Zakah*. For instance, a wealthy and prosperous person pays the *Zakah* that is due on him, and, then, he comes to know that a neighbouring family has nothing to eat or such-and-such a relation is in dire need or a good and respectable person approaches him in distress or a wayfarer comes to him for help, in that case it becomes his duty to render financial assistance to them.

The Prophet ﷺ, then, recited the verse from surah *al-Baqarah* as an authoritative pronouncement in support of his view, in which the doing of monetary good to the orphans, the needy, the travellers and other indigent classes is mentioned after Faith under the head of righteous deeds. After it, the establishment of *salah* and the payment of *Zakah* are, also, set forth which shows that the monetary help of the weak and the poor stressed in it is in addition to *Zakah*.

Charity is Enjoined Upon All Muslims, Rich or Poor

(٨٥٥/٣٢) عَنْ أَبِي مُوسَى الْأَشْعَرِيِّ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ عَلَى كُلِّ مُسْلِمٍ صَدَقَةٌ قَالُوا فَإِنْ لَمْ يَجِدْ قَالَ فَلْيَعْمَلْ بِيَدَيْهِ فَيَنْفَعْ نَفْسَهُ وَيَتَصَدَّقَ قَالُوا فَإِنْ لَمْ يَسْتَطِعْ قَالَ فَيُعِينْ ذَا الْحَاجَةِ الْمَلْهُوفَ قَالُوا فَإِنْ لَمْ يَفْعَلْهُ قَالَ فَيَأْمُرْ بِالْخَيْرِ قَالُوا فَإِنْ لَمْ يَفْعَلْ قَالَ فَيُمْسِكُ عَنِ الشَّرِّ فَإِنَّ لَهُ صَدَقَةً
(رواه البخاري ومسلم)

(855/32) It is related by Musa Al-Ash'ari ؓ that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Charity is enjoined upon all Muslims." He was asked: "If someone has nothing to give, what will he do?" The Prophet ﷺ replied: "He should work with his hands and benefit himself as well as give in charity (from what he earns)". It was, again, enquired from him: "If he cannot do even that?" The Prophet ﷺ replied: "He should help the needy by rendering some (other) service to him. (It, too, is a kind of charity)." "If he cannot do even that?" It was, once more asked. The Prophet ﷺ

replied: "He should, then, exhort the people to good deeds." If he cannot do even that?" He was asked, once again The Prophet ﷺ replied: "He should (at least) keep away from wickedness (i.e., take care not to do harm or injury to anyone). It, too, is a kind of charity for him". (Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: It shows that those, too, should practise charity on whom *Zakah* is not binding owing to want of worldly riches. Whoever is very poor should seek to earn the Divine reward on charity through toil and labour and by cutting down on his own needs. In case it, also, is not possible, he should try to serve the weak and distressed and bring solace to them if not with his hands, at least the tongue.

The sum and substance of the above Tradition is that it is incumbent upon every Muslim, rich or poor, young or old, and strong or weak, to do whatever he can by way of helping the others in difficulty.

Exhortation to Charity

(٨٥٦/٣٣) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ قَالَ اللَّهُ

تَعَالَى أَنْفِقْ يَا بَنَ آدَمَ أَنْفِقْ عَلَيْكَ..... (رواه البخارى و مسلم)

(856/33) It is related by Abu Hurayrah ؓ that the Prophet ﷺ said: "It is the message of God to every bondsman: O Son of Adam! Go on spending the wealth I have given you (on the poor, the needy and the destitute). I shall give you more from My treasure." (Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: It contains, as it were, the assurance from the Lord that whoever spends on indigent fellowmen shall not suffer a decrease in his goods on account of it. God will bestow more wealth upon him from His hidden treasure.

Observation: We have said earlier that if the Prophet ﷺ says anything as from Allah and it is not from the Qur'an then it is *Hadith Qudsi*.

(٨٥٧/٣٤) عَنْ أَسْمَاءَ قَالَتْ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ أَنْفِقْ وَلَا

تُحْصِي فَيُحْصِيَ اللَّهُ عَلَيْكَ وَلَا تُرْعَى فَيُرْعَى اللَّهُ عَلَيْكَ إِرْضَخِي

مَا سَنَطَعْتَ..... (رواه البخارى و مسلم)

(857/34) Asma bint Abu Bakr رضى الله عنهما narrated that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said to her: "Go on spending open-handedly in the way of God, and on the strength of faith in Him, and count not (i.e., do not worry over what you have and how much of it will you give away). If you will count and calculate like that while spending in God's way, He, too, will give you thriftily. (If, on the other hand, you will spend, for His sake, without hesitation, He will, also bestow of His bounty upon you without measure). And do not hoard or else the Lord, too, will deal with you in the same manner and the doors of benevolence and abundance will close upon you). Spend freely, therefore, whatever you can for the sake of God."

(Bukhari and Muslim)

(٨٥٨/٣٥) عَنْ أَبِي أُمَامَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَا ابْنَ آدَمَ أَنْ تَبْذُلَ الْخَيْرَ خَيْرٌ لَكَ وَأَنْ تُمَسِّكَهُ شَرٌّ لَكَ وَلَا تَلَامُ عَلَى كَفَافٍ وَابْتَدَأَ بِمَنْ تَعُولُ.....
(رواه مسلم)

(858/35) It is related by Abu Umamah رضى الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "O son of Adam, it is better for you to spend wealth that is in excess of your needs in the path of Allah, and to withhold it is bad for you, and, of course, there is no harm in saving (for future use) to the extent of your living expenses; and, first of all, spend on those who are dependent upon you for support."
(Muslim)

Commentary: It shows that it is better for a man to keep with himself the wealth he may earn or obtain as much of it as is required for his needs, and spend the rest on the bondsmen of the Lord, for His sake, and, among them, the foremost claim is of those the responsibility for whose maintenance God has placed upon him like his family and the needy near relatives.

Only That Remains And Will be Used Which is Spent In The Way of Allah

(٨٥٩/٣٦) عَنْ عَائِشَةَ أَنَّهُمْ ذَبَحُوا شَاةً فَقَالَ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَا بَقِيَ مِنْهَا؟ قَالَتْ مَا بَقِيَ مِنْهَا إِلَّا كَتُفُّهَا قَالَ بَقِيَ مِنْهَا غَيْرُ كَتُفِّهَا (رواه الترمذی)
(859/36) Sayyidah Ayshah رضى الله عنها related that (once) a goat

was slaughtered (and its meat was distributed for the sake of God). The Prophet ﷺ came (soon after it) and enquired, "What is left of the goat?" Nothing but one forequarter. (All the rest has been given away)". She replied. The Prophet ﷺ remarked, "In fact, every thing that has been given away in order to please Allah is left except the forequarter and is going to be of use (in the Hereafter)." (Tirmizi)

The Way of Men of Faith And Trust Concerning Expenditure in Allah's Way

(٨٦٠/٣٧) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ لَوْ كَانَ لِي مِثْلُ أَحَدِ ذَهَبًا لَسَرَّيْنِي أَنْ لَا يَمُرَّ عَلَيَّ ثَلَاثَ لَيَالٍ وَعِنْدِي مِنْهُ شَيْئٌ إِلَّا شَيْئِي أَرْضُهُ لِلدِّينِ..... (رواه البخاري)

(860/37) It is related by Abu Hurayrah ؓ that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: If I have gold equal (in weight) to Mount Uhud, it will make me most happy that before the passage of three night to I spend the whole of it in the path of God except that I might save some of it for paying off the debt." (Bukhari)

(٨٦١/٣٨) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ أَنَّ النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ دَخَلَ عَلَى بِلَالٍ وَعِنْدَهُ صُبْرَةٌ مِنْ قَمَرٍ فَقَالَ مَا هَذَا يَا بِلَالُ؟ قَالَ شَيْئٌ إِذْخَرْتُهُ لِغَدٍ فَقَالَ أَمَا تَخْشَى أَنْ تَرَى لَهُ بُخَارًا فِي نَارِ جَهَنَّمَ يَوْمَ الْقِيَمَةِ أَتَفِقُ يَا بِلَالُ وَلَا تَخْشَى مِنْ ذِي الْعَرْشِ أَقْلًا..... (رواه البيهقي في شعب الإيمان)

(861/38) It is related by Abu Hurayrah ؓ that one day the Prophet ﷺ went to the residence of Sayyidina Bilal ؓ and saw that a heap of dates was lying with him. The Prophet ﷺ asked Bilal about it. He replied "I have made it a provision for future (so that I may have some relief from worrying about my sustenance)". The Prophet ﷺ, remarked: "Bilal Are you not afraid that tomorrow, on the Day of Resurrection, you see its heat and burning in the Fire of Hell? See, O Bilal! Spend on yourself and on others what comes to your hand and have no fear of scarcity from the Owner of the Great Throne (i.e., believe it God will go on giving you in future in the same way as He has done today. There is no dearth in His treasure. So,

worry about making a provision for the future)." (Baihaqi)

Commentary: Sayyidina Bilal ؓ was Among the *Ashab As-Suffa* who had made the Prophet's ﷺ life of perfect reliance upon God a model for themselves. It was not proper for him to store up food for the days to come, and therefore, the Prophet ﷺ had given him this advice, though for the common people it is quite legitimate to do so. The Prophet ﷺ had, in fact stopped some of his Companions ؓ from spending everything in the path of God and keeping nothing for their dependants. But for the Companions who followed the example of the sacred Prophet or of *Ashab as-Suffa*, in the matter of a life of complete trust in God, such a course was not desirable.

The last sentence of this Tradition imparts the assurance that whoever spends freely in the paths of goodness and virtue shall find no scarcity in the munificence of Allah.

Rich People Who Do Not Spend Freely in The Way of God Are The losers

(٨٦٢/٣٩) عَنْ أَبِي ذَرِّقَالٍ انْتَهَيْتُ إِلَى النَّبِيِّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ وَهُوَ جَالِسٌ فِي ظِلِّ الْكَعْبَةِ فَلَمَّا رَأَيْتُ قَالَ هُمْ الْأَخْسَرُونَ وَرَبِّ الْكَعْبَةِ فَقُلْتُ فِذَاكَ أَبِي وَأُمِّي مَنْ هُمْ قَالَ هُمْ الْأَكْثَرُونَ أَمْوَالًا إِلَّا مَنْ قَالَ هَكَذَا وَهَكَذَا وَهَكَذَا مِنْ بَيْنِ يَدَيْهِ وَمِنْ خَلْفِهِ وَعَنْ يَمِينِهِ وَعَنْ شِمَالِهِ وَقَلِيلٌ مَا هُمْ

(رواه البخاري ومسلم)

(862/39) Abi Zarr Ghifari ؓ narrated that "Once I went to the Prophet ﷺ and he, (at that time) was sitting under the shadow of the House of Ka'bah. As he saw me, he remarked: "By the Lord of Ka'bah, they are in great loss.' I said: "May my parents be a sacrifice to you? Who are in great loss?' The Prophet ﷺ replied: Those who are very rich and well-to-do. Among them only they are safe from loss who spend their wealth open-handedly in front and behind, let and right (i.e., in all directions on things of goodness and virtue). But such bondsmen are very few among the rich." (Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: It shows that though, on the face of it, wealth is a blessing, in reality, it is severe trial and only those can come out of it successfully who do not get attached to it but spend liberally on

good and noble causes.

Auspiciousness of Charity

(٨٦٣/٤٠) عَنْ أَنَسٍ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِنَّ الصَّدَقَةَ

لَتُطْفِئَنِي غَضَبَ الرَّبِّ وَتَذْفَعُ مِيتَةَ السُّوءِ..... (رواه الترمذی)

(863/40) It is related by Anas رضی اللہ عنہ that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Charity cools down the fire of Allah's wrath and wards off and evil death." (Tirmizi)

Commentary: Good and evil deeds are morals, also, possess some attributes and produce their own effects about which we can learn only through the Divine Prophet ﷺ. Two peculiar properties of charity are described in the above Tradition: if the wrath of God is turned towards anyone due to a major transgression, Charity cools it down and instead of displeasure and chastisement, he becomes deserving of His mercy and good pleasure. and, secondly, it saves a man from an evil death, i.e., he dies a good death owing to the blessedness of charity or is spread the shame and agony of dying a death that, generally, is considered wretched and miserable by the people.

(٨٦٤/٤١) عَنْ مَرْثَدِ بْنِ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ قَالَ حَدَّثَنِي بَعْضُ أَصْحَابِ رَسُولِ اللَّهِ

صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ أَنَّهُ سَمِعَ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَقُولُ إِنَّ ظِلَّ
الْمُؤْمِنِ يَوْمَ الْقِيَمَةِ صَدَقَتُهُ..... (رواه احمد)

(864/41) Marthad bin Abdullah رضی اللہ عنہ related that some Companions رضی اللہ عنہم related to him that they had heard from the Messenger of Allah ﷺ that there would be the shadow of charitable deed on the faithful bondsman on the Day of Resurrection." (Musnad Ahmad)

Commentary: About many virtuous deeds it is told in the Traditions that they will become a source of shelter on the Last Day. In this Tradition it is stated about charity that one of its auspicious effects that will be manifest on the Day of Final Judgement is that the charitable deed of a person will become a shade for him which will protect him from the intense heat of the Day.

Increase in Wealth

(٨٦٥/٤٢) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ
مَا نَقَصَتْ صَدَقَةٌ مِنْ مَالٍ وَمَا زَادَ اللَّهُ بِعَفْوٍ إِلَّا عِزًّا وَمَا تَوَاضَعَ أَحَدٌ لِلَّهِ إِلَّا رَفَعَهُ
اللَّهُ
(رواه مسلم)

(865/42) It is related by Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "The wealth of no one suffers a decrease on account of charity, and no one loses in honour by forgiving, nay God raises him in dignity and he becomes more respectable, and whoever will observe humility, God will make him exalted."
(Muslim)

(٨٦٦/٤٣) عَنْ أَبِي أُمَامَةَ قَالَ قَالَ أَبُو ذَرٍّ يَأَيُّ اللَّهَ أَرَأَيْتَ الصَّدَقَةَ مَا هِيَ قَالَ
أَضْعَافٌ مُضَاعَفَةٌ وَعِنْدَ اللَّهِ الْكَرِيمُ.....
(رواه احمد)

(866/43) It is related by Abu Umamah رضي الله عنه that (once) Abu Zarr رضي الله عنه said, O Prophet of Allah, tell us what is charity (i.e., what reward is it going to fetch from Allah)? "The Prophet ﷺ replied: "Several (i.e., whatever a person spends in charity, he will get back many times of it in return) and there is much with Allah."
(Musnad Ahmad)

Commentary: It says that Allah will grant a manifold increase in what one spends in charity. In some other sayings, the increase from ten to hundred times is mentioned, but it, too, is not the limit. God will bestow even more on whomsoever He likes.

According to some commentators, this premium is given by God on charity in the present world while, in the Hereafter, it will be much greater.

Reward on Feeding and Clothing The Needy

(٨٦٧/٤٤) عَنْ أَبِي سَعِيدٍ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ أَيُّمَا
مُسْلِمٍ كَسَا مُسْلِمًا ثَوْبًا عَلَى عُرَى كَسَاهُ اللَّهُ مِنْ خَضِرِ الْجَنَّةِ وَأَيُّمَا مُسْلِمٍ
أَطْعَمَ مُسْلِمًا عَلَى جُوعٍ أَطْعَمَهُ اللَّهُ مِنْ ثَمَارِ الْجَنَّةِ وَأَيُّمَا مُسْلِمٍ سَقَى مُسْلِمًا
عَلَى ظَمَأٍ سَقَاهُ اللَّهُ مِنَ الرَّحِيقِ الْمَخْتُومِ
(رواه ابوداؤد والترمذی)

(867/44) It is related by Abu Sa'eed Khudri رضي الله عنه that the

Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "the Muslim who gave clothes to a Muslim brother who had nothing to wear, Allah will provide him with the green apparel of Paradise, and the Muslim who gave food to a Muslim brother who was hungry, Allah will feed him with the fruits of Paradise, and the Muslim who gave water to a Muslim brother who was thirsty, Allah will give him the sealed purifying wine of Heaven to drink."

(Abu Dawood and Tirmizi)

(٨٦٨/٤٥) عَنْ ابْنِ عَبَّاسٍ مَا مِنْ مُسْلِمٍ كَسَا مُسْلِمًا ثَوْبًا إِلَّا كَانَ فِي حِفْظِ اللَّهِ مَا دَامَ عَلَيْهِ مِنْهُ خِرْقَةٌ.....
(رواه احمد والترمذی)

(868/45) It is related by Sayyidina Ibn Abbas ؓ that he heard the Messenger of Allah ﷺ say, "Any Muslim who gives a Muslim a garment to wear will be in the safe keeping of Allah as long as a shred of it remains on him." (Ahmad and Tirmizi)

(٨٦٩/٤٦) عَنْ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ سَلَامٍ قَالَ لَمَّا قَدِمَ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ الْمَدِينَةَ جِئْتُ فَلَمَّا تَبَيَّنْتُ وَجْهَهُ عَرَفْتُ أَنَّ وَجْهَهُ لَيْسَ بِوَجْهِ كَذَّابٍ فَكَانَ أَوَّلَ مَا قَالَ يَا أَيُّهَا النَّاسُ أَفْشُوا السَّلَامَ وَأَطْعِمُوا الطَّعَامَ وَصِلُوا الْأَرْحَامَ وَصَلُّوا بِاللَّيْلِ وَالنَّاسُ نِيَامٌ تَدْخُلُوا الْجَنَّةَ بِسَلَامٍ.....
(رواه الترمذی وابن ماجه)

(869/46) It is related by Abdullah bin Salaam ؓ, "When the Prophet ﷺ came to live in Madinah, I sent to (see and form an opinion about) him. As I looked carefully at his radiant face, I recognised (i.e., realised for certain) that it could not be the face of a liar. The first thing he said was: "People! Spread Salaam (Salutation) widely in you midst (i.e., wish each other frequently for it unties the knots of the heart and promotes mutual affection), and feed the bondsmen of Allah (specially those that are hungry), and be kind to kinsmen, and offer *salah* at night when people are asleep. If you will do so, you will go safely to Heaven." (Tirmizi and Ibn Majah)

Even Giving Food and Drink to Animals That are Hungry or Thirsty is Charity

(٨٧٠/٤٧) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ

غَفِرَ لِمَرْأَةٍ مُؤْمِسَةٍ مَرَّتْ بِكَلْبٍ عَلَى رَأْسِ رَكِيٍّ يَلْهَثُ كَأَنَّهُ يَقْتُلُهُ الْعَطَشُ
فَنَزَعَتْ خُفَّهَا فَأَوْتَقَتْهُ بِخِمَارِهَا فَنَزَعَتْ لَهُ مِنَ الْمَاءِ فَغَفِرَ لَهَا بِذَلِكَ قَبْلَ أَنْ
لَنَا فِي الْبَهَائِمِ أَجْرًا؟ قَالَ فِي كُلِّ ذَاتِ كَبِدٍ رَطْبَةٍ أَجْرٌ (رواه البخارى و مسلم)
(870/47) It is related on the authority of Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that a
corrupt woman was forgiven (her sins) on the act that she
passed by a well and saw that a dog was licking the earth (and it
appeared that) it would die of thirst. (The woman took pity on it
but there was no rope or vessel to draw the water). So, she took
off her leather stock and tied to her covering sheet (worn by
women over the head and the upper part of the body), and (some
how) drew the water from the well by means of it, and gave it to
the dog to drink. She was forgiven for this act of hers. Someone
asked: "Is there Divine recompense even on giving food and
drink to the animals?" 'There is Divine recompense on giving
food and drink to every living creature that can feel (the pangs
of hunger and thirst),' replied the Prophet ﷺ. "Bukhari and Muslim

(٨٧١/٤٨) عَنْ أَنَسٍ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَا مِنْ مُسْلِمٍ
يَغْرِسُ غَرْسًا أَوْ يَزْرَعُ زَرْعًا فَيَأْكُلُ مِنْهُ إِنْسَانٌ أَوْ طَيْرٌ أَوْ بَهِيمَةٌ إِلَّا كَانَ لَهُ
صَدَقَةٌ (رواه البخارى و مسلم)

(871/48) It is reported by Sayyidina Anas رضي الله عنه that the
Messenger of Allah ﷺ said, "If any Muslim plants something
or sows seed from which man, bird or beast eats, it counts as a
Sadaqah for him." (Bukhari and Muslim)

Saving Fellowmen from Annoyance or Inconvenience Gets one to Paradise

(٨٧٢/٤٩) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَرَّ رَجُلٌ
بِغُصْنِ شَجَرَةٍ عَلَى ظَهْرِ طَرِيقٍ فَقَالَ لَأُنَحِّينَ هَذَا عَنْ طَرِيقِ الْمُسْلِمِينَ لَا
يُؤْذِيهِمْ فَأَدْخَلَ الْجَنَّةَ (رواه البخارى و مسلم)

(872/49) It is related by Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that Messenger of
Allah ﷺ said: "A bondsman of Allah was going on a path on
which there was the branch of a tree (which caused
inconvenience to passer-by). The bondsman said to himself: "I

shall cut off the branch and make the path clear so that the servants of Allah had no difficulty.' (He, then, went ahead and cut off the branch), and for this act of his he was sent to Heaven."

(Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: Some acts appear very ordinary but at certain times, they are performed with a feeling of sincerity and godliness that is most pleasing to Allah. There Compassionate One, then, forgives the sins of the bondsmen who perform them and the decision is taken of their entry into Heaven. The incidents related in the two foregoing narratives belong to the same class of deeds.

When Does Charity Fetch Greater Reward?

(٨٧٣/٥٠) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ أَيُّ الصَّدَقَةِ أَكْبَرُ أَجْرًا قَالَ أَنْ تَصَدَّقَ وَأَنْتَ صَحِيحٌ شَحِيحٌ تَخْشَى الْفَقْرَ وَتَأْمُلُ الْغِنَى وَلَا تُنْهَلُ حَتَّى إِذَا بَلَغْتَ الْحُلُقُومَ قُلْتَ لِفُلَانٍ كَذَا وَلِفُلَانٍ كَذَا وَقَدْ كَانَ لِفُلَانٍ

(رواه البخاري ومسلم)

(873/50) Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه narrates that a person asked "Messenger of Allah ﷺ! What charity brings in greater reward?" The Prophet ﷺ replied: "The position of greater reward is that you practise charity when you are in good health and the love for wealth and eagerness to store it up is powerful within you, and in the circumstances that (by spending in the way of God) there is the fear of poverty for you and the desire to be rich is strong in your heart. (To spend one's wealth, in these conditions, for the propitiation of Allah is a proof of true devotion). And let it not be that you keep on procrastinating till the hour of death arrives and life gets drawn to the throat, and, then, you begin to give instructions about your wealth that so much of it should be given to so-and-so and so much to so-and-so when, now, in any case, it will pass from your hands to the hands of so-and-so (i.e., the , descendants)."

(Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: A common weakness with the people is that they are stingy in spending for the sake of Allah as long as they are strong and healthy and death is not staring them in the face. The Devil sows the fear in their hearts that if they gave away in the path of Allah their wealth would decrease and they would become poor.

Hence, they prefer to remain tight-fisted. But when death begins to knock at the door, they think of charity. The Prophet ﷺ in the above saying, has disapproved of this attitude. In the sight of Allah that charity is commendable and worthy of acceptance which is practised when a person is young and in good health and his own future lies ahead of him. He has problems to tackle and responsibilities to shoulder and yet spends freely in the path of Allah, believing whole-heartedly in His Word.

To Spend On One's Dependents Too, is Charity

Everyone spends, according to his means, on the needs of his family but he does not derive the spiritual pleasure from it which is experienced by the devout bodnsmen of Allah on showing generosity to the poor and the destitute for people, generally, do not regard the spending on their dependents an act of virtue but a liability or a matter of natural impulsion. The sacred Prophet ﷺ has, however, taught that one should spend on one's own wife and children and other kinsmen, too, with the intention of seeking the countenance of Allah and earning the reward of the Hereafter. In that case, the money spent on the one's dependents will, also, get deposited, like charity, in the Bank of Hereafter, and, there will be a greater premium on it than on spending on others. This precept of the Prophet ﷺ opens a great avenue of viture and good-doing to us. Whatever we spend now, within proper limits of course, on the needs and welfare of our family will be a kind of charity and deed of moral goodness provided that it is done with the right intnention.

(٨٧٤/٥١) عَنْ أَبِي مَسْعُودٍ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا
اتَّقَى الْمُسْلِمُ نَفَقَةً عَلَى أَهْلِهِ وَهُوَ يَحْتَسِبُهَا كَانَتْ لَهُ صَدَقَةً

(رواه البخارى و مسلم)

(874/51) It is related by Abu Mas'ud Ansari ؓ that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "When a believing bondsman spends on his dependents with the object of earning Divine reward, it will be charity on his part (and deserving of recompense in the judgement of Allah)." (Bukhari and Muslim)

(٨٧٥/٥٢) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ أَيُّ الصَّدَقَةِ أَفْضَلُ؟ قَالَ جُهْدُ الْمِقْلِ وَابْتَدَأَ بِمَنْ تَعُولُ
(رواه ابوداؤد)

(875/52) It is related by Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that he asked Messenger of Allah ﷺ "What is the best (form of) Charity?" "Charity of the highest quality," the Prophet ﷺ explained, "Is what a poor man gives away, for the sake of Allah, out of his hard-earned money; and, first of all, spends on those for whom you are responsible (i.e., wife and children)." (Abu Dawood)

(٨٧٦/٥٣) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ جَاءَ رَجُلٌ إِلَى رَسُولِ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ فَقَالَ عِنْدِي دِينَارٌ قَالَ أَنْفِقْهُ عَلَى نَفْسِكَ قَالَ عِنْدِي آخَرُ قَالَ أَنْفِقْهُ عَلَى وَلَدِكَ قَالَ عِنْدِي آخَرُ قَالَ أَنْفِقْهُ عَلَى أَمْلِكَ قَالَ عِنْدِي آخَرُ قَالَ أَنْفِقْهُ عَلَى خَادِمِكَ قَالَ عِنْدِي آخَرُ قَالَ أَنْتَ أَعْلَمُ.....
(رواه ابوداؤد والنسائي)

(876/53) Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه narrated that a person came to Messenger of Allah ﷺ and said: "I have one dinar. (Tell me where and how should I spend it)." The Prophet ﷺ replied: (The best thing is that) you spend it on your own needs." "I have more for that," said the man. "Then spend it," said the Prophet ﷺ, on the needs of your children." "I have more for that," the man replied. "Then spend it on the needs of your wife," advised the Prophet ﷺ. "I have more for that," was the reply. "then spend it on your slave and attendant," said the Prophet ﷺ. "I have more for that" he replied. The Prophet ﷺ, remarked: "You know better who among your kinsmen is more in want."

(Abu Dawood and Nasai)

Commentary: Perhaps the Prophet ﷺ had judged from the appearance of the enquirer that he, himself, was poor yet wanted to spend the one dinar he had in the path of Allah. He, in the Prophet's view, was not aware that what a truthful Believer spent on his own needs or on the needs of his wife, children and slaves (for whose maintenance he was responsible), also, was charity and a means of propitiating the Allah. The Prophet ﷺ, hence, gave him the advice in that order. The general commandment, too, is that a man should, first fulfil the obligations for which he is personally accountable and, then, go forward.

For the chosen bondsmen of Allah, however, who have attained the station of complete trust in Allah and whose dependents, also, have received an ample share of this supernal wealth it is fitting that they starved themselves and gave away whatever food there was in the house of the needy. This, indeed, was the practice of the Holy Prophet ﷺ and his celebrated Companions رضي الله عنهم.

Superiority of Spending on Kinsmen

(٨٧٧/٥٤) عَنْ سُلَيْمَانَ بْنِ عَامِرٍ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ
الْصَّدَقَةُ عَلَى الْمِسْكِينِ صَدَقَةٌ وَهِيَ عَلَى ذِي الرَّحْمِ ثَتَانِ صَدَقَةٌ وَصِلَةٌ

(رواه احمد والترمذي والنسائي وابن ماجه والدارمي)

(877/54) It is related by Sulayman bin 'Aamir رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "To spend on an unknown needy person, for the sake of God, is simple charity while to spend, for the sake of Allah, on a (needy) near kinsman has two aspects and there are two kinds of reward on it. It is charity as well as showing kindness to relatives (which, in itself, is a virtue of great value)." (Musnad Ahmad, Tirmizi, Nasai Ibn Majah and Daarimi)

(٨٧٨/٥٥) عَنْ زَيْنَبِ امْرَأَةِ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ مَسْعُودٍ قَالَتْ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ تَصَدَّقْنَ يَامَعْشَرَ النِّسَاءِ وَلَوْ مِنْ خُلَيْكُنَّ قَالَتْ فَرَجَعْتُ إِلَى عَبْدِ اللَّهِ فَقُلْتُ إِنَّكَ رَجُلٌ خَفِيفُ ذَاتِ الْيَدِ وَإِنَّ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ قَدْ أَمَرَنَا بِالصَّدَقَةِ فَأَتَيْهِ فَاسْأَلْهُ فَإِنْ كَانَ ذَلِكَ يُجْزِي عَنِّي وَإِلَّا صَرَفْتُهَا إِلَى غَيْرِكُمْ قَالَتْ فَقَالَ لِي عَبْدُ اللَّهِ بَلْ أَتَيْتِ أَنتِ قَالَتْ فَأَنْطَلَقْتُ فَإِذَا امْرَأَةٌ مِنَ الْأَنْصَارِ بِيَابِ رَسُولِ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ حَاجَتِي حَاجَتُهَا قَالَتْ وَكَانَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ قَدْ أَقْبَتِ عَلَيْهِ الْمَهَابَةُ فَقَالَتْ فَخَرَجَ عَلَيْنَا بِلَالٌ فَقُلْنَا لَهُ إِنَّتِ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ فَأَخْبِرْهُ أَنَّ امْرَأَتَيْنِ بِالْبَابِ تَسْأَلَانِيكَ التَّجْزِي الصَّدَقَةَ عَنْهُمَا عَلَى أَرْوَاجِهِمَا وَعَلَى ائْتَامٍ فِي حُجُورِهِمَا وَلَا تُخْبِرُهُ مَنْ نَحْنُ قَالَتْ فَدَخَلَ بِلَالٌ عَلَى رَسُولِ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ فَسَأَلَهُ فَقَالَ لَهُ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَنْ هُمَا قَالَ امْرَأَةٌ مِنَ الْأَنْصَارِ وَزَيْنَبُ فَقَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ أَيُّ الرِّبَابِ

قَالَ امْرَأَةُ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ فَقَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ نَعَمْ لَهُمَا أَجْرَانِ
أَجْرُ الْقَرَابَةِ وَأَجْرُ الصَّدَقَةِ
(رواه البخارى ومسلم)

(877/55) It is related by Zaynab رضى الله عنها, wife of Abdullah bin Mas'ud رضى الله عنه, that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ (in a sermon meant, particualrly, for women) said: "O woman! Send in the way of God even if you have to give out of your ornaments." (Zaynab goes on to relate) "when I heard it from the Messenger of Allah ﷺ, I came to my husband Abdullah bin Mas'ud رضى الله عنه, and said to him: "The Messenger of Allah ﷺ has exhorted us specailly to observe charity, (and I am desirous of attaining the good fortune of sepending for the sake of Allah from what I have), and, you, also, are poor. Now go and enquire from the Prophet ﷺ (whether I will be absolved of the duty of observing charity if I gave it to you). In case it is correct, I will give (of my wealth) to you or else I will spend it on other needy and indigent people." She relates "Abdullah bin Mas'ud رضى الله عنه asked me enquire from the Prophet ﷺ myself. So, I, went to him, and, on reaching there, saw that an Ansar woman was standing at his door and her need, too, was the same as mine (i.e., she too, had come to make a similar enquiry). Meanwhile, (the Prophet's ﷺ special attendant and *Muazzin*) Bilal رضى الله عنه came out and we (both) said to him, 'Please inform the Prophet ﷺ that two women are waiting at his door and they want to know from him will the duty of charity be fulfilled if they spent (their wealth) on their needy husbands and the orphans that were being brought up in their arms. But do not tell the Prophet ﷺ who we are.' Bilal رضى الله عنه, then, went to the Prophet ﷺ and enquired from him on their behalf. 'Who the two women are?' Asked the Prophet ﷺ. Bilal replied, 'One of them is an Ansar woman and the other is Zaynab.' 'Which Zaynab?' the Prophet ﷺ enquired. 'The wife of Abdullah bin Mas'ud رضى الله عنه, said Bilal رضى الله عنه. 'Yes (the obligation of charity will be fulfilled, the Prophet ﷺ observed. "What is more, they will get a double reward: one on charity and the other on showing kindness to kinsmen." (Bukhari and Muslim)

(٨٧٩/٥٦) عَنْ أَنَسٍ قَالَ كَانَ أَبُو طَلْحَةَ أَكْثَرَ الْأَنْصَارِ بِالْمَدِينَةِ مَالًا مِنْ نَحْلِ
وَكَانَ أَحَبَّ أَمْوَالِهِ إِلَيْهِ بَيْرُ حَاءٍ وَكَانَتْ مُسْتَقْبَلَةَ الْمَسْجِدِ وَكَانَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ

صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَدْخُلُهَا وَيَشْرَبُ مِنْ مَاءٍ فِيهَا طَيِّبٍ قَالَ أَنَسٌ فَلَمَّا نَزَلَتْ هَذِهِ الْآيَةُ لَنْ تَنَالُوا الْبِرَّ حَتَّى تُنْفِقُوا مِمَّا تُحِبُّونَ قَامَ أَبُو طَلْحَةَ إِلَى رَسُولِ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ فَقَالَ يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ إِنَّ اللَّهَ تَعَالَى يَقُولُ لَنْ تَنَالُوا الْبِرَّ حَتَّى تُنْفِقُوا مِمَّا تُحِبُّونَ وَإِنْ أَحَبَّ مَالِي إِلَى بَيْرُحَاءَ وَإِنَّهَا صَدَقَةٌ لِلَّهِ تَعَالَى أَرَجُو بِرَهَا وَذُخْرَهَا عِنْدَ اللَّهِ فَضَعَهَا يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ حَيْثُ أَذَاكَ اللَّهُ فَقَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ بَخْ بَخْ ذَالِكَ مَالٌ رَابِحٌ وَقَدْ سَمِعْتُ مَا قُلْتَ وَإِنِّي أَرَى أَنْ تَجْعَلَهَا فِي الْأَقْرَبِينَ فَقَالَ أَبُو طَلْحَةَ أَفْعَلُ يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ فَقَسَمَهَا أَبُو طَلْحَةَ فِي أَقَارِبِهِ وَبَنِي عَمِّهِ (رواه البخارى ومسلم)

(879/56) Sayyidina Anas رضي الله عنه related to us "as far as orchards of dates were concerned, Abu Talha رضي الله عنه was the wealthiest among the Ansars of Madina, and out of all his orchards and (other property), the most beloved was *Bairuha'a*¹ which was situated in front of the Prophet's ﷺ Mosque and the Prophet ﷺ often used to go to it and drink its pleasant water." Anas رضي الله عنه added that "when the verse of the Qur'an was revealed:

لَنْ تَنَالُوا الْبِرَّ حَتَّى تُنْفِقُوا مِمَّا تُحِبُّونَ (آل عمران ٩٢:٣)

You will not attain unto piety until you spend of that which you love. (Aal-e-Imran 3:92)

Abu Talha رضي الله عنه went to the Prophet ﷺ and said that 'Allah's command is that you will not attain unto piety until you spend of that which you love and *Bairuha'a* is the most dearly loved of all my property, so I will receive its reward in the Hereafter and it will be a provision for me. So, decide about it as Allah may put in your mind (i.e., spend it where it seems most appropriate to you)." The Prophet ﷺ observed, 'Well done! It is a most useful property. I have heard what you said (and understood your intention). I think it will be proper for you to distribute it to your needy near kinsmen.' Abu Talha رضي الله عنه replied, 'O Messenger of Allah ﷺ! I shall do so.' He, then shared out the grove among his near relatives and first cousins."

(Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: In some other versions of the same Tradition it is stated in detail that Abu Talha رضي الله عنه had distributed the orchard,

①. It was the name of Abu Talha's رضي الله عنه most valuable orchard.

according to the Prophet's ﷺ directive, among the following of his close relatives: Ubayy bin Ka'ab, Hassan bin Thabit, Shaddad bin Aus and Nabeet bin Jabir ؓ. How valuable the orchard was can be imagined from the fact that, later on, Sayyidina Mu'awiya ؓ purchased only Hassan bin Thabit's share for one lakh *dirhams*.

Note: Since a man mostly lives in close association with his relatives and has to deal with them often and in various ways, misunderstandings and quarrels, too, generally, arise among people belonging to the same family which not only make life a curse but also spoils the future existence. If the Prophet's ﷺ advice given above is acted upon and people come to regard the spending of wealth of kinsmen, an act of moral goodness and means to seeking the good pleasure of Allah, they can save themselves from much anxiety and distress in this world as well as the next.

Charity on Behalf of Deceased

Charity means to do good to the bondsmen of the Lord with the intention of propitiating Him and in the hope that, in return, one will attain His favour. It, undoubtedly, is a most effective way of earning the mercy and benevolence of Allah. The Prophet ﷺ has, further, taught, that just as a man can expect Divine reward and recompense by giving alms, on behalf of himself, so, also, will Allah reward and recompense a dead person if alms are given on his behalf by anyone. Thus, apart from supplication for forgiveness, another way to serve those who are dead and to do a favour to them is to cause the Divine reward to be carried or conveyed to them by giving alms and performing other virtuous deeds in their name.

(٨٨٠/٥٧) عَنْ عَائِشَةَ قَالَتْ إِنَّ رَجُلًا قَالَ لِلنَّبِيِّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِنَّ أُمِّي أَفْتَلَتْ نَفْسَهَا وَأَخْظَنَهَا لَوْ تَكَلَّمْتُ تَصَدَّقْتُ فَهَلْ لَهَا أَجْرٌ إِنْ تَصَدَّقْتُ عَنْهَا؟ قَالَ نَعَمْ.....
(رواه البخاري ومسلم)

(880/57) It is related by Sayyidah Ayshah رضى الله عنها that a person came to the Prophet ﷺ and said, 'My mother passed away suddenly and I have a feeling that had she been able to speak at the time of her death, she would, certainly, have given away something in charity. So, if I give alms now on her behalf,

will the reward on it reach her?" "Yes," replied the Prophet ﷺ. It will reach her." (Bukhari and Muslim)

(٨٨١/٥٨) عَنْ ابْنِ عَبَّاسٍ أَنَّ سَعْدَ بْنَ عُبَادَةَ تُوَفِّيَتْ أُمُّهُ وَهُوَ غَائِبٌ عَنْهَا فَقَالَ يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ إِنَّ أُمِّي تُوَفِّيَتْ وَأَنَا غَائِبٌ عَنْهَا أَيْنَفَعُهَا شَيْءٌ إِنْ تَصَدَّقْتُ بِهَا عَنْهَا قَالَ نَعَمْ قَالَ فَإِنِّي أَشْهَدُكَ أَنَّ حَائِطِي الْمِخْرَافَ صَدَقَةٌ عَلَيْهَا

(رواه البخاري)

(881/58) Abudllah bin Abbas ؓ narrated that the mother of Sa'd bin Ubadah ؓ died at a time when he was not present. (He had gone on a military expedition with the Prophet ﷺ). On his return, he said to the Prophet ﷺ that "my mother died during my absence. If I, now, give alms on her behalf, will it be beneficial to her (i.e., will the Divine recompense on it reach her)." The Prophet ﷺ replied, "Yes, it will reach her." "Then I make you a witness," said Sa'd bin Ubadah ؓ, "that I give away my orchard called *Mekhraf* as charity in the name of my deceased mother." (Bukhari)

(٨٨٢/٥٩) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ جَاءَ رَجُلٌ إِلَى النَّبِيِّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ فَقَالَ إِنَّ أَبِي مَاتَ وَتَرَكَ مَالًا وَلَمْ يُوصِ فَهَلْ يُكَفِّرُ عَنْهُ إِنْ تَصَدَّقْتُ عَنْهُ؟ قَالَ نَعَمْ.....

(رواه ابن جرير في تهذيب الآثار)

(882/59) It is related on the authority of Abu Hurayrah ؓ that a person came to the Prophet ﷺ and said: "My father has died and he had left behind some property and made no will (regarding charity etc). So, if I give (something) in charity on his behalf, will it be an atonement for him and a source of forgiveness and deliverance?" "Yes", replied the Prophet ﷺ. "(Such is the confident expectation from the Lord)." (Ibn Jareer)

(٨٨٣/٦٠) عَنْ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ عَمْرٍو بْنِ الْعَاصِ أَنَّ الْعَاصِ بْنَ وَائِلٍ نَذَرَ فِي الْجَاهِلِيَّةِ أَنْ يُنَحْرِمَ مِائَةَ بُذْنَةٍ وَأَنَّ هِشَامَ بْنَ الْعَاصِ نَحَرَ حِصَّتَهُ خَمْسِينَ وَأَنَّ عَمْرًا سَأَلَ النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ عَنْ ذَلِكَ فَقَالَ أَمَا أَبُوكَ لَوْ أَقْرَ بِالتَّوْحِيدِ لَصُمْتُ وَتَصَدَّقْتُ عَنْهُ نَفْعَهُ ذَلِكَ.....

(رواه احمد)

(883/60) It is related by Abdullah bin 'Amr bin al-'Aas ؓ that

his grand father, al-Aas bin Waail, had vowed to offer a sacrifice of one hundred camels, during the days of Ignorance, (which he could not fulfil). So, one of his sons, Hisham bin al-Aas, sacrificed 50 camels in fulfilment of his father's vow while the other son, 'Amr bin al-Aas, (who, fortunately, had embraced Islam), sought the Prophet's advice. The Prophet ﷺ said that "had your father accepted the Faith and, then, you had observed fasting and charity on his behalf, it would have been beneficial to him (and the reward on it would have reached him. But since he died in the state of apostacy and Polytheism, none of your deeds can do any good to him now)." (Musnad Ahmad)

Commentary: It is distinctly stated in these and many other Traditions that if a virtuous deed like charity and almsgiving is performed on behalf of a deceased person and the reward on it is gifted to him, it will do good to him and he will receive the Divine recompense. In other words, as one can, in this world, be of help to a person by spending his money on him and he can profit from it, in the same way if a believingman wants to do a favour and be of service to his deceased father or any other Muslim by giving alms in his name, he is free to do so. The door for it is open from the side of Allah.

We can, thus, serve our parents and other relatives and friends and benefactors even after their death and send presents to them.

Some people of our time who do not believe in *Hadith* as part of *Shari'ah* do not agree with this view.

قال الله تعالى

يَا أَيُّهَا الَّذِينَ آمَنُوا كُتِبَ عَلَيْكُمُ الصِّيَامُ كَمَا
كُتِبَ عَلَى الَّذِينَ مِن قَبْلِكُمْ لَعَلَّكُمْ تَتَّقُونَ O
(البقرة ٢: ١٨٣)

SIGNIFICANCE OF FASTING

Allah has made man a combination of body and soul, of animality and spirituality. In his nature are present all the physical and carnal propensities that are peculiar to animals yet there, also, dwells within him the luminous element of spirituality which is the characteristic quality of the supernal beings of Celestial World, the angels. The success and salvation of man depends upon the subordination of the animal part of his nature to the heavenly part and the keeping of his sensual instincts and desires within proper limits. Such a thing can be possible only when the corporeal aspect of the human personality renders habitual obedience to the celestial aspect instead of pulling against it. The main aim of Fasting is to make the carnal urges and inclinations subservient to the Divine commandments and spiritual ideals, and since it, is also, the chief end and object of Messengership and the *Shari'ah* Fasting was prescribed in all the earlier Canonic Laws as well. While giving the command of Fasting to the Muslims the Qur'an declares:

O ye who believe! Fasting is prescribed for you, even as it was prescribed for those before you, that ye may ward off (evil).
(al-Baqarah 2:183)

يَا أَيُّهَا الَّذِينَ آمَنُوا كُتِبَ عَلَيْكُمُ
الصِّيَامُ كَمَا كُتِبَ عَلَى الَّذِينَ مِن
قَبْلِكُمْ لَعَلَّكُمْ تَتَّقُونَ

(البقره. ۲: ۱۸۳)

Be that as it may, as Fasting is most efficacious for the disciplining of the self and a special means to the promotion of strength and ability to subordinate the carnal appetites to the Divine injunctions and spiritual values, it had, also been enjoined upon all the former religious communities, though there was some difference in the duration etc., of the fasts in view of their individual needs and circumstances. For the last *Ummah*, i.e., the Muslims, Fasting for a month in the year and from dawn to sunset

has been prescribed which, definitely, is the most appropriate, moderate and reasonable arrangement with reference to the aforementioned objects in the Current Age. The aim of moral and spiritual disciplining and inculcation of the virtue of self-restraint could not be realised had it been less than that. If, on the other hand, the time and duration of Fasting were longer, as for example food and drink were permitted only at the break of day or fasting was ordered for two or three months in succession in a year, it would have been unendurable for most of the people, and, also, injurious to health.

Again, Allah has prescribed Fasting in the month in which the Qur'an was revealed and in which there, also, has been concealed *Lailatul Qadr* (Night of Power) which is better than a thousand months in spiritual worth and blessedness. No other month could, obviously, be more suited for it. In this month, apart from Fasting during the day, an extraordinary institution of worship has, also, been established which is functioning in the *Ummah* in the form of *Taraweeh*¹ the joining together of the fasts of the day and *Taraweeh* in the night has resulted in an increase in the effulgence of the month of Ramadan which is felt by everyone in proportion to his inner awareness and perception.

Virtues of Ramadan

(٨٨٤/١) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا دَخَلَ

رَمَضَانَ فَتُحْتَفَتُ أَبْوَابُ الْجَنَّةِ وَتُغْلَقُ أَبْوَابُ جَهَنَّمَ وَتُسَلِّطُ الشَّيَاطِينُ وَفِي

رَوَايَةِ أَبْوَابِ الرَّحْمَةِ: (رواه البخاري ومسلم)

(884/1) It is related by Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "When the month of Ramadan² comes, the Gates of Heaven are thrown open, and the Gates of Hell are shut, and the devils are put behind the bars." (In another report, the "Gates of Mercy" are mentioned in place of the "Gates of Heaven."

(Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: Commenting on this Tradition, Shah Waliullah

رحمة الله عليه remarks that as the devout bondsmen apply themselves

①. Denoting extra prayers offered by Muslims in Ramadan in the night.

②. The name of the ninth Islamic month during which the Muslims are required to observe fasting from the morning dawn till the setting of the sun.

to worship and good-doing during the month of *Ramadan* and spend their days in God-remembrance and recitation of the Qur'an while Fasting, and a major part of their nights in *Taraweeh* and *Tahajjud*, supplication and repentance, under the influence of their high spiritually and devotional exertions the hearts of the common Muslims, too, become more inclined towards prayer and piety and they, on the whole, succeed in abstaining from good many sins. Owing to the generations of the atmosphere worship and virtue in the Islamic circles, people who are not wholly disregarding of transcendental truths develop a fondness for things that are pleasing to Allah and an aversion for acts that are repugnant to Him. Moreover, in this blessed month the recompense on even smaller acts of moral goodness is made much greater by God than on other days. In consequence of all this, the gates of Paradise are opened and of Hell are closed for such people and the devils are not left free to tempt and mislead them.

It would be clear that all the three things the throwing open of the gates of Heaven, the shutting up of the gates of Hell and binding of the devils in chains are in respect only of the bondsmen who feel disposed towards good-doing in the month of *Ramadan*, and out of the keenness to partake of its blessings engage themselves enthusiastically in worship and other religious duties. As for the apostates, the negligent and the heedless who care little for Divine injunctions and produce no change in their daily lives at the advent of Ramadan, these tidings do not apply to them. When they have opted out, of their own accord, for the path of error and omission willingly to following Satan and doing his bidding there is nothing for them except disappointment with God as well.

(٨٨٥/٢) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا كَانَ
أَوَّلُ لَيْلَةٍ مِنْ شَهْرِ رَمَضَانَ صُفِّدَتِ الشَّيَاطِينُ وَمَرَدَةُ الْجِنِّ وَغُلِقَتِ أَبْوَابُ
النَّارِ فَلَمْ يُفْتَحْ مِنْهَا بَابٌ وَفُتِحَتْ أَبْوَابُ الْجَنَّةِ فَلَمْ يُغْلَقْ مِنْهَا بَابٌ وَيُنَادِي
مُنَادٍ يَا بَاغِيَ الْخَيْرِ أَقْبِلْ وَيَا بَاغِيَ الشَّرِّ أَقْصِرْ وَلِلَّهِ عِتَقَاءُ مِنَ النَّارِ وَذَالِكَ
كُلُّ لَيْلَةٍ
(رواه الترمذی و ابن ماجه)

(885/2) It is related by Abu Hurayrah رضی اللہ عنہ that the Messenger of

Allah ﷻ said: "When the first night of the month of *Ramadan* (comes), the devils and the defiant jinn are bound in chains, and all the Gates of Hell are closed and none of them remains open, and all the Gates of Heaven are thrown open and none of them remains closed, and the heavenly herald announces, 'O seeker of goodness and virtue! Halt, and do not come forward, ' and a large number of (sinning) bondsmen are released from Hell at the Command of Allah (i.e., decision of forgiveness and deliverance is taken for them), and all this takes place on every night of Ramadan." (Tirmizi and Ibn Majah)

Commentary: the subject-matter of the first part of the above Tradition is the same as that of the preceding one. As for the announcement by the herald of the unseen world which is mentioned at the end of it, though we do not and cannot hear it, we see the effect and manifestation of it with our own eyes in the present world. In *Ramadan*, the inclination among the Believers towards good and virtuous deeds, generally, grows stronger to the extent that many heedless and non-conforming Muslims, also, somewhat change their way. This, we believe, is result and outcome of the Divine herald's proclamation.

(٨٨٦/٣) عَنْ ابْنِ عَبَّاسٍ قَالَ كَانَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ أَجْوَدَ النَّاسِ بِالْخَيْرِ وَكَانَ أَجْوَدَ مَا يَكُونُ فِي رَمَضَانَ كَانَ جِبْرِيلُ يَلْقَاهُ كُلَّ لَيْلَةٍ فِي رَمَضَانَ يَعْرِضُ عَلَيْهِ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ الْقُرْآنَ فَإِذَا لَقِيَهِ جِبْرِيلُ كَانَ أَجْوَدَ بِالْخَيْرِ مِنَ الرِّيحِ الْمُرْسَلَةِ..... (رواه البخاري ومسلم)

(886/3) Abdullah bin Abbas ؓ narrates that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ was superior to all the men in generosity and the doing of good to the people in general, but in the month of Ramadan his benevolence knew no bounds. In *Ramadan*, *Jibril* (عليه السلام) came to him every night and the Prophet ﷺ recited the Qur'an to him. During those days the Prophet ﷺ appeared to be faster than the wind in generosity and benevolence." (Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: It shows that *Ramadan* was the spring season of the year for the Prophet ﷺ and a special period of joy and of growth in the attributes of compassion and love for mankind.

A Sermon of the Prophet ﷺ At The Arrival of *Ramadan*

(٨٨٧/٤) عَنْ سَلْمَانَ الْفَارِسِيِّ قَالَ خَطَبَنَا رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ
أَخِيرَ يَوْمٍ مِّنْ شَعْبَانَ فَقَالَ يَا أَيُّهَا النَّاسُ قَدْ أَظْلَكُكُمْ شَهْرٌ عَظِيمٌ شَهْرٌ مُّبَارَكٌ
شَهْرٌ فِيهِ لَيْلَةٌ خَيْرٌ مِنْ أَلْفِ شَهْرٍ جَعَلَ اللَّهُ صِيَامَهُ فَرِيضَةً وَقِيَامَ لَيْلِهِ تَطَوُّعًا مَنْ
تَقَرَّبَ فِيهِ بِخَصْلَةٍ مِنَ الْخَيْرِ كَانَ كَمَنْ أَذَى فَرِيضَةً فِيمَا سِوَاهُ وَمَنْ أَذَى
فَرِيضَةً فِيهِ كَانَ كَمَنْ أَذَى سَبْعِينَ فَرِيضَةً فِيمَا سِوَاهُ وَهُوَ شَهْرُ الصَّبْرِ وَالصَّبْرُ
ثَوَابُهُ الْجَنَّةُ وَشَهْرُ الْمَوَاسَاةِ وَشَهْرٌ يُزَادُ فِيهِ رِزْقُ الْمُؤْمِنِ مَنْ فَطَرَ فِيهِ صَائِمًا
كَانَ لَهُ مَغْفِرَةٌ لِّذُنُوبِهِ وَعِتْقٌ رَّقَبَتِهِ مِنَ النَّارِ وَكَانَ لَهُ مِثْلُ أَجْرِهِ مِنْ غَيْرِ أَنْ
يُنْقَضَ مِنْ أَجْرِهِ شَيْءٌ قُلْنَا يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ لَيْسَ كُلُّنَا يَجِدُ مَا يُفْطِرُ بِهِ الصَّائِمَ
فَقَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يُعْطَى اللَّهُ هَذَا الثَّوَابَ مَنْ فَطَرَ صَائِمًا
عَلَى مَدَقَّةِ لَبَنٍ أَوْ شُرْبَةِ مِنْ مَاءٍ وَمَنْ أَشْبَعَ صَائِمًا سَقَاهُ اللَّهُ مِنْ حَوْضِي شَرْبَةٍ
لَا يَظْمَأُ حَتَّى يَدْخُلَ الْجَنَّةَ وَهُوَ شَهْرٌ أَوَّلُهُ رَحْمَةٌ وَأَوْسَطُهُ مَغْفِرَةٌ وَآخِرُهُ عِتْقٌ
مِّنَ النَّارِ وَمَنْ خَفَّفَ عَنْ مَمْلُوكِهِ فِيهِ غَفَرَ اللَّهُ لَهُ وَاعْتَقَهُ مِنَ النَّارِ

(رواه البيهقي في شعب الإيمان)

(887/4) Salman Farsi رضي الله عنه related to us "The Messenger of Allah ﷺ delivered a sermon on the last day of the month of *Sha'ban*¹. He said: "O people! A blessed month is casting its shadow on you: a night of this blessed month (the Night of Power) is better than a thousand months; God has prescribed the fasts of this month and ordered as supererogatory worship the standing up in His presence (i.e., the offering up of *Taraweeh Salah*) during its nights (on which there is a great reward). Whoever will offer, in it, a non-obligatory (i.e., *Sunnah* or *Nafl*) prayer with the object of seeking the countenance of Allah, will get a reward identical in value of the reward of a Fard (i.e., obligatory) prayer on the other days of the year, and the reward on the observance of an obligatory duty, in it, is equal in value to the fulfilment of seventy obligatory duties in the other days of the year. It is the month of patient perseverance and the reward on patient perseverance is Paradise, and it is the month of kindness and

①. The eighth month of the Islamic year, just preceding Ramadan which is the ninth

compassion. It is the month in which the sustenance of the faithful bondsman is increased. Whoever will get invite a person who is fasting to break the fast with him will the same reward as the one who was fasting and there will be no reduction in his reward either." It was enquired from the Prophet ﷺ 'Everyone of us does not have the means to ask (people) to break the fast with him. (So, will he remain deprived of the great reward?)' The Prophet ﷺ replied, 'God will give the reward to him (also) who will have a person who is fasting break the fast with a little milk or even a draught of water.' (Continuing the Prophet observed): 'And whoever will feed a fasting person with a full meal (at the time of breaking the fast, God will satiate him in such a manner from my Pond (i.e., *Kausar*) that, after it, he will not feel thirsty until he has reached Heaven. (After it, the Prophet ﷺ said) : The first part of this blessed month is Mercy, the second part is Forgiveness, and the last part is Freedom from the Fire of Hell.' (After it, the Prophet ﷺ said) : 'Whoever will make a reduction in the work of his slave or servant, Allah will forgive him and grant him freedom from Hell.' (Baihaqi)

Commentary: The purport of the above Tradition is clear. Yet we will offer a few comments on some of the points here.

(i) The first and the greatest virtue of the month of *Ramadan* is that there occurs during it a night which is better than not a thousand nights but thousand months. It has, also, been mentioned in surah *Al-Qadr* of the Qur'an. In fact, the whole of the surah deals with the auspiciousness of splendour of this night which should be enough to appreciate its worth and importance.

Approximately, one thousand months contain thirty thousand nights. The superiority of the Night of Power to a thousand months should, therefore, be taken to mean that the devotees who are keenly desirous to earn the good Graces of the Lord and His propinquity can make as much progress in one night as is thousand of the nights.

Just as in the material world we see that by a jet-propelled aeroplane one can, now-a-days, cover as much distance in a day, or even an hour, as was done in a hundred years in the past, the rate of advance of the earnest seekers of the countenance of the Lord, too, is increased so greatly in the Night of Power that they can attain in

it what is normally possible in hundred of months.

The Prophet's ~~remark~~ remark that if a person will seek the propitiation of God, in the month of *Ramadan*, by performing a supererogatory act, it will be treated as equal in recompense to the fulfilment of an obligatory duty in the other days of the year and if he will fulfil an obligatory duty during it, it will be treated as equal in recompense to the fulfilment of seventy obligatory duties during the rest of the year should be seen in the same light. Thus, while the superiority of the Night of Power is peculiar to a particular night of *Ramadan*, the fetching of seventy times of reward by a virtuous act is the characteristic attribute of every day and night of the blessed month.

(ii) *Ramadan* has been described in the sermon quoted above as the month of fortitude and compassion. In the Islamic usage 'fortitude' signifies the suppression of sensual desires and urges and endurance of painful and unpleasant things for the sake of earning the good pleasure of God. This is what Fasting stands for, from the beginning to the end. In the same way, while fasting the bondsman has an experience of the rigours of starvation, and from it, he can learn to feel for and sympathise with those who are forced by their circumstances to go hungry.

(iii) It also tells that, in this month, the provision of the truthful bondsmen is augmented. the experience of every fasting Believer is that he gets more and better to eat and drink during *Ramadan* than in the other eleven months of the year. In whatever way or through whatever course this increase may take place in this world of cause and effect, its by the Command of Allah in any case.

(iv) At the end of the sermon it is said that the first part of the month of *Ramadan* is Mercy, the second is Forgiveness and the third is the period of Freedom from the Fire of Hell.

The most satisfactory explanation of it, in our view, is that there can be three kinds of bondsmen who avail themselves of the boon and blessings of *Ramadan*. Firstly, the pious souls who habitually take care to commit a sin, and if they ever fall into error, they immediately make amends for it through sincere repentance. On these bondsmen the Mercy of the Lord begins to descend from the very first night of *Ramadan*. Secondly, those who are not so pure

in heart but are not altogether bereft of the fear of God as well. When such bondsmen improve their state and make themselves deserving of Mercy and Forgiveness through fasting, repentance and other virtuous acts during the first part of *Ramadan*, the decision for their forgiveness is taken in the second part of the month. Thirdly those who have been unjust and made themselves wholly worthy of Hell through their transgression and misconduct. When even they atone somewhat for their sinfulness through fasting and repentance along with the common Muslims during the first and second parts of *Ramadan*, God decides upon their freedom from Hell during the last one-third of the month when the Divine benevolence is at its peak.

Worth and Recompense

(٨٨٨/٥) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ كُلُّ عَمَلٍ ابْنِ آدَمَ يُضَاعَفُ الْحَسَنَةُ بِعَشْرِ أَمْثَالِهَا إِلَى سَبْعِمِائَةٍ ضِعْفٍ قَالَ اللَّهُ تَعَالَى إِلَّا الصَّوْمَ فَإِنَّهُ لِي وَأَنَا أَجْزَى بِهِ يَدْعُ شَهْوَتَهُ وَطَعَامَهُ مِنْ أَجَلِي لِلصَّائِمِ فَرْحَتَانِ فَرْحَةٌ عِنْدَ فِطْرِهِ وَفَرْحَةٌ عِنْدَ لِقَاءِ رَبِّهِ وَلِخَلُوفٍ فِيهِ الصَّائِمِ أَطْيَبُ عِنْدَ اللَّهِ مِنْ رِيحِ الْمِسْكِ وَالصَّيَّامُ جَنَّةٌ وَإِذَا كَانَ يَوْمُ صَوْمِ أَحَدِكُمْ فَلَا يَرْفُثْ وَلَا يَضْحَكُ فَإِنْ سَاءَ أَحَدٌ أَوْ قَاتَلَهُ فَلْيَقُلْ إِنِّي امْرَأَةٌ صَائِمَةٌ (رواه البخاري ومسلم)

(888/5) It is related by Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "The reward on every virtuous deed is increased from ten to seven hundred times (i.e., the general principle of Divine recompense on all the good deeds of the Muslims is that on every good deed of theirs the reward will, at least, be ten times as compared to the earlier communities, and, sometimes, even more, so much so that some chosen bondsmen will receive seven hundred times of reward of their virtuous acts), but the standing Command of Allah (about Fasting) is that the fast is an exception. It is a special gift of the bondsman for Me and I shall reward him directly for it (as I please). The bondsman forgoes food and drink solely for My sake. (I shall, therefore, recompense him for the sacrifice according to My pleasure).

"There are two moments of special joy for the man who fasts. One is when he breaks the fast, and this he experiences in his

earthly existence, and the other will be in the Hereafter when he will be presented before the Lord; and I swear that the bad odour emanating from the mouth of a person who is fasting (which is, generally, due to an empty stomach) is more pleasant in the judgement of God than the sweet smell of musk; and fast is a shield (for protection, in this world, against the assaults of the Devil, and, in the Hereafter, against the Fire of Hell; and when anyone of you keeps a fast, he must not utter indecent word nor engage in a noisy scene, and were anyone to quarrel with him and call him names he should simply say 'I am keeping fast.'

(Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: The exhortation at the end of the Tradition about abstaining from falsehood and backbiting and wrangling and uttering a foul or profane word makes it clear that the exclusive blessings of Fasting are only for those who, in addition to shunning food and drink and staying away from sexual gratification, avoid all dirty and undesirable things. In another Tradition, which will follow soon, it is stated that Allah has no need for him to do hunger and thirst who fasts but does not refrain from evil-doing

(٨٨٩/٦) عَنْ سَهْلِ بْنِ سَعْدٍ قَالَ إِنَّ فِي الْجَنَّةِ بَابًا يُقَالُ لَهُ الرِّيَّانُ يَدْخُلُ مِنْهُ الصَّائِمُونَ يَوْمَ الْقِيَمَةِ لَا يَدْخُلُ مِنْهُ أَحَدٌ غَيْرُهُمْ يُقَالُ أَيُّنَ الصَّائِمُونَ؟ فَيَقُومُونَ لَا يَدْخُلُ مِنْهُ أَحَدٌ غَيْرُهُمْ فَإِذَا دَخَلُوا أُغْلِقَ فَلَمْ يَدْخُلْ مِنْهُ أَحَدٌ

(رواه البخاري و مسلم)

(889/6) It is related on the authority of Sahl bin Sa'd رضي الله عنه that the Prophet ﷺ said: "There is a special Gate of Paradise which is known as *Rayyan* (and) only those who observe Fasting will be allowed to enter through it on the Day of Resurrection. On that Day it will be called aloud, 'Where are the bondsmen who used to fast for the sake of Allah and endure the pangs of hunger and thirst?' Such of the bondsmen will respond to the call and save them no one will be permitted to enter by this Gate. When they have entered Paradise through this Gate, it will be shut, (and), no one else will be able to enter by it."

(Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: Thirst is the most severe hardship one has to bear during a fast and the greatest sacrifice a man who is Fasting makes is that he remains thirsty. Complete satisfaction of thirst should, as

such, form the most prominent part of the reward on Fasting. Hence, the distinguishing quality of the gate that has been set apart for the entry of those who fast is satiety. *Rayyan*, literally, mens satiation.

(٨٩٠/٧) عَنْ أَبِي أُمَامَةَ قَالَ قُلْتُ يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ مُرْنِي بِأَمْرٍ يَنْفَعَنِي اللَّهُ بِهِ قَالَ

عَلَيْكَ بِالصَّوْمِ فَإِنَّهُ لَا مِثْلَ لَهُ.....
(رواه النسائي)

(890/7) Abu Umamah رضي الله عنه narrated I said to the Prophet ﷺ, "Please command me to perform an act from which God may give me profit." 'Keep fast,' replied the Prophet. 'There is nothing like it.'
(Nasai)

Commentary: Though it is common to all virtuous deeds like Regular Worship, Fasting, Charity, *Hajj* and service to mankind that these are the means to the propitiation of Allah, they also possess some individual properties which distinguish them from each other. On that basis it can be said about each of them that it is incomparable; no deed two deeds are alike. For instance where the disciplining of the self is concerned it can be said that nothing can equal Fasting. Thus, the Prophet's ﷺ remark about Fasting that no is like it, perhaps, shows that in Abu Umamah's own circumstances Fasting was most beneficial.

Fasting and Taraweeh

(٨٩١/٨) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَنْ صَامَ

رَمَضَانَ إِيْمَانًا وَإِحْتِسَابًا غُفِرَ لَهُ مَا تَقَدَّمَ مِنْ ذَنْبِهِ وَمَنْ قَامَ رَمَضَانَ إِيْمَانًا

وَإِحْتِسَابًا غُفِرَ لَهُ مَا تَقَدَّمَ مِنْ ذَنْبِهِ وَمَنْ قَامَ لَيْلَةَ الْقَدْرِ إِيْمَانًا وَإِحْتِسَابًا غُفِرَ لَهُ مَا

تَقَدَّمَ مِنْ ذَنْبِهِ
(رواه البخارى ومسلم)

(891/8) It is related on the authority of Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "All the previous sins of the bondsmen will be forgiven who will keep the fasts of *Ramadan* with *Iman* and *Ihtisab* (i.e., with faith in Allah and confident expectation of Divine recompense) and, in the same way, all the previous sins of the bondsman will be forgiven who will offer *Nawafil*¹ (i.e. *Taraweeh* and *Tahajjud*) in the nights of

Ramadan with Iman and Ihtisab; and in the same way, all the previous sins of the bondsman will be forgiven who will offer in Laylatul Qadr with Iman and Ihtisab." (Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: The fasts of *Ramadan* and the *Nawafil* of its nights, particularly *Laylatul-Qadr*, are an unfailing source of the remission of previous sins provided that the fasts and *Nawafil* are observed with "*Iman*" and "*Ihtisab*" which are typically religious terms and signify that whenever a good act is performed it should be motivated by no other thought or sentiment than faith in Allah and the Prophet and in their assurance and warnings and in the hope of the Divine reward promised on it. It is through *Iman* and *Ihtisab* that the link is forged between our deeds and the Almighty. The two attributes are the life and soul of our entire conduct, of all our doings. Without them, even what appear to be our greatest acts are hollow from within, and, God forbid, will avail us nothing on the Day of Requital. With *Iman* and *Ihtisab*, on the contrary, a single deed can be so precious in the sight of Allah that sins of many a long year are forgiven by it.

Intercession by Fast and The Qur'an

(٨٩٢/٩) عَنْ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ عَمْرٍو أَنَّ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ قَالَ الصَّيَامُ وَالْقُرْآنُ يَشْفَعَانِ لِلْعَبْدِ يَقُولُ الصَّيَامُ أَيْ رَبِّ إِنِّي مَنَعْتُهُ الطَّعَامَ وَالشَّهَوَاتِ بِالنَّهَارِ فَشَفَعْنِي فِيهِ وَيَقُولُ الْقُرْآنُ مَنَعْتُهُ النَّوْمَ بِاللَّيْلِ فَشَفَعْنِي فِيهِ فَيُشَفَّعَانِ.....
(رواه البيهقي في شعب الإيمان)

(892/9) It is related on the authority of Abdullah bin 'Amr ؓ that he Prophet ﷺ said: 'The fast and the Qur'an will, both, plead on behalf of the bondsman (who will keep fast in the day and recite or listen attentively to the recital of the Qur'an in the night, standing in the presence of Allah). The fast will say: 'My Lord! I had held him back from food, drink and sexual satisfaction. Accept my intercession for him today (and treat him with mercy and forgiveness).' And the Qur'an will say: "I had held him back from taking rest and sleeping in the night. O God! Accept my intercession for him today (and treat him with mercy and forgiveness). The intercession of both the fast and the Qur'an will be accepted for the bondsman and he will be treated

with exceptional kindness."

(Baihaqi)

Commentary: How very fortunate are the slaves of Allah for whom there will be such intercession! May Allah include us among them!

Irreparable Loss

(٨٩٣/١٠) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَنْ أَفْطَرَ يَوْمًا مِنْ رَمَضَانَ مِنْ غَيْرِ رُخْصَةٍ وَلَا مَرَضٍ لَمْ يَقْضِ عَنْهُ صَوْمُ الدَّهْرِ كُلِّهِ وَإِنْ صَامَهُ

(رواه احمد والترمذى و ابو داؤد وابن ماجه والدارمى والبخارى فى ترجمة باب)
(893/10) It is related by Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: 'Whoever omits even a single fast of *Ramadan* without the legal concession of a journey, or (a valid excuse like that of) illness, amends cannot be made for the thing that is omitted even though he observes fasting throughout the life.'

(Musnad Ahmad, Tirmizi, Abu Dawood, Ibn Majah and Daarami)

Commentary: It shows that the loss a person suffers in terms of the blessings of *Ramadan* and the special favours of Allah by leaving out a fast of that month, deliberately and without a cogent reason, cannot be made good even if he keeps supererogatory fasts for the rest of his life. Though the ransom of the omission of a fast is only a fast on some other day, the blessings and the reward one is deprived of by leaving out the fast can never be regained through it.

Abstention From Sin

(٨٩٤/١١) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَنْ لَمْ يَدَعْ قَوْلَ الزُّورِ وَالْعَمَلَ بِهِ فَلَيْسَ لِلَّهِ حَاجَةٌ أَنْ يَدَعَ طَعَامَهُ وَشَرَابَهُ

(رواه البخارى)

(894/11) It is related by Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that the Prophet ﷺ said: Allah has no need for him to go without food and drink who cannot shun evil and falsehood even during the fast."

(Bukhari)

Commentary: It tells that fasts can find acceptance with Allah only when one protects one's mouth and tongue and other organs

against what is forbidden in addition to abstention from food and drink. God does not, at all, care for the fast of a person who indulges in sinful things while fasting.

The Last 'Ashra and Lailatul Qadr

The month of Ramadan enjoys an intrinsic superiority over all the other months of the year. Likewise, its last 'Ashra or ten days are superior to the two earlier 'Ashras, and *Laylatul Qadr* or the Night of Power, generally falls in it. That is why, the sacred Prophet ﷺ devoted himself more intensively to prayer and other forms of worship during it and urged others, also, to do the same.

(٨٩٥/١٢) عَنْ عَائِشَةَ قَالَتْ كَانَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَجْتَهِدُ

فِي الْعَشْرِ الْآخِرِ مَا لَا يَجْتَهِدُ فِي غَيْرِهِ..... (رواه مسلم)

(895/12) Sayyidah Ayshah رضى الله عنها related to us that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ strove harder and took greater pains to observe prayer (*Salah*) etc., during the last ten days of *Ramadan* than during the other days." (Muslim)

(٨٩٦/١٣) عَنْ عَائِشَةَ قَالَتْ كَانَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا دَخَلَ

الْعَشْرُ شَدَّ مِيزْرَهُ وَأَخْبَى لَيْلَهُ وَأَيَقَظُ أَهْلَهُ..... (رواه البخارى ومسلم)

(896/13) It is related by Sayyidah Ayshah رضى الله عنها that when the last ten days of *Ramadan* began the Prophet ﷺ would gird up the loins and keep awake in the nights (i.e., he used to spend the whole of the nights in prayer and worship), and, also, wakened the members of his family (so that they, too, could partake of the blessings of the nights of that month)".

(Bukhari and Muslim)

(٨٩٧/١٤) عَنْ عَائِشَةَ قَالَتْ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ تَحَرُّوا

لَيْلَةَ الْقَدْرِ فِي الْوَتْرِ مِنَ الْعَشْرِ الْآخِرِ مِنْ رَمَضَانَ (رواه البخارى)

(897/14) It is related by Sayyidah Ayshah رضى الله عنها that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Seek the Night of Power in the odd nights of the last ten days of *Ramadan*." (Bukhari)

Commentary: Generally, *Laylatul Qadr* falls on one of the odd nights of the last ten days of *Ramadan*, i.e., the 21st, 23rd, 25th,

27th and 29th. Had it been indicated precisely about the Night of Power that it was that particular night, people, on the whole, would have specially devoted themselves to prayer and worship on it alone. God kept it vague and unidentified by telling, at one place, in the Qur'an that it was revealed in the Night of Power, and, at another, that it was revealed during the month of Ramadan which indirectly suggested that the Night of Power fell during *Ramadan*. The Prophet ﷺ made it more explicit when he said that there was a greater possibility of the Night of Power occurring during the odd nights of the last ten days of *Ramadan*. One should, therefore, take special care to keep vigil during them.

Besides Sayyidah Ayshah رضى الله عنها Traditions of a like meaning have been related by other Companions رضي الله عنهم as well while some Companions believe that the 27th night of *Ramadan* is the Night of Power as the Tradition reproduced below shows.

(٨٩٨/١٥) عَنْ زَيْرِ بْنِ حُبَيْشٍ قَالَ سَأَلْتُ أَبِي بَنَ كَعْبٍ فَقُلْتُ إِنَّ أَخَاكَ ابْنَ مَسْعُودٍ يَقُولُ مَنْ يُقِمُ الْحَوْلَ يُصِيبُ لَيْلَةَ الْقَدْرِ فَقَالَ رَحِمَهُ اللَّهُ أَرَادَ أَنْ لَا يَتَكَلَّ النَّاسُ أَمَّا إِنَّهُ قَدْ عَلِمَ أَنَّهَا فِي رَمَضَانَ وَأَنَّهَا فِي الْعَشْرِ الْآخِرِ وَأَنَّهَا لَيْلَةُ سَبْعٍ وَعِشْرِينَ ثُمَّ حَلَفَ لَا يَسْتَتِي أَنَّهَا لَيْلَةُ سَبْعٍ وَعِشْرِينَ فَقُلْتُ بِأَيِّ شَيْءٍ تَقُولُ ذَالِكَ يَا أَبَا الْمُنْذِرِ قَالَ بِالْعَلَامَةِ أَوْ قَالَ بِالْأَيَّةِ الَّتِي أَخْبَرَنَا رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ أَنَّهَا تَطْلُعُ يَوْمَئِذٍ لَا شُعَاعَ لَهَا (رواه مسلم)

(898/15) Zirr bin Hubaysh related that he enquired from Ubayy bin Ka'b رضي الله عنه if his brother-in-faith, Abdullah bin Mas'ud رضي الله عنه, said that whoever will keep vigil during all the nights of the year (i.e., perform acts of prayer and worship every night) will gain *Laylatul Qadr* in any case (i.e., *Laylatul Qadr*, after all, is one of the nights of the year; so, whoever may be solicitous of its blessings should fill every night of the year with prayer and he will, naturally, attain his object one night or the other) Ubayy bin Ka'b رضي الله عنه observed: "May God bless brother Abdullah bin Mas'ud رضي الله عنه. His aim in saying so was that people should not rest content (with the prayers of a single night) otherwise he knew for certain that *Laylatul Qadr* occurred exclusively in the month of Ramadan, and, that, too, during the last ten days of it (from

the 21st to the 29th of the month), and, definitely, on the 27th night." He, then, said firmly (and) on oath "without doubt, it is the 27th night (and in order to show his certitude) he did not even say Insha Allah (with the oath)." Zirr bin Hubaysh related that he said to him: "O Abul Munzir (Kuniyah of Ubbay) on what ground do you say so?" he replied: I say it on the strength of the portent the Prophet ﷺ had revealed to us and it was that when the sun rose on the morning of *Laylatul Qadr*, it was without rays." (Muslim)

Commentary: From Sayvidina Ubayy bin Ka'b's reply it is evident that the knowledge of what he had said with such assurance about *Laylatul Qadr* that it was positively the 27th night of the month of Ramadan had not been imparted to him by the Prophet ﷺ. But since his general observation was that the special sign of Prophet ﷺ had mentioned become visible on the morning of the 27th night he had concluded that it could be no other night.

The Prophet ﷺ, sometimes, said that one should seek *Laylatul Qadr* in the last days of *Ramadan*, and, sometimes, that it should be searched for during the odd nights of the last ten days, and, sometimes, that it fell on one of the three or four of the five odd nights of that period. He never fixed a particular night. But the experience of many men of spiritual vision and comprehension is that, mostly, it is the 27th night of *Ramadan*. The greatest wisdom of keeping it vague is that the eager bondsmen spent all the nights of the last ten days of *Ramadan* in prayer and supplication. The gaining of *Laylatul Qadr*, in that case, was certain.

(٨٩٩/١٦) عَنْ أَنَسٍ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا كَانَ لَيْلَةُ الْقَدْرِ نَزَلَ جِبْرِيلُ عَلَيْهِ السَّلَامُ فِي كُتُبِكُمْ مِنَ الْمَلَائِكَةِ يُصَلُّونَ عَلَى كُلِّ عَبْدٍ قَائِمٍ أَوْ قَاعِدٍ يُذَكِّرُ اللَّهَ عَزَّ وَجَلَّ

(رواه البيهقي في شعب الإيمان)

(899/16) It is related by Anas ؓ that Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "When *Laylatul Qadr* comes, Jibril ؑ descends in the company of angels and prays for mercy for the bondsman who is engaged in the worship and remembrance of God standing or sitting." (Baihaqi)

Special Supplication

(٩٠٠/١٧) عَنْ عَائِشَةَ قَالَتْ قُلْتُ يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ أَرَأَيْتَ إِنْ عَلِمْتُ أَيْ لَيْلَةٍ لَيْلَةُ الْقَدْرِ مَا أَقُولُ فِيهَا قَالَ قُولِي اللَّهُمَّ إِنَّكَ عَفُورٌ كَرِيمٌ تُحِبُّ الْعَفْوَ فَاعْفُ عَنِّي
(رواه احمد والترمذى وابن ماجه)

(900/17) Sayyidah Ayshah رضى الله عنها related "I asked the Messenger of Allah ﷺ if I came to know which was *Laylatul Qadr*, what should I make in it. The Prophet ﷺ replied: 'Say:

اللَّهُمَّ إِنَّكَ عَفُورٌ كَرِيمٌ تُحِبُّ الْعَفْوَ فَاعْفُ عَنِّي.

Allahumma innaka 'afuwan karimun tuhibbul 'afwa fa-'af'anni.
(O God! You are, indeed, the Most Forgiving, the Most Merciful, and to forgive is most pleasing; so, forgive me my sins)."
(Musnad Ahmad, Tirmizi and Ibn Majah)

Commentary: Persuaded by this Tradition, a number of bondsmen have made it a regular habit to make this supplication every night, specially in the nights of *Ramadan* and more so still during the odd nights of the last ten days of it.

Last Night

(٩٠١/١٨) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ عَنِ النَّبِيِّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ أَنَّهُ قَالَ يُغْفَرُ لَأُمَّتِي فِي آخِرِ لَيْلَةٍ مِنْ رَمَضَانَ قِيلَ يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ أَيْ لَيْلَةُ الْقَدْرِ قَالَ لَا وَلَكِنْ الْعَامِلُ إِنَّمَا يُؤْفَى أَجْرُهُ إِذَا قَضَى عَمَلَهُ.....
(رواه احمد)

(901/18) It is related by Abu Hurayrah رضى الله عنه that the Prophet ﷺ said: In the last night of *Ramadan* the decision of forgiveness is taken for my followers." He was asked: O Messenger of Allah ﷺ! Is it on *Laylatul Qadr*?" "No", replied Prophet ﷺ, "it is not *Laylatul Qadr* but when the workman completes his job, he is paid full wages."
(Musnad Ahmad)

Commentary: It shows that the last night of the month of *Ramadan*, too, is a night of the special decision of forgiveness. But, in it, such a decision will be taken only for the bondsmen who make themselves deserving by fulfilling, to some extent, the practical obligations of *Ramadan*.

I'TIKAF

One of the many observances that are related, exclusively, to *Ramadan*, particularly its last ten days, is *I'tikaf*. The basic aim and object of *I'tikaf* is that the bondsman continued at the door of the Almighty, i.e., in the corner of a mosque, cutting himself aloof from the world and devoting his time and attention wholly to prayer and worship. It is the worhsip of a favourite bondsmen of Allah. Evidently, no time could be more appropriate for it than the month of *Ramadan*, specially, its last ten days.

The powerful urge that had siezed the Prophet ﷺ before the revelation of the Qur'an to seek solitude and spend his time mostly in prayer and meditation, and, in consequence of which, he used to pass several months on end in the Cave of Hira — this, so to speak, was the first *I'tikaf* of the Prophet ﷺ, and it was in it that his spirituality had evolved to the stage that marked the beginning of the revelation of the Qur'an. During the last days of this *I'tikaf*, Jibril ﷺ came to him with the opeinig verses of the surah *Al-Alaq* Beyond doubt and for certain, it was the month of *Ramadan*, its last ten days, and the night was the *Night of Power*. The last ten days of *Ramadan* have, thus, been set apart for *I'tikaf*.

The fasts of Ramadan have been prescribed to all Muslims for the development of the soul and for enabling it to subdue the carnal appetites. In other words, this much of exertion and sacrifice of sensual desires has been made obligatory for every Muslim that he neither ate nor drank anything nor sought sexual satisfaction during the whole of the blessed month, in compliance with the Command of Allah and with intention of paying divine honours to Him, and along with it, avoided all sinful acts and worthless things. It is the general, compulsory course of spiritual training and self-purification for the month of *Ramadan*. For higher upliftment and

forging a closer affinity with the Celestial World we have *I'tikaf*.

In *I'tikaf* the bondsman cuts himself away from everything and throws himself at the threshold, or, rather the feet of his Lord and Creator. He remembers Him, exalts His Name, offers earnest repentance to Him, cries over his sins and follies, entreats Him for mercy and forgiveness and seeks His countenance and propinquity. His days and nights are spend in that way. The Holy Prophet ﷺ used to take special care to observe *I'tikaf* during the last ten days of *Ramadan*. Once when he could not carry it out due to some reason, he observed it for twenty days in the next *Ramadan*.

Usual Practice of The Prophet

(٩٠٢/١٩) عَنْ عَائِشَةَ قَالَتْ إِنَّ النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ كَانَ يَتَعَكَّفُ الْعَشْرَ الْأَوَاخِرَ مِنْ رَمَضَانَ حَتَّى تَوَفَّاهُ اللَّهُ ثُمَّ اعْتَكَفَ أَزْوَاجَهُ مِنْ بَعْدِهِ

(رواه البخاري و مسلم)

(902/19) It is related on the authority of Sayyidah Ayshah رضي الله عنها that "the Prophet ﷺ observed *I'tikaf* regularly in the last ten days of *Ramadan*, till the end of his life. After his death, his wives contineud with it." (Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: The Prophet's ﷺ wives observed *I'tikaf* in their apartments, and for women, in general, the place where they observe *Salah* at home is the right place for *I'tikaf*. If there be no such place in the house, arrangement should be made for it.

(٩٠٣/٢٠) عَنْ أَنَسٍ قَالَ كَانَ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَتَعَكَّفُ الْعَشْرَ الْأَوَاخِرَ مِنْ رَمَضَانَ فَلَمْ يَتَعَكَّفْ عَامًا فَلَمَّا كَانَ الْعَامَ الْمُقْبِلَ اعْتَكَفَ عَشْرِينَ

(رواه الترمذی)

(903/20) Anas ؓ narrated that "The Prophet ﷺ observed *I'tikaf* during the last ten days of *Ramadan*. One year he could not do the *I'tikaf*, and, so, next year, he did it for twenty days."

(Tirmizi)

Commentary: It is not stated in the above narrative of Sayyidina Anas ؓ why the Prophet ﷺ could not observe *I'tikaf* in that year. But in another Tradition, quoted in *Nasai* and *Abu Dawood*, on the authority of Sayyidina Ubayy bin Ka'b ؓ, it is said that once the Prophet ﷺ had to go on a journey during the last ten days of

Ramadan, and, therefore, he could not carry out the *I'tikaf* that year but, in the next year, he did it for twenty days.

It is, further, mentioned in *Sahih Bukhari*, on the authority of Sayyidina Abu Hurayrah ؓ that the Prophet ﷺ had, also, observed *I'tikaf* for twenty days in the *Ramadan* of the year in which he died. Perhaps the Prophet ﷺ had recieved some indication that the hour of his departure from the world was near so, he, naturally, felt more powerfully drawn towards observances like *I'tikaf*.

(٩٠٤/٢١) عَنْ عَائِشَةَ قَالَتْ أَلَسْتُ أَلَسْتُ عَلَى الْمُتَكِّفِ أَنْ لَا يَعُودَ مَرِيضًا وَلَا

يَشْهَدَ جَنَازَةً وَلَا يَمَسُّ الْمَرْأَةَ وَلَا يَبْشُرُهَا وَلَا يَخْرُجُ لِحَاجَةٍ إِلَّا لِمَا لَا بُدَّ لَهُ مِنْهُ

وَلَا إِيْتِكَافَ إِلَّا بِصَوْمٍ وَلَا إِيْتِكَافَ إِلَّا فِي مَسْجِدٍ جَامِعٍ (رواه ابو داؤد)

(904/21) Sayyidah Ayshah رضى الله عنها related that the rules of *Shari'ah* for the *Mu'takif* (i.e., one who is in *I'tikaf*) are that he should neither go out to visit the sick nor attend a funeral nor have a sexual intercourse nor engage in (love-play like) kissing and embracing nor step out of the mosque for personal needs save that are unavoidable (such as, answering the call of nature), and *I'tikaf* (should be observed only with fasting) there can be no *I'tikaf* without fasting — and it must be carried out in *Jami' Masjid* and at no other place." (Abu Dawood)

Commentary: As we have explained earleir, when a Companion says about a thing that it is the *Sunnah* it denotes that it is what is prescribed in the *Shari'ah* and the inference is that he had learnt it from the sayings or doings of the Prophet ﷺ. The rules of *I'tikaf* delineated in the above Tradition, thus, fall within the category of the Prophet's commands and directives.

The term of *Jami Masjid*, occuring in it means the "mosque of congregation", i.e., the mosque in which the five daily prayers are observed in congregation.

(٩٠٥/٢٢) عَنْ ابْنِ عَبَّاسٍ أَنَّ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ قَالَ فِي

الْمُتَكِّفِ هُوَ يَتَكَبَّرُ الدُّنُوبَ وَيَجْرِي لَهُ مِنَ الْحَسَنَاتِ كَقَامِلِ الْحَسَنَاتِ

كُلَّهَا (رواه ابن ماجه)

(905/22) It is related by Abdullah bin Abbas رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said about the person who is in *I'tikaf* that "(owing to *I'tikaf* and by reason of keeping within the limits of the mosque) he is protected from sin and the account of his virtuous deeds goes on like that of any other virtuous bondsman and (they) are put down in his Balance-sheet of Deeds."

(Ibn Majah)

Commentary: When the bondsman confines himself in the mosque for *I'tikaf*, he makes a great addition to his virtuous deeds through prayer, *Zikr* and *Tilawat* (recital of Qur'an) but, at the same time, he is prevented from performing certain acts of high moral and religious worth, as for instance, he cannot visit the sick or care for them which is a most meritorious act in the sight of God or work for the welfare of the weak, the indigent and the orphan and the widow or bathe the dead body which, if done with sincerity and the desire to earn the Divine recompense, is a deed of much moral goodness. In the same way, he cannot go out to participate in the funeral service nor accompany the bier to the graveyard in doing which sins are forgiven at each step and good deeds are written in the Scroll of Deeds.

The above Tradition, however, gives the glad tidings to the devotee observing *I'tikaf* that, by the Command of God, all the good acts he used to perform normally but is kept away from performing owing to *I'tikaf* are written down in his Register of Deeds.

SIGHTING OF THE MOON

In fixing the time, day or period of a particular rite, religious ceremony or worship the *Shari'ah* has seen to it that no instrument or acquired ability is needed to know or determine it. Even a layman and an illiterate rustic can make it out by simple observation. The hours of prayers (*Salah*) and Fasting have, thus, been set in accordance with the movement of the sun. For example, the time of *Fajr* has been prescribed as from dawn till the rising of the sun, of *Zuhr* from the declining of the sun after mid-day till the shadow of an object extends, by one or two lengths of it, of *'Asr* from after it till sunset, of *Maghrib* from after sunset till the twilight remains and *'Isha* after the disappearance of the twilight. Similarly, the time of Fasting has been laid down as from sunrise to sunset. Obviously, no special skill is required for knowing these hours. Anyone can do so. Again, just as in view of the convenience of the people, the rising or setting of the sun and its ascent or decline have been made the signs or standards of the hours of prayers and Fasting, the moon has been made the standard where duties like *Zakah*, Fasting and Hajj that are related to month or year are concerned. Reliance has been placed upon the lunar year and months instead of the solar year and months because the laymen can distinguish only the lunar months by observation while no visible signs appear on the sky or the earth at the beginning of a solar month on seeing which one can know that the old month has ended and the new one has begun. Since the commencement of the lunar months is marked by the appearance of the moon even an illiterate person can conclude by seeing the new moon that the succeeding month has begun.

Anyhow, the convenience of the common man has been a major consideration behind the arrangement of months and years,

by *Shari'ah*, on the basis of the lunar system. When the Holy Prophet ﷺ proclaimed the obligatoriness of the *Ramadan* fasts, he also explained the order and regulation of its commencement and end. He told the Muslims to begin the fasts if the moon was sighted after the completion of 29 days of the month of *Sh'aban*¹, and if it was not sighted on 29th, after the completion of 30 days. They were, in the same way, to keep 29 or 30 fasts of *Ramadan*. He gave further instructions regarding the sighting of the moon on different occasions.

When to Begin and End the Fasts of *Ramadan*

(٩٠٦/٢٣) عَنْ ابْنِ عُمَرَ عَنِ النَّبِيِّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ أَنَّهُ ذَكَرَ رَمَضَانَ فَقَالَ لَا تَصُومُوا حَتَّى تَرَوْا الْهَيْلَالَ وَلَا تَفْطَرُوا حَتَّى تَرَوْهُ فَإِنْ أَغْمَى عَلَيْكُمْ فَأَقْبِرُوا لَهُ.....
(رواه البخارى ومسلم)

(906/23) Abdullah bin Umar رضي الله عنه related that once the Prophet ﷺ spoke about *Ramadan* until you have sighted the (new) moon, and do not end the month of Fasting until you having sighted (The moon of) the month of *Shawwal*,² and if the moon is not visisble (on the 29th of *Ramadan*), reckon up and calculate (i.e., presume the month to be 30 days)."

(Bukhari and Muslim)

(٩٠٧/٢٤) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ صُومُوا لِرُؤْيَيْهِ وَأَفْطَرُوا لِرُؤْيَيْهِ فَإِنْ غَمَّ عَلَيْكُمْ فَأَكْمِلُوا عِدَّةَ شَعْبَانَ لِلثَّيْنِ
(رواه البخارى ومسلم)

(907/24) It is related by Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Begin your Fasting on seeing the(new) moon, and end your Fasting on seeing the (new) moon. If the moon cannot be sighted (on the 29th), complete the 30 days of *Shaban*."

(Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: What it signifies is that the commencement or conclusion of the month of *Ramadan* depnds upon the visibility of the moon. It cannot be determined simply by calculation or speculation. Moreover, one form of the visibility of the moon is

①. The eight month according to the Islamic Calendar

②. The tenth month of the Muslim Calendar.

that we see it with our own eyes and another that someone else sees it. and, then, informs us and we consider him to be a reliable person. Sometimes it happened during the lifetime of the Prophet ﷺ, too, that he accepted the visibility of the moon at the report or evidence of someone who had seen it and gave the order for keeping the fast or observing the 'Eid, as the case was, as we shall see later.

(٩٠٨/٢٥) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ أَحْصُوا
هَلَالَ شَعْبَانَ لِرَمَضَانَ.....
(رواه الترمذی)

(908/25) It is related by Abu Hurayrah ؓ that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Count the moon of *Sha'ban* carefully for the purpose of Ramadan." (Tirmizi)

Commentary: It shows that, on account of *Ramadan*, special pains should, also, be taken to see the moon of *Sha'ban* and its dates remembered with care. When 29 days of *Sha'ban* are completed, effort should be made to sight the moon of *Ramadan*.

(٩٠٩/٢٦) عَنْ عَائِشَةَ قَالَتْ كَانَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَتَحَفَّظُ
مِنْ شَعْبَانَ مَا لَا يَتَحَفَّظُ مِنْ غَيْرِهِ ثُمَّ يَصُومُ لِرُؤْيَا رَمَضَانَ فَإِنْ غَمَّ عَلَيْهِ عَدُّ
ثَلَاثِينَ يَوْمًا ثُمَّ صَامَ.....
(رواه ابوداؤد)

(909/26) It is related by Sayyidah Ayshah رضى الله عنها that Messenger of Allah ﷺ did not remember the days and dates of any other month with such care as the days and dates of *Sah'ban*. He, then, kept the fasts after seeing the moon of *Ramadan* and if the moon was not visible (on the 29th of *Sha'ban*), he kept the fasts after completing the count of 30 days." (Abu Dawood)

Proof of The Visibility of Moon Through Report and Evidence

(٩١٠/٢٧) عَنْ ابْنِ عَبَّاسٍ قَالَ جَاءَ أَغْرَابِيُّ إِلَى النَّبِيِّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ
فَقَالَ إِنِّي رَأَيْتُ الْهَلَالَ يَعْنِي هَلَالَ رَمَضَانَ فَقَالَ أَتَشْهَدُ أَنْ لَا إِلَهَ إِلَّا اللَّهُ قَالَ
نَعَمْ قَالَ أَتَشْهَدُ أَنْ مُحَمَّدًا رَسُولُ اللَّهِ قَالَ نَعَمْ قَالَ يَا بِلَالُ أَذِنُ فِي النَّاسِ أَنْ

يُصُومُوا غَدًا (رواه أبو داود والترمذي والنسائي وابن ماجه والدارمي)
 (910/27) Abdullah bin Abbas رضي الله عنه narrated that (once) a villager came to the Prophet ﷺ and said: "I have seen the moon (of Ramadan) today." The Prophet ﷺ enquired from him: "Do you testify that there is no god save Allah?" 'Yes,' he replied. "I testify that there is no god save Allah. The Prophet ﷺ, then, asked: 'And do you testify that Muhammad is Messenger of Allah ?' "Yes," he replied. "I testify that Muhammad is the Messenger of Allah." The Prophet ﷺ, thereupon, ordered Bilal to proclaim to the people to begin Fasting from the next day."

(Abu Dawood, Tirmizi, Nasai, Ibn Majah and Daarami)

Commentary: It shows that for accepting the report or evidance of the visibility of the moon it is essential that the one who reports or gives the evidence is a Muslim for he, alone, can appreciate its importance.

(٩١١/٢٨) عَنْ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ ابْنِ عُمَرَ قَالَ تَرَى النَّاسُ الْهَيْلَالَ فَأَخْبَرْتُ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ أَنِّي رَأَيْتُهُ فَصَامَ وَأَمَرَ النَّاسَ بِصِيَامِهِ

(رواه أبو داود والدارمي)

(911/28) It is redlated by Abdullah bin Umar رضي الله عنه that once during the days of the Prophet ﷺ people tried to see the moon of Ramdan (but, generally, it could not be sighted). I then, informed the Prophet ﷺ that I had seen the moon upon which he kept the fast himself and ordered the people to do the same."

(Abu Dawood and Daarami)

Commentary: Both of these narratives tell that the evidence of one Muslim is enough to establish the visibility of the moon. According to the commonly known principle enunciated by Imam Abu Hanifa, the evidence of one person is sufficient when the sky is overcast or he has come from outside the town or village or from a place with higher altiude. But if the sky is clear and the person who claims to have sighted the moon has not come from outside or from a place with a higher altitude and yet asserts that he had seen the moon in that very town or in village where no one else could see it in spite of making the best efforts, the decision of the visibility of the moon will not be taken on his solitary evidence. In that case, the number of persons claiming to have seen the moon

should be such that their evidence can evoke confidence. This, as we have said, is the well-known view of Imam Abu Hanifah. But another theory is, also, attributed to him which says that for the moon of *Ramadan* the evidence of one virtuous and trustworthy Muslim is sufficient and many other legist-doctors, too, are in agreement with it.

It should be remembered that what we have said here appertains to the moon of *Rmadan*. As far as the '*Eid*' moon is concerned there is a general consensus among the legist-doctors over the point that the evidence of at least two religious-minded and reliable Muslims is necessary. It is stated in Dar Qutni and Tabarani, on the authority of Akramah Taba'ee, that once a person deposed before the Governor of Madinah that he had seen the moon of *Ramadan*. At that time, both Sayyidina Abdullah bin Umar and Abdullah bin Abbas ؓ were present in Madinah. The Governor consulted them and they said that the evidence of one person should be accpeted and the announcement made that the month of *Ramadan* had begun. They added that the Prophet ﷺ had said that the evidence of one person was enough for the moon of *Ramadan* but for the moon of 'Id he did not regard the evidence of less than two persons to be adequate.

Prohibition of Fasting on One or Two Days Before the Commencement of *Ramadan*

Fasting has been enjoined for the whole of the month of *Ramadan*. The Muslims are, also, required to take particualr care to see the moon of *Ramadan* and even that of *Sha'ban* so that no fast of *Ramadan* is missed unknowingly or owing to negligence. But with all this, for the continuance and preservation of the laws of the *Shari'ah* and keeping them safe, intact and unimpaired it has been forbidden to fast on one or two days immediately preceding the month of *Ramadan* because if people with an excessive enthusiam for worship took it up as a laudatory practice, uneducated masses were in the danger of being misled into believing that it was also an order or injunction of the *Shari'ah*.

(۹۱۲/۲۹) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ لَا يَتَقَدَّمَنَّ

أَحَدُكُمْ رَمَضَانَ بِصَوْمِ يَوْمٍ أَوْ يَوْمَيْنِ إِلَّا أَنْ يَكُونَ رَجُلٌ كَانَ يَصُومُ صَوْمًا
فَلْيَصُمْ ذَلِكَ الْيَوْمَ (رواه البخارى ومسلم)

(912/29) It is related by Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "None of you should keep fast a day or two before the commencement of *Ramadan* except that the day on which he habitually fasts happens to fall then. (For instance, a person usually fasts on every Monday or Thursday; so, if a Monday or Thursday occurs on the 29th or 30 of *Sha'ban*, he is permitted to keep a fast on that day)." (Bukhari and Muslim)

(٩١٣/٣٠) عَنْ عَمَّارِ بْنِ يَاسِرٍ قَالَ مَنْ صَامَ الْيَوْمَ الَّذِي يُشَكُّ فِيهِ فَقَدْ
عَصَى أَبَا الْقَاسِمِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ

(رواه ابو داود، والترمذى، والنسائى، وابن ماجه والدارمى)
(913/30) Ammar bin Yasir رضي الله عنه related to us "Whoever kept fast on the day of doubt, he failed to obey Abul Qasim, the Messenger of Allah ﷺ."

(Abu Dawood, Tirmizi, Nasai, Ibn Majah and Daarami)

Commentary: The 'day of doubt,' here, denotes the day about which it can be thought that it may be a day of *Ramadan*. For instance, when the sky is overcast on the 29th of *Sha'ban* and the new moon is not visible, there is the possibility that the moon may have appeared but it could not be sighted owing to the dust or the cloud, and, thus, the next day could be a day of *Ramadan*. But reliance is not placed upon doubt or conjecture in the *Shari'ah* and the Prophet ﷺ, as such, has forbidden against fasting on that day. As the foregoing Traditions have made it clear, in such a case people should complete the thirty days of *Sha'ban*.

SAHR AND IFTARI

(٩١٤/٣١) عَنْ أَنَسٍ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ تَسَحَّرُوا فَإِنَّ

(رواه البخارى و مسلم)

فِي السَّحُورِ بَرَكَةٌ

(914/31) It is related by Anas رضي الله عنه that the Prophet ﷺ said: "Eat *Sahr*¹ for there is propitiousness in it." (Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: A common aspect of *Sahr* is that it sustains the person who fasts and helps in mitigating the rigours of Fasting while the other, the inner and exceptional, aspect is what has been indicated in the Tradition quoted in *Musnad Ahmad*, on the authority of Abu Sa'eed Khudri رضي الله عنه it says:

"There is auspiciousness in *Sahr*. Do not forgo it. If nothing else, a draught of water should be taken at that time for God bestows mercy upon those who eat *Sahr* and angels pray for their well-being."

السَّحُورُ بَرَكَةٌ فَلَا تَدْعُوهُ وَلَوْ أَنْ
يَجْزَعَ أَحَدُكُمْ جُرْعَةً مِّنْ مَّاءٍ فَإِنَّ
اللَّهَ وَمَلَائِكَتَهُ يُصَلُّونَ عَلَى
الْمُتَسَحِّرِينَ.

(٩١٥/٣٢) عَنْ عَمْرِو بْنِ الْعَاصِ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ

(رواه مسلم)

فَصَلُّ مَا بَيْنَ صِيَامِنَا وَصِيَامِ أَهْلِ الْكِتَابِ أَكْلَةُ السَّحْرِ

(915/32) It is related by Amr bin al-'Aas رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "What distinguishes our fasting from the fasting of the other people of the Scripture is the eating of *Sahr*." (Muslim)

Commentary: We must keep this distinction in practice too by eating *Sahri*. We must thank Allah for His blessings too in allowing us the pre-dawn meal.

-
- ❶. Meaning the light of meal the Muslims make a little before dawn when fasting.

Haste in *Iftari*, Delay in *Sehr*

(٩١٦/٣٣) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ قَالَ اللَّهُ تَعَالَى أَحَبُّ عِبَادِي إِلَيَّ أَعَجَلَهُمْ فِطْرًا
(رواه الترمذی)

(916/33) It is related by Abu Hurayrah رضی اللہ عنہ that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "God says: "More beloved among My bondsmen is the bondsman who makes haste in breaking the fast (i.e., does not delay it after the setting of the sun)." (Tirmizi)

(٩١٧/٣٤) عَنْ سَهْلِ بْنِ سَعْدٍ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ لَا يَزَالُ النَّاسُ بِخَيْرٍ مَا عَجَّلُوا الْفِطْرَ
(رواه البخاری و مسلم)

(917/34) It is related on the authority of Sahl bin Sa'd رضی اللہ عنہ that the Prophet ﷺ said: "So long as people are prompt in *Iftar*,¹ they will remain on the side of virtue." (Tirmizi)

Commentary: Another Tradition bearing the same import is quoted in *Musnad Ahmad*, on the authority of Abu Zarr Ghifari رضی اللہ عنہ, but in it delay in *Sahr* is, also, mentioned along with promptitude in *Iftar*. It says that the Muslim will remain on the side of virtue as long as they adhere to the routine of hastening and not delaying *Iftar* and delay in *Sahr* is the requirement of *Shari'ah* and the Will of God, and, it, also, suits the convenience of the common people which is pleasing to Allah. Hence, as long as the *Ummah* acts on it, it will be on the path of goodness. On the contrary, as there is hardship for everyone in delaying *Iftar* and hastening the *Sahr* and it, also, is a kind of Innovation, it is a source of the displeasure of God. when the Muslims will adopt this practice they will forfeit the good pleasure of Allah and sink to a lower condition. Haste in *Iftar* means that breaking a fast should not be deferred when it becomes clear that the sun has set, and, in the same way, delay in *Sahr* denotes that it should not be taken much before dawn but when the break of day is near. This, also, was the regular practice of the sacred Prophet ﷺ.

(٩١٨/٣٥) عَنْ أَنَسٍ عَنْ زَيْدِ بْنِ ثَابِتٍ قَالَ تَسَعَّرَ نَامِعَ رَسُولِ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ

①. Meaning breaking a fast. *Iftar* denotes things taken for breaking a fast on due time.

عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ ثُمَّ قَامَ إِلَى الصَّلَاةِ قُلْتُ كَمْ كَانَ بَيْنَ الْأَذَانِ وَالسُّحُورِ قَالَ قَدْرُ
خَمْسِينَ آيَةً (رواه البخارى و مسلم)

(918/35) Sayyidina Anas رضي الله عنه related to us, saying that Zayd bin Thabit رضي الله عنه told him, "We took Sahri with the Prophet ﷺ and, then, he (quickly) stood up for the *Fajr* prayer." Anas asked Zayd رضي الله عنه, "How much time would have passed between the eating of *Sahr* and the *Azan* of *Fajr*. Zayd رضي الله عنه replied, "It was equal to what was needed for the recitation of 50 verses of the Qur'an." (Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: If the recitation is properly done, it takes less than five minutes to complete fifty verses of the Qur'an. It can, thus, be said that there was merely a gap of five minutes between the *Sahr* of the Prophet ﷺ and the *Azan* of *Fajr*.

Prohibition of *Saum-Wisal*

If fasting is done continuously without eating or drinking anything during the day as well as the night it is called *Saum Wisal*. The Holy Prophet ﷺ has forbidden it to the *Ummah* because fasts of this kind are very hard to keep and it is quite possible that a person became so weak that he could not perform his other duties. The Prophet ﷺ has, therefore, stopped his followers from observing such fasts. With himself, however, the case was that these fasts made no real difference to his health and strength as he used to receive a sort of non-material food and spiritual sustenance from God. Consequently, the Prophet ﷺ kept *Saum Wisal* himself.

(٩١٩/٣٦) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ نَهَى رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ عَنِ
الْوِصَالِ فِي الصَّوْمِ فَقَالَ لَهُ رَجُلٌ إِنَّكَ تَوَاصِلُ يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ قَالَ وَأَيُّكُمْ مِثْلِي
إِنِّي أَبِيتُ يُطْعِمُنِي رَبِّي وَيَسْقِيْنِي (رواه البخارى و مسلم)

(919/36) Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه narrated that when the Prophet ﷺ forbade people against keeping *Saum Wisal*, a Companion exclaimed: "But Messenger of Allah ﷺ! You keep *Saum Wisal* yourself." The Prophet ﷺ replied, "Which of you is like me? " My night passes in such a way that my Lord nourishes me (i.e., I get my nourishment from the Unseen World, and, hence, do not draw conclusions about yourself from my example in this

matter)"

(Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: Similar Traditions, with a slight variation of words, have also been narrated on the authority of Abdullah bin Umar, Anas and Sayyadah Ayshah ؓ from all these, it appears that the aim of the prohibition of *Saum Wisal* was to save the bondsmen from hardship and from injuring their health. In Sayyidah Aysah's narrative it is distinctly stated that:

"The Prophet ﷺ has forbidden *Saum Wisal* out of compassion.

(Bukhari and Muslim)

نَهَى رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ

وَسَلَّمَ عَنِ الْوَصَالِ رَحْمَةً لَهُمْ

(بخارى و مسلم)

Sayyidina Abu Sa'eed Khudri's ؓ narrative, we are now going to reproduce, tells that the Prophet ﷺ had, also, permitted some enthusiasts of *Saum Wisal* to observe continuous fasting till day-break.

(٩٢٠/٣٧) عَنْ أَبِي سَعِيدٍ الْخُدْرِيِّ أَنَّهُ سَمِعَ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ

وَسَلَّمَ يَقُولُ لَا تُوَاصِلُوا فَإِيَّكُمْ أَرَدَ أَنْ يُوَاصِلَ فَلْيُوَاصِلْ حَتَّى السَّحَرِ قَالُوا

فَإِنَّكَ تُوَاصِلُ يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ قَالَ لَسْتُ كَهَيْئَتِكُمْ إِنِّي أَبِيتُ لِي مَطْعِمٌ يُطْعِمُنِي

وَسَاقٍ يُسْقِينِي (رواه البخارى)

(920/37) Abu Sa'eed Khudri ؓ related that he heard from the Messenger of Allah ﷺ say, he was saying: "Do not keep *Saum Wisal*, and whoever still wants to keep it (out of ardent feeling) should do so only till day-break (i.e., for about 24 hours, from dawn to dawn)." Some Companions, thereupon, said: Messenger of Allah ﷺ! you keep *Saum Wisal* yourself." My condition is not like yours in this matter", replied the Prophet ﷺ. "I pass my night in such a condition that a Provider of food feeds me and a Provider of drink causes me to drink." (Bukhari)

Commentary: No elucidation of the form of feeding of the Prophet ﷺ by God and supplying him with drink, as indicated in the aforementioned narratives, is available in the Traditions. Some Commentators have suggested that the spiritual strength derived by the Prophet ﷺ from the special propinquity of God in *Saum Wisal*, particularly during the hours of the night, sufficed for food and drink. It can, also, be interpreted as special sustenance. A few

others say that in the nights of *Saum Wisal* the food and drinks of Heaven or the Unseen World were supplied to the Prophet ﷺ on behalf of God. But this eating and drinking was not of this world.

What is Better For *Iftar*?

(٩٢١/٣٨) عَنْ سَلْمَانَ بْنِ عَامِرٍ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا كَانَ أَحَدُكُمْ صَائِمًا فَلْيُفْطِرْ عَلَى التَّمْرِ فَإِنْ لَمْ يَجِدِ التَّمَرَ فَعَلَى الْمَاءِ فَإِنَّ الْمَاءَ طَهُورٌ
(رواه احمد و ابو داود و الترمذى وابن ماجه والدارمى)

(921/38) It is related by Salman bin Jabir ؓ that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "When anyone of you is fasting, he should break fast with dates, and if the dates are not available, with mere water for God has made the water purifying."

(Musnad Ahmad, Abu Dawood, Tirmizi, Ibn Majah and Daarami)

Commentary: Dates were the favourite food for the Arabs, more so of the Madinans. They were cheap as well as easily available, and so, even the poor could eat them. The Prophet ﷺ, therefore, exhorted the people to break the fast with dates and if one could not get them at the time of *Iftar* then with plain water. He explained, further, that the propitious characteristic of water was that God had declared it to be pure and in breaking the fast with it, there was both external and internal purification.

(٩٢٢/٣٩) عَنْ أَنَسٍ قَالَ كَانَ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يُفْطِرُ قَبْلَ أَنْ يُصَلِّيَ عَلَى رُطَبَاتٍ فَإِنْ لَمْ تَكُنْ رُطَبَاتٍ فَتُمِيرَاتٍ فَإِنْ لَمْ تَكُنْ تُمِيرَاتٍ حَسَا حَسَوَاتٍ مِنْ مَاءٍ
(رواه الترمذى و ابو داود)

(922/39) Sayyidina Anas ؓ related to us that the Prophet ﷺ used to break the fast with a few fresh dates before the *Maghrib* prayer, and if fresh dates were not available at that time, with dry dates, and if dry dates, too, were not available, he drank a few draughts of water.

(Tirmizi and Abu Dawood)

Supplication of *Iftar*

(٩٢٣/٤٠) عَنْ مَعَاذِ بْنِ زُهْرَةَ أَنَّهُ بَلَغَهُ أَنَّ النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ كَانَ إِذَا أَفْطَرَ قَالَ اللَّهُمَّ لَكَ صُمتٌ وَعَلَى رِزْقِكَ أَفْطَرْتُ
(رواه ابو داود)

(923/40) Mu'az bin Zuhrah رَحِمَهُ اللهُ عَلَيْهِ a *Taba'ee*, said: "It has come to my knowledge that when the Prophet ﷺ broke the fast he used to say:

اللَّهُمَّ لَكَ صُمتُ وَعَلَى رِزْقِكَ أَفطَرْتُ

Allahumma laka sumtu wa'ala rizqika aftartu.

O God! For Your sake have I fasted, and (now) I break the fast with the food that comes from You)." (Abu Dawood)

(٩٢٤/٤١) عَنْ ابْنِ عُمَرَ قَالَ كَانَ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا أَفْطَرَ قَالَ
ذَهَبَ الظَّمَاءُ وَابْتَلَّتِ الْعُرُوقُ وَتَبَّتْ الْأَجْرُ أَنْشَاءَ اللَّهِ (رواه ابوداؤد)

(924/41) It is related on the authority of Abdullah bin Umar ؓ that when the Prophet ﷺ broke the fast he used to say: *Zuhabaz-zima'o wab-tallatil 'urooqu wa sabatal arju insha Allah*, (Thirst disappeared, dried up veins became wet and cool, and, God-willing, recompense got established.") (Abu Dawood)

Commentary: The supplication signifies that the uneasiness of thirst and dryness that were endured for some time during the fast had come to an end with Iftar. Now, neither he thirst is left nor the dryness of the veins, and, *Insha Allah*, the endless reward of the Hereafter has, also, been assured.

It is the Prophet's ﷺ expression of gratitude to God as well as an exhortation to others that fasts should be kept in that spirit.

In some other reports it is also mentioned that the Prophet ﷺ used to make the following supplication at the time of Iftar:

Yaa was'ey-al-fazli ighfirlee.

(O Possessor of boundless mercy! Forgive me).

Rewad On Inviting a Fasting Person to Join At Fast-Breaking Meal

(٩٢٥/٤٢) عَنْ زَيْدِ بْنِ خَالِدٍ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَنْ
فَطَرَ صَائِمًا أَوْ جَهَّزَ غَازِيًا فَلَهُ مِثْلُ أَجْرِهِ

(رواه البيهقي في شعب الایمان ورواه محي السنة في شرح السنه)

(925/42) It is related by Zayd bin Khalid ؓ that the Prophet ﷺ said: "Whoever invited a fasting person to break the fast with him or provided a warrior (in the defence of Faith) with the

equipment of war (i.e., arms etc), he will get the same reward as the fasting person or the warrior." (Baihaqi and Baghawi)

Commentary: One of the kindly and gracious laws of Allah is that He rewards a person who exhorts anyone to a good deed or helps him in the performance of it in the same measure as the doer of the deed. Only those who have no idea of the benevolence of God are apt to entertain doubts about glad tidings like these.

اللهم انت كما اثيت على نفسك

FASTING ON A JOURNEY

In Surah *Al-Baqarah* where Fasting has been enjoined upon the Believers as an obligatory duty, permission has, also, been given to the sick and the travellers to leave off the fasts, but they are commanded to make up for it by fasting for an equal number of days when they are relieved from their respective disabilities. It has, also, been made clear that the concession has been provided solely for the sake of the bondsmen's ease and convenience.

The relevant verse of the surah reads:

"And whosoever of you is present (in the month of *Ramadan*), let him fast the month, and whosoever of you is sick or on a journey, (let him fast the same) number of other days. Allah desireth for you ease; He desires not hardship for you. (Al-Baqarah 2:185)

فَمَنْ شَهِدَ مِنْكُمُ الشَّهْرَ فَلْيَصُمْهُ
وَمَنْ كَانَ مَرِيضًا أَوْ عَلَى سَفَرٍ
فَعِدَّةٌ مِّنْ أَيَّامٍ أُخَرَ ۗ يُرِيدُ اللَّهُ بِكُمُ
الْيُسْرَ وَلَا يُرِيدُ بِكُمُ الْعُسْرَ

(البقره. ٢: ١٨٥)

It is obvious from the above that the allowance has been made for the comfort of the bondsmen and with the object of saving them from hardship and suffering. Thus, if anyone does not feel any particular discomfort during a journey, he can keep fast or avail himself of the concession as he likes. The practice of the sacred Prophet ﷺ being a standard of perfection for the *Ummah*, he, sometimes, kept the fasts on a journey, and, sometimes, omitted them so that his followers could choose whatever course they preferred according to their circumstances. What appears from the saying and conduct of the Prophet ﷺ, in this regard, is that if other necessary activities are likely to suffer on account of fasting on a journey it is advisable to defer it, otherwise one should better keep the fast.

(٩٢٦/٤٣) عَنْ عَائِشَةَ قَالَتْ إِنَّ حَمْزَةَ بْنَ عَمْرِو الْأَسْلَمِيَّ قَالَ لِلنَّبِيِّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ أَصُومُ فِي السَّفَرِ وَكَانَ كَثِيرَ الصِّيَامِ فَقَالَ إِنَّ شِئْتَ فَصُمْ وَإِنْ شِئْتَ فَافْطِرْ.....
(رواه البخارى ومسلم)

(926/43) Sayyidah Ayshah رضي الله عنها narrated that Hamzah bin 'Amr Al-Aslami رضي الله عنه, who used to fast much and often, once asked the Prophet ﷺ, "Should I keep the fasts on a journey?" "The Prophet ﷺ replied, 'You may keep (fast) if you like and you may not if you don't.' (Bukhari and Muslim)

(٩٢٧/٤٤) عَنْ ابْنِ عَبَّاسٍ قَالَ خَرَجَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مِنَ الْمَدِينَةِ إِلَى مَكَّةَ فَصَامَ حَتَّى بَلَغَ عُسْفَانَ ثُمَّ دَعَا بِمَاءٍ فَرَفَعَهُ إِلَى يَدِهِ لِيَرَاهُ النَّاسُ فَافْطَرَ حَتَّى قَدِمَ مَكَّةَ وَذَلِكَ فِي رَمَضَانَ فَكَانَ ابْنُ عَبَّاسٍ يَقُولُ قَدْ صَامَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ وَافْطَرَ فَمَنْ شَاءَ صَامَ وَمَنْ شَاءَ افْطَرَ
(رواه البخارى ومسلم)

(927/44) It is related by Abdullah bin Abbas رضي الله عنه that as the Messenger of Allah ﷺ left Madinah for Makkah, he kept the fasts regularly on the journey till he reached the place called 'Usfan. (From there onwards he stopped fasting, and in order to bring it into the knowledge of everyone), he asked for water, then took the water in his hand and raised it high (so that everyone could see it: He, then, drank the water). Then, the Prophet ﷺ did not keep fasts until he reached Makkah, and all this took place in the month of *Ramadan*. On this very basis, Ibn Abbas رضي الله عنه used to say: "Messenger of Allah ﷺ kept fasts, on a journey as well as he did not. So, (it is permissible) that whoever wants, he can keep fasts on a journey, and whoever does not want, he can omit it." (Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: The journey mentioned in the above Tradition was the one leading to the Victory of Makkah. The Prophet ﷺ had undertaken it in *Ramadan*, 8 A.H.,. During it, he fasted in the beginning, but when on reaching 'Usfan, which was the name of a stream and from where it was only two days' journey to Makkah, it was felt that fighting was imminent, the Prophet ﷺ decided not to keep the fasts. He, thus, omitted fasting and drank water by showing it to everyone so that no one felt oppressed in the mind at

leaving off the fast.

It shows that it is better to keep fast during a journey as long as there is no such consideration. The Prophet ﷺ kept the fasts regularly till he had reached 'Usfan. Had it been commendable to give up the fasts on a journey without a special reason, he would, obviously, not have observed fasting from the time of the commencement of the journey.

Another Tradition referring to the same incident has, also, been quoted in Sahih Muslim, on the authority of Sayyidina Jabir رضي الله عنه. In it, it is added that some people continued to fast even after the Prophet ﷺ had openly omitted it and drank the water for everyone to see. When it was brought to his knowledge, he remarked: "These people are sinners and wrong-doers (for they have acted against the wish and judgement of the Prophet ﷺ, though unwittingly, after it had been made plain to them)."

(٩٢٨/٤٥) عَنْ أَبِي سَعِيدٍ دِ الْخُدْرِيِّ قَالَ غَزَوُ نَامَعَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ لِسِتْ عَشَرَ مَضَتْ مِنْ شَهْرِ رَمَضَانَ فَمِنَّا مَنْ صَامَ وَمِنَّا مَنْ أَفْطَرَ فَلَمْ يَعْجِبِ الصَّائِمُ عَلَى الْمُفْطِرِ وَلَا الْمُفْطِرُ عَلَى الصَّائِمِ..... (رواه مسلم)

(928/45) It is related by Abu Sa'eed Khudri رضي الله عنه "We set out of Jihad in the company of Prophet ﷺ on the 16th of Ramadan and some of us kept the fasts and some did not because of the leave granted to those who are on journey. So neither those who kept the fasts objected (to the action of) those who did not keep them nor those who did not keep the fasts objected (to the action of) those who kept them. (Everyone considered the conduct of the other to be legitimate and in accordance with the provisions of the Shari'ah)." (Muslim)

(٨٢٩/٤٦) عَنْ أَنَسٍ قَالَ كُنَّا مَعَ النَّبِيِّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ فِي السَّفَرِ فَمِنَّا الصَّائِمُ وَمِنَّا الْمُفْطِرُ فَتَزَلْنَا مَنَزِلًا فِي يَوْمٍ حَارٍّ فَسَقَطَ الصَّوَامُونَ وَقَامَ الْمُفْطِرُونَ فَضَرَبُوا لِأَبْنِيَّةٍ وَسَقَوْا الرِّكَابَ فَقَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ ذَهَبَ الْمُفْطِرُونَ الْيَوْمَ بِالْأَجْرِ (رواه البخاري ومسلم)

(929/46) It is related by Anas رضي الله عنه "We were accompanying the Prophet ﷺ on a journey (in which some of us were keeping the

fasts and some of us were not. One day, when it was very hot, we got down to make the halt. So, those of us who were fasting (were so tired and exhausted that they) took to their beds (immediately) and did not move while those who were not fasting got up, pitched the tents for everyone and gave water to the camel. The Prophet ﷺ, then, observed: "Today, non-fasting people won the reward (i.e., they earned a greater reward.)"

(Bukhari and Muslim)

(٩٣٠/٤٧) عَنْ جَابِرٍ قَالَ كَانَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ فِي سَفَرٍ فَرَأَى زَحَامًا وَرَجُلًا قَدْ ظَلَّلَ عَلَيْهِ فَقَالَ مَا هَذَا؟ قَالُوا صَائِمٌ فَقَالَ لَيْسَ مِنَ الْبِرِّ الصَّوْمُ فِي السَّفَرِ (رواه البخاري ومسلم)

(930/47) It is related by Jabir رضي الله عنه "The Messenger of Allah ﷺ was on a journey and he saw a crowd and saw a man for whom a shade had been provided to guard against the sun. 'What is the matter?' the Prophet ﷺ enquired. 'This man is fasting', replied the men. 'his condition is giving anxiety, therefore, a shade is being provided and the crowd has collected.' 'To fast during a journey is not an act of virtue', remarked the Prophet ﷺ."

(Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: It shows that when Allah has permitted to offer the fast while on a journey and the Prophet ﷺ, too, acted upon it, there is no goodness in fasting for Muslims in such a state that they drop on the ground and people have to take care of them. In circumstances like these, it is essential to avail oneself of the concession and put off the fast.

Making Amends for Not Observing an Obligatory Fast

(٩٣١/٤٨) عَنْ مُعَاذَةَ الْعَدَوِيَّةِ أَنَّهَا قَالَتْ لِعَائِشَةَ مَا بَالُ الْحَائِضِ تَقْضِي الصَّوْمَ وَلَا تَقْضِي الصَّلَاةَ قَالَتْ عَائِشَةُ كَانَ يُصَيَّنَا ذَلِكَ فَنُؤْمَرُ بِقَضَاءِ الصَّوْمِ وَلَا نُؤْمَرُ بِقَضَاءِ الصَّلَاةِ (رواه مسلم)

(931/48) Sayyidah Muazah Adaviya a *taba'ee* lady narrated that she enquired from Sayyidah Aishah رضي الله عنها "How is it that while fasts are kept to make up for not having fasted in *Ramadan* on account of the period of menstruation, prayers are

not offered to make up for Salah missed (during those days)?" This is the Command of Allah and the Messenger ﷺ. That is all," replied Ayshah رضي الله عنها. "When we had our menses in the lifetime of the Prophet ﷺ (and could neither fast nor offer prayer), we were ordered to keep the fasts after *Ramadan* on account of not having fasted then but we were not ordered to make up for the missed prayers." (Muslim)

Expiation for Missing a Fast Without a Cogent Reason

(٩٣٢/٤٩) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ بَيْنَمَا نَحْنُ جُلُوسٌ عِنْدَ النَّبِيِّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذْ جَاءَهُ رَجُلٌ فَقَالَ يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ هَلَكْتُ قَالَ وَمَا لَكَ قَالَ وَقَعْتُ عَلَى امْرَأَتِي وَأَنَا صَائِمٌ فَقَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ هَلْ تَجِدُ رَقَبَةً تُعِقُّهَا قَالَ لَا قَالَ فَهَلْ تَسْتَطِيعُ أَنْ تَصُومَ شَهْرَيْنِ مُتَابِعَيْنِ قَالَ لَا قَالَ هَلْ تَجِدُ إِطْعَامَ سِتِّينَ مِسْكِينًا قَالَ لَا..... قَالَ اجْلِسْ وَمَكَتِ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ فَبَيْنَا نَحْنُ عَلَى ذَلِكَ أَتَى النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ بِعَرُوقٍ فِيهِ تَمْرٌ (وَالْعَرُوقُ الْمِغْتَلُ الضَّخْمُ) قَالَ آيِنِ السَّائِلُ قَالَ أَنَا قَالَ خُذْ هَذَا فَتَصَدَّقْ بِهِ فَقَالَ الرَّجُلُ أَعَلَى أَفْقَرِمَنِي يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ فَوَاللَّهِ مَا بَيْنَ لَابَتَيْهَا (يُرِيدُ الْحَرَّتَيْنِ) أَهْلُ بَيْتِ أَفْقَرُ مِنِّي أَهْلُ بَيْتِي فَضَحِكَ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ حَتَّى بَدَتْ أَنْيَابُهُ ثُمَّ قَالَ أَطْعِمُهُ أَهْلَكَ (رواه البخاري و مسلم)

(932/49) Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه related "Once while we were sitting in the company of Messenger of Allah ﷺ a man came and said 'O Messenger of Allah ﷺ! I have been ruined (meaning I have done something that has ruined me)'. What has happened? asked the Prophet ﷺ. The man replied. 'I have copulated with my wife in the state of fasting.' (In another version it is mentioned that it took place in the month of *Ramadan*). The Prophet ﷺ enquired: "Have you or is there in your possession a slave whom you can set free in expiation of the folly?" 'No,' replied the man. 'Then', said the Prophet ﷺ, 'Can you manage to fast for two months consecutively?' That is beyond my endurance,' came the reply. The Prophet ﷺ said 'Then wait. (God may produce a solution to your difficulty)." Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه goes on to

relate) 'the Prophet ﷺ remained seated over there and we, too, were still present when a very large bag of dates arrived for him. The Prophet ﷺ called out, 'Where is the person who had come to enquire about the matter?' 'I am here,' the man replied.' The Prophet ﷺ said to him, 'Take this bag and give it away in charity to such people who may be more needy than me?' By God! Between the rocky table-land on the two sides of Madinah (i.e., in the whole of the town) no family is poorer than mine.' The Prophet ﷺ laughed so much (against his habit) that the teeth at both corners of his lips could be seen. (Customarily, the Prophet ﷺ only smiled when he felt happy or amused). He said: 'All right. Give these dates to the members of your family to eat.'

(Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: If a person who is fasting in *Ramadan* does a thing like that, in gratification of his sexual urge, its atonement is that he set free a slave and if he cannot do so, observe sixty consecutive fasts, and if he cannot even do that, feed sixty poor and needy persons. There is a general agreement among legist-doctors on this point, but it is disputable whether the penalty applies only to sexual intercourse or it will have to be paid by those, also, who deliberately eat or drink during a fast, and, thus, render it void. According to Imam Sha'fee رحمه الله عليه and Imam Ahmad bin Hanbal رحمه الله عليه, this form of atonement is called for only in the event of a sexual intercourse because the incident mentioned in the above Tradition is solely of couplation but Imam Abu Hanifah, Imam Maalik, Sufyan Suri, Abdullah bin Mubarak رحمه الله عليهم and others like them hold that the expiation is, basically, for violating the sanctity of the fast of *Ramadan*. It is the penalty for showing disrespect to the fast againsts one's carnal desires and breaking it, and the nature of offence in both the cases is identical. The atonement, as such, will be bidding on him, also, who voids his fast by eating or drinking intentionally.

A curious part of the incident is that the sacred Prophet ﷺ allowed the Companion ﷺ concerned to make use for himself and his family the bag of dates he had given to him for distrubing to the poor in expiation of his sin when he submitted that his family was the poorest in Madinah. The legists are of the view that it did not mean that amends had been made in that manner. The Prophet ﷺ

had permitted him, at that time, to spend the dates on his family owing to his extreme poverty but the atonement remained due on him. The legal position, also, is that if a person who cannot, for the time being, set free a slave or fast sixty consecutive days or feed sixty persons for deliberately nullifying the fast of *Ramadan*, the atonement will remain due on him and he should have the intention of carrying it out and feeding sixty persons whenever he may afford it. Imam Zuhri and some other legist-doctors, again, believe that while the correct legal position is the same, the Prophet ﷺ treated the Companion's case as an exception, and, thus, the atonement was fulfilled.

The same incident is referred to, a little briefly, in another Tradition related by Sayyidah Ayshah رضى الله عنها and it has, also, been quoted in *Sahih Bukhari* and *Sahih Muslim*.

By What Things a Fast is Not Impaired or Nullified

There are certain things about which it can be imagined that the value of the fast was diminished or it was made void on account of them. But the Prophet ﷺ has made it clear through his sayings or action that it was not so and such errors or occurrences made no difference to the purity or validity of the fast.

(٩٣٣/٥٠) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَنْ

نَسِيَ وَهُوَ صَائِمٌ فَأَكَلَ أَوْ شَرِبَ فَلْيَتِمَّ صَوْمَهُ فَإِنَّمَا أَطْعَمَهُ اللَّهُ وَسَقَاهُ

(رواه البخارى و مسلم)

(933/50) it is related on the authority of Abu Hurayrah رضى الله عنه

"Whoever forgot and was fasting and ate or drank anything (his fast was not nullified by it), (and he should), (therefore), complete the fast for it was from God that he was fed or offered the drink."

(Bukhari and Muslim)

(٩٣٤/٥١) عَنْ أَبِي سَعِيدٍ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ ثَلَاثٌ لَا

يُفْطِرُنَ الصَّائِمَ الْحَجَامَةُ وَالْقَيْئُ وَالْإِخْتِلَامُ

(رواه الترمذى)

(934/51) It is related by Abu Sa'eed Khudri رضى الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "A fast is not made void by three

things: bleeding by means of a horn, vomiting and wet dream."

(Tirmizi)

(٩٣٥/٥٢) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ أَنَّ رَجُلًا سَأَلَ النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ عَنِ الْمُبَاشَرَةِ لِلصَّائِمِ فَرَخَّصَ لَهُ وَأَتَاهُ اخْرَافَسًا لَهُ فَنَهَاهُ فَإِذَا الَّذِي رَخَّصَ لَهُ شَيْخٌ وَإِذَا الَّذِي نَهَاهُ شَابٌّ
(رواه ابوداؤد)

(935/52) Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه narrated that (once) a man came to the Prophet ﷺ and enquired about lying with his wife and embracing her in the state of fasting (i.e., whether it was allowed). The Prophet ﷺ told him that it was allowed. (But) when another man came and asked the same question, he did not permit it to him. The man whom the Prophet ﷺ had told that it was permissible was advanced in years while the other whom the Prophet ﷺ had forbidden was young." (Abu Dawood)

Commentary: The reason for the difference in the replies to the two questioners is self-evident. Since there was a strong likelihood of a young man being overcome with sexual desire and making his fast void, the Prophet ﷺ did not permit it to the young questioner, while as an old man was comparatively safe from such a thing, he told the aged questioner that he could do so.

(٩٣٦/٥٣) عَنْ أَنَسٍ قَالَ جَاءَ رَجُلٌ إِلَى النَّبِيِّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ قَالَ اشْتَكَيْتُ عَيْنِي أَفَأَكْحِلُ وَأَنَا صَائِمٌ قَالَ نَعَمْ
(رواه الترمذی)

(936/53) It is related by Anas رضي الله عنه that a person came to the Prophet ﷺ and asked: "There is some trouble in my eye. Can I apply Collyrium to it while fasting?" "Yes," you can," replied the Prophet ﷺ." (Tirmizi)

Commentary: It shows that the fast is not affected by applying collyrium or any other medicine to the eyes.

(٩٣٧/٥٤) عَنْ عَامِرِ بْنِ رَبِيعَةَ قَالَ رَأَيْتُ النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَالًا أَحْصَى يَتَسَوَّكُ وَهُوَ صَائِمٌ
(رواه الترمذی و ابوداؤد)

(937/54) 'Aamir bin Rabee'ah narrated "On innumerable occasions have I seen the Prophet ﷺ using Miswak in the state of fasting." (Timizi and Abu Dawood)

(٩٣٨/٥٥) عَنْ بَعْضِ أَصْحَابِ النَّبِيِّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ قَالَ لَقَدْ رَأَيْتُ
النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ بِالْعَرَجِ يَصُبُّ عَلَى رَأْسِهِ الْمَاءَ وَهُوَ صَائِمٌ مِنَ
الْعَطَشِ أَوْ مِنَ الْحَرِّ
(رواه مالك و ابو داود)

(938/55) It is related on the authority of some Companions رضي الله عنهم that they saw at 'Araj that the Prophet ﷺ was fasting and pouring water) over his head owing to (the intensity of) the heat or thirst.
(Mowatta Imam Malik and Abu Dawood)

Commentary: There is no harm in pouring water over the head or taking other similar measures for relief from the severity of thirst or heat during a fast. It is not inconsistent with the spirit of fasting. The Prophet ﷺ, sometimes, did such things to express his humbleness and utter helplessness which is the essence of servitude. He, also, wanted to set an example of ease and facility to his followers.

'Araj was the name of a village situated on the road from Madinah to Makkah. This incident would, therefore, have taken place during the journey of Victory of Makkah which was undertaken, as we have seen, in the month of *Ramadan* and, in which, the Prophet ﷺ had fasted regularly till reaching 'Usfan.

(٨٣٩/٥٦) عَنْ جَابِرِ بْنِ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ قَالَ قَالَ عُمَرُ بْنُ الْخَطَّابِ هَشَشْتُ فَقَبَّلْتُ
وَأَنَا صَائِمٌ فَقُلْتُ يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَنَعْتُ الْيَوْمَ أَمْرًا عَظِيمًا قَبَّلْتُ وَأَنَا صَائِمٌ قَالَ
أَرَأَيْتَ لَوْ مَضَضْتَ مِنَ الْمَاءِ وَأَنْتَ صَائِمٌ قُلْتُ لَا بَأْسَ قَالَ فَمَهْ
(رواه ابو داود)
(939/56) Sayyidina Jabir bin Abdullah رضي الله عنه related to us that Sayyidina Umar bin al-Khattab رضي الله عنه had told him "once (while fasting) I was strongly seized with desire and kissed (my wife). Thereafter, I went to the Prophet ﷺ and said to him: O Messenger of Allah ﷺ! I have committed a grave mistake today. I have kissed (my wife) while keeping fast'. The Prophet ﷺ said: 'Tell me, if you take water in your mouth and rinse it, (will it spoil your fast)?' 'No,' it will not,' I replied. 'Then', observed the Prophet ﷺ, 'What harm can be caused (by mere kissing)?' "
(Abu Dawood)

Commentary: From it, we not only learn that kissing alone does not make a fast void or impair it but, also, the general rule that

what really nullifies the fast is eating, drinking or coition and jsut as the mere putting of a thing to eat or drink in the mouth which as one would say, is a prelude to eating or drinking does not detract from the value of a fast, in the same way a fast is not spoiled or nullified by acts like kissing and embracing which are only the preliminaries of sexulal couplation. However, if a man fears that he might not be able to control his passions, it will be advisable for him to abstain from such things while fasting.

NAFL FASTS

The fasts of the whole of *Ramadan* are among the fundamental duties of Islam which, like *Salah* and *Zakah* must be observed by a Muslim aspiring to be a faithful bondsman. But, apart from them, the Islamic Canonic Law has, also, provided for Nafl or supererogatory fasts, in the manner of other supererogatory forms of worship, and laid a particular stress on them. The sacred Prophet ﷺ used to exhort the people to observe supererogatory fasts not only by word but, also, by deed. At the same time, he took care to see that they did not exceed the limits of moderation and began to pay the same attention to supererogatory fasts as to the obligatory ones, but showing due respect to the Divine Commands, kept the obligatory duties and supererogatory observances in their proper places and maintained the distinction between them.

Zakah of The Body

(٩٤٠/٥٧) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ لِكُلِّ

شَيْءٍ زَكَاةٌ وَزَكَاةُ الْجَسَدِ الصَّوْمُ (رواه ابن ماجه)

(940/57) It is related by Abu Hurayrah ؓ that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "There is a *Zakah* of everything (on paying which it becomes clean), and the *Zakah* of the body is fasting."

(Ibn Majah)

Abundance of Supererogatory Fasts in The Month of *Sha'ban*

(٩٤١/٥٨) عَنْ عَائِشَةَ قَالَتْ كَانَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَصُومُ

حَتَّى نَقُولَ لَا يُفْطِرُ وَيُفْطِرُ حَتَّى نَقُولَ لَا يَصُومُ وَمَا رَأَيْتُ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى

اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِسْتَكْمَلَ صِيَامَ شَهْرٍ قَطُّ إِلَّا رَمَضَانَ وَمَا رَأَيْتُهُ فِي شَهْرِ أَكْثَرَ

مِنْهُ صِيَامًا فِي شَعْبَانَ (رواه البخاري و مسلم)

(941/58) Sayyidah Ayshah رضى الله عنها narrated that the practice of the Prophet ﷺ (about supererogatory fasts) was that, (sometimes), he began to fast successively, without a break, till we thought that he will not leave off any, (sometimes) he did not fast and passed his days continuously without fasting till we thought that now he will never keep fast. (She added): 'I never saw that the Prophet ﷺ fast for the whole of a month except the *Ramadan* and I never saw that he kept more supererogatory fasts in any month except that of *Sha'ban*.' (In some other versions of the same Tradition it is mentioned that he fasted (nearly) for the whole of *Sha'ban*). (Bukhar and Muslim)

Commentary: The first part of the above Tradition shows that there was no fixed principle of the holy Prophet ﷺ about supererogatory fasts. Sometimes, he fasted uninterruptedly for days on and, sometimes, remained continuously without a fast, the object being that it did not become difficult for the *Ummah* to follow his example and there was enough latitude for everyone to take pattern by whatever of his practice or course of conduct that suited his circumstances. The other part tells that the Prophet ﷺ observed the whole month's fasts, regularly and from first to last, only in *Ramadan* which have been prescribed as obligatory duty by God. In *Sha'ban*, indeed, he kept more fasts than in any other month except *Ramadan*.

Six Fasts After *Ramadan*

(٩٤٢/٥٩) عَنْ أَبِي أَيُّوبَ الْأَنْصَارِيِّ أَنَّ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ

قَالَ مَنْ صَامَ رَمَضَانَ ثُمَّ اتَّبَعَهُ سِتًّا مِنْ شَوَّالٍ كَانَ كَصِيَامِ الدَّهْرِ (رواه مسلم)

(942/59) It is related by Abu Ayub Ansari رضى الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Whoever observed the fasts of *Ramadan*, and, after it, observed six supererogatory fasts in the month of *Shawwal*¹, it will be equal to fasting forever (i.e., through out the year). " (Muslim)

Commentary: If there occur only 29 days in *Ramadan*, God, by His Mercy, gives the reward of 30 fasts, after including the 6

①. The tenth month of the Islamic year, on the first day of which the festival of Eid is celebrated

supererogatory fasts of *Shawwal*, the number of fasts becomes 36. In accordance with the benevolent principle of the Almighty of giving ten times reward on every good deed, ten times of 36 becomes 360, and there are, in any case, less than 360 days in a year, according to the Islamic Calendar. By this account, anyone who keeps 6 supererogatory fasts in the month of *Shawwal*, after observing the fasts of whole of *Ramadan*, becomes deserving of the recompense that is on 360 fasts. From the point of view of reward and recompense, therefore, it is equal to fasting throughout the year.

Three Supererogatory Fasts In a Month Are Enough

(٩٤٣/٦٠) عَنْ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ عَمْرٍو ابْنِ الْعَاصِ قَالَ قَالَ لِي رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَا عَبْدَ اللَّهِ أَلَمْ أَخْبَرَ أَنَّكَ تَصُومُ النَّهَارَ وَتَقُومُ اللَّيْلَ فَقُلْتُ بَلَى يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ قَالَ فَلَا تَفْعَلْ صُمْ وَأَفْطِرْ وَقُمْ وَنَمْ فَإِنَّ لِبَاسِكَ عَلَيْكَ حَقًّا وَإِنَّ لِعَيْنِكَ عَلَيْكَ حَقًّا وَإِنَّ لِرِزْقِكَ عَلَيْكَ حَقًّا وَإِنَّ لِرِزْقِكَ عَلَيْكَ حَقًّا وَإِنَّ لِرِزْقِكَ عَلَيْكَ حَقًّا حَقًّا لَا صَامَ مَنْ صَامَ الدَّهْرَ صَوْمَ ثَلَاثَةِ أَيَّامٍ مِنْ كُلِّ شَهْرٍ صَوْمَ الدَّهْرِ كُلِّهِ صُمْ كُلِّ شَهْرٍ صَوْمَ الدَّهْرِ كُلِّهِ صُمْ كُلِّ شَهْرٍ ثَلَاثَةَ أَيَّامٍ وَأَقْرَأِ الْقُرْآنَ فِي كُلِّ شَهْرٍ قُلْتُ إِنِّي أُطِيقُ أَكْثَرَ مِنْ ذَلِكَ قَالَ صُمْ أَفْضَلَ الصُّومِ صَوْمَ دَاوُدَ صِيَامُ يَوْمٍ وَأَفْطَارُ يَوْمٍ وَأَقْرَأْ فِي كُلِّ سَبْعٍ لَيْالٍ مَرَّةً وَلَا تَزِدْ عَلَى ذَلِكَ

(رواه البخارى و مسلم)

(943/60) Abdullah bin 'Amr bin al-Aas رضي الله عنه narrated that the Prophet ﷺ said to him: "I have heard that you have made it your practice to fast during the day and offer Nafil prayers throughout the night. Is it true?" "Yes, Messenger of Allah ﷺ", he replied. "I do so." "Give it up", observed the Prophet ﷺ. "Keep the fasts as well as leave them. In the same way, pray in the night as well as sleep for your body, too, has a claim on you. (You have no right to tax it to excess and ignore its legitimate demands). Likewise, your eyes have a claim on you. (You must sleep and give them rest). Likewise, your wife has a claim on your guests and visitors, also, have a claim on you. (Listen), whoever fasts continually, does not, in a way, keep fast at all.

To keep three supererogatory fasts every month in equivalent to fasting throughout the year. You should, therefore, fast only three days in a month and complete one (recitation) (of the) Qur'an in a month (in *Tahajjud*).¹ (Abdullah bin Amr رضي الله عنه narrated that) he submitted: "I possess greater strength than that. (Please allow me more)". The Prophet ﷺ said: "Then follow the practice of Prophet Dawood عليه السلام, in fasting, that is keeping fast on one day and eat on next (i.e., fast on alternate days), and complete one (recitation of the) Qur'an in *Tahajjud* in seven nights). Do not exert yourself in excess of that."

(Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: Sayyidina Abdullah bin 'Amr bin al-'Aas رضي الله عنه had a great ardour and enthusiasm for worship. It was his regular habit to fast during the day and offer *Nafil* prayers in the night during which he completed one recitation of the Qur'an. When the Prophet ﷺ learnt about it, he urged moderation as the above Tradition tells. He told him that his body, his family and his friends, too, had a claim on him which should not be disregarded. At first, he advised him to keep 3 supererogatory fasts and complete one recitation of the Qur'an in *Tahajjud* in a month, but when he submitted that he could endure more without any serious harm, the Prophet ﷺ allowed him to fast on alternate days, in the manner of the Prophet Dawood عليه السلام, and complete one recitation of the Qur'an in the nightly *Nafil* prayers in a week.

Evidently, the restriction was imposed by the Prophet ﷺ not because there was anything wrong in worshipping much but solely out of kindness and affection in the same way as children are told not to carry a heavy load. Hence, when Abdullah bin 'Amr رضي الله عنه pleaded that he was capable of more than that, the Prophet ﷺ permitted him to fast on alternate days instead of 3 days in a month. We, further, learn, on the authority of *Tirmizi*, that the Prophet ﷺ had, later on, allowed to complete the recitation of the Qur'an only in 5 days, and, to some other companions, he had even granted the permission to complete it in 3 days.¹

(٩٤٤/٦١) عَنْ أَبِي قَتَادَةَ أَنَّ رَجُلًا أَتَى النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ فَقَالَ

①. It is reported in *Jama-ul-fuwayid* from *Musand Ahmad* and *Tabarani* that the Prophet ﷺ had given this permission to Sa'eed bin Munzar Ansari رضي الله عنه.

كَيْفَ تَصُومُ؟ فَغَضِبَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مِنْ قَوْلِهِ فَلَمَّا رَأَى
عُمَرُ غَضَبَهُ قَالَ رَضِينَا بِاللَّهِ رَبًّا وَبِالْإِسْلَامِ دِينًا وَبِمُحَمَّدٍ نَبِيًّا نَعُوذُ بِاللَّهِ مِنْ
غَضَبِ اللَّهِ وَغَضَبِ رَسُولِهِ فَجَعَلَ عُمَرُ يُرَدِّدُ هَذَا الْكَلَامَ حَتَّى سَكَنَ غَضَبُهُ
فَقَالَ عُمَرُ يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ كَيْفَ مَنْ يَصُومُ الدَّهْرَ كُلَّهُ قَالَ لَا صَامَ وَلَا أَفْطَرَ أَوْ
قَالَ لَمْ يَصُمْ وَلَمْ يَفْطِرْ قَالَ كَيْفَ مَنْ يَصُومُ يَوْمَيْنِ وَيُفْطِرُ يَوْمًا قَالَ وَيُطِيقُ
ذَلِكَ أَحَدٌ؟ قَالَ كَيْفَ مَنْ يَصُومُ يَوْمًا وَيُفْطِرُ يَوْمًا قَالَ ذَلِكَ صَوْمُ دَاوُدَ
قَالَ كَيْفَ مَنْ يَصُومُ يَوْمًا وَيُفْطِرُ يَوْمَيْنِ قَالَ وَدِدْتُ أَنِّي طَوَّقْتُ ذَلِكَ ثُمَّ قَالَ
رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ ثَلَاثٌ مِنْ كُلِّ شَهْرٍ وَرَمَضَانَ إِلَى رَمَضَانَ
فَهَذَا صِيَامُ الدَّهْرِ كُلِّهِ وَصِيَامُ يَوْمٍ عَرَفَةَ أَحْتَسِبُ عَلَى اللَّهِ أَنْ يُكَفِّرَ السَّنَةَ
الَّتِي قَبْلَهُ وَالسَّنَةَ الَّتِي بَعْدَهُ وَصِيَامُ يَوْمٍ عَاشُورَاءَ أَحْتَسِبُ عَلَى اللَّهِ أَنْ
يُكَفِّرَ السَّنَةَ الَّتِي قَبْلَهُ

(رواه مسلم)

(944/61) Sayyidina Abu Qatadah رضي الله عنه said that a man came to the Prophet ﷺ and asked him how he fasted. He was angry at what he said, and when Sayyidina Umar رضي الله عنه observed his anger he said:

"We are satisfied with Allah as Lord, with Islam as religion and with Muhammad as Prophet ﷺ. We seek refuge in Allah from the anger of Allah and from the anger of His Messenger ﷺ."

رَضِينَا بِاللَّهِ رَبًّا وَبِالْإِسْلَامِ
دِينًا وَبِمُحَمَّدٍ نَبِيًّا نَعُوذُ بِاللَّهِ
مِنْ غَضَبِ اللَّهِ وَغَضَبِ
رَسُولِهِ.

He kept on repeating these words till his anger calmed down, then asked, "Messenger of Allah ﷺ what is the position of one who observes perpetual fast?" He said, "May he not fast or break his fast!" or he said, "He has neither fasted nor broken his fast." He asked, "What is the position of one who fasts two days out of every three?" The Prophet ﷺ said, "Is anyone able to do that?" He asked what was the position of one who fasted every second day and was told that was the fast Dawood عليه السلام observed. He asked what was the position of one who fasted one day out every three, and the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said, "I wish I were given power to observe that." Then he said, "The observance of three days' fast every month and of *Ramadan*

every year is a perpetual fast. I seek from Allah that fasting on the day of *Arafah* may atone for the sins of the preceding and the coming year, and I seek from Allah that fasting on the day of *Ashura* may atone for the sins of the preceding year." (Muslim)

Commentary: Some points need to be explained. Someone asked the Prophet ﷺ how he kept the (optional) fasts and he was displeased with that question just as a teacher is with a student's improper question. He should have asked about himself that how he should observe optional fasts. Some of the practices of the Prophet ﷺ were exclusive to him and beyond other people.

Sayyidina Umar ؓ observed his displeasure and tried to make amends on behalf of the Muslim body. He then asked about optional prayers (*Salah*).

The Prophet ﷺ did not approve of anyone keep fast everyday.

He himself suggested that for the general Muslims it was enough to keep the fasts of Ramadan and three optional fasts each month. They would fetch reward for thirty fasts; and hence they would be like permanent fasting.

He also recommended the fasts on the days of *Arafah* and too on the days of *Ashura*.

The fast on the day of *Arafah* (10th of *Zul Hajjah*) is for those who do not perform Hajj. For the pilgrims the approved worship on that day is the standing at the plain of *Arafah*, the offering of *Zuhr* and *Asr* together in brief. They must not offer the sunnah of *Zuhr*. If they fast on that day, it would be inconvenient to them, hence it is not preferred that they fast on that day. (In fact, one hadith disallows them). The Prophet ﷺ showed through his conduct too that one must not fast; he drank milk on the plain of *Arafah* on the 9th *Zul Hajjah* while he was riding a camel so that everyone may observe that he was not fasting.

Those who do not perform the *Hajj* are recommended to fast on this day and obtain blessings and mercy. Similarly, on the *Id* day, they are required to make the sacrifice.

The fast on the day of *Ashurah* is important because it was obligatory before the fasting of *Ramadan* became obligatory. When fasting in *Ramadan* was prescribed the command to the fast on the *Ashura* was rescinded. We will see the Ahadith later on.

Practice of The Prophet ﷺ Concerning Three Fasts in a Month

(٩٤٥/٦٢) عَنْ حَفْصَةَ قَالَتْ أَرَبَعَ لَمْ تَكُنْ يَدْعُهُنَّ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ صِيَامَ عَاشُورَاءَ وَالْعَشْرِ وَثَلَاثَةِ أَيَّامٍ مِنْ كُلِّ شَهْرٍ وَرَكْعَتَانِ قَبْلَ الْفَجْرِ
(رواه النسائي)

(945/62) Sayyidah Hafsa رضي الله عنها related to us that there are four things which the Messenger of Allah ﷺ never omitted; (i) the fast of 'Aashura¹; (ii) the fast of the 'Ashra of Zul-Hajjah² (i.e., from the 1st of Zul-Hajjah to Yaum-ul-'Arafa i.e., the 9th of Zul-Hajjah), (iii) the three fasts of every month; and (iv) the two Rak'at before Fajr. (Nasai)

Commentary: What it shows is that though the four things were not obligatory, the Prophet ﷺ observed them regularly.

(٩٤٦/٦٣) عَنْ مُعَاذَةَ الْعَدَوِيَّةِ أَنَّهَا قَالَتْ سَأَلْتُ عَائِشَةَ أَكَانَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَصُومُ مِنْ كُلِّ شَهْرٍ ثَلَاثَةَ أَيَّامٍ قَالَتْ نَعَمْ فَقُلْتُ لَهَا مِنْ أَيِّ أَيَّامِ الشَّهْرِ كَانَ يَصُومُ قَالَتْ لَمْ يَكُنْ يُبَالِي مِنْ أَيِّ أَيَّامِ الشَّهْرِ يَصُومُ
(رواه مسلم)

(946/63) Mu'azah Adawiyah narrated "I asked Sayyidah Ayshah رضي الله عنها, 'Did the Prophet ﷺ fast on three days every month?' 'Yes', she replied. 'He fasted on three days every month'. I, then, asked, 'In which part of the month (and on what dates)?' 'He did not care in which part of the month he fasted,' she replied."

(Muslim)

Commentary: In some Traditions it is stated that the Prophet ﷺ used to keep fast on three days in the beginning of every month while, in others, that he did so on the 13th, 14th and 15th of it. In some other reports, again, fasting on 3 days in a week is mentioned. But, as it is distinctly indicated in Sayyidah Ayshah's statement, none of these was his regular practice. The Prophet ﷺ often, had to travel and, then, there were so many other things which did not make it possible for him to have any fixed days for *Nafl* fasts. Moreover, if he fasted regularly on certain days or

①. Denoting the 10th day of the month of Moharrum.

②. The name of last month of the Islamic year on the tenth day of which month is the festival of Eidul Adha.

dates, it would not have been easy for his followers, with divergent circumstances, to take after him in this regard, and would have, further, given rise to the misunderstanding that these fasts, too, were among the essential duties of the Faith. In fine, for reasons like these, the Prophet ﷺ did not abide by any particular days or dates. It was the best and wisest course for him but as far as the Companions were concerned, he, often, exhorted them to keep the three fasts of the month on the 13th, 14th and 15th of the lunar dates.

Fasts of *Ayyam-ul Beed*

(٩٤٧/٦٤) عَنْ أَبِي ذَرٍّ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَا أَبَا ذَرٍّ إِذَا

صُمْتَ مِنَ الشَّهْرِ ثَلَاثَةَ أَيَّامٍ فَصُمْ ثَلَاثَ عَشْرَةٍ وَأَرْبَعَ عَشْرَةَ وَخَمْسَ عَشْرَةَ

(رواه الترمذی والنسائی)

(947/64) Abu Zarr Ghifari رضی اللہ عنہ narrated that the Prophet ﷺ said to him: "O Abu Zarr! When you keep the three monthly fasts, keep them on the 13th, 14th and 15th (of the month)."

(Tirmizi, Nasai)

(٩٤٨/٦٥) عَنْ قَتَادَةَ بْنِ مِلْحَانَ قَالَ كَانَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ

يَأْمُرُنَا أَنْ نَصُومَ الْبَيْضَ ثَلَاثَ عَشْرَةٍ وَأَرْبَعَ عَشْرَةَ وَخَمْسَ عَشْرَةَ وَقَالَ

هُوَ كَهَيْئَةِ الدَّهْرِ (رواه ابوداؤد والنسائی)

(948/65) Qatadah bin Milhan related to us that the Prophet ﷺ used to tell us to fast on *Ayyam al-Beed*¹ i.e., on the 13th, 14th and 15th of the month, and he said that to fast on these three days of the month was equal in value to fasting forever (i.e., throughout the year).

(Abu Dawood and Nasai)

Commentary: The Traditions reproduced above show, firstly, that the faithful bondsman who observes 3 supererogatory fasts every month will merit the reward equal in value to fasting on all thirty days of the month, and secondly, that it is better to observe the fasts on the 13th, 14th and 15th of the month.

①. Meaning days of the month during the nights of which the moon is at its brightest, i.e., the 13th, 14th and 15th of the month according to the lunar calendar.

The fast of 'Aashurah

In some of the preceding narratives the virtues of the fast of 'Aashurah and the special care the Prophet ﷺ took to observe it have been mentioned in passing. The Traditions that follow appertain specifically to it and, also, deal with the historical significance of that day.

(٩٤٩/٦٦) عَنْ ابْنِ عَبَّاسٍ أَنَّ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ قَدِمَ الْمَدِينَةَ فَوَجَدَ الْيَهُودَ صِيَامًا يَوْمَ عَاشُورَاءَ فَقَالَ لَهُمْ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَا هَذَا الْيَوْمُ الَّذِي تَصُومُونَهُ فَقَالُوا هَذَا يَوْمٌ عَظِيمٌ أَنْجَى اللَّهُ فِيهِ مُوسَى وَقَوْمَهُ وَغَرَّقَ فِرْعَوْنَ وَقَوْمَهُ فَصَامَهُ مُوسَى شُكْرًا فَتَحْنُ نَصُومُهُ فَقَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ فَتَحْنُ أَحَقُّ وَأَوْلَى بِمُوسَى مِنْكُمْ فَصَامَهُ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ وَأَمَرَ بِصِيَامِهِ (رواه البخاري ومسلم)

(949/66) Ibn-i-Abbas رضي الله عنه narrated that when the Messenger of Allah ﷺ came to Madinah he found that the Jews fasted on *Yaum Al-Aashurah*, i.e., the 10th of Moharrum. He enquired from them what was the significance of the day (in their religious tradition) that they fasted on it. They replied: 'It is a very great day with us. On it, the Lord had delivered Musa عليه السلام and the Children of Israel from the enemy and drown the Pharoah and his army, and Musa عليه السلام used to fast on this day as a mark of gratitude to the Almighty, and we, too fast on it as his loyal followers.' The Prophet ﷺ thereupon remarked: 'Musa عليه السلام has a greater claim upon me than upon you.' He, then, fasted on that day himself and instructed his followers to do the same." (Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: One can imagine from the above Tradition that the sacred Prophet ﷺ began to observe the fast on the day of 'Aashurah only when he had come to live in Madinah, after the Migration, though it is clearly stated in Sayyidah Ayshah's رضي الله عنها narrative, quoted, again, in *Sahih Bukhari* and *Sahih Muslim* that the Quraysh of Makkah fasted on the day of 'Aashurah even during the days of Ignorance and the holy Prophet ﷺ, also, kept it in Makkah, before the migration. Later when the Prophet ﷺ migrated to Madinah, he kept that fast there, too, and ordered his

followers to act likewise.

In fact, the day of '*Aashurah* commanded much reverence among the Quraish, also, in the days of Ignorance. The covering of the House of Ka'bah was changed on that day and the Quraish fasted on it. Perhaps some reports of the sayings of Sayyidina Ibrahim عليه السلام and Sayyidina Ismail عليه السلام regarding the day of '*Aashurah* had reached the Quraish and it was the custom of the holy Prophet ﷺ to join in the good things the Quraish did owing to their affinity with the community of Ibrahim عليه السلام. He, consequently, participated in the *Hajj* and, also, kept the fast of '*Aashurah* with the Quraish but did not enjoin it upon others. Later, when the Prophet ﷺ came to Madinah and saw the Jews observing the fast of '*Aashurah* and learnt from them that it was the blessed day on which God had drowned Pharoah and his people and delivered Sayyidina Musa عليه السلام and his followers from them, and, according to reports mentioned in *Musnad Ahmad* etc., the Ark of Nuh عليه السلام also, had, rested on the Mount of Ararat on that very day, he took a greater interest in the fast, and also, ordered the Muslims, in general, to fast on that day. In some Traditions it is stated that the Prophet ﷺ enjoined it with such force and emphasis as is, generally, done in case of an obligatory or near-obligatory duty. Thus, it is related in *Sahih Bukhari* and *Sahih Muslim*, on the authority of Rubbi'ah bint Mu'awwiz and Salmah bint Aku, that on the morning of '*Aashurah*, the Prophet ﷺ send word to the Ansars living in the settlements of Madinah that those who might not have eaten or drunk anything up to that time should fast on that day while those who had eaten or drunk something should from that time abstain from it for the rest of the day and behave like fasting men.

These reports have induced many a legist to conclude that in the beginning the fast of '*Aashurah* was *Wajib* i.e., essential or binding but later when the fasts of *Ramadan* were prescribed, its obligatoriness was annulled and its position became that of a supererogatory fast about which we have already seen the Prophet's ﷺ saying "I hope that by its auspiciousness the sins of the previous year will be removed." Even after it, the Prophet ﷺ continued to attach the greatest importance to it after the fasts of *Ramadan*.

(٩٥٠/٢٧) عَنْ ابْنِ عَبَّاسٍ قَالَ مَا رَأَيْتُ النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَتَحَرَّى صِيَامَ يَوْمٍ فَضَّلَهُ عَلَى غَيْرِهِ إِلَّا هَذَا الْيَوْمَ يَوْمَ عَاشُورَاءَ وَهَذَا الشَّهْرَ يَعْنِي شَهْرَ رَمَضَانَ (رواه البخارى و مسلم)

(950/67) Abdullah bin Abbas رضي الله عنه narrated "I did not see that the Prophet ﷺ showed much concern for the fast of any day of virtue and excellence save of the day of 'Aashurah and of the blessed month of *Ramadan*." (Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: The purport of the above Tradition is that it was felt by Abdullah bin Abbas رضي الله عنه from the practice of the Prophet ﷺ that among the supererogatory fasts, he attached the greatest importance to the fast of 'Aashurah."

(٩٥١/٦٨) عَنْ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ عَبَّاسٍ قَالَ حِينَ صَامَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَوْمَ عَاشُورَاءَ وَأَمَرَبِصِيًّا بِهِ قَالُوا يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ إِنَّهُ يَوْمٌ يَعِظُمُهُ الْيَهُودُ وَالنَّصَارَى فَقَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ فَإِذَا كَانَ الْعَامُ الْمُقْبِلُ إِنْ شَاءَ اللَّهُ صُمْنَا الْيَوْمَ التَّاسِعَ قَالَ فَلَمْ يَأْتِ الْعَامُ الْمُقْبِلُ حَتَّى تُوَفَّى رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ (رواه مسلم)

(951/68) It is related on the authority of Abdullah bin Abbas رضي الله عنه that when the Messenger of Allah ﷺ made it his principle and custom to observe the fast of 'Aashurah, and, also, bade the Muslims to do the same, some Companions رضي الله عنهم said to him: "O Messenger of Allah ﷺ! The Jews and Christians celebrate this day as a festival (and, in a way, it has become their national and religious characteristic and when we keep fast on that particular day a resemblance is created between us and them. Can no alteration, then, be made in it so that the question of resemblance did not arise)?" The Prophet ﷺ replied: "God willing, when the next year comes we will fast on the 9th." "But", adds Abdullah bin Abbas رضي الله عنه, "The Prophet ﷺ died before (the arrival of) the month of *Muharrum* of the next year." (Muslim)

Commentary: The decision to make a change in the date of the fast of 'Aashurah could not be acted upon in the Prophet's ﷺ lifetime but the *Ummah* recieved the guidance from it that such a similitude and assoiciation should preferably be avoided.

The resolve to keep fast on the 9th of Muharram could mean two things, both of which have been explained by the commentators. Firstly, that the Prophet ﷺ and, with him, the *Ummah* will observe the fast on the 9th instead of the 10th of *Muharrum*, and, secondly, that they will fast on the 9th in addition to the 10th of *Muharrum*, and, thus, their conduct will become different from that of the Jews and Christians. A majority of theologians, however, have preferred the latter view and held that, in addition to the day of *Aashurah*, fast should, also, be kept on the 9th of *Muharrum*, and if it may not be possible due to some reason to fast on the 9th of *Muharrum* then it should be done on the 11th.

Nevertheless, since in our time the Jews and Christians do not observe fast on the day of 'Aashurah, i.e., the 10th of *Muharrum*, and, in truth, they do not follow the lunar calendar at all, the question of similitude and partnership has, in our view, ceased to have a relevance. It should, therefore, not be necessary, now, to, keep fast on the 9th or 11th of *Muharrum*.

The Fast of *Arafah*

(٩٥٢/٦٩) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَا مِنْ أَيَّامٍ أَحَبُّ إِلَى اللَّهِ أَنْ يُتَعَبَّدَ فِيهَا مِنْ عَشْرِ ذِي الْحِجَّةِ يَعْدِلُ صِيَامُ كُلِّ يَوْمٍ بِصِيَامِ سَنَةٍ وَقِيَامُ كُلِّ لَيْلَةٍ مِنْهَا بِقِيَامِ لَيْلَةِ الْقَدْرِ (رواه الترمذی)

(952/69) Sayyidina Abu Hurayrah ؓ said that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "There are no days on which Allah likes better to be worshipped than the ten days of *Zul-Hajjah*. Fasting observed on each of these days is equivalent to a year's fasting, and salah during each of these nights is equivalent to salah during *Laylatul Qadr*." (Tirmizi)

Commentary: We have explained in a previous *Hadith* that these refer to the nine days of *Zul Hajjah* because it is forbidden to fast on *Id* day which is on the tenth.

(٩٥٣/٧٠) عَنْ أَبِي قَتَادَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ صِيَامُ يَوْمٍ عَرَفَةَ إِنِّي أَحْتَسِبُ عَلَى اللَّهِ أَنْ يُكَفِّرَ السَّنَةَ الَّتِي بَعْدَهُ وَالسَّنَةَ الَّتِي قَبْلَهُ (رواه الترمذی)

(953/70) It is related by Abu Qatadah رضي الله عنه that the Prophet ﷺ said: "I confidently expect from God that the fast of the day of 'Arafah (i.e., the 9th of Zul-Hajjah) will be an atonement for the sins of the previous year and of the subsequent year." (Tirmizi)

Commentary: From the other sayings as well as the practice of the sacred Prophet ﷺ it appears that this exhortation for the fast of Arafah is not for the pilgrims¹ who are camping in 'Arafat on the day of Arafah for performing the Hajj. For them, the right course is not to fast on that day.

Observation: Some people doubt such tidings which promise great reward. They should not do so especially when the *Hadith* is authentic.

The Fast of 15th of *Sha'ban*

(٩٥٤/٧١) عَنْ عَلِيٍّ رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا كَانَتْ لَيْلَةُ النِّصْفِ مِنْ شَعْبَانَ فَقُومُوا لَيْلَهَا وَصُومُوا نَهَارَهَا فَإِنَّ اللَّهَ يَنْزِلُ فِيهَا لَغُرُوبِ الشَّمْسِ إِلَى السَّمَاءِ الدُّنْيَا فَيَقُولُ أَلَا مِنْ مُسْتَغْفِرٍ فَأَغْفِرُ لَهُ أَلَا مُسْتَرْزِقٍ فَأَرْزُقَهُ أَلَا مُبْتَغَى فَأَعْطِيَهُ أَلَا كَذَا أَلَا كَذَا حَتَّى يَطْلُعَ الْفَجْرُ

(رواه ابن ماجه)

(954/71) It is related by Sayyidina Ali رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "When the 15th night of *Sha'ban* comes, on that night offer Nafl prayers in the presence of the Lord and keep fast on that day for, in that night, soon after sunset, the special mercy of Allah descends on the First Heaven and He proclaims, 'Is there a bondsman who begs forgiveness from Me that I may forgive him? Is there a bondsman who begs sustenance from Me that I may grant him sustenance? Is there a bondsman in distress who begs good health and well-being from Me that I may bestow good health and well-being upon him?' In the same way, God calls different kinds of needy people to supplicate to Him for their needs at that time so that He may grant their petitions. From sunset till dawn, in that night, the Mercy of the Lord calls His bondsmen in a like manner." (Ibn Majah)

Commentary: On the basis of this report the practice obtains among the religious-minded Muslims everywhere to keep fast on

①. Meaning the pilgrims to the House of Ka'bah for carrying out the Hajj.

the whole, feel that, from the point of view of documentary evidence of transmission, it is a very weak kind of report. About one of its narrators, Abu Bakr bin Abdullah, the doctors of formal criticism of the Traditions have even gone to the extent of saying that he used to concoct reports.

Only this solitary report is found in the standard compilations about the fasts of the 15th of *Sha'ban*, but as regards prayer, supplication and repentance in the night of the 15th of that month, a number of other Traditions have, also, been related.

Though the line of narrators of none of these is reliable, as judged by the criterion laid down by the scholars of the Traditions, the number of such narratives is quite large and these have been related on the authority of different Companions, and, as such, some scholars like Ibn-is-Salah are disinclined to hold them as wholly unfounded.

Supererogatory Fasts on Particular Days

In the forgoing Traditions, Muslims have been urged to keep supererogatory fasts in some particular months of the year and some specific dates of the month. In the same way, they have also been exhorted to fast on certain days of the week. Guidance, in this regard, is, also, available from the practice of the sacred Prophet ﷺ.

(٩٥٥/٧٢) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ تُعْرَضُ

الْأَعْمَالُ يَوْمَ الْإِثْنَيْنِ وَالْخَمِيسِ فَأُحِبُّ أَنْ يُعْرَضَ عَمَلِي وَأَنَا صَائِمٌ

(رواه الترمذی)

(955/72) It is related by Abu Hurayrah ؓ that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Deeds are presented (before) God on (every) Monday and Thursday, and I want that I am fasting when my deeds are presented." (Tirmizi)

(٩٥٦/٧٣) عَنْ عَائِشَةَ قَالَتْ كَانَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَصُومُ

(رواه الترمذی والنسائی)

يَوْمَ الْإِثْنَيْنِ وَالْخَمِيسِ

(956/73) It is related by Sayyidah Ayyshah ؓ that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ kept fasts on Monday and Thursday."

(Tirmizi and Nasai)

(٩٥٧/٧٤) عَنْ أَبِي قَتَادَةَ أَنَّ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ سُئِلَ عَنْ يَوْمِ
الْإِثْنَيْنِ فَقَالَ فِيهِ وَلِدْتُ وَفِيهِ أُنْزِلَ عَلَيَّ
(رواه مسلم)

(957/74) Abu Qatadah رضي الله عنه narrated that (once) the Prophet ﷺ was asked about fasting on Mondays, and he replied: "I was born on Monday and it was on Monday that the revelation of the Qur'an to me began."
(Muslim)

Commentary: It shows that Monday is a most propitious day. It was on it that the sacred Prophet ﷺ was born and the revelation of the Word of God began. To fast on it, naturally, is highly commendable and praiseworthy.

One of the reasons why the Prophet ﷺ, sometimes, or often, fasted on a Monday was that the deeds of men were presented to Allah on it and he wanted to be fasting when it took place, and the other was the feeling of gratitude at the two outstanding favours of Allah his own birth and the commencement of the Revelation which, indeed, are a blessing for the entire mankind.

(٩٥٨/٧٥) عَنْ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ مَسْعُودٍ قَالَ قَلَّمَا كَانَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى
اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَفْطِرُ يَوْمَ الْجُمُعَةِ
(رواه الترمذى والنسائى)

(958/75) It is related on the authority of Abdullah bin Masud رضي الله عنه that seldom it was that the Prophet ﷺ did not keep fast on a Friday."
(Tirmizi and Nasai)

Commentary: It shows that the Prophet ﷺ generally, fasted on Fridays. But from other Traditions we learn that he forbade it for the reason that people did not, owing to the blessedness and superiority of that day, single it out for the supererogatory fast and its night for keeping vigil.

(٩٥٩/٧٦) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ لَا
تَخْتَصُّوا لَيْلَةَ الْجُمُعَةِ بِصِيَامٍ مِنْ بَيْنِ اللَّيَالِي وَلَا تَخْتَصُّوا يَوْمَ الْجُمُعَةِ بِصِيَامٍ
مِنْ بَيْنِ الْأَيَّامِ إِلَّا أَنْ يَكُونَ فِي صَوْمٍ يَصُومُهُ أَحَدُكُمْ
(رواه مسلم)

(959/76) It is related by Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Do not single out the night of Friday among the nights for prayer, and, similarly, do not single out the day of Friday among the days for fasting except that a Friday falls on

the date on which anyone of you habitually keeps a supererogatory fast. (In that case, there is no harm in keeping a supererogatory fast on a Friday)". (Muslim)

Commentary: It was quite possible that affected strongly by the exceptional auspiciousness of a Friday, people who had a flair for perfection began to show excessive solicitude for keeping a supererogatory fast on it and devoting its night to prayers, and, thus, something which God had not prescribed as binding or essential got elevated to that position. Hence, the Prophet ﷺ disallowed it. The injunction, however, is of an administrative nature and its purpose merely is that the supererogatory fast on a Friday and the spending of its night in devotions did not become an additional ritual.

(٩٦٠/٧٧) عَنْ عَائِشَةَ قَالَتْ كَانَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَصُومُ مِنَ الشَّهْرِ السَّبْتِ وَالْأَحَدِ وَالْإِثْنَيْنِ وَمِنَ الشَّهْرِ الْآخِرِ الثَّلَاثَاءُ وَالْأَرْبَعَاءُ وَالْخَمِيسَ (رواه الترمذی)

(960/77) It is related on the authority of Sayyidah Ayshah رضي الله عنها that the Prophet ﷺ (also did so that he) fasted, in one month, on Saturday, Sunday and Monday, and, in the other, on Tuesday, Wednesday, and Thursday. (Tirmizi)

Commentary: We have learnt, already, from Sayyidah Ayshah's own narrative that the holy Prophet ﷺ did not follow a fixed routine about the three supererogatory fasts of the month. What the above Tradition denotes simply is that it was, also, his practice that in one month, he fasted on the first three days of the week, i.e., Saturday, Sunday and Monday, and, in the next, on the three coming after them, i.e., Tuesday, Wednesday and Thursday. About Friday, it has perviously been stated in the Tradition related by Abdullah bin Mas'ud ؓ that the prophet ﷺ often kept fast on it. Thus, apart from the day and dates the fasts on which enjoy an intrinsic superiority, the Prophet ﷺ took care that his supererogatory fast fell on every day of the week so that people could know that all the seven days were the days of worship.

Days on Which Supererogatory Fasts Are Prescribed

There are certain days in a year on which it is forbidden to observe fasting. God is the Absolute Monarch, the Supreme Being, the Knower of all things. He declared *Salah* to be the worship of highest order and yet forbade the offering up of it at some particular hours like those of the rising, setting and declining of the sun. Likewise, He proclaimed fasting to be a particularly favoured form of worship but, at the same time, prohibited it on certain days. We are but to carry out His Commandments. It is not for us to reason why.

(٩٦١/٧٨) عَنْ أَبِي سَعِيدٍ الْخُدْرِيِّ قَالَ نَهَى رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ عَنْ صَوْمِ يَوْمِ الْفِطْرِ وَالنَّحْرِ
(رواه البخارى و مسلم)

(961/78) Abu Sa'eed Khudri رضي الله عنه narrated that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ has forbidden the fast of *Yaum-ul-Fitr* and of the day of sacrifice (of animals) (i.e., *Yaumul Adha*) (Bukhari and Muslim)

(٩٦٢/٧٩) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ أَنَّ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ نَهَى عَنْ صِيَامِ يَوْمَيْنِ يَوْمِ الْأَضْحَى وَيَوْمِ الْفِطْرِ
(رواه مسلم)

(962/79) Sayyidina Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه said, that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ disallowed fasting on the *Eid Al-Adha* and the *Eid-Al-Fitr*. (Muslim)

(٩٦٣/٨٠) عَنْ أَبِي عُبَيْدٍ مَوْلَى ابْنِ أَزْهَرَ قَالَ شَهِدْتُ الْعِيدَ مَعَ عُمَرَ بْنِ الْخَطَّابِ فَجَاءَ فَصَلَّى ثُمَّ انْصَرَفَ فَخَطَبَ النَّاسَ فَقَالَ إِنَّ هَذَانِ يَوْمَانِ نَهَى رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ عَنْ صِيَامِهِمَا يَوْمَ فِطْرِكُمْ مِنْ صِيَامِكُمْ وَالْآخَرُ يَوْمٌ تَأْكُلُونَ فِيهِ مِنْ نُسُكِكُمْ
(رواه مسلم)

(963/80) Abu Ubayd Ibn Azhar (Taba'ee) narrated "I offered the *Eid* prayers behind Umar bin Khattab رضي الله عنه. He led the service, and, at the conclusion of it, delivered the sermon in which he said: "The two days of *Eid* are such that on them the Prophet ﷺ has forbidden fasting. Of these, one is the day of your breaking fasts (after the whole of Ramadan) and the other is the day of

eating the flesh of the animals sacrificed by you." (Muslim)

(٩٦٤/٨١) عَنْ نُبَيْشَةَ الْهَذَلِيَّ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ أَيَّامُ

التَّشْرِيقِ أَيَّامُ أَكْلٍ وَشُرْبٍ وَذِكْرِ اللَّهِ (رواه مسلم)

(964/81) It is related by Nubaisha Huzali ؓ that the Prophet ﷺ said that "*Ayyam ul-Tashriq* (i.e., the 11th, 12th and 13th of Zul-Hajjah) are the days of eating, drinking and remembering the Lord." (Muslim)

Commentary: In the two aforementioned narratives of Sayyidina Abu Saeed Khudri and Sayyidina Umar ؓ it is explicitly forbidden to fast on the days of *Eidul Fitr* and *Eidul Adha*, and, in Sayyidina Umar's account, it is, further, indicated that the fast of *Yaumul Fitr* is forbidden because God has proclaimed it to be the "Day of breaking Fast, i.e. of abstaining from fasting, and eating and drinking after *Ramadan*, and, thus, to fast on this day is to act against the wish and purpose of Allah and the fast of *Yaumul Adha* is forbidden because the pleasure of the Lord is that the bondsmen ate, like beggars at His door, the flesh of the animals sacrificed by them as a feast from Allah, and, he, of course, is a most arrogant and ungrateful bondsman who deliberately keeps fast on the day of general feast of God. Since the 11th and 12th of *Zul Hujjah* are the days of the sacrificial offering of animals, the same rule will, also, apply to them.

From Nubaisha Huzali's ؓ report we, again, learnt that the Prophet ﷺ has declared all the days of *Tashriq* to be the days of feast from the Lord and these include the 13th of *Zul-Hajjah* as well. Thus, fasting is prohibited on all the four days, from the 10th to the 13th *Zul-Hujjah*. Now, to fast on these days will be a sin, not worship.

A Supererogatory Fast Can be Voided

A heavy penalty has to be paid for voiding a fast of the month of *Ramadan* without a cogent reason. But a supererogatory fast can be broken before time without incurring a penalty or the need to make amends for it. The Prophet ﷺ has done it himself, occasionally, and, also, informed others that it was permissible.

(٩٦٥/٨٢) عَنْ عَائِشَةَ قَالَتْ دَخَلَ عَلَيَّ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ ذَاتَ يَوْمٍ فَقَالَ هَلْ عِنْدَكُمْ شَيْءٌ فَقُلْنَا لَا قَالَ فَإِنِّي إِذَا صَائِمٌ ثُمَّ أَتَانَا يَوْمًا آخَرَ فَقُلْنَا يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ أَهْدَيْ لَنَا حَيْسٌ فَقَالَ أَرَيْتِهِ فَلَقَدْ أَصْبَحْتُ صَائِمًا فَأَكَلْتُ (رواه مسلم)

(965/82) It is related by Sayyidah A'ishah رضى الله عنها that one day the Prophet ﷺ came to my apartment and asked, 'Is there anything to eat in your house?' 'There is nothing at this time,' I replied. The Prophet ﷺ said, 'Then I shall keep fast today.' Later, when on another day the Prophet ﷺ came to my apartment, I said to him, 'Today (someone) has sent me Hais¹ as a gift.' 'Do eat it'. The Prophet ﷺ replied, 'Let me see it. I had formulated the intention to fast today.' He, then ate a portion of it and did not keep fast.' (Muslim)

Commentary: It shows, firstly, that the intention for a supererogatory fast can be formulated during the day also, and, secondly, that a supererogatory fast can be voided if one changes one's mind after the formulation of intention.

(٩٦٦/٨٣) عَنْ أُمِّ هَانِئٍ قَالَتْ لَمَّا كَانَ يَوْمُ الْفَتْحِ فَتِحَ مَكَّةُ جَاءَتْ فَاطِمَةُ فَجَلَسَتْ عَلَى يَسَارِ رَسُولِ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ وَأُمُّ هَانِئٍ عَنْ يَمِينِهِ فَجَاءَتْ الْوَلِيدَةُ بِإِنَاءٍ فِيهِ شَرَابٌ فَتَوَلَّيْتُ فَشَرِبْتُ مِنْهُ ثُمَّ نَاوَلَهُ أُمُّ هَانِئٍ فَشَرِبْتُ مِنْهُ فَقَالَتْ يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ لَقَدْ أَفْطَرْتُ وَكُنْتُ صَائِمَةً فَقَالَ لَهَا أَكُنْتُ تَقْضِينَ شَيْئًا قَالَتْ لَا قَالَ فَلَا يَضُرُّكَ إِن كَانَ تَطَوُّعًا

(رواه ابوداؤد والترمذى والدارمى)

(966/83) It is related by Umm Haani bint Abi Talib رضى الله عنها "On the day of the Victory of Makkah (when the Prophet ﷺ was in Makkah), Fatimah رضى الله عنها came and sat on the left side of the Prophet ﷺ while I was sitting on his right. In the meantime, a little girl brought something for the Prophet ﷺ and handed it over to him. The Prophet ﷺ drank a little of it, and, then, passed it on to me, and I, also, drank a little of it, and, after it, I told the Prophet ﷺ that I was fasting and had voided the fast by drinking it. The Prophet ﷺ enquired, 'did you want to make amends for any obligatory fast by means of it?' 'No', I replied, '(It was simply a supererogatory fast).' The Prophet ﷺ,

①. A kind of sweetmeat prepared with dates and butter.

thereupon, remarked, 'There is no harm if it was a supererogatory fast.' (Abu Dawood, Tirmizi and Daarami)

Commentary: It distinctly tells that there is no sin in breaking a supererogatory fast before time. In another Tradition referring to the same incident it is stated that "a person who is keeping a supererogatory fast is free to complete it if he likes or to break it (before time) if he wants to do so for some reason." But in none of the two Traditions is it clarified whether another fast, on some other day, has to be kept as an atonement for it. The Tradition given below, however, contains the command for the expiatory fast.

(٩٦٧/٨٤) عَنْ عَائِشَةَ قَالَتْ كُنْتُ أَنَا وَحَفْصَةُ صَائِمَتَيْنِ فَعُرِضَ لَنَا طَعَامٌ
إِشْتَهَيْنَاهُ فَأَكَلْنَا مِنْهُ فَقَالَتْ حَفْصَةُ يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ إِنَّا كُنَّا صَائِمَتَيْنِ فَعُرِضَ لَنَا
طَعَامٌ إِشْتَهَيْنَاهُ فَأَكَلْنَا مِنْهُ قَالَ إِقْضِيَا يَوْمًا آخَرَ مَكَانَهُ (رواه الترمذی)

(967/84) Sayyidah Ayshah رضى الله عنها narrated "Both I and Hafsa رضى الله عنها were keeping a supererogatory fast when food was laid before us. We felt inclined to eat it and we ate it. After it, Hafsa رضى الله عنها said to the Prophet ﷺ, 'O Messenger of Allah! Both of us were fasting and (in that state) food was brought to us. We liked the food and ate it (and, thus, void the fast).' 'Keep an expiatory fast in place of it on some other day,' replied the Prophet ﷺ. (Tirmizi)

Commentary: It shows that when a supererogatory fast is intentionally voided another fast should be kept to make amends for it. It is essential to do so, according to Imam Abu Hanifah رحمه الله, while Imam Sha'fee رحمه الله believes that it is only *Mustahab*.

قال الله تعالى

وَاللَّهُ عَلَى النَّاسِ حَجُّ الْبَيْتِ مِنْ أَمْتَطَاعٍ إِلَيْهِ
مُسِيلًا وَمَنْ كَفَرَ فَإِنَّ اللَّهَ غَنِيٌّ عَنِ الْعَالَمِينَ

(البقرة ١٩٧:٣)

NATURE AND OBJECTS OF THE *HAJJ*

Among the five principal tenets of Islam, the last is the *Hajj* or Pilgrimage to Makkah.

What the *Hajj* denotes, briefly, is that the truthful Believers present themselves, on a fixed day, in the court of the Almighty, like His frenzied adorers, to express their fidelity to the legacy of His Friend, Sayyidina Ibrahim عليه السلام, by emulating his example in every act and gesture, and to identify themselves with his sublime ideals and resplendent sentiments to the best of their ability.

One aspect of the Glory of Allah is that He is the Allpowerful, the Absolute, the King of Kings, and we are His humble slaves. The other is that, in Him, all the attributes of Beauty and Elegance, which evoke the feelings of love and admiration, are assembled in their most perfect form, and, thus, He, alone, is Adored One, in the real sense. The former aspect of Might and Magnificence demands that the bondsmen appear before the Lord as the embodiments of humility and lowliness. The foremost practical duty in Islam, i.e., prayer (*Salah*), is typically representative of this state, and *Zakah*, too, is amply indicative of another feature of the unique relationship by demonstrating that the authority of the Lord extends over the wealth earned or acquired by the bondsmen as well. The latter aspect of Charm and Loveability requires that the attachment of the bondsman to God should be one of love and fervency. To some extent, this peculiarity finds its expression in fasting. To forego food and drink and to abstain from the gratification of carnal desires is among the degrees or stages of love. But the *Hajj* offers a complete manifestation of it. To wear an unsewn, shroud-like a garment instead of a stitched dress, to remain bareheaded and dishevelled, to refuse to have a hair-cut and to avoid pairing off the nails, combing the hair and applying oil to

it and using perfume and taking a bath, and to utter the loud cry of *Labbaik Labbaik* (Here I am! Here I am!), and to walk round the House of Ka'bah, to kiss the Black Stone fixed in a corner of it, to embrace its walls and to weep and wail, and to go round about the hills of Safa and, Marwa, and then, to go out of the town of Makkha and stay sometimes in the wilderness of Mina, sometimes in the uninhabited region of Arafat and sometimes in the wasteland Muzdalifa, and after it, to throw pebbles, again and again, at Jamrat¹ which in fact, are the symbols of Satan — all these acts are commonly associated with those who are siezed with the sweet madness of love, and Sayyidina Ibrahim عليه السلام, so to speak, was the founder of this glorious tradition. God took such a great liking to these deeds and actions of his that He made them the rites and ceremonies of the *Hajj* and the *Umrah*.²

The commandment enjoining the *Hajj* was sent down, according to most reliable reports in 9 A.H. and the next year, only three months before his death, the Prophet ﷺ performed the Hajj with a very large party of the Companions which is, generally known as the Farewell Hajj. During it, the following verse was revealed to him at Arafat:

This day I have perfected your religion for you and completed My favour unto you.

(Al-Maidah 5:3)

الْيَوْمَ أَكْمَلْتُ لَكُمْ دِينَكُمْ
وَأَتَمَمْتُ عَلَيْكُمْ نِعْمَتِي الْآيَةَ

(المائدة : ٣ : ٥)

Though not expressly stated, it is included in the meaning of the above verse that the *Hajj* is the culminatiung tenet of Islam.

If a bondsman is blessed with a correct and sincere *Hajj* which is called *Hajj Mabroor* in the special terminology of the *Shari'ah*, and even if a particle of association with the Prophet Ibrahim عليه السلام and Muhammad ﷺ is granted to him it will mean that he has, as one would say, attained the highest degree of felicity and obtained a boon than which there can be no greater gift or favour in this world.

①. Denoting the three pillars at Mina.

② Meaning the pilgrimage to Makkha at any time of the year other than that of the Hajj.

Obligatoriness and Superiority of The *Hajj*

(٩٦٨/١) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ خَطَبَنَا رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ فَقَالَ يَا أَيُّهَا النَّاسُ قَدْ فُرِضَ عَلَيْكُمُ الْحَجُّ فَحُجُّوا فَقَالَ رَجُلٌ أَكُلَّ عَامٍ يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ فَسَكَتَ حَتَّى قَالَهَا ثَلَاثًا فَقَالَ لَوْ قُلْتُ نَعَمْ لَوَجِبَتْ وَلَمَّا اسْتَطَعْتُمْ ثُمَّ قَالَ ذَرُونِي مَا تَرَكْتُكُمْ فَإِنَّمَا هَلَكَ مَنْ كَانَ قَبْلَكُمْ بِكَثْرَةِ سُؤَالِهِمْ وَارْتِخَالَفِهِمْ عَلَى أَنْبِيََاءِهِمْ فَإِذَا أَمَرْتُكُمْ بِشَيْءٍ فَأَتُوا مِنْهُ مَا اسْتَطَعْتُمْ وَإِذَا نَهَيْتُكُمْ عَنْ شَيْءٍ فَدَعُوهُ

(رواه مسلم)

(968/1) Sayyidina Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه related to us that one day the Messenger of Allah ﷺ delivered a sermon in which he said: "O people! The *Hajj* has been enjoined upon you (and) so make efforts to perform it." Someone asked: "Are we to perform the Hajj every year?" The Prophet ﷺ kept silent at the enquiry and did not give a reply till the questioner had put the same question thrice. The Prophet ﷺ, then, remarked (with evident displeasure): "If in reply to your question I had said, 'Yes: it has been made obligatory to perform the Hajj every year; it would have come to be prescribed like that, and, (then): you would not have been able to observe it." After it, the Prophet ﷺ said: "Unless I give you an order about anything, do not try to take the order from me (and add to you duties by asking questions). People of the earlier communities were ruined because they asked too many questions from their Prophets, and, then, failed to obey the commands. Thus, (my advice to you is that) when I give you an order for anything, try your best to carry it out and when I forbid against anything, leave it." (Muslim)

Commentary: In another Tradition referring to the same incident, and related on the authority of Sayyidina Ali رضي الله عنه, it is indicated that proclamation by the Prophet ﷺ of the obligatoriness of the *Hajj* and the aforementioned conversation with the enquirer had taken place upon the revelation of the following verse of *surah Aal-Imran*:

Pilgrimage to the House (of Allah) is a duty men owe to God those who can afford the journey. (Aal-Imran 3:97)

وَلِلَّهِ عَلَى النَّاسِ حِجُّ الْبَيْتِ مَنِ اسْتَطَاعَ إِلَيْهِ سَبِيلًا.

(آل عمران ٩٧:٣)

In this Tradition the name of the questioner has not been mentioned but in the account of Sayyidina Abdullah bin Abbas رضي الله عنه, quoted in *Musnad Ahmad*, *Daaruni*, and *Nasai* it is stated that he was Aqr'a bin Habis Tamini. He was among the Quraish who had embraced Islam after the Victory of Makkah, and, thus, did not have a full opportunity to receive guidance from the Prophet ﷺ. It was owing to it that he made the mistake of asking such a question and persisting with it when the Prophet ﷺ did not give a reply.

The Prophet's remark that if he had replied in the affirmative it would have become a duty to perform the *Hajj* every year signifies that the questioner should have realised that the command of obligatoriness of the *Hajj* he had conveyed was enough to show that it was to be carried out only once in a lifetime. To make an enquiry after it could, also, have resulted in the Prophet's ﷺ answering "yes" to it which would, of course, have been at the behest of God and, then, it would have become binding to perform the *Hajj* every year and the Ummah consequently, would have been put to great hardship.

Afterwards, the Prophet ﷺ observed that a large number of people belonging to the ancient communities had been destroyed owing to the evil habit of asking too many questions. They added to their duties by making all sorts of enquiries from their Prophets عليهم السلام, and, then failed to observe them.

At the end, the Prophet ﷺ enunciated the principle "When I give you an order for anything, try your best to carry it out, and when I forbid you against anything, give it up." What it goes to show is that ease and toleration was the characteristic feature of the *Shari'ah* brought by him and not severity and narrowness. One should sincerely try to observe it as best as one can for anything left wanting owing to human frailty or weakness is hoped that Allah will treat it with indulgence and forgive it.

(٩٦٩/٢) عَنْ عَلِيٍّ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَنْ مَلَكَ زَادًا
وَرَا حِلَّةً تَبَلَّغَهُ إِلَى بَيْتِ اللَّهِ وَلَمْ يَحُجَّ فَلَا عَلَيْهِ أَنْ يَمُوتَ يَهُودِيًّا أَوْ نَصْرَانِيًّا
وَذَلِكَ أَنَّ اللَّهَ تَبَارَكَ وَتَعَالَى يَقُولُ وَلِلَّهِ عَلَى النَّاسِ حِجُّ الْبَيْتِ مَنْ اسْتَطَاعَ
إِلَيْهِ سَبِيلًا
(رواه الترمذی)

(969/2) It is related by Sayyidina Ali عليه السلام that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Anyone whom God has given enough to perform the *Hajj*, and he also, has a conveyance which can take him to the House of God, if he still fails to do so then it does not matter whether he dies a Jew or a Christian, and it is so because God has said:

وَلِلّٰهِ عَلَى النَّاسِ حِجُّ الْبَيْتِ مَنِ اسْتَطَاعَ اِلَيْهِ سَبِيْلًا (آل عمران ٩٧:٣)

Pilgrimage to the House (of Allah) is a duty men owe to God — those who can afford the journey." (Aal-e-Imran 3:97) (Tirmizi)

Commentary: It imparts a most severe warning to those who do not perform the *Hajj* despite the fact that they possess the means to undertake the Pilgrimage. to die in such a state, according to it, is similar to dying as a Jew or Christian. It is comparable to the admonition which couples together the giving up of prayer and apostasy and polytheism as for the same class of transgressions. It is set forth, also, in the Qur'an:

And establish prayer (and by leaving it out) be not of those who ascribe partners unto Him.
(Al-Rum 30:31)

"أَقِمْو الصَّلَاةَ وَلَا تَكُونُوا مِنَ الْمُشْرِكِينَ."
(الروم ٣٠:٣١)

The Muslims who do not perform the *Hajj* though they are religiously obliged to do so have been compared, in this Tradition, to Jews and Christians and not to polytheists because it was the peculiarity of the Jews and Christians that they did not perform the *Hajj* while the polytheists of Arabia did so but they did not offer salah, and, hence, the habitual neglect of prayer has been condemned as the characteristic of those who ascribe partners to Allah.

Again, in support of the stern warning given in the above Tradition to those who do not carry out the *Hajj* although they can afford the journey reference has been made to the verse of *surah Aal-Imran* in which the prescribing of the Hajj as a duty has been proclaimed, i.e.,

Pilgrimage to the House (of Allah) is a duty men owe to God those who can afford the journey,
(Aal-e-Imran 3:97)

وَلِلّٰهِ عَلَى النَّاسِ حِجُّ الْبَيْتِ
مَنِ اسْتَطَاعَ اِلَيْهِ سَبِيْلًا

But it appears that the narrator stopped at reciting the first part of the verse while, in fact, the warning is based upon its latter part which reads:

وَمَنْ كَفَرَ فَإِنَّ اللَّهَ غَنِيٌّ عَنِ الْعَالَمِينَ (آل عمران ٩٧:٣)

But if any deny faith (let him know that) Allah stands not in need of any of His creatures. (Aal-e-Imran 3:97)

(meaning that if, after this commandment, anyone adopts the attitude of the Infidels and fails to perform the *Hajj* even though he can afford the journey then God does not care. He is Independent of all His creatures).

In it, those who possess the means and yet do not carry out the *Hajj* have been condemned as the deniers of Faith and the admonition that God does not stand in need of His creatures has been administered to them which signifies that Allah is supremely unconcerned with what such ungrateful and defiant people do and in whatever state they die.

(٩٧٠/٣) عَنْ ابْنِ عُمَرَ قَالَ جَاءَ رَجُلٌ إِلَى النَّبِيِّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ فَقَالَ يَا

رَسُولَ اللَّهِ مَا يُوجِبُ الْحَجَّ قَالَ الزَّادُ وَالرَّاحِلَةُ (رواه الترمذی و ابن ماجه)

(970/3) Abdullah bin Umar رضی اللہ عنہ narrated that a person came to the Prophet ﷺ and asked: "What makes the Hajj obligatory?"

"The wherewithal of the journey and the conveyance," replied the Prophet ﷺ. (Tirmizi and Ibn Majah)

Commentary: In the Qur'an those who can afford the journey has been laid down as the condition that makes the Hajj obligatory. The aim of the questioner, perhaps, was to seek an elucidation of the stipulation and the Prophet ﷺ explained what it meant was, firstly, that a conveyance was available in which one could travel to Makkah, and, secondly, that there was enough money to meet the expenses during the journey. The jurists have, also, included the maintenance of persons who are dependent for their needs on the intending pilgrim which is self-evident.

(٩٧١/٤) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَنْ حَجَّ

فَلَمْ يَرْفُثْ وَلَمْ يَفْسُقْ رَجَعَ كَيَوْمِ وَلَدَتْهُ أُمُّهُ (رواه البخاری و مسلم)

(971/4) It is related by Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that the Prophet ﷺ said: "Whoever performs the *Hajj* and commits no lustful act during it nor disobeys God (in any other way) shall return from it as pure and sinless as he was at the time of his birth."

(Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: It tells that if anyone performs the *Hajj* and, during it, abstains from all lustful things and every other act of defiance to God which falls within the sphere of lewdness, his sins will be forgiven and he will return from it as spotless as he was when he had been born.

(٩٧٢/٥) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ الْعُمْرَةُ إِلَى الْعُمْرَةِ كَفَّارَةٌ لِمَا بَيْنَهُمَا وَالْحَجُّ الْمَبْرُورُ لَيْسَ لَهُ جَزَاءٌ إِلَّا الْجَنَّةُ

(رواه البخاري ومسلم)

(972/5) It is related by Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: From one *Umrah* to another (i.e., the two *Umrah*) become an atonement for the sins committed during the period intervening between them, and the reward on *Hajj Mabroor* (i.e., pure and untainted *Hajj*) is Paradise itself and nothing less."

(Bukhari and Muslim)

(٩٧٣/٦) عَنْ ابْنِ مَسْعُودٍ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ تَابِعُوا بَيْنَ الْحَجِّ وَالْعُمْرَةِ فَإِنَّهُمَا يَنْفِيَانِ الْفَقْرَ وَالذُّنُوبَ كَمَا يَنْفِي الْكَبِيرُ خَبَثَ الْحَدِيدِ وَالذَّهَبِ وَالْفِضَّةِ وَلَيْسَ لِلْحَجَّةِ الْمَبْرُورَةِ ثَوَابٌ إِلَّا الْجَنَّةُ

(رواه الترمذي والنسائي)

(973/6) It is related by Abdullah bin Mas'ud رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Perform the *Hajj* and *Umrah* again and again for both, the *Hajj* and the *Umrah*, remove poverty and sins in the same way as the furnace removes the impurities of gold, silver and iron and there is no lesser recompense on a pure and sincere *Hajj* than paradise."

(Tirmizi and Nasai)

Commentary: It shows that whoever performs the *Hajj* or *Umrah* with sincerity of the heart takes a dip, as it were, in the Lord's River of Mercy and, as a consequence of it, the filthy effects of sins are washed away from him. Besides, in this world, too, the favour of God upon him is that he is relieved of poverty and indigence and

prosperity and tranquility of the heart are bestowed upon him, and, again, the granting of Paradise in return for a pure *Hajj* is the firm and positive promise of Allah.

(٩٧٤/٧) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ عَنِ النَّبِيِّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ أَنَّهُ قَالَ الْحَاجُّ

وَالْعُمَرَاءُ وَقَدْ أَلَّ اللَّهُ أَنْ دَعَوْهُ أَجَابَهُمْ وَإِنْ اسْتَغْفَرُوا غُفِرَ لَهُمْ (رواه ابن ماجه)

(974/7) It is related on the authority of Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that the Prophet ﷺ said: "Those who make the Pilgrimage for the *Hajj* or *Umrah* are the guests of Allah. The petitions they make will be granted and if they seek deliverance from sins, their sins will be forgiven." (Ibn Majah)

(٩٧٥/٨) عَنْ ابْنِ عُمَرَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا لَقِيتَ

الْحَاجَّ فَسَلِّمْ عَلَيْهِ وَصَافِحْهُ وَمُرَّةً أَنْ يُسْتَغْفَرَ لَكَ قَبْلَ أَنْ يَدْخُلَ بَيْتَهُ فَإِنَّهُ مَغْفُورٌ لَكَ (رواه احمد)

(975/8) It is related by Abdullah bin Umar رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "When you meet anyone who has performed the *Hajj*, greet him, shake hands with him and beseech him to pray for the forgiveness of your sins before he reaches his home for he is in the state that decision of forgiveness has been taken for him (and it is confidently expected that his supplication will be accepted)." (Musnad Ahmad)

(٩٧٦/٩) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ مَنْ خَرَجَ حَاجًّا أَوْ مُعْتَمِرًا أَوْ غَازِيًا ثُمَّ مَاتَ فِي

طَرِيقِهِ كَتَبَ اللَّهُ لَهُ أَجْرَ الْغَازِيِّ وَالْحَاجِّ وَالْمُعْتَمِرِ (رواه البيهقي في شعب الایمان)

(976/9) It is related on the authority of Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that whoever sets out with the intention of performing the *Hajj* or *Umrah* or for doing *Jihad* in the cause of Allah and dies in the way, the same reward is written down for him as is fixed for those who perform the *Hajj* or *Umrah* or carry out *Jihad* in the path of Allah." (Baihaqi)

Commentary: This benevolent rule and principle has, also, been enunciated in the Qur'an which says:

And whoso forsakes his home with the intention of migrating towards Allah and His Messenger, and death overtakes him (in the way), his reward is then incumbent on Allah. Allah is ever Forgiving, Merciful. (Al-Nisaa 4:100)

وَمَنْ يَخْرُجْ مِنْ بَيْتِهِ مُهَاجِرًا إِلَى
اللَّهِ وَرَسُولِهِ ثُمَّ يُدْرِكُهُ الْمَوْتُ
فَقَدْ وَقَعَ أَجْرُهُ عَلَى اللَّهِ وَكَانَ
اللَّهُ غَفُورًا رَحِيمًا (النساء. ٤: ١٠٠)

If anyone gets out of his house to do something for Allah but dies in the way then Allah gives him full reward for what he had intended.

MIQAT IHRAM TALBIA

Allah has proclaimed Ka'bah as the Qiblah of the faithful Believers and as His Own Bayt (i.e., House), and to make the pilgrimage to it and perform the *Hajj*, once in a lifetime, has been prescribed as a duty to God to all those who can afford the journey. He has, further, laid down some proprieties for it one of which is that the pilgrims should not present themselves in their usual dress but in a mendicants robe which resembles the shroud and reminds them of the appearance they have to make before the Lord on the Day of Resurrection. No shirt, jacket, coat, sherwani, or trousers are to be worn; only a tahbund (a cloth sheet) is to be tied round the waist and a seamless sheet wrapped round the upper part of the body. The head has to be kept bare and no socks, not even shoes which cover the whole of the feet, are allowed.¹ There are, also, some other restrictions of a like nature the object of which is that the bondsman appeared in a condition that signified complete submission and indifference to worldly comforts. But for the sake of the pilgrims' convenience, it has not been enjoined that they start from their home wearing the *Ihram*² and observing the restrictions that go with it. Were it so, the bondsmen would have been put to much difficulty. Till recently, pilgrims from many countries used to reach Makkah after travelling for months, and, even now, the journey for many of them, by land or sea takes several weeks. To abide by the rules and regulations governing the state of wearing Ihram would, naturally, have proved very hard for most of them. So, some places have been marked out on different sides of the city of Makkah on reaching which a pilgrim coming for the *Hajj* or

①. It should be noted that these rules regarding Ihram are for men only. The women are permitted to wear stitched clothes, to cover their heads and to wear socks or shoes out of consideration for Hijab.

②. Denoting the pilgrim's robe as described above.

Umrah from a place lying beyond them is required to put on the *Ihram*. These are called *Miqat*.

It should, moreover, be borne in mind that the assuming of *Ihram* does not simply mean the wearing of the two sheets but, after it, two rak'at prayer (*salah*) are, also, offered, and, then, *Talbia* is recited with a loud voice and in a full-throated manner, the words of which are as follows:

"لَبَّيْكَ اللَّهُمَّ لَبَّيْكَ، لَبَّيْكَ لَا شَرِيكَ لَكَ لَبَّيْكَ إِنَّ الْحَمْدَ وَالنِّعْمَةَ
لَكَ وَالْمُلْكَ لَا شَرِيكَ لَكَ."

*Ibbaik Allahumma labbaik; labbaik laa shareeka laka labbaik;
innal-hamda wan nai'mata laka wal mulk; laa shreeka lak.*

(O Allah! Here I am! Here I am in Thy presence! Thou hast no partner! All praise is for Thee and from Thee are all blessings! To Thee alone belongs Power and Rule! Thou art without a partner!)

After the recitation of *Taliba*, the pilgrim becomes *Muhrim* i.e., enters into the state of *Ihram*. The Pilgrimage begins with it and all the restrictions associated with *Ihram* come into force in the same way as a person offering prayer enters into the act of prayer on saying *Takbir* and the regulations prescribed for prayer become effective for him.

Miqat

(٩٧٧/١٠) عَنْ ابْنِ عَبَّاسٍ قَالَ وَقَّتْ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ لِأَهْلِ
الْمَدِينَةِ ذَا الْحُلَيْفَةِ وَلِأَهْلِ الشَّامِ الْجُحْفَةَ وَلِأَهْلِ نَجْدٍ قَرْنَ الْمَنَازِلِ وَلِأَهْلِ
الْيَمَنِ يَلَمْلَمَ فَهُنَّ لَهُنَّ وَلِمَنْ أَتَى عَلَيْهِنَّ مِنْ غَيْرِ أَهْلِهِنَّ لِمَنْ كَانَ يُرِيدُ الْحَجَّ
وَالْعُمْرَةَ فَمَنْ كَانَ دُونَهُنَّ فَمَهَلُهُ مِنْ أَهْلِهِ وَكَذَا الْكَ وَكَذَاكَ حَتَّى أَهْلُ مَكَّةَ
يَهْلُونَ مِنْهَا (رواه البخارى ومسلم)

(977/10) It is related by Abdullah bin Abbas رضي الله عنه that the Prophet ﷺ appointed Zul Hulaifa as the *Miqat* for the inhabitants of Madinah, and Al-Juhfa for the inhabitants of Syria, and Qarnul Manazil for the inhabitants of Najd, and Yalamlam for the inhabitants of Yemen; and these four *Muaqit*¹ are for the people

①. Plural of *Miqat*.

who live in those places, and, besides them, for all those who come through them from other areas with intention of performing the *Hajj* or *Umrah*; and the people who are on the nearer side of these places (i.e., live between them and Makkah) shall put on Ihram on starting from their homes, and this procedure will go on like that until the inhabitants of the city of Makkah shall put on Ihram from Makkah. (Bukhari and Muslim)

(٩٧٨/١١) عَنْ جَابِرٍ عَنْ رَسُولِ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ قَالَ مَهَلُ أَهْلِ الْمَدِينَةِ مِنْ ذِي الْحُلَيْفَةِ وَالطَّرِيقِ الْآخِرِ الْجُحْفَةُ وَمَهَلُ أَهْلِ الْعِرَاقِ مِنْ ذَاتِ عِرْقٍ وَمَهَلُ أَهْلِ نَجْدٍ قَرْنٌ وَمَهَلُ أَهْلِ الْيَمَنِ يَلَمْلَمُ (رواه مسلم)

(978/11) Sayyidina Jabir رضي الله عنه relates that he heard the Messenger of Allah ﷺ say: "Zul-Hulayfa is the *Miqat* for the people of Madinah and Juhfa is the *Miqat* for those coming by the other route, and Zaat-i-iraq is the *Miqat* for the people of Najd, and yalamlam is the *Miqat* for the people of Yemen." (Muslim)

Commentary: In the narrative of Abdullah bin Abbas رضي الله عنه only 4 muaqit are mentioned, Zul-Hulayfa, Juhfa, Qarnul Manazil and Yalamlam while in Jabir's narrative a fifth, Zaat-i-iraq is added for the inhabitants of Iraq. There is, also, another minor variation in the two reports. In the former Tradition, Juhfa is described as the *Miqat* for the people of Syira, and, in the latter, for "those coming by the other route" which apparently, means that if the people of Madinah come by the other route i.e., through Juhfa to Makkah, they, too, can put on the Ihram from it. Some commentators, however, have held that the people of Syria are meant by the people "coming by the other route." In that case, only the difference of expression will remain in the two accounts. Anyhow, all the five Muaqit are positively marked out and universally accepted. Below we will describe them in a little detail:

(i) **Zul Hulayfa:** which indicates the borderline of the city of Makkah for those coming from the side of Madinah is situated only at a distance of 5 miles from Madinah. It is the farthest *Miqat* from Makkah, being two hundred miles away, or, rather, two hundred and fifty miles by the present route. Since the inhabitants of Madinah bear a special affinity with Islam, the *Miqat* for them has

been fixed at the greatest distance. They have a greater claim to be in the vanguard of those who strive in the path of Allah and observe the duties prescribed by Him.

(ii) **Juhfa:** is the *Miqat* for people coming from the Western areas like Syria. It was a settlement near Rabigh which has, now, become non-existent but it is well known that it was situated near Rabigh which is a hundred miles from Makkah near the coast.

(iii) **Qarnul Manazil:** Serves as the *Miqat* for those coming from the side of Najd. It is the name of a hill, about 35 miles to the east of Makkah; on the road leading to Najd.

(iv) **Zaat-ul-Iraq:** is the *Miqat* for the people coming from the side of Iraq. It is situated about 50 miles to the north-east of Makkah, on the road leading to Iraq.

(v) **Yalamlam:** is the *Miqat* for the people coming from the side of Yemem. It is a famous hill among the hills of Tahama and is situated about 40 miles to the south-east of Makkah, on the road that joins Yemen with it.

As both the aforementioned Traditions show, the sacred Prophet ﷺ had determined these five places as the *Miqat* for their own inhabitants as well as for those coming from the *Hajj* or *Umrah* from areas lying beyond them. The legists are agreed that pilgrims coming from the side of any of the *Muaqit* must put on the *Ihram* on crossing them.

The Robe of Ihram

(٩٧٩/١٢) عَنْ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ عُمَرَ أَنَّ رَجُلًا سَأَلَ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَا يَلْبَسُ الْمُحْرِمُ مِنَ الثِّيَابِ فَقَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ لَا تَلْبِسُوا الْقَمِيصَ وَلَا الْعَمَائِمَ وَلَا الشَّرَائِيْلَ وَلَا الْبُرَائِسَ وَلَا الْخِفَافَ إِلَّا أَحَدًا لَا يَجِدُ النَّعْلَيْنِ فَيَلْبَسُ الْخُفَّيْنِ وَلَيَقْطَعَهُمَا أَسْفَلَ مِنَ الْكَعْبَيْنِ وَلَا تَلْبِسُوا مِنَ الثِّيَابِ شَيْئًا مَسَّهُ زَغْفَرَانٌ وَلَا وَرْسٌ
(رواه البخارى و مسلم)

(979/12) It is related by Abdullah bin Umar ؓ that once a person enquired from Messenger of Allah ﷺ, "What clothes can a *Muhrim* wear?" The Prophet ﷺ replied, 'Wear neither the shirt nor the turban nor the trousers nor the cloak for keeping off the rain nor leather-socks except that anyone has no footgear

to use in which case he can wear the leather-socks for the protection of feet after cutting (them) off from below the ankles, and also do not wear clothes that are scented with a saffron or vars."

(Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: In this Tradition only a few clothes like the shirt, turban and trousers are mentioned which were in vogue during those days but the command applies to all the dresses that are or may be used in future by different peoples and in different countries for the purpose for which the shirt, turban and trousers etc., are worn.

Saffron is a well-known substance while Vars is the name of an odiferous leaf of yellow colour. As both of these were used for scenting, the use of clothes to which saffron or vars is applied has been forbidden in the state of *Ihram*.

The questioner wanted to know what clothes a *Muhrim* was to wear but the Prophet ﷺ told him what he was not to wear. This reply, in a way, contained the exhortation that the thing to be asked was not what kind of clothes should be worn by the *Muhrim*, but what was he to abstain from wearing for the effect of putting on the *Ihram* simply is that the use of certain clothes and things that are normally allowed becomes unlawful for people assuming it. The enquirer should, as such, have asked what kind of clothes and what acts were prohibited to a *Muhrim*.

(٩٨٠/١٣) عَنْ ابْنِ عُمَرَ أَنَّ سَمِعَ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَنْهَى
النِّسَاءَ فِي إِحْرَامِهِنَّ عَنِ الْقَفَازَيْنِ وَالنِّقَابِ وَمَا مَسَّ الْوَرُسَ وَالزُّعْفَرَانُ مِنَ
الْيَابِ وَلَتَلْبَسَ بَعْدَ ذَلِكَ مَا أَحَبَّتْ مِنَ الْأَوَانِ الثِّيَابِ مُعْصَفِرٍ أَوْ خَزٍّ أَوْ خُلِيٍّ
أَوْ سَرَاوِيلٍ أَوْ قَمِيصٍ أَوْ خُفٍّ
(رواه ابو داؤد)

(980/13) Abdullah bin Umar ؓ related to us, saying: "I heard Messenger of Allah ﷺ forbidding women from wearing gloves during *Ihram*, and from using the veil to cover the face, and from wearing clothes scented with saffron or vars, and, besides they could wear coloured garments if they like, and they could wear ornaments if they liked, and, also, shirt and trousers and leather-socks."

(Abu Dawood)

Commentary: It shows that the wearing of stitched clothes like

shirt and trousers is disallowed only to men in the state of *Ihram*. Women are permitted to wear them owing to purdah and they can, also, wear leather-socks. Of course, they, too, are forbidden from wearing gloves and covering their faces with the veil but it does not mean that they kept their faces bare even before men with whom they were unacquainted. The Tradition only forbids regular veiling of the face. In the presence of unrelated men they should screen their faces with cloaks etc.

In Abu Dawood, it is quoted on the authority of Sayyidah Ayshah رضي الله عنها, "We, women, were in the company of the Prophet ﷺ during the *Hajj*, while in *Ihram*. (so because of *Ihram* we did not cover our faces with the veil). (But) when men used to pass by in front of us, we suspended our cloaks from our heads and, thus, observed the *hijab*, uncovered our faces when the men had moved away."

From it, it is clear that women are forbidden from using the veil while in *Ihram* but they should screen their faces with the cloak etc. in the presence of strange men.

Taking a Bath Before *Ihram*

(٩٨١/١٤) عَنْ زَيْدِ بْنِ ثَابِتٍ أَنَّهُ رَأَى النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ تَجَرَّدَ

لَا خَلَالَةَ وَاعْتَسَلَ (رواه الترمذى والدارمى)

(981/14) Zayd bin Thabit رضي الله عنه related to us that he saw that the Prophet ﷺ removed his clothes and took a bath for putting on *Ihram*. (Tirmizi and Daarami)

Commentary: On the strength of this Tradition, the taking of a bath before assuming *Ihram* has been declared a *Sunnah* but it is, also, enough that one only performed *Wudu* for offering the two rak'at of *Nafl* for *Ihram*. In case one could not even offer *salah* and simply formulated the intention of putting on *Ihram*, it would also suffice and the *Ihram* would be in order.

Talbia of *Ihram*

(٩٨٢/١٥) عَنْ ابْنِ عُمَرَ قَالَ سَمِعْتُ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يُهَلُّ

مَلْبِدًا يَقُولُ لَبَّيْكَ اللَّهُمَّ لَبَّيْكَ لَا شَرِيكَ لَكَ لَبَّيْكَ إِنَّ الْحَمْدَ

وَالْبَعْمَةُ لَكَ وَالْمُلْكُ لَا شَرِيكَ لَكَ، لَا يُزِيدُ عَلَى هَؤُلَاءِ الْكَلِمَاتِ

(رواه البخارى و مسلم)

(982/15) It is related by Abdullah bin Umar رضي الله عنه that "I heard the Messenger of Allah ﷺ reciting *Talbia* in such a condition that the hair of his head were fixed and arranged in order (as the hair of the head, generally, are after a bath). He was reciting *Talbia* thus:

لَبَّيْكَ اللَّهُمَّ لَبَّيْكَ لَا شَرِيكَ لَكَ لَبَّيْكَ إِنَّ الْحَمْدَ وَالْبَعْمَةَ لَكَ
وَالْمُلْكُ لَا شَرِيكَ لَكَ.

Labbaik Allahumma labbaik; laa shareeka laka labbaik; innal hamda wan nai'mata laka wal mulk; laa shareeka lak.

(O Allah! Here I am! Here I am in Thy presence! Thou hast no partner! All praise is for Thee and from Thee are all blessings! To Thee alone belongs Power and Rule! Thou are without a partner).

He was reciting only these sets of wordes in *Talbia* and not making any addition to them." (Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: Commentators remarked that God had invited the bondsmen to the *Hajj* through His Friend, Sayyidina Ibrahim عليه السلام, as is, alos, mentioned in the Qur'an. Thus, as the bondsman recites *Talbia* after assuming *Ihram* he, so to speak, says in response to the call of Ibrahim عليه السلام and the invitation of Allah that:

"O Allah! Thou summoned me to Thy court and sent the call through Thy Friend. So, here I am in Thy presence, with all eagerness and submission."

First *Talbia* of *Ihram*

(٩٨٣/١٦) عَنْ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ عُمَرَ قَالَ كَانَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا أَدْخَلَ رَجُلَهُ فِي الْغُرْزِ وَاسْتَوَتْ بِهِ نَاقَتُهُ قَائِمَةً أَهْلًا مِنْ عِنْدِ مَسْجِدِ ذِي الْحُلَيْفَةِ

(رواه البخارى و مسلم)

(983/16) Abdullah bin Umar رضي الله عنه related to us, saying: "It was the practice of the Messenger of Allah ﷺ to recite the *Talbia* of *Ihram* (after offering 2 *Rak'at* of prayer in the mosque of *Zul Hulaifa*) when he placed his foot in the stirrup of the camel near

the mosque and the camel rose up with him (in the saddle)."

(Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: There is a difference in the narratives of the Companions رضي الله عنهم over when and where the holy Prophet ﷺ had recited the first *Talbia* of *Ihram* on the occasion of the Farewell Hajj. As we have seen above, according to Sayyidina Abdullah bin Umar's رضي الله عنه report, the Prophet ﷺ mounted his camel near the mosque of Zul Hulaifa, after he had offered two *Ra'kat* of *Nafl* in it, and as the camel stood up with him, he recited the *Talbia* of *Ihram* for the first time, and, thus, became *Muhrim* from that time. But other reports have it that the Prophet ﷺ recited the first *Talbia* after offering prayer in the mosque of Zul Hulaifa and before mounting the camel. In *Sunan Abu Dawood* and *Mustadarak Haakim*, the celebrated *Taba'ee*, Sa'd bin Jubayr, is quoted as saying "I enquired about this divergence from Abdullah bin Abbas رضي الله عنه and he explained that the Prophet ﷺ had recited *Talbia* immediately after offering the two *Rak'at* of *Nafl* in the mosque of Zul Hulaifa but only the few persons present near him, at that time, could know it. After it, when the Prophet ﷺ mounted his camel and the camel stood up, he again, recited it and it was his first *Talbia* after getting up on his mount and the people who heard it but had not heard the first *Talbia* imagined that he had recited it for the first time on mounting the camel. Later, when the camel had reached the place called Baida and the Prophet ﷺ, once again, recited the *Talbia* those who had not heard the first two *Talbia* thought that he had recited the *Talbia* for the first time on reaching Baida.

This should remove any misunderstanding regarding the time and place of the recitation of the first *Talbia* of *Ihram* by the sacred Prophet.

***Talbia* Should be Said With a Loud Voice**

(٩٨٤/١٧) عَنْ خَلَادِ بْنِ السَّائِبِ عَنْ أَبِيهِ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ أَتَانِي جِبْرِيلُ فَأَمَرَنِي أَنْ أَمُرُ أَصْحَابِي أَنْ يَرْفَعُوا أَصْوَاتَهُمْ بِالْإِهْلَالِ أَوِ التَّلْبِيَةِ
(رواه مالك والترمذي و أبو داود والنسائي وابن ماجه والدارمي)

(984/17) Khallad bin Sa'ib a Taba'ee related on the authority of his father, Sa'ib bin Khallad Ansari رضي الله عنه, that the Prophet ﷺ said: "Jibril came to me and conveyed the Command of Allah that I order my Companions to recite *Talbia* with a loud voice."

(Mowatta Malik, Tirmizi, Abu Dawood, Nasai, Ibn Majah and Daarami)

(٩٨٥/١٨) عَنْ سَهْلِ بْنِ سَعْدٍ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَا مِنْ مُسْلِمٍ يُلَبِّي إِلَّا لَبَّى مِنْ عَنْ يَمِينِهِ وَشِمَالِهِ مِنْ حَجَرٍ أَوْ مَذْرٍ حَتَّى تَنْقَطِعَ الْأَرْضُ مِنْ هَهُنَا وَهَهُنَا
(رواه الترمذی و ابن ماجه)

(985/18) It is related by Sahl bin Sa'd رضي الله عنه that the Prophet ﷺ said: "When the faithful bondsman of Allah recites the *Talbia* of the *Hajj* or *Umrah* (and says, *Labbaik Allahumma Labbaik*) all the created things that are to his right and to his left, even the lifeless stones, trees or lumps of earth, also say *Labbaik* with him until the earth comes to an end from this side and from that side."

(Tirmizi and Ibn Majah)

Commentary: The Qur'an tells that everything that exists in the heavens and the earth pays adoration to Allah and sings His praises, but the human beings do not hear it. In the same manner, the above Tradition shows that every object on the left and the right hand sides of the faithful bondsman joins him when he says *Labbaik*, though he cannot know about it.

Special Supplication After *Talbia*

(٩٨٦/١٩) عَنْ عُمَارَةَ بْنِ خُزَيْمَةَ بْنِ ثَابِتٍ عَنْ أَبِيهِ عَنِ النَّبِيِّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ أَنَّهُ كَانَ إِذَا فَرَّغَ مِنْ تَلْبِيَّتِهِ سَأَلَ اللَّهَ رِضْوَانَهُ وَالْجَنَّةَ وَاسْتَعْفَاهُ بِرَحْمَتِهِ مِنَ النَّارِ
(رواه الشافعي)

(986/19) Umarah bin Khuzaymah bin Thabit Ansari related on the authority of his father "After the Messenger of Allah ﷺ had recited the *Talbia* (i.e., become a Muhrim on reciting it), he beseeched for His countenance and sought refuge in His Mercy from Hell."

(Shafa'ee)

Commentary: On the basis of this Tradition the theologists have shown preference for the supplication after *Talbia* in which Allah is implored for His good graces and for Paradise and protection

from the punishment of Hell. There can, indeed, be no greater need or desire of a truthful bondsman than that he attained the favour of the Lord and gained entry into Heaven and secured protection against His wrath and against Hell. This is, therefore, the most suitable supplication for the occasion. After it, one can address whatever petition one likes to Allah.

اللَّهُمَّ إِنَّا نَسْأَلُكَ رِزَاكَ وَ الْجَنَّةَ وَ نَعُوذُ بِكَ مِنْ غَضَبِكَ وَ النَّارِ

"Allahumma in-na nasaaluka rizaka wal jannata wa na'oozbika min ghazbika wan-nnar.

(O Allah! I beg of Thee Thy good pleasure and Paradise. I, also, beg of Thee to spare me out of Thy mercy the Punishment of Fire.

FAREWELL *Hajj*

There is a difference of opinion over the year in which the command prescribing the *Hajj* was revealed. The prevalent view, however, is that it was in 9 A. H., after the Victory of Makkah. The sacred Prophet ﷺ did not himself, perform the *Hajj* that year but sent Sayyidina Abu Bakr ؓ as *Amir Hajj*, i.e., the leader of the Pirlgrimage to Makkah and the first *Hajj* was carried out under his leadership. Some important announcements were, also, made on that occasion one of which was that, in future, no apostate or polytheist would be allowed to perform the *Hajj* nor were the filthy pagan practices to be permitted.

The Prophet ﷺ, perhaps, refrained from performing the *Hajj* at that time because he wanted his *Hajj* to be so pure and perfect that there was not a single person participating in it who could defile it with rites and ceremonies of the Age of Perversion. It was to be a saga of light and virtue from the beginning to the end, presenting a true picture of his call and precepts. The *Hajj* of 9 A.H., under the guidance of Sayyidina Abu Bakr ؓ, thus, was to serve as preparatory step to the Prophet's own *Hajj* in the following year.

Anyhow, the Prophet ﷺ decided to perform the *Hajj* in 10 A.H., which was the last year of his life and since he had recieved the indication that the period of his existence in the world and the mission assigned to him by Allah were drawing to a close, he took special care to make known his intention publicly so that as many Muslims as possible availed themselves of the opportunity of learning the rites and formalities of the *Hajj* and other precepts and commands of Faith by going along with him on the pilgrimage and having a share in the exquisite auspiciousness of his company during the journey.

Thousands of Muslims collected in Madinah in response to the

call. The 24th of *Zul Qa'dah*¹ was a Friday and the Prophet ﷺ gave special instructions regarding the Hajj in the sermon he delivered on it and this magnificent party of pilgrims set forth from Madinah, after the *Zuhr* prayers, on Saturday, the 25th of *Zul Qa'dah*. The *Asr* prayer was observed at *Zul Hulayfa* where the Prophet ﷺ made the first halt. The *Ihram*, too, was to be worn from there. The night was spent at that place and, on the next day, i.e., Sunday, the Prophet ﷺ and his Companions ﷺ put on the *Ihram* after the *Zuhr* prayer, and left for Makkah, reaching there on the 14th of *Zul Hajjah*. More and more pilgrims joined the party on the way. From 40,000 to 1,30,000 men are reported to have performed the *Hajj* with the Prophet ﷺ. What, however, is common to all the narratives is that there was a vast concourse of men and nothing but heads could be seen on all sides.

During the *Hajj*, the Prophet ﷺ gave sermons on various occasions in which he made it plain that his time was near after which it would not be possible to obtain the knowledge of Faith directly from him. He took special pains to guide, instruct and train the people throughout the journey.

Apart from the rites and regulations of the *Hajj* and the detailed methods of performing it, the Traditions relating to the event, also, contain some most important guidance regarding the different branches of the *Shari'ah*.

In fact, so much was accomplished by way of teaching, preaching and propagation of Faith during the month-long journey as could, normally, not have been possible in several years. This has led some front-rank leaders of the *Ummah* to infer that the most effective means to acquire the knowledge and blessings of Faith is companionship during a religious tour.

We, now, proceed to quote first of all, the Tradition related on the authority of Sayyidina Jabir ؓ and Abdullah ؓ, but as it is too long, we shall break it into parts for purposes of the Commentary.

①. The name of the 11th month of the Islamic year, the 12th being that of *Zil Hajjah* in which Hajj is performed.

Details

(٩٨٧/٢٠) عَنْ جَعْفَرِ بْنِ مُحَمَّدٍ عَنْ أَبِيهِ قَالَ دَخَلْنَا عَلَى جَابِرِ بْنِ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ فَسَأَلَ عَنِ الْقَوْمِ حَتَّى انْتَهَى إِلَيَّ فَقُلْتُ أَنَا مُحَمَّدُ بْنُ عَلِيٍّ بْنِ حُسَيْنٍ فَأَهْوَى بِيَدِهِ إِلَى رَأْسِي فَنَزَعَ زِرِّي الْأَعْلَى ثُمَّ نَزَعَ زِرِّي الْأَسْفَلَ ثُمَّ وَضَعَ كَفَّهُ بَيْنَ ثَدْيِي وَأَنَا يَوْمَئِذٍ غُلَامٌ شَابٌّ فَقَالَ مَرْحَبًا بِكَ يَا بَنَ أَخِي سَلْ عَمَّا شِئْتَ فَسَأَلْتُهُ وَهُوَ أَعْمَى وَحَضَرَ وَقْتُ الصَّلَاةِ فَقَامَ فِي نَسَاجَةٍ مُلْتَحِفًا بِهَا كُلَّمَا وَضَعَهَا عَلَى مَنْكِبِيهِ رَجَعَ طَرَفًا هَا إِلَيْهِ مِنْ صِغَرِهَا وَرَدَّائُهُ عَلَى جَنْبِهِ عَلَى الْمَشْجَبِ فَصَلَّى بِنَا فَقُلْتُ أَخْبِرْنِي عَنْ حَجَّةِ رَسُولِ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ فَقَالَ بِيَدِهِ فَعَقَدَ تِسْعًا فَقَالَ إِنَّ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَكَتَ تِسْعَ سِنِينَ لَمْ يَحُجَّ ثُمَّ أَذِنَ فِي النَّاسِ فِي الْعَاشِرَةِ أَنَّ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ حَاجٌّ فَقَدِمَ الْمَدِينَةَ بِشَرِّ كَثِيرٍ كُلُّهُمْ يَلْتَمِسُ أَنْ يَأْتِمَ بِرَسُولِ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ وَيَعْمَلَ مِثْلَ عَمَلِهِ فَخَرَجْنَا مَعَهُ حَتَّى أَتَيْنَا ذَا الْحُلَيْفَةِ فَوَلَدَتْ أَسْمَاءُ بِنْتُ عُمَيْسٍ مُحَمَّدَ بْنَ أَبِي بَكْرٍ فَأَرْسَلَتْ إِلَى رَسُولِ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ كَيْفَ أَصْنَعُ قَالَ اغْتَسِلِي وَاسْتَفْرِئِي بِثَوْبٍ وَأَخْزِمِي فَصَلَّى رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ فِي الْمَسْجِدِ ثُمَّ رَكِبَ الْقُصُوءَ حَتَّى إِذَا سَوَتْ بِهِ نَاقَتَهُ عَلَى الْبَيْدَاءِ نَظَرْتُ إِلَى مَدْبَصَرِي بَيْنَ يَدَيْهِ مِنْ رَاكِبٍ وَمَاشٍ وَعَنْ يَمِينِهِ مِثْلَ ذَلِكَ وَعَنْ يَسَارِهِ مِثْلَ ذَلِكَ وَمِنْ خَلْفِهِ مِثْلَ ذَلِكَ وَرَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ بَيْنَ أَظْهُرِنَا وَعَلَيْهِ يَنْزِلُ الْقُرْآنُ وَهُوَ يَعْرِفُ تَأْوِيلَهُ وَمَا عَمِلَ مِنْ شَيْءٍ عَمِلْنَا بِهِ فَأَهْلُ بِالتَّوْحِيدِ لَيْتِكَ اللَّهُمَّ لَيْتِكَ لَيْتَكَ لَا شَرِيكَ لَكَ لَيْتَكَ إِنَّ الْحَمْدَ وَالنِّعْمَةَ لَكَ وَالْمُلْكَ لَا شَرِيكَ لَكَ، وَأَهْلُ النَّاسِ بِهَذَا الَّذِي يُهْلُونَ بِهِ فَلَمْ يَرَوْا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ عَلَيْهِمْ شَيْئًا مِنْهُ وَلِزِمَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ تَلْبِيَتَهُ

”لَيْتَكَ اللَّهُمَّ لَيْتَكَ، لَيْتَكَ لَا شَرِيكَ لَكَ لَيْتَكَ إِنَّ الْحَمْدَ وَالنِّعْمَةَ لَكَ وَالْمُلْكَ لَا شَرِيكَ لَكَ.“

قَالَ جَابِرٌ لَسْنَا نَتَوَى إِلَّا الْحَجَّ لَسْنَا نَعْرِفُ الْعُمْرَةَ حَتَّى إِذَا أَتَيْنَا الْبَيْتَ مَعَهُ
 اسْتَلَمَ الرُّكْنَ فَرَمَلَ لَنَا وَمَشَى أَرْبَعًا ثُمَّ تَقَدَّمَ إِلَى مَقَامِ إِبْرَاهِيمَ فَقَرَأَ وَاتَّخَذُوا
 مِنْ مَقَامِ إِبْرَاهِيمَ مُصَلًّى فَجَعَلَ الْمَقَامَ بَيْنَهُ وَبَيْنَ الْبَيْتِ فَكَانَ أَبِي يَقُولُ وَلَا
 أَعْلَمُهُ ذِكْرَهُ إِلَّا عَنْ النَّبِيِّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ كَانَ يَقْرَأُ فِي الرُّكْعَتَيْنِ قُلْ
 هُوَ اللَّهُ أَحَدٌ وَقُلْ يَا أَيُّهَا الْكَافِرُونَ ثُمَّ رَجَعَ إِلَى الرُّكْنِ فَاسْتَلَمَهُ ثُمَّ خَرَجَ مِنَ
 الْبَابِ إِلَى الصُّفَا فَلَمَّا دَنَى مِنَ الصُّفَا قَرَأَ إِنَّ الصُّفَا وَالْمَرْوَةَ مِنْ شَعَائِرِ اللَّهِ
 أَبَدًا بِمَا بَدَأَ اللَّهُ بِهِ قَبْدًا بِالصُّفَا فَرَفَى عَلَيْهِ حَتَّى رَأَى الْبَيْتَ فَاسْتَقْبَلَ الْقِبْلَةَ
 فَوَحَّدَ اللَّهَ وَكَبَّرَهُ وَقَالَ لَا إِلَهَ إِلَّا اللَّهُ وَحْدَهُ لَا شَرِيكَ لَهُ لَهُ الْمُلْكُ وَلَهُ
 الْحَمْدُ وَهُوَ عَلَى كُلِّ شَيْءٍ قَدِيرٌ لَا إِلَهَ إِلَّا اللَّهُ وَحْدَهُ أَنْجَزَ وَعْدَهُ وَنَصَرَ عَبْدَهُ
 وَهَزَمَ الْأَحْزَابَ وَحْدَهُ ثُمَّ دَعَا بَيْنَ ذَلِكَ قَالَ مِثْلَ هَذَا ثَلَاثَ مَرَّاتٍ ثُمَّ نَزَلَ
 وَمَشَى إِلَى الْمَرْوَةِ فَفَعَلَ عَلَى الْمَرْوَةِ كَمَا فَعَلَ عَلَى الصُّفَا حَتَّى إِذَا كَانَ
 الْخِرَاطُافِ عَلَى الْمَرْوَةِ نَادَى وَهُوَ عَلَى الْمَرْوَةِ وَالنَّاسُ تَحْتَهُ فَقَالَ لَوْ إِنِّي
 اسْتَقْبَلْتُ مِنْ أَمْرِي مَا اسْتَدْبَرْتُ لَمْ أَسْقِ الْهَدْيَ وَجَعَلْتُهَا عُمْرَةً فَمَنْ كَانَ
 مِنْكُمْ لَيْسَ مَعَهُ هَدْيٌ فَلْيَجْلُ وَلْيَجْعَلْهَا عُمْرَةً فَقَامَ سُرَاقَةُ بْنُ مَالِكٍ بَنِي
 جُعَشِمٍ فَقَالَ يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ أَصَابِعُهُ وَاحِدَةٌ فِي الْأُخْرَى
 وَقَالَ دَخَلَتِ الْعُمْرَةُ فِي الْحَجِّ لَا بَلَّ لَا بَدَّ أَبَدٍ

وَقَدِمَ عَلَى مِنَ الْيَمَنِ بِئْدَنِ النَّبِيِّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ (فَوَجَدَ فَاطِمَةَ مِنْ
 حَلٍّ وَلَبِسَتْ ثِيَابًا صَبِيغًا وَاسْتَحَلَّتْ فَأَنْكَرَ ذَلِكَ عَلَيْهَا فَقَالَتْ إِنَّ أَبِي أَمَرَنِي
 بِهَذَا) فَقَالَ لَهُ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَاذَا قُلْتَ حِينَ فَرَضْتَ الْحَجَّ
 قَالَ قُلْتُ اللَّهُمَّ إِنِّي أَهْلٌ بِمَا أَهْلٌ بِهِ رَسُولُكَ قَالَ فَإِنْ مَعِيَ الْهَدْيُ فَلَا تَحِلُّ
 قَالَ فَكَانَ جَمَاعَةُ الْهَدْيِ الَّذِي قَدِمَ بِهِ عَلَى مِنَ الْيَمَنِ وَالَّذِي أَتَى بِهِ النَّبِيُّ
 صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مِائَةً قَالَ فَحَلَّ النَّاسُ كُلُّهُمْ وَقَصَرُوا إِلَّا النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ
 عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ وَمَنْ كَانَ مَعَهُ هَدْيٌ

فَلَمَّا كَانَ يَوْمُ التَّروِيَةِ تَوَجَّهُوا إِلَى مِنَى فَأَهْلَوْا بِالْحَجِّ وَرَكِبَ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ

عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ فَصَلَّى بِهَا الظُّهْرَ وَالْعَصْرَ وَالْمَغْرِبَ وَالْعِشَاءَ وَالْفَجْرَ ثُمَّ مَكَثَ قَلِيلًا حَتَّى طَلَعَتِ الشَّمْسُ وَأَمَرَ بِقُبَّةٍ مِنْ شَعْرِ تُضْرَبُ لَهُ بِنَمْرَةٍ فَسَارَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ وَلَا نَشْكُ قُرَيْشَ إِلَّا أَنَّهُ وَقِفَتْ عِنْدَ الْمَشْعَرِ الْحَرَامِ كَمَا كَانَتْ قُرَيْشٌ تَصْنَعُ فِي الْجَاهِلِيَّةِ فَأَجَازَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ حَتَّى أَتَى عَرَفَةَ فَوَجَدَ الْقُبَّةَ قَدْ ضُرِبَتْ لَهُ بِنَمْرَةٍ فَنَزَلَ بِهَا.

حَتَّى إِذَا زَاغَتِ الشَّمْسُ أَمَرَ بِالْقُصَوَاءِ فَرُحِلَتْ لَهُ فَاتَى بَطْنَ الْوَادِي فَخَطَبَ النَّاسَ وَقَالَ إِنَّ دِمَاءَكُمْ وَأَمْوَالَكُمْ حَرَامٌ عَلَيْكُمْ كَحُرْمَةِ يَوْمِكُمْ هَذَا فِي شَهْرِكُمْ هَذَا فِي بَلَدِكُمْ هَذَا لَا تَكُلْ شَيْئًا مِنْ أَمْرِ الْجَاهِلِيَّةِ تَحْتَ قَدَمِي مَوْضُوعٌ وَدِمَاءُ الْجَاهِلِيَّةِ مَوْضُوعَةٌ وَإِنَّ أَوَّلَ دَمٍ أَضْعُ مِنْ دِمَائِنَادِمِ ابْنِ رَبِيعَةَ ابْنِ الْحَارِثِ وَكَانَ مُسْتَرْضِعًا فِي بَيْتِي سَعْدٌ فَقَتَلَهُ هَذِيلٌ وَرَبَا الْجَاهِلِيَّةِ مَوْضُوعٌ وَأَوَّلُ رَبَا أَضْعُ مِنْ رَبَانَا رَبَاعِبَاسِ بْنِ عَبْدِ الْمُطَّلِبِ فَإِنَّهُ مَوْضُوعٌ كُلُّهُ فَاتَّقُوا اللَّهَ فِي النِّسَاءِ وَإِنكُمْ أَخَذْتُمُوهُنَّ بِأَمَانٍ اللَّهُ وَاسْتَحْلَلْتُمْ فُرُوجَهُنَّ بِكَلِمَةِ اللَّهِ وَلَكُمْ عَلَيْهِنَّ أَنْ لَا يُؤْطِينَ فُرُشَكُمْ أَحَدًا تَكْرَهُونَهُ فَإِنْ فَعَلْنَ ذَلِكَ فَاضْرِبُوهُنَّ ضَرْبًا غَيْرَ مُبْرَحٍ وَلَهُنَّ عَلَيْكُمْ رِزْقُهُنَّ وَكِسْوَتُهُنَّ بِالْمَعْرُوفِ وَقَدْ تَرَكْتُ فِيكُمْ مَا لَنْ تَضِلُّوا بَعْدَهُ إِنْ اعْتَصَمْتُمْ بِهِ كِتَابُ اللَّهِ وَأَنْتُمْ تُسْأَلُونَ عَنِّي فَمَا أَنْتُمْ قَائِلُونَ؟ قَالُوا نَشْهَدُ إِنَّكَ قَدْ بَلَغْتَ وَأَدَّيْتَ وَنَصَحْتَ فَقَالَ بِأَصْبَحِهِ السَّبَابَةِ يَرْفَعُهَا إِلَى السَّمَاءِ وَيَنْكُتُهَا إِلَى النَّاسِ اللَّهُمَّ اشْهَدْ اللَّهُمَّ اشْهَدْ ثَلَاثَ مَرَّاتٍ ثُمَّ أَذَّنَ بِلَالٌ ثُمَّ أَقَامَ فَصَلَّى الظُّهْرَ ثُمَّ أَقَامَ فَصَلَّى الْعَصْرَ وَلَمْ يُصَلِّ بَيْنَهُمَا شَيْئًا. ثُمَّ رَكِبَ حَتَّى أَتَى الْمَوْقِفَ فَجَعَلَ بَطْنَ نَاقَتِهِ الْقُصَوَاءَ إِلَى الصَّخَرَاتِ وَجَعَلَ حَبْلَ الْمُشَاةِ بَيْنَ يَدَيْهِ وَاسْتَقْبَلَ الْقِبْلَةَ فَلَمْ يَزَلْ وَاقِفًا حَتَّى غَرَبَتِ الشَّمْسُ وَذَهَبَتِ الصُّفْرَةُ قَلِيلًا حَتَّى غَابَ الْقُرْصُ وَارْدَفَ أَسَامَةُ وَدَفَعَ حَتَّى أَتَى الْمُزْدَلِفَةَ فَصَلَّى بِهَا الْمَغْرِبَ وَالْعِشَاءَ بِأَذَانٍ وَاحِدٍ وَأَقَامَتَيْنِ وَلَمْ يُسَبِّحْ بَيْنَهُمَا شَيْئًا ثُمَّ اضْطَجَعَ حَتَّى طَلَعَ الْفَجْرُ فَصَلَّى الْفَجْرَ حِينَ تَبَيَّنَ لَهُ الصُّبْحُ بِأَذَانٍ وَأَقَامَةٍ ثُمَّ رَكِبَ الْقُصَوَاءَ حَتَّى أَتَى الْمَشْعَرَ الْحَرَامَ فَاسْتَقْبَلَ الْقِبْلَةَ فَدَعَاهُ وَكَبَّرَهُ وَهَلَّلَهُ وَوَحْدَهُ فَلَمْ يَزَلْ وَاقِفًا حَتَّى أَسْفَرَ جِدًّا فَدَفَعَ قَبْلَ

أَنْ تَطْلُعَ الشَّمْسُ وَارْدَفَ الْفَضْلُ بْنُ عَبَّاسٍ حَتَّى آتَى بَطْنَ مُحَسَّرٍ فَحَرَّكَ قَلِيلًا ثُمَّ سَلَكَ الطَّرِيقَ الْوُسْطَى الَّتِي تَخْرُجُ عَلَى الْجُمُرَةِ الْكُبْرَى حَتَّى آتَى الْجُمُرَةَ الَّتِي عِنْدَ الشَّجَرَةِ فَرَمَاهَا بِسَبْعِ حَصَيَاتٍ يَكْبُرُ مَعَ كُلِّ حَصَاةٍ مِنْهَا مِثْلَ حَصَى الْخَذْفِ رَمَى مِنْ بَطْنِ الْوَادِي ثُمَّ انْصَرَفَ إِلَى الْمَنْحَرِ فَتَحَرَ ثَلَاثًا وَسِتِّينَ بُذْنَةً بِيَدِهِ ثُمَّ أَعْطَى عَلِيًّا فَتَحَرَّمَ غَيْرَ وَأَشْرَكَهُ فِي هَدْيِهِ ثُمَّ أَمَرَ مِنْ كُلِّ بُذْنَةٍ بِبُضْعَةٍ فَجَعَلَتْ فِي قِدْرِ فَطَبِخَتْ فَأَكَلَا مِنْ لَحْمِهَا وَشَرَبَا مِنْ مَرِقِهَا ثُمَّ رَكِبَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ فَأَقَاضَ إِلَى الْبَيْتِ فَصَلَّى بِمَكَّةَ الظُّهَرَ فَاتَى عَلَى بَنِي عَبْدِ الْمُطَّلِبِ يَسْقُونَ عَلَى زُمَرَمَ فَقَالَ انْزِعُوا بَنِي عَبْدِ الْمُطَّلِبِ فَلَوْلَا أَنْ يَغْلِبَكُمْ النَّاسُ عَلَى سِقَايَتِكُمْ لَنَزَعْتُ مَعَكُمْ فَنَاولُوهُ دَلُوءًا فَشَرِبَ مِنْهُ

(رواه مسلم)

(987/20) Jafar bin Muhammad, (the great grandson of Sayyidina Husain bin Ali رضي الله عنهما and popularly called Imam Ja'far Sadiq), related to us on the authority of his father, Muhammad bin Ali¹, (known commonly by the name of Imam Muhammad Baqar), that 'some of us went to the Prophet's Companion, Jabir bin Abdullah رضي الله عنه. He asked us to introduce ourselves (upon which everyone of us made himself acquainted to him). When my turn came I said, 'I am Muhammad bin Ali bin Husain'. (He had grown very old and, also, had become blind). He placed his hand over my head (with affection), and then opened the upper button of my shirt, and, after it, the lower button, and then taking his hand inside the shirt, placed it over the middle part of my chest. I was quite young at that time, and (expressing his joy over my coming), he said, 'God bless you, my nephew! Ask freely whatever you want to ask! Meanwhile, the time of prayers (Salah) came. Sayyidina Jabir رضي الله عنه had wrapped a small sheet round his body which was so short that when he threw it over his shoulders both of its ends came towards him. Though his mantle was hanging on the line nearby, (he did not think it necessary to wear it for the prayers, but led the congregation

①. Muhammad bin Ali, i.e., Imam Baqar was born in 56 A.H. If he was even 14 or 15 years old at that time of this meeting, Jabir رضي الله عنه must have been over 90. Sayyidina Jabir died at Madinah in 74 A.H. at the age of 94 years, and, according to reliable reports, he was the last of the Companions in Madinah. After his death, Madinah became bereft of the holy Companions.

wrapped in the small sheet). When the prayer was over, I said to him, 'Tell me the details of the Prophet's *Hajj* (i.e., the Farewell *Hajj*)'. He replied, making a sign of nine with his fingers. 'The Prophet ﷺ did not perform any *Hajj* for 9 years after coming to Madinah. Then, in 10 A.H., he had it announced that he intended to perform the *Hajj* that year. On receiving the information, a very large number of men thronged to Madinah. Everyone was eager to emulate his example, in the fullest degree, by accompanying him on the sacred journey. (When the day of departure arrived), the whole party left Madinah (under the leadership of the Prophet) and came to Zul Hulaifa and made a halt there for the day. Here an incident occurred (which was that) Asma, bint 'Umais رضى الله عنها (wife of Abu Bakr Siddiq, who was also in party), gave birth to a child. She enquired from the Prophet ﷺ what was to be done in those circumstances. The Prophet ﷺ replied that she should take the bath of *Ihram* in the same condition, and bandage her private parts with a cloth as women do at such a time, and formulate the *niyat*¹ of *Ihram*. Afterwards, the Prophet ﷺ offered the last prayer in the mosque of Zul Hulaifa (i.e., *Zuhr*), and mounted his camel, Qasawa, till when the camel reached Baida (which was a somewhat elevated plain with a flat surface near Zul Hulaifa). I looked around from the height and noticed that there were nothing but men, mounted as well as on foot, on all sides, as far as the eye could see, and the Prophet ﷺ was in our midst, and the Qur'an was being revealed to him, and he knew its reality and true significance. (Whatever he did was thus, according to the Divine Will and Revelation), and our attitude was that we did what we saw him do. (So when the Prophet's ﷺ camel reached Baida), the Prophet ﷺ recited the *Talbia* of *Tawheed* (i.e., Monotheism) with a loud voice: *Labbaik Allahumma labbaik; labbaika laa shareeka laka labbaik; in-na hamda wannai' mata laka wal mulk; laa shareeka lak*. The *Talbia* which his accompanying Companions ﷺ recited (included a few more words), but though they recited it aloud, Prophet ﷺ neither contradicted nor corrected them (but) he continued to recite his own *Talbia* (meaning that some of the Companions ﷺ recited the *Talbia* which contained some additional words of veneration but since it was permissible, the

①. Meaning the precise formulation of intention.

Prophet ﷺ did not check them. On his own part, however, he did not make any alteration in *Talbia*)

"Sayyidina Jabir رضي الله عنه went on to relate: 'In this journey our intention was simply to perform the Hajj. *Umrah* was not in our minds till we had completed the journey and reached the House of Allah (i.e., the Ka'bah) in the company of the Prophet ﷺ. (On reaching there), the Prophet ﷺ carried out the *Istilam*¹ of *Hajr Aswad*² (i.e., he placed his hand on it and kissed it and, then, he began the *Tawaf*³) during which he did *Ramal*⁴ (the first) three circuits and, in the remaining four, walked at his normal pace and in the normal way. (On completing the seven circuits of *Tawaf*), the Prophet ﷺ proceeded towards *Muqam Ibrahim*⁵ and recited the verse,

Take Muqam Ibrahim as your place of worship,

(Al-Baqarah 2:25)

وَاتَّخِذُوا مِنْ مَّقَامِ إِبْرَاهِيمَ مُصَلًّى

(البقرة ٢: ١٢٥)

and, then offered prayer by standing at such a place that Muqam Ibrahim was between him and Ka'bah." (Imam Jafar Sadiq relates that). "my father used to tell that in those two Rak'at the Prophet ﷺ recited the surah *Qul yaa aiyyuhal kafiroon* and *Qul hu-wallahu ahad*. He, then, again returned to Hajr Aswad, and once more, carried out its *Istilam*,⁶ and, then, went out (for *Sa'ee*)⁷ towards the hill of Safa by one of the doors, and, on reaching close to it, recited the verse,

إِنَّ الصَّفَا وَالْمَرْوَةَ مِنْ شَعَائِرِ اللَّهِ

Lo! (the mountains of) As-Safa and Al-Marwa are among the Landmarks of Allah

(Al-Baqarah 2:158)

After (reciting the verse), the Prophet ﷺ said: "I begin *Sa'ee*

- ①. The act of kissing Hajr Aswad in each circuit of Tawaf.
- ②. The Black Stone embedded in the wall of the House of Kabah.
- ③. The ritual of going round the House of Ka'bah seven times, commencing from the Black Stone and having the Kabah on the left.
- ④. Walking done at a rather brisk pace with short steps, with the chest thrown out and the shoulders moved in the style of a wrestler.
- ⑤. A spot near Ka'bah.
- ⑥. This *Istilam* was for *Sa'ee*. Just as *Tawaf* is commenced with *Istilam*, *Istilam* before *Sa'ee* is also sanctioned by the practice of the Prophet ﷺ.
- ⑦. The ritual of walking at a brisk pace, seven times each way, the distance between the two hills of Safa and Marwa.

from the very Safa mentioned in this verse by God.' So, he came to (the hill of) Safa and ascended it up to the point from where *Ka'bah* could be seen. He, then, stopped, and, with his face turned towards *Ka'bah*, occupied himself with the praise and glorification of the Lord. He said: *Laa illaaha il-laahu wahdahu laa shareeka lahu, lahul mulki wa lahul hamdu, wa hua ala kulli shai-in qadeer. laa ilaaha il-lallaahu wahdahu anjaz wa'adahu wa nasara abdahu wa nasara abdahu wa hazamal ahzuaba wahdahu.* (No one is worthy of worship save Allah; He is One and without a partner; His is the Kingdom and unto Him is due all praise and He hath power over all things. He hath fulfilled His promise (of granting ascendancy over Makkah and over the whole of Arabia and making His Faith supreme); He gave the fullest help to His bondsman, and He, and He alone, defeated the clans of polytheism and paganism).

"The Prophet ﷺ recited it thrice and entreated the Lord in the intervals separating the recitals. Afterwards, he came down (the hill) and proceeded towards (the hill of) Marwa. On reaching the lower part of the valley, he walked at his usual pace till he came to Marwa, and here, too, he did what he had done at Safa, and, as he reached Marwa, after completing the last round, he said to the Companions: "If I had thought of earlier what I thought later, I would not have brought the animals of sacrifice from Madinah and made the *Tawaf* and *Sa'ee* I have performed an *Umrah*. So, now, I tell you that those of you who have not brought the animals of sacrifice with them should put an end to their Ihram and make an *Umrah* of the *Tawaf* and *Sa'ee* they have performed." Suraqa bin Maalik enquired, 'O Messenger of Allah! Is the command for performing *Umrah* in the month of *Hajj* only for this year or forever?' The Prophet ﷺ replied, entwining the fingers of one hand with those of the other, that *Umrah* had entered into *Hajj* not only that year but for all times."

Commentary: For realising the significance of what the sacred Prophet ﷺ said at the conclusion of *Sa'ee* at *Marwa*, i.e., those who had not brought the animals of sacrifice with them should regard their *Tawaf* and *Sa'ee* to be an *Umrah* and he would have done the same had he not brought the animals from Madinah it is necessary to bear in mind that among the popular misconceptions

of the Age of Perversion one was that it was strictly forbidden to perform *Umrah* in *Shawwal*, *Zul Qa'dah* and *Zul Hajjah*, which were commonly known as *Ashhar Hajj*, for the reason that the journey of the *Hajj* was undertaken during them. At the very outset, the Prophet ﷺ had made it clear that whoever liked could put on merely the *Ihram* of *Hajj* which in the special terminology of the *Shari'ah* was called *Ifrad*, or the *Ihram* of *Umrah* in the beginning, and, then, the other *Ihram* of the *Hajj* after performing the *Umrah* in Makkah, which was called *Tamattu* or a common *Ihram* for both the *Hajj* and the *Umrah* and formulate the *Niyat* of performing both of them with the same *Ihram*, which was called *Qiran*. On learning about it from the Prophet ﷺ, very few of the Companions ؓ had, owing to their unusual circumstances, decided on *Tamattu* and assumed only the *Ihram* of *Umrah* at *Zul Hulaifa*, one of them being Sayyidah Ayshah رضى الله عنها. Otherwise, most of the Companions ؓ had either put on the *Ihram* of the *Hajj* or of both, the *Hajj* and the *Umrah*. The Prophet ﷺ himself, had assumed the *Ihram* of both, i.e., he had adopted the course of *Qiran*. Besides, he had brought the animals of sacrifice with him from Madinah, and the pilgrim who does so cannot end the state of *Ihram* until he has performed the *Qurbani* on the 10th of *Zul Hajjah*. Thus, the Prophet ﷺ and the Companions ؓ who, like him, had brought the animals with them could not remove the *Ihram* before the *Hajj*, i.e., before carrying out the sacrificial offering of the animals, but for the pilgrims who had not done so there was no such legal constraint.

On reaching Makkah, it was felt more intensely by the Prophet ﷺ that for the eradication of the superstitious belief that to perform *Umrah* during the months of the *Hajj* was extremely sinful it was advisable to set, for everyone to see, a large scale example of acting in opposition to it, the only way to which was that the greatest possible number of Companions ؓ who had performed the *Tawaf* and *Sa'ee* with him put an end to the state of *Ihram* and to all the restrictions that went with it by deciding that the *Tawaf* and *Sa'ee* they had carried out was an *Umrah* and donned another *Ihram* for the *Hajj* at the appropriate time. But as the Prophet ﷺ had brought with him the animals of sacrifice such a course was

not open to him. That is why, he said that if he had realised in the beginning what he did latter on, he would not have brought the animals from Madinah and removed the *Ihram*, taking his *Tawaf* and *Sa'ee* to be an *Umrah*. But as now he could not do so himself, he was telling those who had not brought the animals with them to resolve that their *Tawaf* and *Sa'ee* were an *Umrah* and take off the *Ihram*.

On hearing it, Suraqa bin Maalik,¹ who, till then, was under the impression that it was highly sinful to perform *Umrah* during the months of the *Hajj*, got up and enquired whether what the Prophet ﷺ had said was meant only for the particular year or for all time. The Prophet ﷺ, in order to emphasise the point, joined the fingers of one hand with those of the other and declared that *Umrah* had entered into the *Hajj* in the like manner, and it could be performed during the months, and even in close proximity to the days of the *Hajj*, and the notion of its sinfulness was utterly wrong and based upon ignorance, and, further, that the command was not only for the time being but forever.

To continue with the Tradition:

"And And Sayyidina Ali ؓ (who had gone to Yemen for the collection of *Zakah* and other imposts at the order of the Prophet ﷺ) arrived in Makkah, bringing some other animals for *Qurbani* by the Prophet ﷺ. He saw that his wife, Fatima Zahra رضي الله عنها, had taken off *Ihram* and become *Halal* [i.e., come out of the restrictions prescribed for those adopting it] and was wearing coloured clothes, and, also had used collyrium. He thought it to be highly improper and expressed his displeasure (and, according to the report quoted in *Abu Dawood*, said to her, 'who had told you to remove *Ihram* and become free from the attending restrictions?' Sayyidah Fatima رضي الله عنها replied 'my father (i.e., the sacred Prophet) had given me the order (and

①. He was the same person who, on the information supplied by his slave, had pursued the Prophet ﷺ when he was migrating to Madinah, in the hope of capturing him and winning the reward placed on his head, but as he had drawn close to the Prophet ﷺ, the legs of his mare had sunk into the ground. The mare, however, had come out safely as the Prophet ﷺ prayed at his request. Suraqa, then, returned to Makkah and remained true to his paganish creed till he had embraced Islam in 8 A.H., at the Victory of Makkah, along with the other inhabitants of the town.

I have done so in compliance with it). The Prophet ﷺ then, asked Ali, 'What had you said when you formulated the *Niyat* of *Hajj* alone, as is done in *Ifrad*, or only of *Umrah*, as is done in *Tamattu*, or of both, as is done in *Qiran*)? 'I had formulated the *Niyat* thus', replied Ali. 'O Allah! I put on the *Ihram* of what Thy Messenger has put on'. The Prophet ﷺ thereupon, explained, 'I had brought the animals of sacrifice with me (and owing to it, I cannot now remove the *Ihram* before the *Hajj* and you have formulated the *Niyat* of *Ihram* like that of mine). So, you are, also, to remain in the state of *Ihram* like me."

(Jabir adds); "The total number of the animals of sacrifice the Prophet ﷺ had brought with him and Ali ؓ had brought for him later was 100'. (In some traditions it is mentioned in detail that 63 camels had come with the Prophet ﷺ and 37 had been brought by Hazrat Ali ؓ from Yemen). (Sayyidina Jabir ؓ related, further, that) "in accordance with the command of the Prophet ﷺ, all the Companions ؓ who not brought the animals of sacrifice with them removed the *Ihram* and cut short the hair of their heads after completing the *Sa'ee* of *Safa* and *Marwa* and became *Halal* and decided that the *Tawaf* and *Sa'ee* they had performed were an *Umrah*. Only the Prophet ﷺ and the Companions ؓ who had brought the animals of sacrifice with them remained in the state of *Ihram*."

Commentary: The Companions ؓ who removed *Ihram* on the advice of the Prophet ﷺ did not shave off their heads but only cropped the hair because they wanted to earn the merits of shaving the head at the removal of the *Ihram* of the *Hajj*.

To take up the Tradition again:

"Then as *Yaumul Tarwiya* (i.e., the 8th of *Zul Hajjah*) dawned and everyone began to leave for *Mina* (and the Companions ؓ who had removed *Ihram* after the *Sa'ee* of *Safa* and *Marwa* and become *Halal*) assumed the *Ihram* of *Hajj* and the Prophet ﷺ proceeded towards *Mina* on his camel. On reaching there, the Prophet ﷺ and the Companions ؓ observed the *Salah* of *Zuhr*, *Asr*, *Maghrib*, *Isha* and *Fajr* in the mosque of *Kheef*), and stayed for some time at *Mina* after the *Fajr* prayers till when the sun rose, he left for *Arafat*, and he had ordered the tent of *Suf*¹

①. Meaning laying aside the restrictions.

②. A kind of coarse cloth made of mixed cotton and wool.

to be pitched for him at *Namira*¹ (the place from where the flat ground of Arafat begins). The people of his family of the Quraysh were sure that the Prophet ﷺ will stay near the hill of *Mash'ar-i-Haraam*, as the *Quraish* used to do during the Age of Perversion (but he did not do so) and went beyond the limits of *Mash'ari'-i-Haram* to *Arafat* and saw that (according to his instructions) his tent had been pitched at *Namira*. He, thus, dismounted at the tent."

Commentary: The ritualistic movements of the *Hajj* begin on the 8th of *Zul Hajjah* which is called *Yaumul Tarwiya*. On its morning the pilgrims leave for *Mina*. While the pilgrims performing the *Hajj* by the method of *Ifrad* or *Qiran* are already in the state of *Ihram*, other pilgrims, too, put on the *Ihram* and proceed to *Mina* on the 8th of *Zul Hajjah* and stay there till the morning of the 9th. The sacred Prophet ﷺ and the rest of the Companions رضي الله عنهم who had brought the animals of sacrifice with them were in the state of *Ihram* at that time and the rest of the Companions رضي الله عنهم who had removed the *Ihram* after performing *Umrah* assumed the *Ihram* of the *Hajj* on 8th of *Zul Hajjah* and the whole party of pilgrims left for *Mina* where it stayed for the day and proceeded for *Arafat* on the morning of the 9th after the sun had risen.

Arafat is situated at about 6 miles from *Mina* and 9 Miles from *Makkah*. It lies outside the limits of *Haram*². In that direction the area of *Arafat* begins where the territory of *Haram* ends. The tribals of Arabia who came for the *Hajj* went out of the limits of *Haram* to carry out the ritual of *Wuqoof*³ at *Arafat* on the 9th of *Zul Hajjah* while the Quraysh who considered themselves to be the custodians of *Ka'bah* and called themselves the 'People of *Haram*' did not come out of those limits even for *Wuqoof* and carried it out

-
- ①. It lies exactly at the point where the territory of *Haram* ends and from where the area of *Arafat* begins. The present mosque of *Namira* is situated at the border of *Haram* and it is said that its wall which is towards *Makkah* marks the dividing line between *Arafat* and *Namira* so much so that, God forbidding, if it collapses on the outer side, it will fall out of the territory of *Arafat* and in the valley of *Nmira*.
 - ②. The territory of *Makkah*, along with a certain defined territory on all its sides, is called *Haram*.
 - ③. The stay at *Arafat* between the declining of the sun from the meridian on the 9th of *Zul Hajjah* and the dawn of the 10th of *Zul Hajjah* is called *Wuqoof*. It is the most important ritual of *Hajj*.

within them near the hill of *Mash'ar-i-Haram*, in the territory of Muzdalifa. They regarded it a mark of eminence and distinction. In view of this family tradition, the Quraysh believed that the Prophet ﷺ, too, would carry out *Wuqoof* near *Mash'ar-i-Haram*, but as the correct place of *Wuqoof* was Arafat, he gave the order, at the time of departure for Mina, that his tent should be pitched at Namira.

To take up the Tradition again:

'When the sun declined he (the Prophet ﷺ) ordered for the saddle to be placed on his camel. The saddle was (then) placed on the camel and he mounted it and came to the Valley (of 'Orna) and from the back of the camel delivered a sermon in which he said:

"O people! Your lives, your properties and your honour must be as sacred to one another as this sacred day, as this sacred month, and as this sacred town. Know it clearly that all the customs of the Days of Ignorance are trampled under my feet. (I proclaim their end and annulment)."

"This day the retaliation for all murders committed in the Days of Ignorance is cancelled (i.e., no Muslim shall now take vengeance for a murder committed during those days), and foremost of all the murder of a member of my own family, i.e. of the son of Rab'i bin Haris bin Abdul Muttalib¹, forgiven.

"This day all sums of interest are remitted (i.e., no Muslim shall now realise the interest on the money lent by him), and in this regard, also, I, first of all, announce the remission of the sum of interest owed to my uncle Abbas ؓ, son of Abdul Muttalib.

"And O people! Fear God in respect of the rights of your women for you have taken them as the trust of God in your hands and to derive satisfaction from them has been made legitimate for you by His Command. Your special claim on them is that they do not permit anyone whom you do not like to come into your house and to sit in your place or on your bed, but if they ever commit a folly admonish them with kindness, and their special

①. Rab'i bin Haris was the cousin of the Prophet ﷺ. His infant son whom, according to the Arab custom, a lady of the tribe of Banu Sa'ad had taken home for suckling and fosterage was killed at the hands of the people of the tribe of Hzail in a tribal conflict. The family of the Prophet ﷺ was entitled by the ancient Arab custom to avenge his blood.

claim on you is that you feed and clothe them to the best of your ability."

"And I am leaving for you the provision of guidance. If you abide by it and remain attached to it you will never go astray. It is the Book of God (i.e., the Qur'an).

"And, on the Day of Resurrection, it will be enquired from you, on behalf of God, about me (whether I had conveyed to you His Message and Commandments). So, tell me, what reply will you give?"

"And the valley resounded with the reply from the assembled host, 'By our Lord! Verily you have conveyed to us the message and commandments of God and left no stone unturned to guide us (along the Straight Path) through kindness and good counsel.'

"Upon it, the Prophet ﷺ raised his index finger towards the sky and said it thrice: 'O Allah, I beseech Thee, bear Thou witness unto it.'

"After it, Bilal ؓ gave *Azan* (at his command) and called out the *Iqamah* and the Prophet ﷺ led the *Zuhr* service. Then, Bilal ؓ, again called out *Iqamah* and the Prophet ﷺ led the *Asr* service."

Commentary: It is known for certain that the day of Wuqoof at Arafat fell that year on a Friday. The Prophet ﷺ, first, delivered the aforementioned sermon, after the declining of the sun, and, then, led both the *Zuhr* and *Asr* prayers together, at the time of *Zuhr*, without an interval. In this Tradition, *Zuhr* is distinctly mentioned which shows that day, the Prophet ﷺ did not offer the Friday prayer, but the *Zuhr* prayer and the sermon he delivered was not of a Friday prayer, probably, was that Arafat is not an inhabited area a town or village but a stretch of waste-land a dry, vacant region and the Friday service is held only in a populated place.

The guidance the Prophet ﷺ imparted in the course of the sermon was most suitable for the occasion. After the sermon, he offered the *Zuhr* and *Asr* prayers simultaneously, without offering even two *Rak'at* of *Nafl* or *Sunnah* between them. There is a complete agreement in the *Ummah* over the point that on the day of *Wuqoof Arafat* these two prayers should be offered like that, and, in the same way, on that day the *Maghrib* and *Isha* prayers should

be offered together at the time of *Isha* on reaching *Muzdalifah*. The Prophet ﷺ had done likewise as we shall see later. It is the correct time and manner of offering those prayers on that day, perhaps, for the reason that the distinction of *Yaumul Arafat* that, on it, even the timings of those prayers had been changed by Allah came to the knowledge of everyone, and, also, that the whole of the afternoon was left free for *Zikr* and *Du'a* which were the real religious duties for that day and the bondsmen did not have to spare time for a prayer from *Zuhr* to *Maghrib* or even *Isha*.

Alluding, towards the close of the sermon, to the fact that his death was near the Prophet ﷺ said that he will be leaving for his followers a complete provision of guidance after which they will never go out of the right way provided that they remained true to it, and it was the *Qur'an*.

It is clear from the foregoing what the Prophet ﷺ had in mind when during the last days of his mortal illness he had wanted something to be written down by way of a testament and about which he had said "after it you will never be misled". The sermon at the time of the Farewell *Hajj* distinctly shows that the Prophet ﷺ wanted to dictate as his last wish resolute and unswerving adherence to the holy *Qur'an*. he had, already, indicated in the sermon how great was the glory and splendour of the Book of God, and since Sayyidina Umar ؓ knew it and the Almighty had, also, endowed him with the courage to speak out boldly at the appropriate time, he had said that they knew, as a result of the training and guidance received continuously from the Prophet ﷺ how profound and everlasting was the worth and value of the *Qur'an*; so why should trouble be taken to dictate the will when the sacred Prophet ﷺ was so ill and feeling so restless. They remembered and shall always remember what the Prophet ﷺ had taught: *Hasbuna Kitabullah* (The Book of Allah is sufficient unto us).

The Tradition goes on to say:

"Then, (after the Prophet had offered the prayers of *Zuhr* and *Asr* without a break), he mounted his camel and came to the place of *Wuqoof* at *Arafat* and made the camel stand so as to face the large rocks and had the multitude standing in front of

him and turned his face towards the *Qiblah* and remained there till the time of sunset came and the paleness (of the latter part of the evening), too, disappeared and the sun wholly passed below the horizon, and, then, left (Arafat for Muzdalifa) and made Usama bin Zayd رضي الله عنه ride on his camel behind him until he came to Muzdalifah (which was about 3 miles from Arafat). On reaching there, the Prophet ﷺ offered the *Maghrib* and *Isha* prayers together with one *Azan* and two *Iqamah* (i.e., the *Azan* was called only once but the *Iqamah* for *Maghrib* and *Isha* were called out separately) and between the two prayers, also, he did not offer any *Nafil* or *Sunnah Rak'at*. After it, the Prophet ﷺ lay down and remained lying till it was daybreak and the time for *Fajr* had arrived. At the dawn, he celebrated the *Fajr* service with *Azan* and *Iqamah*, and, then, came to *Mash'ar-i- Haruam* (which was a ridge within the limits of Muzdalifa and it still is like that with the difference that a building has been constructed there as a landmark). On coming here, the Prophet ﷺ stood facing the *Qiblah* and occupied himself with supplication and glorification of the Lord till it was broad daylight. Then, a little after sunrise, the Prophet ﷺ left for Mina and now made Fadl bin Abbas ride on his camel at the back. He set off till, as he entered the Valley of Muhassar, he somewhat increased the pace of his mount, and, on coming out of it, proceeded along the middle path that led to the biggest *Jamra* (i.e., Pillar), and, then, on reaching the *Jamra* which is near the tree, he carried out *Rami*¹ against it. He threw seven pebbles at it and said *Allah-u-Akbar* at each throw. The pebbles were like the pebbles of *Khazaf* (i.e., of the size of a pea that could be held between the thumb and the index or middle finger for throwing). He threw the pebbles at the *Jamra* from the low ground (near the *Jamra*), and, on finishing *Rami*, went towards the place of *Qurbani* (i.e., where the animals are sacrificed), and carried out the *Qurbani* of sixty-three camels with his own hand and left the rest to Ali رضي الله عنه for performing the *Qurbani*, and, (thus), let him join in the *Qurbani* offered by him (i.e., the Prophet ﷺ). Then, the Prophet ﷺ ordered a piece of meat to be taken from every camel that had been sacrificed. All those pieces were cooked in a cauldron and both, the Prophet ﷺ and Ali رضي الله عنه, ate the meat and drank the broth. Then, the Prophet ﷺ proceeded to the

①. The ritual throwing pebbles at *Jamrat*.

House of Allah on his mount for *Tawaf Ziyarat*¹ and offered the prayer of *Zuhr* at Makkah. At the conclusion of the prayer, the Prophet ﷺ went up to the members of his family (i.e., Bani Abdul Muttlib) who were drawing water from *Zam Zam* and giving it to the people to drink. He said to them. 'If there was not the danger that other people forcibly took away this service from you, I would, also, have joined you in pulling out the pitcher'. They, drew out a pitcher from *Zam Zam* and gave it to the Prophet ﷺ from which he drank."

Commentary: The principle rite of the Hajj is *Wuqoof Arafat*, i.e., standing on the 9th of *Zul Hajjah* in the presence of the Lord in the table-land of Arafat, after *Zuhr* and *Asr* prayers on the declining of the sun. The above Tradition shows how long was the *Wuqoof* the Prophet ﷺ had performed. He had offered the *Zuhr* and *Asr Salah* soon after the time prescribed for the *Zuhr* began, and, then, stayed there till sunset. Afterwards, the Prophet ﷺ left directly for Muzdalifa where, as we have seen, he offered the *Maghrib* and *Isha* services simultaneously.

On that night, in Muzdalifa, the Prophet ﷺ rested after the *Isha* till *Fajr* and altogether omitted the *Tahajjud* though he never missed it even in a journey, probably because he had been very busy throughout the 9th *Zul Hajjah*. In the morning, he had travelled from Mina to Arafat where he, first, delivered the historic sermon, and, then, carried out the *Wuqoof* continuously till *Maghrib*, and, immediately after that, journeyed over to Makkah. Thus, from *Fajr* till *Isha* he had remained constantly occupied and on the move. On the next day, the 10th of *Zul Hajjah* he had, again, to keep busy. He had to travel, in the morning, from *Muzdalifa* to Mina, and, on reaching there, at first, to perform the *Rami* of the *Jamrat*, and, then, to carry out the *Qurbani* of as many as 63 camels with his own hand, and, afterwards, to go from Mina to Makkah for *Tawaf Ziyarat*, and, then, return to Mina.

Anyway, as the schedule for the 9th and 10th of *Zul Hajjah* was so heavy and tiring, it was necessary to rest properly during the night between them at Muzdalifa. The body, too, has a claim and its resources are, after all, limited. In such congregations, in

①. The ritual of circumambulation performed after the *Qurbani* has been done at Mina.

particular, it is essential to make an allowance for one's physical needs so that the aspect of leniency may, also, be felt by the people and they can appreciate the temperate nature and moderate disposition of the *Shari'ah*.

It is distinctly stated in this Tradition that the Prophet ﷺ had performed the *Qurbani* of 63 camels with his own hand. These were, perhaps, the camels he had brought from Yemen, he got sacrificed by him. The figure of 63 significant. The Prophet ﷺ, then was 63 years of age, and, thus, he made, an offering of a camel for every year of his life in thanksgiving.

The Prophet ﷺ and Sayyidina Ali ؑ had the meat of the animals sacrificed by them cooked and they ate it and drank the broth. It shows that a person can partake of the meat of the animals offered by him in sacrifice as well as give it to Kinsmen to eat.

On the 10th of *Zul Hajjah* the Prophet ﷺ went to Makkah, after finishing with the *Qurbani*, for *Tawaf Ziyarat*. It is better to perform *Tawaf Ziyarat* on the 10th of *Zul Hajjah*, after the fulfilment of the ritual of *Qurbani*, but it can, also, be delayed.

From ancient times it had been the privilege of Bani Abdul Muttalib to draw water from the well of *Zam Zam* and offer it to the pilgrims. As the Prophet ﷺ came to *Zam Zam*, after carrying out *Tawaf Ziyarat* and saw his kismen performing the enviable task, he felt like taking a hand in it. But he thought that, then, all his Companions would, also, want to participate in it, in emulation of his example, and, in the upshot, the members of his family would be deprived of the time-honoured right. The sacred Prophet ﷺ, hence, expressed his wish for the sake of their encouragement and, also, explained why he had preferred not to join.

The above narrative, as we have remarked already, contains the longest and most detailed account of the *Farewell Hajj*. Yet a number of events have been left out in it, including even the ritual of *Halq*¹ and the sermon of the 10th of *Zul Hajjah* which are mentioned in other Traditions.

In some other versions of the same Tradition it appears that the Prophet ﷺ said:

"I have performed *Qurbani* at this place but the whole area of

①. Meaning the rite of shaving the head.

Mina is the place of *Qurbani*. You can, therefore, perform *Qurbani* at your place (i.e., where you are staying at Mina). (Similarly), I have carried out *Wuqoof* here (i.e., near the big rocks), but the whole of Arafat is the place of *Wuqoof*, and I have halted here (i.e., near *Mash'ar-i- Haraam*), but the whole of Muzdalifa is the place of halting. (One can stay for the night in any part of it)." (Muslim)

(۹۸۸/۲۱) عَنْ جَابِرٍ قَالَ نَحَرَ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ عَنْ نِسَائِهِ بَقْرَةً فِي حَجَّتِهِ
(رواه مسلم)

(988/21) It is related on the authority of Jabir bin Abdullah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ had, in his *Hajj*, performed the *Qurbani* of a cow on behalf of his wives. (Muslim)

(۹۸۹/۲۲) عَنْ عَلِيٍّ قَالَ أَمَرَنِي رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ أَنْ أَقُومَ عَلَى بُذْنِهِ وَأَنْ أَتَصَدَّقَ بِلَحْمِهَا وَجُلُودِهَا وَأَجِلَّتِهَا وَأَنْ لَا أُعْطِيَ الْجَزَأَ رَمْنَهَا قَالَ نَحْنُ نُعْطِيهِ مِنْ عِنْدِنَا
(رواه البخاري ومسلم)

(989/22) It is related on the authority of Sayyidina Ali رضي الله عنه that the Prophet ﷺ ordered me to supervise the disposal of the animals sacrificed by him and to give away their meat, hides and entrails in charity and to desist from giving anything out of them to the butchers (as their wages). He said: "I shall pay them for their services from my pocket)." (Bukhari and Muslim)

(۹۹۰/۲۳) عَنْ أَنَسٍ أَنَّ النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ أَتَى مِنَى فَاتَى الْجَمْرَةَ فَرَمَاهَا ثُمَّ أَتَى مَنْزِلَهُ بِمِنَى وَنَحَرَنُسْكَهَ ثُمَّ دَعَا بِالْحَلَاقِ وَنَاوَلَ الْحَالِقَ شِقَّهُ الْأَيْمَنَ فَحَلَقَهُ ثُمَّ دَعَا أَبَا طَلْحَةَ الْأَنْصَارِيَّ فَأَعْطَاهُ إِيَّاهُ ثُمَّ نَاوَلَ الشَّقَّ الْأَيْسَرَ فَقَالَ إِحْلِقْ فَحَلَقَهُ فَأَعْطَاهُ أَبَا طَلْحَةَ فَقَالَ إقْسِمُ بَيْنَ النَّاسِ
(رواه البخاري ومسلم)

(990/23) It is related on the authority of Anas bin Maalik رضي الله عنه that when the Prophet ﷺ came to Mina (from Muzdalifa, on the morning of the 10th of *Zul Hajjah*, he first went to *Jamrat ul-Uqaba*¹ and performed the *Rami* of it, and, then, came to his tent and performed the *Qurbani* of the animals. After that, he

①. Meaning the last Pillar.

called the barber, and, first, brought the right side of his head before him and the barber shaved that side (of it). The Prophet ﷺ, then, called Abu Talha ؓ and gave the hair to him. He, then, brought the left side of his head before the barber and said: "Now, shave it also". The barber shaved that side (of the head) as well, and, then, the Prophet ﷺ gave the hair, again to Abu Talha ؓ and said: 'Distribute the hair to the people.'

(Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: The incident of shaving of the head by the Prophet ﷺ had not been mentioned in Sayyidina Jabir's ؓ prolonged narrative though it forms one of the main rites of the *Hajj* that are to be performed on the 10th of *Zul Hajjah*.

The correct way of Halq, as we learn from the above Tradition, is that, first, the right side of the head should be shaved and, then, the left.

On this occasion the sacred Prophet ﷺ gave his hair to Abu Talha Ansari who was one of his devoted Companions. He had covered the Prophet ﷺ with his body, as with a shield, and taken all the arrows on himself during the assault by the pagans of Makkah in the Battle of Uhud. Besides, he was particularly solitious of the comfort of the holy Prophet ﷺ and took a keen interest in entertaining his, i.e., the Prophet's guests in a kindly and generous manner. In fine, Abu Talha ؓ and his wife, Umm Sulaym (the mother of Anas ؓ) were conspicuous for such acts of service and it was, perhaps, for that reason that the Prophet ﷺ had handed over his hair to him, and, also, had it distributed through him to others.

It, thus, furnishes, a clear support to and justification for the institution of the preservation of the relics of holy men.

Most probably, the "blessed hair" of the Prophet ﷺ which are said to be preserved at various places and about the genuineness of which reliable evidence is available are from among the hair distributed on the occasion of the Farewell *Hajj*. Some reports show that Abu Talha ؓ had given one or two hair each to the people. In this way, these would have come into the possessions of thousand of Companions ؓ, and their descendants would have taken the fullest care to protect and preserve the holy relic. Hence, there is nothing strange that some of the hair are still preserved at

some place. But to proclaim any hair to be the "blessed hair" of the Prophet ﷺ without an authentic proof is a very grave matter. Anyhow, whether false or genuine, to make it or its display a source of money-making is shameful in the extreme.

(٩٩١/٢٤) عَنْ ابْنِ عُمَرَ أَنَّ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ قَالَ فِي حَجَّةِ الْوَدَاعِ اللَّهُمَّ ارْحَمْ الْمُحَلِّقِينَ قَالُوا وَالْمُقَصِّرِينَ يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ قَالَ اللَّهُمَّ ارْحَمْ الْمُحَلِّقِينَ قَالُوا وَالْمُقَصِّرِينَ يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ قَالَ وَالْمُقَصِّرِينَ

(رواه البخارى و مسلم)

(991/24) Abdullah bin Umar رضي الله عنه related to us that, during the Farewell Haj, the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Blessings of the Lord be on them who had their heads shaved here." Some of the people said: "O Messenger of Allah! Make the same prayer for those, also, who have their hairs cropped." The Prophet ﷺ, again, said: "Blessings of the Lord be on them who had their heads shaved here." When they repeated the request, the Prophet ﷺ said, at the third time, "And the blessings of the Lord be on them, also, who had their hairs cropped here." Bukhari and Muslim

Commentary: to have the head shaved or the hair cut short out of habit or necessity is not an act of worship, but as the shaving of the head or the cropping of the hair in the *Hajj* or *Umra* is an expression of servility and submission on the part of the bondsman, it constitutes a special form of worship and the rite should be carried out in the same spirit. Moreover, as there is a great display of servility and humbleness in having the head shaved than the hair cropped, it enjoys a superiority over it and, that was why, the Prophet ﷺ gave preference to those who had their heads shaved in the prayer of mercy.

(٩٩٢/٢٥) عَنْ أَبِي بَكْرَةَ قَالَ خَطَبَنَا النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَوْمَ النَّحْرِ قَالَ إِنَّ الزَّمَانَ اسْتَدَارَ كَهَيْئَتِهِ يَوْمَ خَلَقَ اللَّهُ السَّمَوَاتِ وَالْأَرْضَ السَّنَةُ اثْنِي عَشَرَ شَهْرًا مِنْهَا أَرْبَعَةٌ حُرُمٌ تِلْكَ مُتَوَالِيَاتٌ ذُو الْقَعْدَةِ وَذُو الْحِجَّةِ وَالْمُحَرَّمُ وَرَجَبُ مُضَرَ الَّذِي بَيْنَ جُمَادَى وَشَعْبَانَ وَقَالَ أَيُّ شَهْرٍ هَذَا فَقُلْنَا اللَّهُ وَرَسُولُهُ أَعْلَمُ فَسَكَتَ حَتَّى ظَنَنَّا أَنَّهُ سَيَسْمِيهِ بِغَيْرِ اسْمِهِ قَالَ أَلَيْسَ ذَا الْحِجَّةِ قُلْنَا بَلَى

قَالَ أَيُّ بَلَدٍ هَذَا قُلْنَا اللَّهُ وَرَسُولُهُ أَعْلَمُ فَسَكَتَ حَتَّى ظَنَنَّا أَنَّهُ سَيُسَمِّيهِ بِغَيْرِ
 إِسْمِهِ قَالَ أَلَيْسَ الْبَلَدَةُ قُلْنَا بَلَى قَالَ فَأَيُّ يَوْمٍ هَذَا قُلْنَا اللَّهُ وَرَسُولُهُ أَعْلَمُ
 فَسَكَتَ حَتَّى ظَنَنَّا أَنَّهُ سَيُسَمِّيهِ بِغَيْرِ إِسْمِهِ قَالَ أَلَيْسَ يَوْمَ النَّحْرِ قُلْنَا بَلَى قَالَ
 فَإِنَّ دِمَاءَكُمْ وَأَمْوَالَكُمْ وَأَعْرَاضَكُمْ عَلَيْكُمْ حَرَامٌ كَحُرْمَةِ يَوْمِكُمْ هَذَا فِي
 بَلَدِكُمْ هَذَا فِي شَهْرِكُمْ هَذَا وَتَتَلَقَوْنَ رَبَّكُمْ فَيَسْتَلْكُمْ عَنْ أَعْمَالِكُمْ إِلَّا فَلَا
 تَرْجِعُوا بَعْدِي ضَلَالًا يَضْرِبُ بَعْضُكُمْ رِقَابَ بَعْضٍ إِلَّا هَلْ بَلَّغْتُ قَالُوا نَعَمْ قَالَ
 اللَّهُمَّ اشْهَدْ فَلْيَبْلُغِ الشَّاهِدُ الْغَائِبَ قُرْبٌ مُبْلَغٌ أَوْعَى مِنْ سَامِعٍ

(رواه البخارى و مسلم)

(992/25) It is related on the authority of Abu Bakrah Thaqafi رضي الله عنه that the Prophet ﷺ delivered a sermon on the 10th of *Zul Hajjah* (during the Farewell Hajj) in which he said: 'Time has returned to its original state, as it was when the heavens and the earth were created. The year is only of full twelve months out of which four are sacred-three months in succession. *Zul Qa'dah*, *Zul Hajjah* and *Muharram*, and *Rajab* which falls between *Jamadi-uth-Thaani* and *Sha'ban* and is held in a greater esteem by the tribe of Muzar. Then, the Prophet ﷺ said: "Do you know which month is this?" 'Allah and His Messenger ﷺ knows best', we replied. So, he remained silent for some time, so much so that we thought he was going to give some other name to the month, (but) he said: 'Is it not the month of *Zul Hajjah*?' 'Of course, it is *Zul Hajjah*', we replied. Then he said, 'Do you know what town is this?' We replied: 'Allah and His Messenger ﷺ know best.' He, then, remained silent for some time till we thought he was going to give some other name to the town. (but) he said: 'Is it not Balda?'¹ 'Of course, it is Balda', we replied. Then, he said 'Do you know what day is it today?' We replied: 'God and His Messenger know best.' Upon it, he said, 'Is it not *Yaum-un-Nahr*?' After it, the Prophet ﷺ observed: 'Your lives are your property and your honour are forbidden to one another (i.e..it is not permitted to you to kill anyone unjustly or to lay your hand on anyone's property or honour; these are forbidden forever) as you consider it forbidden on this sacred day, in this sacred town and in this sacred month to kill anyone or to infringe on his property or honour.' After it, the Prophet

①. Balda was one of the names of Makkah.

ﷺ said, 'Before long, in the Hereafter, you are to meet your Lord who will call you to account for your deeds. Now, listen, I warn you not to go so far astray after me that some of you begin to cut the throats of others.' After it, he asked them, 'Tell me have I conveyed the message of the Lord to you.' They all replied with one voice, 'Of course, you have.' (The Prophet ﷺ, then, said), 'O Lord, I beseech Thee, bear Thou witness unto it.' After it, he said to the people, 'Let those present take this message to those absent. Many people who come to know of a thing from one who had heard it are more capable of remembering it than those who have heard it (directly)."

(Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: In order to appreciate the Prophet's ﷺ remark that the time had returned to its original state it needs be remembered that an erraneous custom among the polytheists of Arabia was that, sometimes, according to their needs or convenience, they used to assume about a year that it consisted of thirteen months by making a month occur twice in it which threw the entire arrangement of time into months and years into disorder and make it unreliable. Thus, the *Hajj* which, according to their calculation, fell in the month of *Zul Hajjah* did, in fact, not fall in it. But after hundreds of years of rotation in the Age of Perversion it so happened that what, for instance, was the month of *Muharrum* in their view was also the month of *Muharrum* by the celestial arrangement and the month they considered to be *Zul Hajjah*, in fact, was *Zul Hajjah*. The same thing was stressed by the Holy Prophet ﷺ in his sermon. He made it clear, through it, that the *Zul Hajjah* in which that *Hajj* was taking place was *Zul Hajjah* also by celestial calculation and a year considered of only twelve months and it was now going to be like that till the end of time.

At the end of the sermon the Prophet ﷺ exhorted the *Ummah* not to fall a prey to internecine conflicts which were wholly opposed to the spirit of Islam. The Prophet ﷺ had administered this warning to his followers on many onther occasions also perhaps because it had been revealed to him, in some measure, that Satan was going to be really successful in sowing the seeds of discord among them.

PRINCIPAL RITUALS AND CEREMONIES OF THE *HAJJ*

Almost all the rites and ceremonies of the Hajj have come to be mentioned in the Traditions regarding the Farewell Hajj. We will now see what his teachings and actual practice were in respect of each one of them, taken individually.

Entry into Makkah and the First *Tawaf*

The unique honour bestowed by Allah on the city of Makkah, by virtue of its association with the House of *Ka'bah*, demands that one enters it with proper attention and reverence, and, next to it, is the claim of the holy *Ka'bah* that its *Tawaf* is performed before everything else. The blessed stone, i.e., *Hajr Aswad* which is embedded in a corner of the *Ka'bah* and bears a close association with Almighty and Paradise, then, requires that *Tawaf* should be commenced with its *Istilam*. Such was the practice of the holy Prophet ﷺ and this was what the Companions ؓ had learnt from him.

(٩٩٣/٢٦) عَنْ نَافِعٍ قَالَ إِنَّ ابْنَ عُمَرَ كَانَ لَا يَقْدِمُ مَكَّةَ إِلَّا بَاتَ بِدِي طُوى حَتَّى يُصْبِحَ وَيَغْتَسِلَ وَيُصَلِّيَ فَيَدْخُلُ مَكَّةَ نَهَارًا وَإِذَا نَفَرَمِنْهَا مَرَّ بِدِي طُوى وَبَاتَ بِهَا حَتَّى يُصْبِحَ وَيَذْكُرُ أَنَّ النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ كَانَ يَفْعَلُ ذَلِكَ
(رواه البخارى ومسلم)

(993/26) It is related by Nafi, the special attendant of Abdullah bin Umar ؓ, that whenever Abdullah bin Umar ؓ came to Makkah he spent the night at Zi Tuwa¹ before entering the town till at daybreak he took a bath and offered prayer (Salah), and, then, entered Makkah during the day, and when he returned

❶. The name of settlement near Makkah.

from Makkah then, too, he spent the night at Zi Tuwa and departed from there in the morning, and Abdullah bin Umar رضي الله عنه used to say that it, also, was the practice of the Messenger of Allah ﷺ. (Bukhari and Muslim)

(٩٩٤/٢٧) عَنْ جَابِرٍ قَالَ إِنَّ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ لَمَّا قَدِمَ مَكَّةَ أَتَى الْحَجَرَ فَاسْتَلَمَهُ ثُمَّ مَشَى عَلَى يَمِينِهِ فَرَمَلَ لَلْثًا وَمَشَى أَرْبَعًا (رواه مسلم)
(994/27) It is related by Jabir رضي الله عنه that when the Messenger of Allah ﷺ arrived at Makkah, first of all, he came to the Black Stone and carried out its *Istilam*, and, after it, performed the Tawaf from the right side of it (in such a way) that in the first three circuits he did *Ramal* and in other four, he walked at normal pace. (Muslim)

Commentary: Every Tawaf begins with the *Istilam* of the Black Stone which denotes the act of kissing it or touching it with the right hand, and, then, kissing the hand or stretching the arms towards it with the palms turned in its direction, and, then, kissing the palms. Seven circuits round the House of *Ka'bah* are performed in each *Tawaf*.

A peculiar kind of gait which gives the impression of vigour and strength is called *Ramal*. It is related that when, in 7 A.H., the Prophet ﷺ came to Makkah for *Umrah*, with a large party of Companions, the Makkans remarked that the unfavourable climate of Makkah had told upon their health and make them weak. As the news reached the Prophet ﷺ, he ordered that the first three circuits of the circumambulation should be performed in the style of *Ramal* so that the impression of the lethargy or enervation of the Companions might be dispelled. It appeared to Allah and He made it into a permanent practice. It is still observed and in the first three circuits of the initial *Tawaf* the pilgrim performing the *Hajj* or *Umrah* carries out, and, after which, the Sa'ee between Safa and Marwa is performed, walking is done briskly, in the manner of *Ramal* and, in the remaining four, at usual pace.

(٩٩٥/٢٨) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ أَقْبَلَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ فَدَخَلَ مَكَّةَ فَأَقْبَلَ إِلَى الْحَجَرِ فَاسْتَلَمَهُ ثُمَّ طَافَ بِالْبَيْتِ ثُمَّ أَتَى الصُّفَا فَعَلَاةً حَتَّى

يُنْظُرُ إِلَى الْبَيْتِ فَرَفَعَ يَدَيْهِ فَجَعَلَ يَذْكُرُ اللَّهَ مَا شَاءَ وَيَدْعُو (رواه ابو داود)
 (995/28) Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه narrated that when the Messenger of Allah ﷺ came the first thing he did, after entering Makkah, was to go near the Black Stone and carry out its *Istilam*. After that, he performed *Tawaf* and, then, came to the hill of Safa and ascended it up to the point from where the House of *Ka'bah* could be seen. He, then raised his hands (as one does while supplicating to the Lord) and occupied himself with prayer and supplication as long as he liked. (Abu Dawood)

(٩٩٦/٢٩) عَنْ ابْنِ عَبَّاسٍ قَالَ طَافَ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ فِي حَجَّةِ الْوِدَاعِ عَلَى بَعِيرٍ يَسْتَلِمُ الرُّكْنَ بِمِخْبَنٍ (رواه البخاري ومسلم)
 (996/29) Abdullah bin Abbas رضي الله عنه narrated that in the Farewell Hajj the Messenger of Allah ﷺ performed the *Tawaf* of the House of *Ka'bah* riding on a camel and in his hand there was a walking stick with a curved handle with which he carried out the *Istilam* of the 'Black Stone.' (Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: In Sayyidina Jabir's رضي الله عنه narrative it is distinctly told about the Prophet's *Tawaf* that, after carrying out the *Istilam* of the Black Stone, he proceeded towards the right and began the *Tawaf* in the first three circuits of which he did *Ramal* while in the remaining four, walked at normal pace. It shows that the Prophet ﷺ had performed the *Tawaf* on foot. The above Tradition, quoted on the authority of Sayyidina Abdullah bin Abbas رضي الله عنه, on the other hand, tells that the Prophet ﷺ had done the *Tawaf* riding on a camel. There is, however, no contradiction between the two reports. On reaching Makkah the Prophet ﷺ had performed the first *Tawaf* on foot which has been carried out after it, on his return to Makkah from Mina on the 10th of *Zul Hajjah*, was performed while he was seated on the camel in order that those who wanted to ask anything from him could easily do so. The camel, so to say, was serving for a platform at that time. Moreover, he might be wanting to show by his own conduct that, in special circumstances, *Tawaf* could, also, be performed by means of transport.

(٩٩٧/٣٠) عَنْ أُمِّ سَلَمَةَ قَالَتْ شَكَّوْتُ إِلَى رَسُولِ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ

أَنِّي أَشْتَكِي فَقَالَ طُوفِي مِنْ وَرَاءِ النَّاسِ رَاكِبَةً فَطُفْتُ وَرَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يُصَلِّي إِلَى جَنْبِ الْبَيْتِ يَقْرَأُ بِالطُّورِ وَكِتَابِ مَسْطُورٍ

(رواه البخاري ومسلم)

(in the Farewell Hajj) "It is related by Sayyidah Umm Salmah رضى الله عنها (997/30) I informed the Prophet ﷺ that I was ill. (So, how I was to perform Tawaf)? The Prophet ﷺ replied, 'Perform tawaf by riding in the rear of the people.' I, thus, performed Tawaf in that Manner, and, at that time, the Prophet ﷺ was offering prayer by the side of the House of Allah, and, in it, he was reciting Surah At-Tur." (Bukhari and Muslim)

(٩٩٨/٣١) عَنْ عَائِشَةَ قَالَتْ خَرَجْنَا مَعَ النَّبِيِّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ لَانْدَكُرَ إِلَّا الْحَجَّ فَلَمَّا كُنَّا بِسَرِفٍ طِمِثْتُ فَدْخَلَ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ وَأَنَا أَبْكِي فَقَالَ لَعَلَّكَ نَفِسْتَ قُلْتُ نَعَمْ قَالَ فَإِنَّ ذَلِكَ شَيْنٌ كَتَبَهُ اللَّهُ عَلَى بَنَاتِ آدَمَ فَأَفْعَلِي مَا يَفْعَلُ الْحَاجُّ غَيْرَ أَنْ لَا تَطُوفِي بِالْبَيْتِ حَتَّى تَطْهَرِي

(رواه البخاري ومسلم)

(in the journey of the Farewell Hajj) we set forth from Madinah, in the company of the Messenger of Allah ﷺ. We all were talking of nothing but the Hajj till as we reached the place called Sarif (from where Makkah was only a short distance away), my monthly periods began. When the Prophet ﷺ came in the tent and saw me crying he said to me, 'Perhaps your menses have started.' 'Yes', I replied. 'It is like that.' The Prophet ﷺ said. '(There is nothing in it to cry about). It is one of those things which God has made necessary for the daughters of Adam (i.e., for all women). Perform all the rites of the Hajj like the other pilgrims but do not perform the Tawaf of Ka'bah till you get clean, (i.e., the menses stop)'." (Bukhari and Muslim)

(٩٩٩/٣٢) عَنْ ابْنِ عَبَّاسٍ أَنَّ النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ قَالَ الطُّوَافُ حَوْلَ

الْبَيْتِ مِثْلُ الصَّلَاةِ إِلَّا أَنَّكُمْ تَتَكَلَّمُونَ فِيهِ فَمَنْ تَكَلَّمَ فِيهِ فَلَا يَتَكَلَّمَنَّ إِلَّا بِخَيْرٍ

(رواه الترمذي والنسائي والدارمي)

(999/32) It is related by Abdullah bin Abbas رضى الله عنه that the Prophet ﷺ said: "The Tawaf of the House of Ka'bah is worship of the

same class as prayer (*Salah*), the only difference being that in *Tawaf* you are permitted to talk. So, whoever talks to anyone in *Tawaf* should talk only of good and virtuous things (and abstain from vain conversation)". (Tirmizi, Nasai and Daarani)

(١٠٠٠/٣٣) عَنْ ابْنِ عُمَرَ قَالَ سَمِعْتُ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَقُولُ إِنَّ مَسْحَهُمَا (الْحَجَرَ الْأَسْوَدَ وَالرَّكْنَ الْيَمَانِي) كَفَّارَةٌ لِلْخَطَايَا وَسَمِعْتُهُ يَقُولُ مَنْ طَافَ بِهَذَا الْبَيْتِ أَسْبُوعًا فَأَخْصَاهُ كَانَ كَعِتْقِ رَقَبَةٍ وَسَمِعْتُهُ يَقُولُ لَا يَضَعُ قَدَمًا وَلَا يَرْفَعُ أُخْرَى إِلَّا حَطَّ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ بِهَا خَطِيئَةً وَكُتِبَ لَهُ بِهَا حَسَنَةٌ (رواه الترمذی)

(1000/33) Abdullah bin Umar رضی اللہ عنہ related that he heard Messenger of Allah ﷺ say: "To pass the hands over the Black Stone and *Rukn-i-Yamaani*¹ is a source of the expiation of sins." He, further, related that he heard the Prophet ﷺ say: "Whoever makes seven circuits round the House of *Ka'bah* and did it properly (i.e., by showing due regard to rules and proprieties), this act of his will be equivalent to setting free a slave." And he related that he, also, heard it from him, he was saying "when the bondsman will put down one foot and raise the other while performing the circummbulation, Allah will forigive one sin in recompense for each step and the reward for one virtuous deed will be written down for him." (Tirmizi)

Commentary: The words طاف بهذا البيت اسبوعا are translated by us as "Whoever makes seven circuits." They could also mean:

- (i) Cirucumambulation the *Ka'abah* severn times, that would be 49 circuits, or
- (ii) Circumambulation for seven successive days without break. Allah knows best.

The Black Stone

(١٠٠١/٣٤) عَنْ ابْنِ عَبَّاسٍ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ فِي الْحَجَرِ وَاللَّهُ لَيَبْعَثَنَّهُ اللَّهُ يَوْمَ الْقِيَمَةِ لَهُ عَيْنَانِ يَضْرِبُهُمَا وَلِسَانٌ يَنْطِقُ بِهِ يَشْهَدُ عَلَى مَنْ امْتَلَمَهُ بِحَقِّهِ (رواه الترمذی و ابن ماجه والدارمی)

(1001/34) It is related by Abdullah bin Abbas رضی اللہ عنہ that the

①. Denoting the south-west corner of The Ka'bah.

Messenger of Allah ﷺ said about the Black Stone: "By God! The Lord will confer a new life on it and raise it in such a manner, on the Day of Resurrection, that it will have two eyes with which it will see and a tongue with which it will speak and testify with truth about the bondsmen who will have carried out its *Istilam*." (Tirmizi, Ibn Majah and Daarami)

Commentary: Apparently, *Hajr Aswad* is a piece of stone but it is vested with a unique spirituality and remembers everyone who does its *Istilam*. On the Day of Final Requit, God will raise it up as a seeing and speaking being and it will depose in favour of the bondsmen who used to perform its *Istilam* reverentially.

(۱۰۰۲/۳۵) عَنْ عَابِسِ بْنِ رَبِيعَةَ قَالَ رَأَيْتُ عُمَرَ يَقْبَلُ الْحَجَرَ وَيَقُولُ إِنِّي لَا أَعْلَمُ أَنَّكَ حَجَرٌ مَاتَفَعٌ وَلَا تَضُرُّ وَلَوْ لَا أَنِّي رَأَيْتُ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَقْبَلُ مَا قَبَّلْتُكَ (رواه البخاري و مسلم)

(1002/34) 'Aabis bin Rabee' narrated "I saw Umar bin Khattab رضي الله عنه, he was kissing the Black Stone and saying: 'I know for certain that thou art a stone (and there is no attribute of Divinity in thee). Thou canst neither benefit nor harm anyone. Had I not seen the Prophet ﷺ kissing thee, I would never have done that.'"

(Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: Sayyidina Umar رضي الله عنه said it openly and for everyone to hear so that there remained no possibility of an ignorant or newly converted Muslim assuming that there was the attribute of God, head and the power to do good or harm in the Black Stone on seeing leading men of the *Ummah* like him kissing it.

A point of fundamental importance that emerges from Sayyidina Umar's رضي الله عنه observation is that if a thing is venerated with the belief that it is the Command of Allah and the Prophet ﷺ, the veneration is justified, but if it is done out of the conviction that it has the power over good and evil then it, clearly, is a kind of polytheism and has no place in the Islamic scheme of things.

Zikr and Supplication in Tawaf

(۱۰۰۳/۳۶) عَنْ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ السَّائِبِ قَالَ سَمِعْتُ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَقُولُ مَا بَيْنَ الرُّكْنَيْنِ رَبَّنَا إِنَّا فِي الدُّنْيَا حَسَنَةٌ وَفِي الْآخِرَةِ حَسَنَةٌ وَقِنَا

عَذَابِ النَّارِ (رواه ابو داؤد)
 (1003/36) Abdullah bin Sa'ib رضي الله عنه related that he heard the Prophet ﷺ recite the following supplication between *Rukn Yamaani* and *Hajr Aswad* (during Tawaf):

رَبَّنَا آتِنَا فِي الدُّنْيَا حَسَنَةً وَفِي الْآخِرَةِ حَسَنَةً وَقِنَا عَذَابَ النَّارِ (البقره ٢: ٢٠١)
"Rabbana aatina fid-duniya hasanataon-wa fil aakhirati hasanataon-wa-qina azaabun naur." (Al-Baqarah 2:201)

(O Allah! I beg of Thee forgiveness and peace in this world and the next. O Lord! Give us good in this world and good in the Hereafter, and defend us from the torment of Fire).(Abu Dawood)

(١٠٠٤/٣٧) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ أَنَّ النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ قَالَ وَكَلَّ بِهِ سَبْعُونَ مَلَكًا (يَعْنِي الرُّكْنَ الْيَمَانِي) فَمَنْ قَالَ اللَّهُمَّ إِنِّي أَسْأَلُكَ الْعَفْوَ وَالْعَافِيَةَ فِي الدُّنْيَا وَالْآخِرَةِ رَبَّنَا آتِنَا فِي الدُّنْيَا حَسَنَةً وَفِي الْآخِرَةِ حَسَنَةً وَقِنَا عَذَابَ النَّارِ، قَالُوا..... آمِينَ (رواه ابن ماجه)

(1004/37) It is related by Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Seventy angels are posted at *Rukn-Yamaani* who say Amen at the supplication of the bondsman who makes this prayer near it:

اللَّهُمَّ إِنِّي أَسْأَلُكَ الْعَفْوَ وَالْعَافِيَةَ فِي الدُّنْيَا وَالْآخِرَةِ رَبَّنَا آتِنَا فِي الدُّنْيَا حَسَنَةً وَفِي الْآخِرَةِ حَسَنَةً وَقِنَا عَذَابَ النَّارِ

Allahumma in-ni as'alukal 'afwo wal 'aafiyata fid-duniya wal-aakhira. Rabbana aatina fid-duniya hasanataon-wa fil aakhirati hasanataon-wa qina azaabun naur.

(O Allah! I beg of Thee forgiveness and peace in this world and the next. O Lord! Give us good in this world and good in the Hereafter, and defend us from the torment of Fire) (Ibn-e-Majah)

Importance of the Halt at Arafat

As we pointed out earlier, the stay at Arafat, on the 9th of *Zul Hajjah*, is the most important event of the *Hajj*. If a pilgrim is blessed with it even for a moment, he is blessed with the *Hajj*, and if, for some reason, he fails to reach there on the 9th or night

following it, his *Hajj* is rendered void. There is some atonement or reparation for the omission of all the other rites of the *Hajj*, like *Tawaf*, *Sa'ee* and *Rami* but it is impossible to make amends for failure to carry out *Wuqoof* for whatever reason.

(١٠٠٥/٣٨) عَنْ عَبْدِ الرَّحْمَنِ بْنِ يَعْمَرَ الدُّائِلِيِّ قَالَ سَمِعْتُ النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَقُولُ الْحَجُّ عَرَفَةٌ مَنْ أَدْرَكَ عَرَفَةَ لَيْلَةً جَمَعَ قَبْلَ طُلُوعِ الْفَجْرِ فَقَدْ أَدْرَكَ الْحَجَّ..... أَيَّامٌ مِنِّي ثَلَاثَةٌ فَمَنْ تَعَجَّلَ فِي يَوْمَيْنِ فَلَا إِيَّامَ عَلَيْهِ وَمَنْ تَأَخَّرَ فَلَا إِيَّامَ عَلَيْهِ (رواه الترمذی، وابوداؤد، والنسائی، وابن ماجه، والدارمی)

(1005/38) Abdul Rahman bin Ya'mar Duali narrated that he heard the Prophet ﷺ say: "The most important rite of the *Hajj* (upon which depends its fulfilment) is the halt at Arafat. The pilgrim who reaches Arafat even during the night of Muzdalifa (i.e., between the 9th and 10th of *Zul Hajjah*), before daybreak, he has performed the *Hajj* and his *Hajj* has been carried out. (After *Yaum-un-Nahr* i.e., the 10th *Zul Hajjah* there are three days of stay at Mina. If anyone departs from Mina earlier after (performing *Rami*) only on two days (on the 11th and 12th), there is no harm in it, and if anyone stays there for an additional day and departs (after performing *Rami*) (on the 13th), there is no harm in it also. (Both of these are permissible)".

(Ibni Majah and Daarami)

Commentary: The performance of the *Hajj* being dependent on *Wuqoof* Arafat, latitude has been given to the pilgrims that in case they fail to reach Arafat on the 9th of *Zul Hajjah*, which is the real time for *Wuqoof*, their *Wuqoof* will be deemed to have been completed and *Hajj* accomplished if they manage to reach there in any part of the night between the 9th and 10th.

After *Yaumul Arafat* there is *Yaum-un-Nahr*, on the 10th, on which the restrictions of *Ihrum* come to an end with the performance of *Rami* against one *Jamra*, and *Qurbani*, and *Halq* etc.,. On the same day, *Tawaf Ziyarat* is carried out by going to Makkah. Among the rites of the *Hajj*, after it, is the throwing of pebbles at all the three *Jamras* by staying at Mina for two to three days.

(١٠٠٦/٣٩) عَنْ عَائِشَةَ قَالَتْ أَنَّ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ قَالَ مَا مِنْ يَوْمٍ أَكْثَرَ مِنْ أَنْ يُعْتَقَ اللَّهُ فِيهِ عَبْدًا مِنَ النَّارِ مِنْ يَوْمِ عَرَفَةَ وَإِنَّهُ لَيَذْنُوكُمْ يُبَاهِي بِهِمُ الْمَلَائِكَةُ فَيَقُولُ مَا أَرَادَ هَؤُلَاءِ (رواه مسلم)

(1006/39) It is related by Sayyidah Ayshah رضى الله عنها that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "On no other day God decides in a greater measure for release of His bondsmen from Hell than on the Day of *Arafat* (i.e., the decision for the forgiveness and freedom from Hell of sinning bondsmen is taken on the largest scale in the year, on the Day of *Arafat*). On that day, God comes very close to the bondsmen (present in *Arafat*) with His Attribute of Mercy, and feeling proud of them says to the angels: Do you see with what object these bondsmen of Mine have come here?" (Muslim)

(١٠٠٧/٤٠) عَنْ طَلْحَةَ بْنِ عُبَيْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ كَرِيزٍ أَنَّ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ قَالَ مَا رَأَى الشَّيْطَانُ يَوْمًا هُوَ فِيهِ أَصْغَرُ وَلَا أَذْخَرُ وَلَا أَحَقَرُ وَلَا أَغْيَظُ مِنْهُ فِي يَوْمِ عَرَفَةَ وَمَا ذَاكَ إِلَّا لِمَا يَرَى مِنْ تَنْزِيلِ الرَّحْمَةِ وَتَجَاوُزِ اللَّهِ عَنِ الذُّنُوبِ الْعِظَامِ (رواه مالك مرسلاً)

(1007/40) It is related by Talha bin Ubaidah bin Kareez, a Taba'ee that the Prophet ﷺ said: "Satan never feels more dejected, humiliated and crestfallen than on the day of *Arafat* for the simple reason that, on that day, he sees the Mercy of the Lord descending upon the earth (like a torrent of rain), and grievous sins being forgiven."

(Muwatta Imam Malik (by way of a Mursal))

Commentary: When thousands, nay millions of people, attired like beggars, assemble at *Arafat* on the 9th of *Zul Hajjah*, which is a special day for the descent of Divine favours, and beseech the Lord devoutly for forgiveness for themselves as well as for others and cry and bewail before Him, the boundless sea of compassion of the Oft-Forgiving, Most Merciful Lord is aroused and He gives such extraordinary decisions of forgiveness in favour of erring bondsmen that the Devil feels extremely bitter and heart broken.

Rami Jamrat

In Mina there are three pillars, built at some distance from one another. These are called *Jamrat*. To throw pebbles at them, also, is a rite of the *Hajj*. Seven pebbles are to be thrown at every pillar on the 11th, 12th and 13th of *Zul Hajjah*. Manifestly, there is no virtue in throwing pebbles by itself but every act becomes an act of worship at the command of God, and servility, in its essence, denotes neither more nor less than that the orders, dictates and ordinances of Allah are carried out willingly and with good grace. Besides, when the bondsmen of God, with the conviction of His Power and Majesty firmly embedded in the mind and the cry of *Allah-u-Akbar* on the lips, throw pebbles, at His command, at *Jamrat*, believing that their target, in reality, are the satanic notions, desires and practices, and they are actually stoning sinfulness and perversion to death, the heavenly joy they experience defies all descriptions. In any case, to throw pebbles at *Jamrat*, in the name of God and at His bidding, is a Faith-sitrring event for those who know.

(١٠٠٨/٤١) عَنْ عَائِشَةَ عَنِ النَّبِيِّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ قَالَ إِنَّمَا جُعِلَ رَمَى

الْجَمَارِ وَالسَّعْيُ بَيْنَ الصَّفَا وَالْمَرْوَةِ لِأَقَامَةِ ذِكْرِ اللَّهِ (رواه الترمذى والدارمى)

(1008/41) It is related by Sayyidah Ayshah رضى الله عنها that the Prophet ﷺ said: "To throw pebbles at *Jamrat*, and to perform Sa'ee between Safa and Marwa, and to circumambulate are (not things of sport) (but) aids to the intensity and fulness of the remembrance of God." (Tirmizi and Daarami)

(١٠٠٩/٤٢) عَنْ جَابِرٍ قَالَ رَمَى رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ الْجَمْرَةَ

يَوْمَ النَّحْرِ ضُحًى وَأَمَّا بَعْدَ ذَلِكَ فَإِذَا زَالَتِ الشَّمْسُ (رواه البخارى ومسلم)

(1009/42) It is related on the authority of Jabir ؓ that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ carried out *Rami* against *Jamra Uqaba* on the 10th of *Zul Hajjah* in the morning, and after that, he carried out *Rami* against (all) the (three) *Jamrat* on the days of *Tashriq*,¹ after the declining of the sun. (Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: The same is the prescribed method of carrying out

❶. Meaning the 11th, 12th, and 13th of *Zul Hajjah*.

Rami. On the 10th of *Zul Hajjah* the *Rami* against *Jamra Uqaba* should be carried out before noon, and, on the subsequent days, when the sun has begun to decline from the meridian.

(١٠١٠/٤٣) عَنْ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ مَسْعُودٍ أَنَّهُ انْتَهَى إِلَى الْجَمْرَةِ الْكُبْرَى فَجَعَلَ الْبَيْتَ عَنْ يَسَارِهِ وَمِنَى عَنْ يَمِينِهِ وَرَمَى بِسَبْعِ حَصِيَّاتٍ يُكَبِّرُ مَعَ كُلِّ حَصَاةٍ ثُمَّ قَالَ هَكَذَا رَمَى الَّذِي أَنْزَلَتْ عَلَيْهِ سُورَةُ الْبَقَرَةِ (رواه البخاري و مسلم)

(1010/43) It is related on the authority of Abdullah bin Mas'ud رضي الله عنه that he came to *Jamra Kubra* (i.e., *Jamra Uqaba*) for performing *Rami* and stood facing it so that the House of God (i.e., Makkah) was to his left and Mina to his right. After it, he threw seven pebbles at the *Jamra* and said *Allah-u-Akbar* at each throw. he, then, said, "In the same manner had the blessed one carried out *Rami* to whom *Surah Al-Baqara* (in which the commands and rites of the Hajj are given) was revealed."

(Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: Sayyidina Abdullah bin Mas'ud رضي الله عنه remembered, in detail, how the sacred Prophet ﷺ used to perform *Rami*, and he showed it to the people by doing so himself.

(١٠١١/٤٤) عَنْ جَابِرٍ قَالَ رَأَيْتُ النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَرْمِي عَلَى رَاحِلَتِهِ يَوْمَ النَّحْرِ وَيَقُولُ لِتَأْخُذُوا مِنَّا بِكُمْ فَإِنِّي لَا أَدْرِي لَعَلِّي لَا أَحُجُّ بَعْدَ حَجَّتِي هَذِهِ (رواه مسلم)

(1011/44) Jaber رضي الله عنه narrated "I saw the Prophet ﷺ performing *Rami*, on the 10th of *Zul Hajjah*, seated on the back of his camel. At that time, he was saying: 'I do not know if I will perform another Hajj after it (and you will have an opportunity of learning about it from me in future)'." (Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: When the holy Prophet ﷺ reached Mina from Muzdalifa on his camel, he carried out *Rami* against *Jamra Uqaba* in the same state, i.e., in the state of being mounted so that people could see him performing the *Rami* and learn how it was to be done and make enquiries from him about the rites of the *Hajj*. But on the second and third days, he carried it out on foot. The rite, however, can be performed both on foot and mounted.

(١٠١٢/٤٥) عَنْ سَالِمٍ عَنِ ابْنِ عُمَرَ أَنَّهُ كَانَ يَرْمِي جَمْرَةَ الدُّنْيَا بِسَبْعِ حَصَيَاتٍ يُكَبِّرُ عَلَى إِثْرِ كُلِّ حَصَاةٍ ثُمَّ يَتَقَدَّمُ حَتَّى يُسْهَلَ فَيَقُومُ مُسْتَقْبِلَ الْقِبْلَةِ طَوِيلًا وَيَدْعُو وَيَرْفَعُ يَدَيْهِ ثُمَّ يَرْمِي الْوُسْطَى بِسَبْعِ حَصَيَاتٍ يُكَبِّرُ كُلَّمَا رَمَى بِحَصَاةٍ ثُمَّ يَأْخُذُ بِذَاتِ الشِّمَالِ فَيُسْهَلُ وَيَقُومُ مُسْتَقْبِلَ الْقِبْلَةِ ثُمَّ يَدْعُو وَيَرْفَعُ يَدَيْهِ وَيَقُومُ طَوِيلًا ثُمَّ يَرْمِي جَمْرَةَ ذَاتِ الْعَقْبَةِ مِنْ بَطْنِ الْوَادِي بِسَبْعِ حَصَيَاتٍ يُكَبِّرُ عِنْدَ كُلِّ حَصَاةٍ وَلَا يَقِفُ عِنْدَهَا ثُمَّ يَنْصَرِفُ فَيَقُولُ هَكَذَا رَأَيْتُ النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَفْعَلُهُ (رواه البخارى)

(1012/45) Saalim bin Abdullah related about his father, Abdullah bin Uamr رضي الله عنه, "his custom about *Rami* was that he threw seven pebbles at the first *Jamra*, and said *Allah-u-Akbar* at every throw, and, then, came down to the low ground in front, and stood there facing the *Qibla* and supplicating the Lord, with his hands raised, for a long time. After that, he, in the same way, threw seven pebbles at the middle *Jamra*, and said *Allah-u-Akbar* at every throw, and, then, came down to the low ground on the left hand side, and stood there facing the *Qibla* and beseeching the Lord, with his hands raised, for a long time. After that, he threw seven pebbles from the bottom of the valley at the last *Jamra* (i.e., *Jamra Uqabah*) and said *Allah-u-Akbar* at each throw but instead of staying near it, he returned. He used to say that 'I have seen the Messenger of Allah ﷺ carrying out *Rami* in the same manner'." (Bukhari)

Commentary: It shows that after the *Rami* of the first two *Jamrat* the holy Prophet ﷺ stood near them and prayed to God for a long time, with his face towards the *Qiblah*, but turned immediately after carrying out *Rami* against the third *Jamra*. This is the Musnoon way but, unfortunately, few people know and follow it today.

Qurbani

Traditions regarding *Qurbani* have been discussed earlier. Here, however, we will take up one more.

(١٠١٣/٤٦) عَنْ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ قُرْطٍ عَنِ النَّبِيِّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ قَالَ إِنَّ

أَعْظَمَ الْأَيَّامِ عِنْدَ اللَّهِ يَوْمُ النَّحْرِ ثُمَّ يَوْمُ الْقَرَرِ (قَالَ ثَوْرٌ وَهُوَ الْيَوْمُ الثَّانِي) قَالَ وَقَرَّبَ لِرَسُولِ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ بَدَنَاتٍ خَمْسَ أَوْ سِتٍّ فَطَفِقْنَ يَزْدَلِفْنَ إِلَيْهِ بِأَيْتِهِنَّ يَدَهُ
(رواه ابوداؤد)

(1013/46) It is related by Abdullah bin Qurth رضي الله عنه that the Prophet ﷺ said: "In the sight of Allah, the greatest day is *Yaum-un-Nahr* (the Day of *Qurbani*) (i.e., the 10th of *Zul Hajjah*), (meaning that like *Yaumul-Arfa*, *Yaum-un-Nahr*, too, is a day of utmost significance). After it is the day next to it, i.e., *Yaumul Qarr* (or the 11th of *Zul Hajjah*). (Thus, *Qurbani* should be carried out, as far as possible, on the 10th of *Zul Hajjah* or, at the latest, on the 11th. If it is performed after that, on the 12th of *Zul Hajjah*, the duty will be fulfilled but it will be wholly lacking in goodness)." The narrator, then, described an unusual thing he had witnessed. He said that, once, five or six camels were brought to the Prophet ﷺ for *Qurbani* and every one of them struggled to get close to him so that it was the first to be killed as a sacrifice. (Abu Dawood)

Commentary: God has the power to endue not only animals but clay and stones as well with consciousness of events that are taking place around them. The five or six camels brought to the Prophet ﷺ had been made aware by God how glorious it was to be offered by the sacred Prophet ﷺ as a sacrifice in His path, and, therefore, each of them wanted to come near the Prophet ﷺ in order that it was slaughtered before the others.

(١٠١٤/٤٧) عَنْ سَلَمَةَ بْنِ الْأَكْوَعِ قَالَ قَالَ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَنْ ضَحَّى مِنْكُمْ فَلَا يُضْبِحَنَّ بَعْدَ ثَلَاثَةِ وَفِي بَيْتِهِ مِنْهُ شَيْءٌ فَلَمَّا كَانَ الْعَامُ الْمُقْبِلُ قَالُوا يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ نَفَعَلْ كَمَا فَعَلْنَا الْعَامَ الْمَاضِي قَالَ كُلُّوا وَأَطْعِمُوا وَادْخَرُوا فَإِنَّ ذَلِكَ الْعَامَ كَانَ بِالنَّاسِ جَهْدٌ فَأَرَدْتُ أَنْ تُعِينُوا فِيهِمْ (رواه البخاري ومسلم)

(1014/47) It is related by Sayyidina Salmah bin Al-Akwa رضي الله عنه that the Prophet ﷺ said, "Those of you who make a sacrifice must not have any of it in their house after three days." The next year the people asked him whether they should do as they had done the previous year, he said, "Eat, provide for others and store some up, for that year there was distress among the people

and I wanted you to help them."

(Bukhari and Muslim)

(١٠١٥/٤٨) عَنْ نُبَيْشَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِنَّا كُنَّا نَهَيِّنَاكُمْ عَنْ لُحُومِهَا أَنْ تَأْكُلُوهَا فَوْقَ ثَلَاثِ لَيَالٍ تَسَعُّكُمْ جَاءَ اللَّهُ بِالسَّعَةِ فَكُلُوا وَادَّخِرُوا وَالتَّجِرُوا لَا وَإِنَّ هَذِهِ الْأَيَّامَ أَيَّامُ أَكْلِ وَشُرْبٍ وَذِكْرِ اللَّهِ

(رواه ابو داود)

(1015/48) Nubaysha رضي الله عنه reported that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said, "I forbade you to eat their meat for more than three days in order that you might have abundance (for charity). But, may Allah, has produced abundance, so you may eat, store up and seek reward. These are days of eating, drinking and remembrance of Allah." (Abu Dawood)

Commentary: We learn from the two foregoing hadith that we are allowed to eat and store up the sacrificial meat as long as we like. The second hadith concludes with the information that Allah likes His slaves to eat and drink during the days of *Tashreeq*. However, we must keep up the remembrance of Allah during these days by extolling Him, declaring His praise and His unity.

اللَّهُ أَكْبَرُ اللَّهُ أَكْبَرُ لَا إِلَهَ إِلَّا اللَّهُ وَاللَّهُ أَكْبَرُ اللَّهُ أَكْبَرُ وَلِلَّهِ الْحَمْدُ

Tawaf Ziyarat and Tawaf Wada

The chief aim of the rites of the *Hajj* and the way they have been arranged is the expression of reverence for and deep attachment to the House of God which is the distinctive mark of *Millat Ibrahim*. Circumambulation, as such, is the first rite of the *Hajj*, after arrival in Makkah, so much so much so that *Tahayyatul Masjid* is not offered on entering *Masjid-ul-Haram*.¹ *Tawaf* is done first, and, then, two *Rak'at* of *Sunnat-ut-Tawaf* are offered.

In common usage, the first *Tawaf* the pilgrim performs is called *Tawaf Qudoom*, the *Tawaf* he performs after having carried out the rites of *Qurbani* and *Halq* is called *Tawaf Ziyarat*, and the last *Tawaf* that is to be performed before leaving Makkah for home is called *Tawaf Wada'*. Thus, the rites of the *Hajj* begin and with the *Tawaf* of the House of *Ka'bah*.

①. Denoting the area of worship within the sacred enclosure at Makkah.

(١٠١٦/٤٩) عَنْ ابْنِ عَبَّاسٍ أَنَّ النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ لَمْ يَرْمَلْ فِي

السَّبْعِ الَّذِي أَقَاضَ فِيهِ (رواه أبو داود وابن ماجه)

(1016/49) Abdullah bin Abbas رضي الله عنه narrates that the Prophet ﷺ did not do *Ramal* in the seven circuits of *Tawaf Ziyarat*, i.e., the whole of *Tawaf* was done at usual pace.

(Abu Dawood and Ibn Majah)

Commentary: As we have seen, already, the pilgrim has to do *Ramal* in the first three circuits of the *Tawaf* he performs on arrival in Makkah. The holy Prophet ﷺ and his Companions had done the same during the Farewell *Hajj*, but when the Prophet ﷺ performed *Tawaf Ziyarat* on the 10th of *Zul Hajjah*, on coming back to Makkah from Mina, he did not do *Ramal*, as the above Tradition tells.

(١٠١٧/٥٠) عَنْ عَائِشَةَ وَابْنِ عَبَّاسٍ أَنَّ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ

أَخَّرَ طَوَافَ الزِّيَارَةِ يَوْمَ النَّحْرِ إِلَى اللَّيْلِ (رواه الترمذى وأبو داود وابن ماجه)

(1017/50) It is related by Sayyidah Ayyshah رضي الله عنها and Ibn Abbas رضي الله عنه that the Prophet ﷺ deferred *Tawaf Ziyarat* (i.e., allowed to be deferred) till the night of the 10th of *Zul Hajjah*.

(Tirmizi, Abu Dawood and Ibn Majah)

Commentary: It shows that the most appropriate day for *Tawaf Ziyarat* is *Yaum-un-Nahr* (i.e., the day of *Eidul Adha*) but the holy Prophet ﷺ has permitted that it can be done in the night, after the end of the day of the sacrificial offering of the animals, as well, and the *Tawaf* of that night will be reckoned to be as meritorious as the *Tawaf* of the 10th of *Zul Hajjah*.

According to the Arab practice, the date of the night is the date of the day coming after it and every night is joined to the succeeding day. But for the rite of the *Hajj* it has been reversed for the sake of the pilgrims' convenience and the nights have been joined to the days preceding them. Thus, the *Tawaf* which will be carried out in the night, after the passage of the day of 10th of *Zul Hajjah*, will be regarded as having been performed on that day though it will be the 11th according to the established usage.

(١٠١٨/٥١) عَنْ ابْنِ عَبَّاسٍ قَالَ كَانَ النَّاسُ يَنْصَرِفُونَ فِي كُلِّ وَجْهِ فَقَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ لَا يَنْفِرُونَ أَحَدُكُمْ حَتَّى يَكُونَ آخِرُ عَهْدِهِ بِالْبَيْتِ إِلَّا أَنَّهُ خَفَّفَ عَنِ الْحَائِضِ (رواه البخارى ومسلم)

(1018/51) It is related by Abdullah bin Abbas رضي الله عنه that (after performing the *Hajj*) people used to leave for their homes, (and they did not care for Tawaf Wada'). The Prophet ﷺ observed: "None of you should leave for home till he had made his last appearance in the House of God (i.e., performed Tawaf Wada'). The woman who is unable to perform the Tawaf owing to menstruation is, of course, exempted." (Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: It shows that earlier the people did not perform Tawaf Wada' but started for their native lands after staying at Mina till the 12th or 13th of *Zul Hajjah* and carrying out the rites of *Rami Jamrat* etc. In the above Tradition, the Prophet ﷺ has stressed the importance and obligatoriness of this Tawaf. The legists, as such, have held Tawaf Wada' to be indispensable. Women, certainly, are free from the operation of the command if they are having their periods and can leave Makkah for home without carrying out *Tawaf Wada'*. Otherwise, for all pilgrims coming from a foreign land it is necessary to perform this last Tawaf with the intention of bidding adieu to the House of *Ka'bah* before starting on the return journey. It should be the final ritual in connection with the *Hajj*.

(١٠١٩/٥٢) عَنِ الْحَارِثِ الثَّقَفِيِّ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَنْ حَجَّ هَذَا الْبَيْتِ أَوْ اعْتَمَرَ فَلْيَكُنْ آخِرُ عَهْدِهِ الطَّوَافُ بِالْبَيْتِ (رواه احمد)

(1019/52) It is related by Haris Thaqafi رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Whoever performs the *Hajj* or *Umrah*, his last appearance ought to be in the House of God and his last act, *Tawaf*." (Musnad Ahmad)

(١٠٢٠/٥٣) عَنْ عَائِشَةَ رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهَا قَالَتْ أَحْرَمْتُ مِنَ التَّعِيمِ بِعُمْرَةٍ فَدَخَلْتُ فَقَضَيْتُ عُمْرَتِي وَانْتَظَرَنِي رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ بِالْأَبْطَحِ حَتَّى فَرَعْتُ وَأَمَرَ النَّاسَ بِالرَّحِيلِ قَالَتْ وَاتَى رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ

الْبَيْتِ فَطَافَ بِهِ ثُمَّ خَرَجَ (رواه ابو داؤد)

(1020/53) Sayyidah Ayshah رضى الله عنها related to us that "(during the Farewell Hajj), I went to the place (called) Tan'eem and assumed the Ihram of Umrah and carried out its rites like Tawaf and Sa'ee (during the last night of our stay in Makkah and during which we were to leave for Madinah), and the Prophet ﷺ waited for me at Abtah (situated between Mina and Makkah). When I had completed the *Umrah*, he ordered the people to depart and came to the House of God for *Tawaf Wada'* and carried out the *Tawaf* and left Makkah for Madinah directly after it."

(Abu Dawood)

Commentary: When Sayyidah Ayshah رضى الله عنها departed from Madinah, she had intended to perform the *Tamattu Hajj*, but as we have seen, her periods began as she was approaching Makkah and she could not perform any of the rituals of *Umrah*. She, accordingly, gave up the idea of *Umrah* and put on the *Ihram* of Hajj on the 8th of *Zul Hajjah*, on the advice of the Prophet ﷺ, and performed the *Hajj* with him.

When, on the 13th of *Zul Hajjah*, the Prophet ﷺ returned from Mina, after carrying out *Rami* against *Jamrat*, he halted at Abtah and decided to spend the night there. On the same night, he told Sayyidah Ayshah رضى الله عنها to go with her brother, Abdul Rahman bin Abu Bakr رضى الله عنه, to *Tan'eem*, outside the territory of *Haram*, and assume there the *Ihram* for *Umrah* and return after performing *Umrah*. The same incident has been alluded to in the above Tradition.

As she came back after performing the *Umrah*, the Prophet ﷺ ordered the Companions to depart. All the pilgrims came to the House of *Ka'bah* from Abtah where the Prophet ﷺ and his Companions رضى الله عنه carried out *Tawaf Wada'* in the morning and left for Madinah immediately after it.

This *Umrah* of Sayyidah Ayshah رضى الله عنها was to make amends for the *Umrah* she could not perform in spite of donning the *Ihram*.

We learn, further, from the above report that *Tawaf Wada'* should be performed at the time of departure for home from Makkah.

Hugging The *Multazam*

The portion of the wall of the House *Ka'bah* between *Ka'bah*

and the Black Stone, which is about two yards long, is called *Multazam*. It is also among the observances confirmed by the practice of the sacred Prophet ﷺ that, if possible, the pilgrims should pray to God by hugging it at the end of *Tawaf*. As the Traditions given below will show, the Prophet ﷺ had done so during the Farewell *Hajj*.

(١٠٢١/٥٤) عَنْ عَمْرِو بْنِ شُعَيْبٍ عَنْ أَبِيهِ قَالَ كُنْتُ أَطُوفُ مَعَ أَبِي عَبْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ عَمْرِو بْنِ الْعَاصِ وَرَأَيْتُ قَوْمًا اتَّزَمُوا الْبَيْتَ فَقُلْتُ لَهُ انْطَلِقْ بِنَا نَلْتَزِمَ الْبَيْتَ مَعَ هَؤُلَاءِ فَقَالَ أَعُوذُ بِاللَّهِ مِنَ الشَّيْطَانِ الرَّجِيمِ فَلَمَّا فَرَغَ مِنْ طَوَافِهِ اتَّزَمَ الْبَيْتَ بَيْنَ الْبَيْتِ وَالْحَجَرِ وَقَالَ هَذَا وَاللَّهِ الْمَكَانُ الَّذِي رَأَيْتُ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ اتَّزَمَهُ

(رواه البيهقي بهذا اللفظ)

(1021/54) It is related by the Amr bin Shu'ayb, on the authority of his father, Shu'ayb, that he said: "I was carrying out *Tawaf* with my grandfather, Abdullah bin Amr bin al-'Aas رضي الله عنه, when I saw some people hugging the House of Ka'bah. I, then, asked my grandfather to take me there so that I could, also, hug the House of *Ka'bah* like them. The grandfather remarked: "I seek the refuge of God against the accursed Devil!" (Meaning, probably, that if during *Tawaf*, he hugged any portion of the walls of *Ka'bah*, without particular regard to *Multazam*, it would be opposed to *Sunnah* and more pleasing to Satan than to God). "When my grandfather had finished *Tawaf*," related shu'ayb, "he came to the portion of the wall of *Ka'bah* which is between the gate of *Ka'bah* and the Black Stone (and is known as *Multazam*) and said to me: 'I swear by God that this is the place which the Prophet ﷺ had hugged'." (Baihaqi)

(In another version of the same Tradition, quoted in Abu Dawood, it is stated that Abdullah bin Amr رضي الله عنه had hugged *Multazam* by placing his face and chest against it, with his arms spread to the full, and said: "I had seen the Prophet ﷺ carrying it out like that)."

Commentary: It tells that the hugging of *Multazam* ought to be done at the end of *Tawaf* and the proper place for it is the portion of the wall of the House of *Ka'bah* between *Ka'bah* and the Black Stone.

HOLY CITIES OF MAKKAH AND MADINAH

Sanctity of Makkah

Allah has declared Ka'bah His *Bayt* or House and owing to the same association, the town of Makkah in which it is situated is called *Baldullahul Haruam*, i.e., the Sanctified City of God. Or, in other words, just as, among all the houses in the world, Ka'bah enjoys a unique association with God, among all the towns, Makkah is blessed with a singular affinity with Him. On the same ground, again, the outlying territory on all sides of the town, for several miles, has been marked out as Haram i.e., worthy of respect, and extraordinary rules and proprieties are laid down for it. Thus, many things that are allowed all over the world are prohibited within it, such as, hunting, warfare, felling of trees or striking of them for leaves. All such acts are condemned as sinful.

The territory of *Haram* was, first, demarcated by Sayyidina Ibrahim عليه السلام, and, after him, the sacred Prophet ﷺ redefined the boundaries. The whole area, as one would say, forms the courtyard of the Sanctified Town of God and commands the same respect as the city of Makkah.

(١٠٢٢/٥٥) عَنْ عَيَّاشِ بْنِ أَبِي رَبِيعَةَ الْمَخْزُومِيِّ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى
اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ لَا تَزَالُ هَذِهِ الْأُمَّةُ بِخَيْرٍ مَا عَظُمُوا هَذِهِ الْحُرْمَةَ حَتَّى تَعْظُمَ بِهَا
فَإِذَا ضَيَّعُوا ذَلِكَ هَلَكُوا
(رواه ابن ماجه)



(1022/55) It is related by Ayyash bin Abu Rabia'h رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "My followers will remain with safety and well-being as long as they show respect to the Haram and render the claim of reverence to it and will be destroyed when they cease to do so."
(Ibn Majah)

Commentary: It shows that the veneration of the House of God, the City of God, i.e., Makkah, and the whole of *Haram* is a mark of true devotion and loyalty to Him. As long as this virtue will be present among the Muslims, collectively, God will be their Protector and they will live with honour and security and when they will become devoid of it, as a whole, they will forfeit the claim to the benign care of the Lord and all sorts of calamities will start visiting them.




Though owing to modern facilities of travel and some other reasons the number of pilgrims has increased manifold, the standard of veneration has fallen and it is one of the reasons why the *Ummah* everywhere, has got deprived of the help and protection of God.


(١٠٢٣/٥٦) عَنْ ابْنِ عَبَّاسٍ قَالَ قَالَ النَّبِيُّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَوْمَ فَتْحِ مَكَّةَ لَا هِجْرَةَ وَلَكِنْ جِهَادٌ وَنِيَّةٌ فَإِذَا سْتَفِرُّوْا ثُمَّ فَأَنْفِرُوا وَقَالَ يَوْمَ فَتْحِ مَكَّةَ إِنَّ هَذَا الْبَلَدَ حَرَمَةُ اللَّهِ يَوْمَ خَلَقَ السَّمَوَاتِ وَالْأَرْضَ فَهُوَ حَرَامٌ بِحُرْمَةِ اللَّهِ إِلَى يَوْمِ الْقِيَمَةِ وَإِنَّهُ لَمْ يَحِلَّ الْقِتَالُ فِيهِ لِأَحَدٍ قَبْلِي وَلَمْ يَحِلَّ لِي إِلَّا سَاعَةٌ مِنْ نَهَارٍ فَهُوَ حَرَامٌ بِحُرْمَةِ اللَّهِ إِلَى يَوْمِ الْقِيَمَةِ لَا يُعْضَدُ شَوْكُهُ وَلَا يُنْفَرُ صَيْدُهُ وَلَا يُلْقَطُ لُقْطَتُهُ إِلَّا مَنْ عَرَفَهَا وَلَا يُخْتَلَى خِلَاهَا قَالَ الْعَبَّاسُ يَا رَسُولَ اللَّهِ إِلَّا إِذَا خَرُفَانَهُ لِقِيَّتِهِمْ وَلِيُؤْتِيَهُمْ فَقَالَ إِلَّا إِذَا ذَخَرَ

(رواه البخارى ومسلم)
(1023/56) It is related on the authority of Abdullah bin Abbas رضي الله عنه that, on the day of the Victory of Makkah, the Prophet ﷺ said: "Migration has ceased from today but *Jihad* and *Niyat* remain. Start out, at once, when you are called up for Faith." The Prophet ﷺ, further, said: "God has granted sanctity to this town of Makkah from the day on which He created the heavens and the earth. (This sanctity will endure till the end of time). Even before me warfare was forbidden within it, and to me, also, it was allowed (only) for a short time of the day. Now it is forbidden, with the sanctity of Allah, till the Last Day, and, also, any other act which may infringe on the solemnity and sacredness of this place. In it, neither a thorn can be plucked nor a straw broken nor a bird or animal driven for game nor an article (dropped by anyone) picked up except by one who makes

an announcement of it, according to law." (Upon it), (the Prophet's  uncle), Abbas, requested that *Izkhar*¹ might be excluded from it as ironsmiths, often, used it and it was, also, needed for making roofs. The Prophet , then, omitted it.

(Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: In it, two commands of the sacred Prophet  are mentioned which he had, particularly, given on the day of the Victory of Makkah. The first was that "Migration has ceased from today", in order to understand which it is necessary to know that when, before the Victory of Makkah, the Pagans held sway over it and they were such inveterate enemies of Faith that it was not possible for a Muslim living there to follow his religion, the order was that anyone who embraced Islam in Makkah should, circumstances permitting, migrated from Makkah to Madinah which in those days, was the only sanctuary of Muslims and centre for teaching and learning the Islamic way of life in the world. In those special conditions, anyhow, Migration was a duty and possessed great merit and importance. But as, in the 8th A.H., Islam became supreme in Makkah as well, the need for Migration ended, and, hence, on the day of the victory of Makkah the Prophet  proclaimed that Migration had "ceased". The announcement, naturally, caused much disappointment to those who had only then been favoured with the boon and blessing of Islam but were deprived of the opportunity to have a share in the propitiousness of Migration by the Commandment. As a redress to their grief and regret, the Prophet  observed that though Migration had come to an end, the door of *Jihad* and of the resolve to obey the Divine laws and readiness to make every sacrifice for the glory of the Word of God was open and everyone could attain the heights of virtue and felicity by means of those endeavours.

The other proclamation made by the Prophet , on that day, was that the sanctity of the city of Makkah which had been coming down the ages was not merely traditional or the brainwave of an individual or group but stemmed from an eternal Command of the Lord. It had been enjoined by God that Makkah should be held in exceptional esteem and reverence till the end of the world. That

①. A kind of aromatic grass.

was why, even *Jihad* which was worship of a very high order was not permitted in it. It had been allowed only to him and that, too, for a limited time and the permission had ended with the expiry of those few hours and now no one could wage war within it till the Doomsday.

(١٠٢٤/٥٧) عَنْ جَابِرٍ قَالَ سَمِعْتُ النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَقُولُ لَا يَحِلُّ

لِأَحَدٍ أَنْ يَحْمِلَ بِمَكَّةَ السِّلَاحَ (رواه مسلم)

(1024/57) Jabir رضي الله عنه related that the Prophet ﷺ said: "It is not permitted to a Muslim to take up arms in Makkah." (Muslim)

(١٠٢٥/٥٨) عَنْ أَبِي شُرَيْحٍ الْعَدَوِيِّ أَنَّهُ قَالَ لِعَمْرِو بْنِ سَعِيدٍ وَهُوَ يَبْعَثُ

الْبُعُوثَ إِلَى مَكَّةَ إِذْ ذُنَّ لِي أَيُّهَا الْأَمِيرُ أَحَدْتُكَ قَوْلًا قَامَ بِهِ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى

اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ الْغَدَ مِنْ يَوْمِ الْفَتْحِ سَمِعْتُهُ أَذْ نَائٍ وَرَعَاهُ قَلْبِي وَأَبْصَرْتُهُ

عَيْنَايَ حِينَ تَكَلَّمَ بِهِ حَمْدُ اللَّهِ وَآتَنِي عَلَيْهِ ثُمَّ قَالَ إِنَّ مَكَّةَ حَرَّمَهَا اللَّهُ وَلَمْ

يُحَرِّمْهَا النَّاسُ فَلَا يَحِلُّ لِأَمْرٍ يُؤْمِنُ بِاللَّهِ وَالْيَوْمِ الْآخِرِ أَنْ يُسْفِكَ بِهَا دَمًا وَلَا

يَعْصِدُ بِهَا شَجَرَةً فَإِنْ أَحَدٌ تَرَخَّصَ بِقِتَالِ رَسُولِ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ فِيهَا

فَقُولُوا لَهُ إِنَّ اللَّهَ قَدْ أَذِنَ لِرَسُولِهِ وَلَمْ يَأْذِنْ لَكُمْ وَإِنَّمَا أَذِنَ لِي فِيهَا سَاعَةً مِنَ

النَّهَارِ وَقَدْ عَادَتْ حُرْمَتُهَا الْيَوْمَ كَحُرْمَتِهَا بِالْأَمْسِ وَلِيَبْلُغَ الشَّاهِدُ الْغَائِبَ

فَقِيلَ لِأَبِي شُرَيْحٍ مَا قَالَ لَكَ عَمْرُو؟ قَالَ قَالَ أَنَا أَعْلَمُ بِذَلِكَ مِنْكَ يَا أَبَا

شُرَيْحٍ إِنَّ الْحَرَمَ لَا يُعِيدُ غَاصِيًا وَلَا فَارًا بِدَمٍ وَلَا فَارًا بِخَرْبَةٍ

(رواه البخارى و مسلم)

(1025/58) It is related on the authority of Shurayh Adawi رضي الله عنه that he said to 'Amr bin Sa'eed when (he was the Governor of

Makkah during the reign of Yazid, and) was despatching the

army (at his command) to invade Makkah (against Abdullah bin

al-Zubair رضي الله عنه): "O Amir (i.e., leader)! Permit me to tell you of

the proclamation of the Prophet ﷺ had made (in Makkah) on

the day following the Victory of Makkah. I had heard it with my

own ears and my mind had preserved it and my eyes were

seeing him when he gave utterance to it. He (i.e., the Prophet

ﷺ), first, praised the Lord, and, then said: 'God has declared

Makkah and its outlying territories holy. The decision

concerning its sacredness has been taken by Last day, to him it is forbidden to wage war, even to cut down trees, in it.' (The Prophet ﷺ added): 'If anyone sees justification for war in the military operation carried out by me, tell him that God has permitted (it to) the Prophet ﷺ, and He has not permitted it to thee, and to me, also, it was permitted (temporarily) for a short time of the day, and sanctity has returned (to Makkah) after the expiry of that period of time, and now, there is no justification for it till the Day of Resurrection.' (With it, the Prophet ﷺ had, also, said that) 'those who are present and have heard me should convey it to others'. (It is for this reason, O Amir, and in compliance with this command of the Prophet ﷺ that I have communicated it to you)." Someone asked what reply did 'Amr bin Sa'eed ؓ give. Abu Shurayh 'Adawi ؓ replied that Amr bin Sa'eed ؓ said: "O Abu Shurayh! I know (about) these things more than you. *Haram* does not give protection to the rebel or to a person who runs away after killing anyone unjustly or doing harm to him (i.e., action can be taken against such a man even in Haram)". (Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: The exploitation of Islam, for selfish ends, by unscrupulous men, and the distortion of its laws and precepts during the first century marks a most painful chapter of its history. Abu Shurayh 'Adawi ؓ who was a Companion of the Prophet ﷺ, did his duty by speaking the truth in front of the Umayyad Governor, Amr bin Sa'eed ؓ, and telling him plainly what the Prophet ﷺ had proclaimed.

It is not mentioned in this Tradition whether Abu Shurayh ؓ had made any comment on the reply given by Amr bin Sa'eed ؓ but in the account of the same incident quoted in *Abu Dawood* it is added that he had observed: "When the Prophet ﷺ had said it on the day of the Victory of Makkah, I was present while you were not, and he had ordered us that those who were present should communicate it to those who were absent. I have carried out the command of the Prophet ﷺ and transmitted it to you."

The above remark implies that those before whom the sacred Prophet ﷺ had made the proclamation were in a better position to appreciate its meaning and purpose.

(١٠٢٦/٥٩) عَنْ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ عَدِيٍّ بْنِ حَمْرَاءَ قَالَ رَأَيْتُ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ واقفاً على الحزورة فقال والله إنك لخير أرضٍ الله وأحب أرضٍ الله إلى الله ولولا أني أخرجت منك ما خرجت

(رواه الترمذى وابن ماجه)

(1026/59) It is related by Abdullah bin 'Adi رضي الله عنه that he saw that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ was standing on top of *Hazawrah*¹ and, addressing Makkah, he was saying: "By God! Thou art the best place on God's earth and most beloved in His sight. Had I not been forced to leave thee and migrate I would never have done so."

(Tirmizi and Abu Dawood)

Commentary: It emphasises that Makkah is the best and most sacred place in the world. It is the most beloved town in the sight of God. It could, indeed, not have been otherwise for if the House of *Ka'bah* not situated in it which is the foremost seat of His epiphany and the eternal *Qibla* of the Believers and around which the Prophet ﷺ, himself, used to curcumambulate and facing which he offered his prayers (*Salah*)?

(١٠٢٧/٦٠) عَنْ ابْنِ عَبَّاسٍ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ لِمَكَّةَ مَا أَطْيَبَكَ مِنْ بَلَدٍ وَأَحَبَّكَ إِلَيَّ وَلَوْ لَا أَنَّ قَوْمِي أَخْرَجُونِي مِنْكَ مَا سَكَنْتُ غَيْرَكَ

(رواه الترمذى)

(1027/60) It is related by Abdullah bin Abbas رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ, addressing Makkah, said: "What a holy city thou art and how much do I love thee! Had my community not driven me out, I would never have left thee and gone to live at any other place."

(Tirmizi)

Commentary: It is not clear from the aforementioned Tradition when had the Prophet ﷺ spoken these words. But as regards Abdullah bin Abbas's رضي الله عنه narrative the commenators believe that it had taken place when the Prophet ﷺ was returning after the Victory of Makkah.

Glory of Madinah

It is the practice of the Scholars to relate the merits of Makkah

①. The name of a low hill in Makkah.

in the chapter of *Hajj* and follow it with merits of Madinah, we emulate that practice.

(١٠٢٨/٦١) عَنْ جَابِرِ بْنِ سَمُرَةَ قَالَ سَمِعْتُ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ

وَسَلَّمَ يَقُولُ إِنَّ اللَّهَ سَمَّى الْمَدِينَةَ طَابَةً

(رواه مسلم)

(1028/61) Jabir bin Samurah رضي الله عنه narrated that he heard the Prophet ﷺ say: "God has given the name of Taabah to Madinah." (Muslim)

Commentary: All the three words, *Taabah*, *Teebah* and *Tayyabah* denote sanctity and charm. God named Madinah, Taabah and made it like that. The joy and serenity it imparts to the soul is not equalled by any other place in the world.

(١٠٢٩/٦٢) عَنْ أَبِي سَعِيدٍ عَنِ النَّبِيِّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ قَالَ إِنَّ إِبْرَاهِيمَ

حَرَّمَ مَكَّةَ فَجَعَلَهَا حَرَامًا وَإِنِّي حَرَّمْتُ الْمَدِينَةَ حَرَامًا مَا بَيْنَ مَا رَمَيْهَا أَنْ لَا

يَهْرَاقَ فِيهَا دَمٌ وَلَا يُحْمَلَ فِيهَا سِلَاحٌ وَلَا يُخْبَطَ فِيهَا شَجَرَةٌ إِلَّا لِعَلْفٍ

(رواه مسلم)

(1029/62) It is related by Abu Sa'eed Khudri رضي الله عنه that the Prophet ﷺ said: "Sayyidina Ibrahim عليه السلام had marked out Makkah as *Haram*, and I declare Madinah as *Haram*. The entire territory between the mountain passes on the two sides of it is worthy of respect. Blood must not be shed in it nor arms taken up against anyone nor trees struck for leaves except for the fodder of animals." (Muslim)

Commentary: It shows that like Makkah, Madinah, too, is deserving of respect and everything inimical to the spirit of sanctity and reverence is forbidden within its limits but the commands for it are not exactly the same as for the *Haram* of Makkah as is evident from this Tradition as well. In it, while striking the trees for fodders is allowed in Madinah, it is prohibited in Makkah.

(١٠٣٠/٦٣) عَنْ سَعْدِ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِنِّي أُحَرِّمُ مَا

بَيْنَ لَابَتَيِ الْمَدِينَةِ أَنْ يُقَطَّعَ عِضَاهُمَا أَوْ يُقْتَلَ صَيْدُهَا وَقَالَ الْمَدِينَةُ خَيْرٌ لَهُمْ

لَوْ كَانُوا يَعْلَمُونَ لَا يَدْعُهَا أَحَدٌ رَغْبَةً عَنْهَا إِلَّا أَبَدَلَ اللَّهُ فِيهَا مَنْ هُوَ خَيْرٌ مِنْهُ

وَلَا يَثْبُتُ أَحَدٌ عَلَى لَا وَائِهَا وَجَهْدِهَا إِلَّا كُنْتُ لَهُ شَفِيعًا أَوْ شَهِيدًا يَوْمَ الْقِيَمَةِ

(رواه مسلم)

(1030/63) It is related by Sa'd bin Abu Waqas رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "I declare the territory of Madinah between the mountain ranges on both the sides of it as *Haram* and enjoin that not even its thorny trees be cut down nor the animals living in it killed for game." (He added that "in spite of the scarcity of certain necessities of life) Madinah is good for the people and if they knew how blessed this town is (they would never leave it because of a difficulty or inconvenience). Whoever leaves it of his own accord, God will send, in his place, a bondsman who will be better than him, and whoever will bear the hardness of life patiently and stay in it, I shall intercede for him on the Day of Judgement and give evidence in his favour." (Muslim)

Commentary: Intercession to get sins forgiven and evidence that he is a righteous believer patiently bearing hardship in Madinah.

(١٠٣١/٦٤) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ أَنَّ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ قَالَ لَا يَصْبِرُ

عَلَى لَا وَاءِ الْمَدِينَةِ وَشِدَّتِهَا أَحَدٌ مِنْ أُمَّتِي إِلَّا كُنْتُ لَهُ شَفِيعًا يَوْمَ الْقِيَمَةِ

(رواه مسلم)

(1031/64) It is related by Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that the Prophet ﷺ said: "Whichever of my followers will endure patiently the hardship of Madinah, I shall plead, on his behalf, on the Day of Judgement." (Muslim)

(١٠٣٢/٦٥) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ كَانَ النَّاسُ إِذَا رَأَوْا أَوَّلَ الثَّمَرَةِ جَاءُوا بِهِ إِلَى

النَّبِيِّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ فَإِذَا أَخَذَهُ قَالَ اللَّهُمَّ بَارِكْ لَنَا فِي مَدِينَتِنَا

وَبَارِكْ لَنَا فِي صَاعِنَا وَبَارِكْ لَنَا فِي مَدِينَتِنَا اللَّهُمَّ إِنَّ إِبْرَاهِيمَ عَبْدُكَ

وَخَلِيلُكَ وَنَبِيُّكَ وَإِنِّي عَبْدُكَ وَنَبِيُّكَ وَإِنَّ دَعَاكَ لِمَكَّةَ وَأَنَا أَدْعُوكَ

لِلْمَدِينَةِ بِمِثْلِ مَا دَعَاكَ لِمَكَّةَ وَمِثْلَهُ مَعَهُ ثُمَّ قَالَ يَدْعُوا أَصْغَرَ وَلَيْدٍ لَهُ فَيُعْطِيَهُ

ذَلِكَ الثَّمَرِ

(رواه مسلم)

(1032/65) Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه related to us that it was the custom of the people (of Madinah) that whenever they saw the first fruit of the season on a tree, they presented it to the Prophet ﷺ. The

Prophet ﷺ accepted it and prayed: "O God! Grant abundance in our furits and crops, and grant abundance in our city of Madinah, and grant abundance in our Sa'a and Mudd. O God! Ibrahim عليه السلام was Thy chosen bondsman and Thy Friend and Messenger عليه السلام, and I, too, am Thy slave and Messenger عليه السلام. He had implored Thee for Makkah, and I make the same supplication to Thee for Madinah, and with addition." The Prophet ﷺ would, then, call some little child to him and give him the fruit. (Muslim)

Commentary: Abundance in crop and fruits, apparently, denotes that more and more of them were produced, and abundance in Makkah, that it flourished and there was the favour of Allah on its citizens. Sa'a and Mudd are grain measures and what the supplication here means is that a Sa'a or Mudd of foodgrains sufficed for more people or days than it usually did.

The supplication of Sayyidina Ibrahim عليه السلام alluded to in this saying has, also, been mentioned in the Qur'an. When he had settled his small family in the uncultivable valley of Makkah, Sayyidina Ibrahim عليه السلام had prayed:

رَبَّنَا فَاجْعَلْ أَفْئِدَةً مِّنَ النَّاسِ تَهْوِي إِلَيْهِمْ وَارْزُقْهُمْ مِّنَ الثَّمَرَاتِ لَعَلَّهُمْ
يَشْكُرُونَ
(ابراهيم ١٤: ٣٧)

(Our Allah)! So incline some hearts of men that may yearn toward them and provide Thou them with fruits in order that they may be grateful. (Ibrahim 14:37)

Referring to Sayyidina Ibrahim's عليه السلام suppliance as a precedent, the Prophet ﷺ used to beseech the Lord in the same vein for the people of Madinah. A distinct effect of it is that Believers all over the world have an indential, or, rather , great love for Madinah than Makkah.

The Prophet ﷺ has described Sayyidina Ibrahim عليه السلام "Chosen bondsman, Friend and Messenger of God عليه السلام" while, for himself, he has used the words of "Slave" and "Messenger ", and omitted to say that he was, also, the Beloved of the Lord. This modesty and unpretentiousness was an essential part of his disposition.

The offering of the first fruit of the season to a child contains the lesson that, on such occasions, preference should be given to

innocent children.

(١٠٣٣/٦٦) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ لَا تَقُومُ السَّاعَةُ حَتَّى تَنْفَى الْمَدِينَةُ شَرَارَهَا كَمَا يَنْفَى الْكَبِيرُ خَبَثَ الْحَدِيدِ

(رواه مسلم)

(1033/66) It is related by Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "The Hour (of Doom) Shall not be until Madinah has thrown away its vicious elements as the furnace of the ironsmith removes impurities from iron." (Muslim)

Commentary: It shows that before the occurrence of the Last Day Madinah will be purged clean of all the people with despicable beliefs, ideas or morals.

(١٠٣٤/٦٧) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ عَلَى أَنْقَابِ الْمَدِينَةِ مَلَائِكَةٌ لَا يَدْخُلُهَا الطَّاعُونَ وَلَا الدَّجَالُ

(رواه البخارى)

(1034/67) It is related by Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Angels are stationed at the roads leading to Madinah. Plague and *Dajjal*¹ cannot come into it."

(Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: In some Traditions it is said about Makkah as well that Dajjal shall not enter it. It is, perhaps, because of the auspiciousness of the prayers made by Sayyidina Ibrahim عليه السلام and the sacred Prophet ﷺ for the two cities.

(١٠٣٥/٧٨) عَنْ ابْنِ عُمَرَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَنْ اسْتَطَاعَ أَنْ يَمُوتَ بِالْمَدِينَةِ فَلْيَمُتْ بِهَا فَإِنِّي أَشْفَعُ لِمَنْ يَمُوتُ بِهَا

(رواه أحمد والترمذى)

(1035/68) It is related by Abdullah bin Umar رضي الله عنه that the Prophet ﷺ said: "Whoever can strive that death comes to him in Madinah should do so (and) die in it. I shall intercede for those who die and are buried in Madinah."

(Musnad Ahmad and Tirmizi)

Commentary: It does not lie in the hands of anyone to die at the place of his choice. But he can wish and pray and, to some extent, try for it. For instance, one can go and take up permanent residence where one wants to die and the chances are that he will die there.

❶. The Imposter

The object of this saying is that whoever wants to attain the good fortune of dying in Madinah should make an effort for it, as far as he can. God, indeed, helps those who strive with a sincere heart.

(١٠٣٦/٦٩) عَنْ يَحْيَى ابْنِ مَعْيَدٍ أَنَّ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ كَانَ جَالِسًا وَقَبْرٌ يُحْفَرُ بِالْمَدِينَةِ فَاطْلَعَ رَجُلٌ فِي الْقَبْرِ فَقَالَ بِئْسَ مَضْجَعُ الْمُؤْمِنِ فَقَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ بِئْسَ مَا قُلْتَ قَالَ الرَّجُلُ إِنِّي لَمْ أَرِدْ هَذَا إِنَّمَا أَرَدْتُ الْقَتْلَ فِي سَبِيلِ اللَّهِ فَقَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ لَا مِثْلَ الْقَتْلِ فِي سَبِيلِ اللَّهِ مَا عَلَى الْأَرْضِ بَقْعَةٌ أَحَبُّ إِلَيَّ أَنْ يَكُونَ قَبْرِي فِيهَا مِنْهَا ثَلَاثُ مَرَّاتٍ (رواه مالك مرسلاً)

(1036/69) It is related, by way of *Irsal*, on the authority of Yahya bin Sa'eed (a Taba'ee) that (once) the Messenger of Allah ﷺ was sitting in the graveyard of Madinah where the grave (for the burial of a dead body) was being dug. A person looked into the grave and remarked, "It is not a good resting-place for a Muslim." The Prophet ﷺ said: 'You uttered a very wrong thing (i.e., a Muslim died in Madinah and was blessed with burial in it and you say that it was not a good resting-place for him).' The man replied: "Messenger of Allah ﷺ! I did not mean that (i.e., I did not say that death and burial in Madinah were not good), but what I had in mind was martyrdom in the path of God (i.e., it would have been better had brother not died in bed and was buried in the grave but had been killed in the cause of Allah and his dead body lay in the field of *Jihad*)." The Prophet ﷺ observed: "Though it is not equal to martyrdom (i.e., the place of martyrdom, undoubtedly, is very high but to die and be buried in Madinah, also, is a great blessing), there is no place on the face of the earth where it may be more pleasing to me to have my grave." (Malik)

Commentary: The purport of the above Tradition, evidently, is that notwithstanding the superiority of martyrdom and the fact that to die in bed can never be the same as dying in the field of battle for a noble cause, to die in Madinah and be buried in it, also, is a means of great felicity and the Prophet ﷺ desired it for himself.

[After mentioning the sayings concerning the superiority of Madinah, Imam Bukhari brings the chapter to a close with the

following supplication of Sayyidina Umar رضي الله عنه:

"O Allah! Bestow upon me martyrdom in Thy path and the good fortune to die and be buried in the holy city of Thy beloved Messenger (i.e., Madinah)."

"اللَّهُمَّ ارْزُقْنِي شَهَادَةً فِي سَبِيلِكَ وَاجْعَلْ مَوْتِي فِي بَلَدِ رَسُولِكَ."

The circumstances attending this supplication have been related by Ibn Sa'd with full documentary evidence. He says that A'waf bin Maalik Ashja'ee saw in a dream that Sayyidina Umar رضي الله عنه had been martyred. On hearing of it, Sayyidina Umar wistfully remarked, "How can I attain martyrdom when I live in the Peninsula of Arabia (all of which has become the House of Islam) and I do not take part in *Jihad* personally and the bondsmen of the Lord are always surrounding me?" He, then, said by himself, "Why can I not attain martyrdom? If God desires, He will bless me with martyrdom even in this situation." After it, Umar رضي الله عنه made the supplication upon which his daughter and the Prophet's wife, Sayyidah Hafsa رضي الله عنها, asked, "How can it be that you are killed in the path of God and your death, also, takes place in Madinah." "If God wills," replied Sayyidina Umar رضي الله عنه, "both the things can happen."

It is, further, mentioned in the various accounts of the above incident that people were surprised at the strange and seemingly impossible supplication of Sayyidina Umar رضي الله عنه. When, however, Abu Lulu fatally stabbed him in the Mihrab¹ of the Prophet's صلى الله عليه وسلم Mosque, they knew how Sayyidina Umar's رضي الله عنه entreaty was destined to be accepted].

Superiority of *Masjid Nabawi*

The Prophet صلى الله عليه وسلم had laid foundation of *Masjid Nabawi*² in Madinah, after Migration. It was here that he regularly offered his prayers (Salah) and it, also, served as the centre of his glorious mission and of all of his efforts and endeavours in the cause of Faith. God has conferred greater eminence and distinction on it than on any other place of worship except *Masjid al-Haraam*. As

①. Denoting the principal place in the mosque where the Imam stands when he leads the congregation.

②. Meaning the Prophet's Mosque in Madinah.

authentic Traditions have it, the reward on a prayer offered in it is a thousand times greater than in any other mosque.

(١٠٣٧/٧٠) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ صَلَاةٌ

فِي مَسْجِدِي هَذَا خَيْرٌ مِنْ أَلْفِ صَلَاةٍ فِيمَا سِوَاهُ إِلَّا الْمَسْجِدَ الْحَرَامَ

(رواه البخاري و مسلم)

(1037/70) It is related by Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that the Prophet ﷺ said: "A prayer in this mosque of mine is better than a thousand prayers in all the other mosques excluding *Masjid al-Haram*.

(Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: In this Tradition a prayer in *Masjid Nabawi* is declared to be superior to a thousand prayers in any other mosque, save *Masjid al-Haram* of Makkah, but it is silent on the worth and merit of a prayer in *Masjid al-Haram*. the sayings given below, however, make it clear.

(١٠٣٨/٧١) عَنْ عَبْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ الزُّبَيْرِ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ

وَسَلَّمَ صَلَاةٌ فِي مَسْجِدِي هَذَا أَفْضَلُ مِنْ أَلْفِ صَلَاةٍ فِيمَا سِوَاهُ مِنَ الْمَسَاجِدِ

إِلَّا الْمَسْجِدَ الْحَرَامَ وَصَلَاةٌ فِي الْمَسْجِدِ الْحَرَامِ أَفْضَلُ مِنْ مِائَةِ صَلَاةٍ فِي هَذَا

(رواه احمد)

(1038/71) It is related on the authority of Abdullah bin Zubayr رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "A prayer (Salah) in this mosque of mine is superior except *Masjid al-Haram*, and a prayer in *Masjid al-Haram* is superior to a hundred prayers in this mosque."

(Musnad Ahmad)

(١٠٣٩/٧٢) عَنْ أَنَسٍ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَنْ صَلَّى

فِي مَسْجِدِي أَرْبَعِينَ صَلَاةً لَا تَفُوتُهُ صَلَاةٌ كُتِبَ لَهُ بِرَاءَةٌ مِنَ النَّارِ وَبِرَاءَةٌ مِنَ

الْعَذَابِ وَبِرَاءَةٌ مِنَ الْيَقَاقِ (رواه احمد والطبراني في الاوسط)

(1039/72) It is related by Anas رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Whoever offers 40 prayers in succession, without a break, (in this mosque of mine), for him shall be decreed Paradise and deliverance from Hell and from Punishment and, in the same way, from Hypocrisy." (Musnad Ahmad and Tabarani)

Commentary: Some acts lead to exceptional results owing to their

pleasureableness in the judgement of Allah. In the above Tradition, glad tidings are given on offering 40 prayers (*Salah*) consecutively in *Masjid Nabawi* that about such a bondsman it is written down that he is free from the taint of Hypocrisy and liberation is granted to him from Hell and from every kind of chastisement.

(١٠٤٠/٧٣) عَنْ أَبِي هُرَيْرَةَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَا بَيْنَ

بَيْتِي وَمَنْبَرِي رَوْضَةٌ مِنْ رِيَاضِ الْجَنَّةِ وَمَنْبَرِي عَلَى حَوْضِي

(رواه البخاري ومسلم)

(1040/73) It is related by Abu Hurayrah رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "The place between my house and pulpit is a garden among the Gardens of Paradise and my pulpit is upon my Pond of *Kausar*."
(Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: What the phrase, "my pulpit is upon my Pond of *Kusar*", apparently, signifies that as in this world, the sacred Prophet ﷺ imparted guidance and conveyed the message of God from his pulpit, in the same way, in the Hereafter, from the pulpit that will be installed on the Pond of *Kausar*, he will offer goblets of benevolence and mercy to those who have accepted the Divine Guidance. Hence, whoever was desirous of drinking the water of *Kausar* on the Day of Resurrection should step forward and accept the Call that was being given from the Prophet's pulpit and make it his spiritual sustenance in the present existence.

(١٠٤١/٧٤) عَنْ أَبِي سَعِيدٍ الْخُدْرِيِّ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ

وَسَلَّمَ لَا تُشَدُّ الرِّحَالُ إِلَّا إِلَى ثَلَاثَةِ مَسَاجِدَ مَسْجِدِ الْحَرَامِ وَالْمَسْجِدِ الْأَقْصَى

(رواه البخاري ومسلم)

وَمَسْجِدِي هَذَا

(1041/74) It is related by Abu Sa'eed Khudri رضي الله عنه that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "There are only three mosques in the world, and no other mosque, to which a journey can be made, *Masjid al-Haram* (in Makkah), *Masjid Aqsa* (in Jerusalem), and this mosque of mine (in madinah)."

(Bukhari and Muslim)

Commentary: It shows that the distinction that people are permitted to travel for worshipping in them is possessed only by these three mosques. Otherwise, it is forbidden to undertake a

journey specifically for offering one's prayers (*Salah*) in any other mosque in any part of the world.

It should be noted that the above Tradition appertains only to mosques and it has nothing to do with travelling for other legitimate worldly or religious needs like trade, education, preaching and propagation of Faith, and profiting from the company of godly men.

VISITING THE GRAVE OF THE PROPHET

Though visiting the *Rawdah* of the sacred Prophet ﷺ is not a part of the *Hajj*, it has been a regular practice from the olden times that when Muslims, particularly from distant lands, come for the *Hajj* they, also, take the opportunity to pay a visit to the Prophet's ﷺ tomb in Madinah. Thus, in all the standard collections of the Traditions, narratives regarding the visiting of the grave of the Prophet ﷺ are given at the end of *Kitab-ul-Hajj* (The Book of Pilgrimage), and we shall be following the same practice here as well.

(١٠٤٢/٧٥) عَنْ ابْنِ عُمَرَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَنْ حَجَّ

فَزَارَ قَبْرِي بَعْدَ مَوْتِي كَانَ كَمَنْ زَارَنِي فِي حَيَاتِي

(رواه البيهقي في شعب الإيمان والطبراني في الكبير والوسط)

(1042/75) It is related by Abdullah bin Umar ؓ that the Messenger of Allah ﷺ said: "Whoever performed the Hajj, and, then, paid a visit to my grave, after my death, is like those who came to see me in my life-time." (Baihaqi and Tabarani)

Commentary: It is, generally, accepted as true in the *Ummah* that the holy Prophet ﷺ, in fact all the Divine Prophets, are alive in their luminous graves although there is a difference of opinion on the nature of this existence. It, again, is established by irrefutable evidence and confirmed by the repeated experience of the chosen bondsmen of Allah that the Prophet ﷺ hears the *Salaam* (i.e., Salutation) of those who address it to him on visiting his grave and responds to it. In that way, to visit the Prophet's ﷺ grave, after his death, and make one's respectful salutation to him is a form of calling at him and saluting him directly and a source of good fortune one ought to try to the utmost to avail oneself of.

(١٠٤٣/٧٦) عَنْ ابْنِ عُمَرَ قَالَ قَالَ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَنْ زَارَ

قَبْرِي وَجَبَتْ لَهُ شَفَاعَتِي (رواه ابن خزيمة في صحيحه والدارقطني والبيهقي)

(1043/76) It is related by Abdullah bin Umar رضي الله عنه that the Prophet ﷺ said: "Whoever paid a visit to my grave, my intercession became due for him." (Ibn Khazemah, Daar Qutni and Baihaqi)

Commentary: We have already seen the Traditions, earlier denoting that a person cannot, in the real sense, enjoy the fruits of Faith unless one's love for the Prophet ﷺ exceeds his the love he has for anyone else in the world, save God even for his parents, wife and children and for his life, and the visiting of the Prophet's grave in Madinah is a natural consequence of his devotion.

Moreover, the state of the believing heart of the pilgrim at the time of the visit, the renewal of the covenant of Faith, the feeling of sorrow and repentance at his faults and lapses, the surging forth of love for the Prophet ﷺ and its crystallisation into tears under the overwhelming blessedness of adjacency to the Prophet ﷺ — each of these things is so marvellously precious as to lead automatically to intercession by the Prophet ﷺ and even forgiveness by the Lord. Without fail, therefore, every truthful pilgrim to the grave of the Prophet ﷺ will, *Insha Allah*, be favoured with his intercession on the Day of Reckoning. Should a pilgrim, however, feel none of these emotions, it would mean that his heart was devoid of the effulgence of Faith and the visit was a mere formality.

When we examine, the Traditions exhorting the Believers to visit the grave of the Prophet ﷺ against the background of these advantages, we are induced to believe that whatever one may feel about the documentary evidence of their transmission¹, from the point of view of their intrinsic meaning and purport they are wholly in accord with both the conceptional and practical design of Islam and no right-minded person will have any difficulty in agreeing that the visit to the holy grave of the Prophet ﷺ is immeasurably efficacious for the promotion of love and respect for him and an unfailing source of spiritual advancement.

①. Shaikh Taqiuddin Subki has, in *Shifa-us-Siqam* (written, according to him in refutation of Ibn Taimiya), quoted a number of Traditions

اَللّٰهُمَّ صَلِّ عَلٰى مُحَمَّدٍ وَعَلٰى اٰلِ مُحَمَّدٍ كَمَا صَلَّيْتَ عَلٰى اِبْرَاهِيْمَ وَعَلٰى اٰلِ
اِبْرَاهِيْمَ اِنَّكَ حَمِيْدٌ مُّجِيْدٌ

اَللّٰهُمَّ بَارِكْ عَلٰى مُحَمَّدٍ وَعَلٰى اٰلِ مُحَمَّدٍ كَمَا بَارَكْتَ عَلٰى اِبْرَاهِيْمَ وَعَلٰى
اٰلِ اِبْرَاهِيْمَ اِنَّكَ حَمِيْدٌ مُّجِيْدٌ.

Continued... appertaining to the virtues of visiting the grave of the Prophet ﷺ, foremost among which is the narrative of Sayyidina Abdullah bin Umar رضي الله عنه we have just seen. After thoroughly discussing its various versions and analysing the documentary evidence of its transmission, Sheikh Subki concludes that it, at least, belongs to the class of Hasan, i.e., credible and satisfactory Traditions. On the other hand, Hafiz Abu Abdullah Abdul Hadi Hanbali, a pupil of Ibn Taimiyah remarks in *Saarimul Munki*, intended to be a rejoinder to *Shifa-us-Siquam*, that all the Traditions mentioned in it are decidedly below the standard of reliability. But he, too, admits that the visiting of the grave of the Prophet ﷺ is a virtuous act, and deserving of Divine reward. He, further points out that this was, also, the way of Imam Ibn Taimiyah and those who attribute to him what is in contrast with it utter a slander against him. Hafiz Abu Abdullah, again, has quoted a *Salaam*, i.e., a poem conveying one's compliments and greetings, composed by Ibn Taimiyah for the pilgrims to the grave of the Prophet ﷺ which is full of the sentiments of love and reverence.

The most balanced opinion about the grade of Sayyidina Abdullah bin Umar's رضي الله عنه report, from the aspect of the chain of its narrators, in our view, is of Zahabi. Referring to it, Mulla Ali Qaari writes in *Sharah-i-Shifa* "this saying has been related in different ways and there are proofs and verifications on the basis of which Hafiz Zahabi has pronounced it to be apparently worthy of belief." (-Mulla Ali Qaari: *Sharh-i-Shifa*, Vol. II, p. 149).

GLOSSARY

MEANING AND MESSAGE OF TRADITIONS

A'māl	اعمال	(pl of amal) deeds.
Aḥādith	احاديث	pl of Hadith.
Ahl Kitāb	اهل كتاب	people of the Book. This term is used by the Qur'ān for Jews and Christians who follow a revealed religion.
Allahu Akbar	الله اكبر	Allah is the Greatest.
Asr	عصر	the afternoon salāh.
Azān	اذان	the call to salāh.
Ansār	انصار	Helper (s) People of Madinah who welcomed the Prophet ﷺ and Muhājir from Makkah.
Azl	عزل	coitus interruptus.
Azal	ازل	eternity.
Bay'ah	البيعة	covenant of allegiance.
Bid'ah	بدعة	innovation.
Barzakh	برزخ	intervening period between death and resurrection whether in grave or otherwise.
Du'a	دعا	supplication.
Eemān	ايمان	faith, belief in Islam.
Eed	عيد	festival Day marking the end of month of fasting is eed ul-fitr (1st Shawwal) and day of sacrifice is eed ul-azhā.
Fajr	فجر	the dawn salāh.
Fard	فرض	absolute obligation, an enjoined duty.
Ghusl	غسل	Bathing to remove legal impurity.
Hijrah	هجرة	migration. The Prophet's ﷺ migration to Madinah marking the beginning of the Islamic calendar.
Hadith	حديث	A saying, doing or practice, or silent approval of the Prophet ﷺ.
Hadith (Saheeh)	صحيح	a sound Hadith.
Hadith (Da'eef)	ضعيف	a weak Hadith.
Hadith (Mursal)	مرسل	incompletely transmitted Hadith.
Hadith (Marfoo')	مرفوع	Hadith traced back to the Prophet ﷺ.
Hadith (Mawdoo')	موضوع	an invented Hadith.
Hadith (Qudsi)	قدسى	That which Allah has said to the Prophet ﷺ through inspirations or dream and he has retold it in his own words.
Hajj	حج	pilgrimage. It is incumbent on every Muslim who has the ability to perform it once in his life time in the month of Zul Hajjah.
Durood	درود	a prayer for the Holy Prophet ﷺ to the blessed by Allah.
Chāshṭ	چاشت	optional salāh in the forenoon.
Hijāb	حجاب	veil worn or observed by women, seclusion of women, curtain.
Halāl	حلال	lawful.
Haram	حرام	unlawful, forbidden.

Ishā	عشاء	night salāh before retiring.
Istidrāj	استدراج	to give respite to a sinner to defer his punishment and let him involve in more sins, so that he may be punished ultimately a severe punishment.
Istikhārah	استخارة	seeking guidance from Allah through salāh to tackle a situation or deed in the right way.
Istighfār	استغفار	to seek forgiveness of Allah.
Istinja	استنجاء	abstention, cleansing of body after relieving oneself.
Iqamah	القامة	words of azān called to signal the standing up of the congregation for salāh. An additional phrase is repeated twice and the words are called relatively quickly.
Imām	امام	leader of the congregation.
Ishraq	اشراق	optional salāh a little after sunrise.
Istisqa	استسقاء	a prayer (through salāh) for rain during drought.
Ifār	الطار	breaking fast after sunset during Ramadan.
I'tikāf	اعتكاف	seclusion for the purpose of worshiping Allah. Men do it in the mosque and women at home. There are different kinds of it, for instance, the last ten days of Ramadan.
Ihrām	احرام	the state which a pilgrim assumes during Hajj and Umrah imposing certain restrictions on him.
Iddah	عدة	waiting period for a divorced woman or widow after which she may remarry.
Ikhlās	اخلاص	sincerity.
Jihād	جهاد	war waged solely for the sake of Allah against enemies of Islam.
Jawāmi' al-Kilām	جوامع الكلم	brief expressions most comprehensive in meaning.
Jizyah	جزية	the tax imposed on non-Muslims under state protection in Muslim countries.
Jannah	جنة	Paradise.
Jahannam	جهنم	Hell.
Khazeera		kind of dish of meat, flour and spices.
Kalimah	كلمة	expression, expression of belief لا اله الا الله محمد رسول الله
Khatim ul-Anbiya	خاتم الانبياء	The Seal of Prophets, the last of Prophets. (Prophet Muhammad ﷺ).
Kusoof	كسوف	Solar eclipse.
Khusoof	خسوف	lunar eclipse.
Khutbah	خطبة	sermon. Friday or eed sermon delivered from the minbar (pulpit).
Muhājir	مهاجر	The Companions of the Prophet ﷺ who had migrated to Madinah during the Prophet's ﷺ life time.
Musaddiq	مصدق	he who confirms or bears witness to a truth.
Muhaimin	مهيمن	one who supervises.
Maghrib	مغرب	sunset, the salāh after sunset.
Millat	ملة	faith, religion, creed.
Meezān	ميزان	scale.
Miswak	مسواك	a piece of tree's branch or root used as tooth cleaner.
Muqtadi	مقتدى	the worshippers who follow the Imam in congregational salāh.
Mahr	مهر	dower.

Lā ilāha illā Allahu Muhammadur Rasoolullah	لا اله الا الله محمد رسول الله	There is no God but Allah and Muhammad is the Messenger of Allah.
La'nah	لعنة	curse
Laylatul Qadr	ليلة القدر	Night of power, one of the odd nights in the last ten days of Ramadan when the Quran was revealed and which the worshipper has to search for.
Nikāh	نكاح	Marriage.
Sunnah	سنة	the norm of the Prophet ﷺ, his words and deeds.
Salāh	صلاة	prayer (five times a day). fajr, zuhr, asr, maghrib and ishā.
Shari'ah	شريعة	sacred law of Islam based on Qur'ān and sunnah.
Sawm	صوم	fasting.
Sahābah	صحابه	Companion of the Prophet ﷺ.
Sa'ee	سعي	seven rounds between Safā and Marwah at Makkah during the pilgrimage.
Sahr or Suhoor	سحر يا سحور	meal taken before dawn to commence fasting.
Satr	ستر	veil, parts of body that need be covered - for men from navel down to knee and for women from head to feet.
Salaam	سلام	greetings, peace.
Zakah	زكاة، زكوة	purity, purification. A portion or value of property given in charity to the poor (as the due of Allah) each year by those who qualify the minimum stipulated wealth.
Surah	سورة	chapter of the Qur'ān.
Ta'bud	تعبد	absolute worship.
Tābi'ee	تابعي	one who has seen a Companion or conversed with one.
Tawāf	طواف	circumambulation of the Ka'bah.
Sajdah	سجدة	prostration.
raka'ah	ركعة	(pl. raka'āt) unit of salāh made up of standing, bowing and two prostrations.
ruku'	ركوع	bowing down in salāh.
tashahhud	تشهد	the recital in the sitting posture in salāh.
tasawwuf	تصوف	sufism, adherence to sufism.
takbeer	تكبير	to call out Allahu Akbar.
tahleel	تهليل	to say لا اله الا الله (There is no God but Allah).
tasbeeh	تسبيح	to glorify Allah.
tilāwah	تلاوة	to recite the Qur'ān.
tahajjud	تهجد	optional salāh late in the night on getting up from sleep for it.
tayammum	تيمم	dry ablution.
talbiyah	تلبية	to recite Labayk: لبيك لا شريك لك لبيك ان الحمد والنعمة لك والملك لا شريك لك.
tawbah	توبة	repentance.
Qiblah	قبة	the direction of the ka'bah which worshippers face in salāh.
Zuhr	ظهر	the noon salāh when the sun begins to decline.
Ummah	امة	a people or nation, community, who have received a message.
Nafī	نفل	additional, optional, supererogatory.

Qiyamah	قيامة	The Day of Resurrection.
Sirāt	صراط	a narrow bridge that all will have to cross after resurrection.
Kawthar	كوثر	the pond and the river by this name in Paradise.
Zaqqoom	زقوم	a tree growing in Hell which is the food of the people of Hell.
Ghassaq	غساق	rubbish and impurity pouring of the bodies of those condemned (to Hell).
Sufi	صوفي	an adherent to Sufism, a saint who has reached the end of the path.
Sufism		see Tasawwuf.
Zuhd	زهد	having no love for the mundane benefits.
Zikr	ذكر	remembrance of Allah.
Wudu	وضو	ablution.
Siwak	سواك	same as miswak.
waqf		religious endowment.
witr	وتر	odd, the wajib three raka'āt salāh in the night after ishā salāh.
wajib	واجب	obligatory (slightly less than fard).
Salatul Hājah	صلوة الحاجة	two raka'āt salāh to seek fulfilment of need.
salāt ul Khawaf	صلوة الخوف	A particular way of offering congregational prayer in the battlefield.
Salāt ut Tasbeeh	صلوة التسبيح	the salāh of glorification, a four raka'āt salāh (optional) performed in a particular way.
Sadaqah	صدقة	charity.
Sadqatul fitr	صدقة الفطر	a charity given after completing fasting before salāh of Eed ul-fitr.
Janazah	جنازة	funeral.
Meeqāt	مبقات	The place beyond which a pilgrim cannot proceed without having assumed the ihram.
Rami	رمي	the throwing of pabbles at the Jimar in Minā by the pilgrims.
Jimar		(pl. of Jamrah): three stone pillars at Minā at which pilgrims throw pebbles.

INDEX

MEANING & MESSAGE OF TRADITIONS VOL. II

A

- Abu Maalik Ash'ari: 21
 Abdullah ibn Abbas: 24, 50f, 60, 66f, 71f, 102, 124, 132, 137, 149, 184, 203f, 212f, 225, 243, 254, 269f, 284, 291f, 302, 311, 325, 339, 346, 352f, 365, 369, 397, 406, 414, 430f, 446, 463f, 488, 523f, 535f, 540, 544
 Abu Hurayrah: 26f, 36f, 44, 51, 58f, 64f, 71, 88, 102, 121, 129f, 148f, 158, 164f, 169, 174, 180f, 190f, 198, 206f, 224, 232, 238f, 248f, 258f, 272f, 280f, 285, 294, 316f, 323f, 341f, 367, 378f, 391f, 396f, 401, 406, 412f, 418f, 426, 432f, 438f, 449f, 455, 466f, 479f, 484f, 523, 527, 546f, 551f
 Ayyash: 29f, 43f, 49f, 61f, 74, 104f, 136, 144, 153, 171f, 205f, 216, 233f, 238f, 242f, 253, 261f, 281, 296, 306, 310, 317, 325f, 331, 339, 345, 368, 382, 392, 405, 423f, 428f, 433, 440, 446f, 456, 468f, 473f, 492, 500, 524, 529f, 535f
 Abu Ayyub Ansari: 30, 46, 102, 238, 456
 Ali ibn Abu Talib: 30, 52f, 65, 107, 167, 176, 228, 245, 263, 298f, 339, 374f, 467, 481, 507f, 515f
 Abu Uwanah: 46
 Abu Musa Ash'ari: 31, 194, 304, 322f, 332f, 390
 Abdullah ibn Mughaffal: 32
 Abdullah ibn Sarjis: 32
 Abu Zarr Ghifari: 34, 77, 89, 107, 257f, 394, 461
 Abdullah ibn Umar: 41, 52f, 64f, 103, 124, 141, 150f, 163f, 196f, 213f, 237f, 241, 278, 285f, 295f, 316, 330f, 348f, 375, 385, 432f, 440f, 482f, 490f, 518f, 525, 532, 548, 555f, 557f
 Abu Umamah: 44, 157, 229, 249, 392f, 420
 Abdullah ibn Zubayr: 49, 231, 551
 Abu Haiyah: 54
 Abdullah ibn Zayd: 55, 109f, 311
 Amr ibn Shu'ayb: 56, 139, 538
 Anas: 60, 99f, 107f, 113f, 138, 150f, 159, 166, 202, 211f, 282, 288, 294f, 319f, 333, 380, 388, 395f, 404f, 425f, 437f, 447f, 516, 551
 Abu Rafi': 60
 Abdullah ibn Amr ibn al-Aas: 61, 86, 95, 271, 318, 354, 375, 379, 406, 421, 457, 538
 Abu Bakr: 75f, 175, 226f, 361
 Ammar ibn Yasir: 76, 436
 Abu Sa'eed al-Khudri: 77, 99, 122, 136, 210f, 241, 262, 280, 289, 320f, 326, 373, 396, 440, 447, 451, 470f, 545, 552
 Abu Darda: 84, 149, 260
 Abu Buraidah: 81
 Abdullah ibn Mas'ood: 91, 146f, 175, 192, 197f, 214f, 222f, 320, 332f, 351, 384f, 470, 483, 531
 Abu Umayr: 110, 292
 Abu Mahzurah: 114f
 Abu Usayd Sa'di: 134
 Abu Qatadah: 135, 166, 186, 258, 459, 469
 Abdullah ibn Arqam: 153
 Abu Mas'ood Ansari: 155, 162, 201, 400
 Abu Maalik Ash'ari: 158
 Abu Humayd as-Sa'idi: 172f, 196, 222
 Abu Hanifah Imam: 182
 Abdullah ibn Abu Awfa: 210, 264
 Abdullah ibn Sa'b: 184
 Abdullah ibn Utbah: 187
 Abu Waqid al-Layth: 192, 293
 Abu Zubayr Numairi: 195, 231
 Alqamah: 197
 Abdullah ibn Maalik: 203
 Awn ibn Abdullah: 204
 Awf ibn Maalik: 257, 343
 Abdullah ibn Qubays: 242
 Abdul Aziz ibn Jurayj: 243
 Allah – His Hand: 248
 descent: 248
 face: 248
 sat on the throne: 248
 Amr ibn Abasa: 249
 Adam, father of mankind: 274
 Aws ibn Aws Thaqafi: 275
 Abdullah ibn Salaam: 276, 281, 397
 Abu al-Ja'd: 278
 Abdullah ibn Busr: 291
 Abdur Rahman ibn Samurah: 306
 Amir Abdur Rami: 322
 Abu Burda: 332
 Abdullah ibn Ja'far: 334
 Amir ibn Sa'd: 347
 Abu Marthad Ghanawi: 350
 Amr ibn Nazim: 351
 aamileen: 377
 Abdul Muttalib ibn Rabee': 380
 Abu Rafi': 382
 Asma bint Abu Bakr: 392
 Abu Talhah: 404, 517
 Aas ibn Wail: 407
 Abu Munzir: 425
 Amr ibn al-Aas: 437
 Amir ibn Rabi': 452
 Abu Ubayd ibn Azhar: 471
 Abbas ibn Muttalib: 510, 541
 Abu Bakrah Thaqafi: 519
 Aabis ibn Rabee': 526
 Abu Abdullah Abdul Hadi: 557f
 Abdullah ibn Saib: 527
 Abdur Rahman ibn Ya'mar duali: 528
 Abdullah ibn Qurth: 533
 Abdur Rahman ibn Abu Bakr: 537
 Ayyash ibn Abu Rabia'h: 539
 Abu Shurayh Adawi: 542f

Amr ibn Sa'eed: 542f
 Abdullah ibn Adi: 544
 Abu Lulu: 550

B

Baqi, jannatul: 26
 Bilal: 62f, 96, 108f, 117f, 290, 394
 Buraidah: 96, 134, 241, 294, 352
 Bara: 188, 196f, 202, 299f

C

congregational salah: 40, 145f
 congregational, prolonging: 165f
 call to prayer: 109f

D

devil, horns of: 101
 durood: 219f
 drought: 309
 dajjal: 548

E

eclipse: 303

F

fitrah: 46
 fuqara: 377
 fi sabilillah: 378
 Fatimah bint Qays: 389
 Fatimah bint Muhammad: 507

G

green branch on grave: 24f
 ghaarimeen: 378

H

Huzayfah: 45, 204, 211, 256f, 266
 hadas: 63
 Hasan Basri: 140
 Hasan ibn Ali: 244
 Harith ibn Qabisah: 272
 Hamash ibn Abdullah: 298
 Hasan ibn Ali: 325
 Husain ibn Ali: 325
 Husain ibn Wahwah: 329
 Hanza: 340
 Hisham ibn Aamir: 348
 Hubshi ibn Junadah: 383
 Hamzah ibn Salamah: 446
 Hafshah: 461, 550
 Harith Thaqafi: 536

I

Ibn Umar (see Abdullah)
 Ibn Abbas (see Abdullah)
 Ibn Mas'ood (see Abdullah)
 Ibrahim, Prophet: 47, 326
 i'tikaf: 133
 Ibn Taymiyas: 175, 556fn
 Isa, Prophet: 257
 istikhara: 267f
 Ibrahim son of the Prophet: 303, 547f
 Ismail (Prophet): 326
 Ishaq (Prophet): 326
 ibnus Sabil: 378
 Ibn al-Firasi: 385
 Imam Baqar (see Muhammad ibn Ali)
 izkhar: 541

J

Jabir: 26, 31, 50f, 84, 119f, 126, 193, 158, 182, 189, 198f, 242, 267, 283f, 290f, 298f, 321, 327, 350, 448f, 489, 502f, 507, 516, 522f, 530f, 542
 Jibril: 44, 495
 jihad: 541, 550
 janabat: 64
 Jabbar ibn Sakhr: 159
 Jabir ibn Samurah: 183f, 283, 290, 545
 Jubayr ibn Mut'im: 187
 Jawzi: 270fn
 Jundub ibn Abdullah: 301
 Ja'far Sadiq: 349, 502
 Juhfa: 490
 Ja'far ib Muhammad (see Ja'far Sadiq)

K

Kalimah: 62
 Ka'b ibn Maalik: 135
 Khallad ibn Rafi': 170f
 Ka'b ibn Ujrah: 221
 Kharjah ibn Huzayfa: 241
 Ka'b Ahbaar: 276
 Khallab ibn Sa'ib: 495

L

Laqet ibn Sabirah: 59
 limbs of sajdah: 203

M

Mu'ar: 30
 Miswak: 43f
 Millat Hanifi: 47
 moustaches: 45f
 Mus'ab ibn Shaybah: 49
 Mustawrid ibn Shaddab: 59
 Mu'az ibn Jabal: 61, 165f, 189, 229, 327, 336f, 366
 Maimoonah: 66
 Muhammad ibn Amr: 98
 Muhammad ibn Abdullah ibn Zayd: 111
 Muhammad ibn Ammar: 240
 Maalik ibn Huwayrith: 121, 197
 Mu'awiyah: 123
 mosques, decoration of: 137f
 Mu'az ibn Abdullah al-Juhani: 184
 Ma'dan ibn Talbah: 208
 Mughirah ibn Shu'bah: 230, 250, 304
 Masrooq: 253
 Mu'azah Adawiyah: 261, 448, 461
 Mahmood Pasha: 303
 Muhammad ibn Khalid Sulami: 321
 Ma'qil: 327
 Mujaddid Alf-Thani: 334
 Maalik ibn Hubayrah: 346
 masaakeen: 377
 muwallafatul quloob: 378
 marthad ibn Abdullah: 395
 Mu'az ibn Zuhrah: 442
 Muhammad ibn Ali: 502
 Mulla Ali Qari: 557fn

N

Nu'man ibn Basheer: 104, 155f, 192, 293

Nubasha Huzali: 472, 534
Nafi': 521

P

Praise of Allah: 21
patience: 23
pilpit is on my pond, my: 552

Q

Quran: 22
Qatadah: 104
Qays ibn Abu Haazim: 165
qiblah: 169
Qabisah al-Hilali: 305
Qatadah ibn Milhan: 462
Qarnul Manazil: 490

R

relieving oneself, manners of: 28
Rubaiyi: 60
Rafi' ibn Khadeej: 105
Rifaah ibn Rafi': 170, 211
Rabi'ah ibn Ka'b: 208
rqaab: 378
rayyan: 419
Rabi' ibn Harith: 510

S

sadaqah: 22
Salman Farsi: 27, 279, 415
salal, wait for: 40
Shabib ibn Abu Rooh: 42
Shurayh ibn Hani: 45
Sa'eed ibn Zayd: 57
Samurah ibn Jundub: 71, 374
Sayyar ibn Salaamah: 98
Sa'd: 120
Sa'd ibn Abu Waqqas: 126, 228f, 546
Sharimeen: 378
Sulayman ibn Yasaar: 190
Sufyan Suri: 199
Sa'd ibn Ubadah: 330
Sulayman ibn Aamir: 402
Sahl ibn Sa'd: 419, 438, 495
Salman ibn Jabir: 441
Suraqa ibn Maalik: 505f
Saalim ibn Abdullah: 532
Salamah ibn Akwa: 533
tasbih: 22, 204
tahmid: 22
tahajjud: 45, 106, 179, 207, 235, 243f, 249f, 263
Thawhan: 40, 230, 323, 386
Takq ibn Habib: 49
talbiya: 124, 503
Taq ibn Ali Hanafi: 202
tahajjud: 420
taraweeh: 420
tariq ibn Shahab: 278
Talhah ibn Ubaydah: 529
Taqiuddin Subki: 556fn

U

Umar ibn al-Khattab: 29, 38, 76, 112f, 125, 191f, 216, 252, 238, 331f, 361, 370f, 386, 453, 459, 471f, 512, 526, 550

Uthman ibn Affan: 35, 53f, 89, 137
Ubadah ibn Samit: 87, 180, 317
Uqbah ibn Aamir: 90, 185, 204
Uthman ibn Abu al-Aas: 120
Uthman ibn Ma'zoon: 133
Umm Humayd Sa'idiyah: 142
Umm Habibah: 236, 239
Usama: 148
Umm Sulaym: 160
Umm Salamah: 246, 302, 328f, 375, 524
Ubayy ibn Ka'b: 165, 243f, 424f
Umm al-Fadl: 187
Ubaydah ibn Abu Rafi': 191
Ubaydah ibn Utbah: 192
Umar ibn Abdul Aziz: 205
Umm Hani: 261, 473
Ubayd ibn as-Sabbaq: 280
Ubaydullah ibn Abdullah: 293
Uthman ibn Abul Aas: 325
Umm Atiya: 338f
Ubaydullah ibn Adi: 379
Umarah ibn Khuzaymah: 495

W

Waliullah Shah: 19f, 47, 81f, 114, 143, 182, 193, 277, 317, 412
wazifah: 22
Wathilah ibn al-Asqa: 140, 344f
Wabisah ibn Ma'bad: 159
Wail ibn Hajr: 196f, 203

Y

Ya'la: 67
Yazid ibn Khumair: 291
Yalamiam: 490
Yahya ibn Sa'eed: 549

Z

Zayd ibn Arqam: 32, 297
Zakaria ibn Abu Za'idah: 49
Zayd ibn Khalid: 90, 442
Ziyad ibn Harith: 120
Zaynab (Prophet's daughter): 338
Zubayr ibn Awwam: 387
Zaynab wife of Abdullah ibn Mas'ood: 403
Zirr ibn Hubaysh: 424
zikr: 430, 526
Zul Hulayfa: 489
Zaat - Iraq: 490
Zayd ibn Thabit: 492
Zahabi: 537fn